This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

LAW LIBRARY

E 91·11

Oxford University
ENGLISH FACULTY LIBRARY
Manor Road
Oxford
OX1 3UQ

Opening Hours:
Monday to Friday: 9.30 a.m. to 7 p.m. in Full Term.
(9.30 a.m. to 1 p.m., and 2 p.m. to 4 p.m. in Vacations.)
Saturday: 9.30 a.m. to 12.30 p.m. in Full Term only (closed in Vacations).
The Library is closed for ten days at Christmas and at Easter, on Encaenia Day, and for six weeks in August and September.

This book should be returned on or before the latest date below:

~~30 MAY 1985~~

~~23~~

~~11 MAR 1986~~

18 MAR

27 APR 1994

CANCELLED
20 JAN 2004

Readers are asked to protect Library books from rain, etc. Any volumes which are lost, defaced with notes, or otherwise damaged, may have to be replaced by the Reader responsible.

300003548N

Early English Text Society.

Extra Series, XXI.

The Bruce;

or,

The Book of the most excellent and noble prince,

Robert de Broyss, King of Scots:

compiled by

Master John Barbour,

Archdeacon of Aberdeen,

A.D. 1375.

EDITED FROM MS. G. 23 IN THE LIBRARY OF ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE, WRITTEN A.D. 1487; COLLATED WITH THE MS. IN THE ADVOCATES' LIBRARY AT EDINBURGH, WRITTEN A.D. 1489, AND WITH HART'S EDITION, PRINTED A.D. 1616;

WITH A

PREFACE, NOTES, AND GLOSSARIAL INDEX,

BY THE

REV. WALTER W. SKEAT, M.A.,

RAVEN FELLOW OF CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE; AUTHOR OF "A MŒSO-GOTHIC GLOSSARY," EDITOR OF "PIERS THE PLOWMAN," ETC.

I

PART ~~II~~.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,

BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCCLXXIV.

Price Four Shillings.

Early English Text Society.

Committee of Management:

Director: FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL, Esq.

Treasurer: HENRY B. WHEATLEY, Esq.

Hon. Sec.: ARTHUR SNELGROVE, Esq., LONDON HOSPITAL, LONDON, E.

J. MEADOWS COWPER, Esq.
ALEXANDER J. ELLIS, Esq.
DANBY P. FRY, Esq.
H. HUCKS GIBBS, Esq.
Rev. BARTON LODGE.
Rev. J. RAWSON LUMBY.
Rev. Dr. RICHARD MORRIS.
J. A. H. MURRAY, Esq.
EDWARD B. PEACOCK, Esq.
Rev. WALTER W. SKEAT.
HENRY SWEET, Esq.
W. ALDIS WRIGHT, Esq.

(*With power to add Workers to their number.*)

Bankers:

THE HEAD OFFICE OF THE UNION BANK OF LONDON,
PRINCES STREET, E.C.

The Publications for 1866 are out of print, but a separate subscription has been opend for their immediate reprint. The Texts for 1864, and all but one (which is now in the press) for 1865, have been reprinted. Subscribers who desire the Texts of all or any of these years should send their names at once to the Hon. Secretary, as several hundred additional names are requird before the Texts for 1866 can be sent to press.

The Publications for 1864 (21*s.*) *are:—*

1. **Early English Alliterative Poems**, ab. 1360 A.D., ed. R. Morris. 16*s.*
2. **Arthur**, ab. 1440, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 4*s.*
3. **Lauder on the Dewtie of Kyngis, &c.**, 1556, ed. F. Hall. 4*s.*
4. **Sir Gawayne and the Green Knight**, ab. 1360, ed. R. Morris. 10*s.*

The Publications for 1865 (21*s.*) *are:—*

5. **Hume's Orthographie and Congruitie of the Britan Tongue**, ab. 1617, ed. H. B. Wheatley. 4*s.*
6. **Lancelot of the Laik**, ab. 1350, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 8*s.*
7. **Genesis & Exodus**, ab. 1250, ed. R. Morris. 8*s.*
8. **Morte Arthure**, ab. 1440, ed. E. Brock. 7*s.*
9. **Thynne on Chaucer's Works**, ab. 1598, ed. Dr Kingsley.
10. **Merlin**, ab. 1440, Part I., ed. H. B. Wheatley.
11. **Lyndesay's Monarche, &c.**, 1592, Part I., ed. F. Hall.
12. **Wright's Chaste Wife**, ab. 1462, ed. F. J. F.

The Publications for 1866 *are:—*

13. **Seinte Marherete**, 1200-1330, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne.
14. **Kyng Horn, Floris and Blanchefour, &c.**, ed. Rev. J. R. Lumby.
15. **Political, Religious, and Love Poems**, ed. F. J. Furnivall.
16. **The Book of Quinte Essence**, ab. 1460-70, ed. F. J. Furnivall.
17. **Parallel Extracts from 29 MSS of Piers the Plowman**, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat.
18. **Hali Meidenhad**, ab. 1200, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne.
19. **Lyndesay's Monarche, &c.**, Part II., ed. F. Hall.
20. **Hampole's English Prose Treatises**, ed. Rev. G. G. Perry.
21. **Merlin**, Part II., ed. H. B. Wheatley.
22. **Partenay or Lusignen**, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat.
23. **Dan Michel's Ayenbite of Inwyt**, 1340, ed. R. Morris.

The Publications for 1867 (*one guinea, less No. 24, 25, 26, out of print*) *are:—*

24. **Hymns to the Virgin and Christ**; the Parliament of Devils, &c., ab. 1430, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 3*s.*
25. **The Stacions of Rome**, the Pilgrims' Sea-voyage, with Clene Maydenhed, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 1*s.*
26. **Religious Pieces in Prose and Verse**, from R. Thornton's MS. (ab. 1440), ed. Rev. G. G. Perry. 2*s.*
27. **Levins's Manipulus Vocabulorum**, 1570, ed. H. B. Wheatley. 12*s.*
28. **William's Vision of Piers the Plowman**, 1362 A.D. Part I. The earliest or Vernon Text; Text A. Ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 6*s.*
29. **Early English Homilies** (ab. 1220-30 A.D.) from unique MSS. in the Lambeth and other Libraries. Part I. Edited by R. Morris. 7*s.*
30. **Piers the Ploughmans Crede**, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 2*s.*

The Publications for 1868 (*one guinea*) *are:—*

31. **Myrc's Duties of a Parish Priest**, in Verse, ab. 1420 A.D., ed. E. Peacock. 4*s.*
32. **The Babees Book**, Urbanitatis, the Boke of Nurture of John Russell and Hugh Rhodes; the Boke of Keruyng, Curtesye, and Demeanour, &c., with some French and Latin Poems on like subjects, ed. from Harleian and other MSS. by F. J. Furnivall. 15*s.*
33. **The Knight de la Tour Landry**, from French of A.D. 1372; ab. 1440 A.D. A Father's Book for his Daughters, ed. from Harl. MS. 1764 and Caxton's version, by Thomas Wright. 6*s.*
34. **Early English Homilies** (before 1300 A.D.) from unique MSS. in the Lambeth and other Libraries. Part II., ed. R. Morris, LL.D. 8*s.*
35. **Lyndesay's Works**, Part III.: The Historie and Testament of Squyer Meldrum, ed. F. Hall. 2*s.*

The Publications for 1869 (*one guinea*) *are:—*

36. **Merlin**, Part III. Edited by H. B. Wheatley, Esq.; with an Essay on Arthurian Localities, by J. S. Stuart Glennie, Esq. 12*s.*
37. **Sir David Lyndesay's Works**, Part IV., containing Ane Satyre of the Three Estates. Edited by F. Hall, Esq. 4*s.*
38. **William's Vision of Piers the Plowman**, Part II. Text B. Edited from the MSS. by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 10*s.* 6*d.*
39. **The Alliterative Romance of the Destruction of Troy**, translated from Guido de Colonna. Edited from the unique MS. in the Hunterian Museum, Glasgow, by D. Donaldson, Esq., and the Rev. G. A. Panton. Part I. 10*s.* 6*d.*

The Bruce.

Early English Text Society.

Extra Series. No. XI.

1870.

DUBLIN: WILLIAM McGEE, 18, NASSAU STREET.
EDINBURGH: T. G. STEVENSON, 22, SOUTH FREDERICK STREET.
GLASGOW: OGLE & CO., 1, ROYAL EXCHANGE SQUARE.
BERLIN: ASHER & CO., UNTER DEN LINDEN, 11.
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

The Bruce;

or,

The Book of the most excellent and noble prince,

Robert de Broyss, King of Scots:

compiled by

Master John Barbour,

Archdeacon of Aberdeen,

A.D. 1375.

EDITED FROM MS. G. 23 IN THE LIBRARY OF ST JOHN'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE, WRITTEN A.D. 1487; COLLATED WITH THE MS. IN THE ADVOCATE'S LIBRARY AT EDINBURGH, WRITTEN A.D. 1489, AND WITH HART'S EDITION, PRINTED A.D. 1616;

WITH A

PREFACE, NOTES, AND GLOSSARIAL INDEX,

BY THE

REV. WALTER W. SKEAT, M.A.,

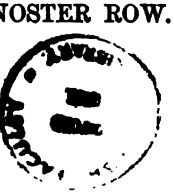
LATE FELLOW OF CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE; AUTHOR OF "A MŒSO-GOTHIC GLOSSARY," EDITOR OF "PIERS THE PLOWMAN," ETC.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,

BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 60, PATERNOSTER ROW.

MDCCCLXX.



Extra Series,

XI.

JOHN CHILDS AND SON, PRINTERS.

TEMPORARY NOTICE.

THE Preface will be issued with Part II.

The Second Part will contain the text (Books XI—XX), the Notes, and a Glossarial Index.

The best authority for the true text of "The Bruce" is the MS. in St John's College, Cambridge; this was used to some extent by Professor Cosmo Innes, but has never till now been printed.

As the first 25 leaves of this MS. are, unfortunately, missing, the portion at the beginning, down to l. 56 of Book IV, on p. 78, is printed from the Edinburgh MS., collated with Hart's edition (1616), and occasionally with Anderson's edition (1670). The readings from Hart are marked with H, and those from Anderson are marked with A.

The rest is from the Cambridge MS., occasionally improved by help of the other authorities. The readings from this MS. are marked with C, and the readings from the Edinburgh MS. with E; but to save the frequent repetition of the letter E, many readings have *no* letter appended, as explained in the note to l. 57 of Book IV, p. 78. Thus, in this line, the word *to* of the Cambridge MS. is written *till* in the Edinburgh MS. The latter has been carefully printed (with but very few mistakes) by Jamieson, whose edition is well known.

The division into 20 Books, and the numbering of the lines, is exactly copied from Pinkerton's edition, (extra lines being marked by an asterisk), *because it is to this edition that the references in Jamieson's Scottish Dictionary are made.* Jamieson's division of the poem into 14 Books only creates confusion, as he never refers to *his own*, but only to *Pinkerton's* numbering. Hence Jamieson's Dictionary serves at once for the present edition.

To compare any passage in the present edition with the corresponding one in Jamieson, observe the numbering of the folios marked E. Thus the first line on p. 81 is marked "Fol. 12. E," and answers to the "Fol. 12*a*" in Jamieson, p. 68.

W. W. S.

The Bruce.

[BOOK I.]

Incipit liber compositus per magistrum Ihoannem Barber, Archidiaconum Abyrdonensem: de gestis, bellis, et virtutibus domini Roberti de Brwyss, regis Scocie illustrissimi, et de conquestu regni Scocie per eundem, et de domino Iacobo de douglas.

[Fol. 1 *a*.]

Storyß to rede ar delitabill, — Fabulous stories please,
Suppoß *that th*ai be no*ch*t bot fabill; — but true ones please doubly.
*Th*an suld storyß *tha*t suthfast wer,
And *th*ai war said on gud maner, 4
Hawe doubill plesance in heryng.
*Th*e fyrst plesance is *th*e carpyng,
And *th*e to*thir th*e suthfastnes,
*Th*at schawys *th*e thing ry*ch*t as it wes; 8
And suth thyng*is tha*t ar likand

The various readings marked H *are from* Hart's *edition of* 1616. *The Edinburgh MS. is denoted by* E; *the Cambridge MS.* (*beginning at* Bk. iv, l. 57), *by* C; *after which line the unmarked readings are from* E. A *denotes* Anderson's *edition* (1670); P Pinkerton's *edition* (1790); J Jamieson's *edition* (1820); I Innes's *edition* (1856).

1. *delitabill*] delectable H.
2. *that—nocht*] they noght contain H.
4. *And—on*] If they be spoken in H.
5. *plesance*] pleasure H.
6. *plesance—the*] is their pleasant H.
7. *And—tothir*] The other is H.
9. *suth*] soothfast H. *Printed* such PJ.

61

Tyll mannys heryng, ar plesand.

Therefore I essay to write a true story.

*Th*arfor I wald fayne set my will,
Giff my wyt my*ch*t suffice *thar*till, 12
To put in wryt A suthfast story,
That it lest ay furth in memory,
Swa *that* na [lenth of tyme] It let,
Na ger it haly be forȝet. 16

Old stories shew men the very actors, just as they were.

For aulde storys *that* men redys,
Rep*r*esent*is* to *th*aim *th*e dedys
Of stalwart folk *that* lywyt ar,
Ry*ch*t as *th*ai *th*an in *pr*esence war. 20
And, cert*is*, *th*ai suld weill hawe pryß
That in *thar* tyme war wy*ch*t and wyß,
And led *thar* lyff in gret *tra*waill,
And oft in hard stour off bataill 24
Wan [richt] gret p*ri*ce off chewalry,
And war woydyt off cowardy.

King Robert was hardy of heart and hand,

As wes king Robert off Scotland,
That hardy wes off hart and hand; 28

and Sir James of Douglas far renowned.

And gud Schyr Iames off douglas,
That in his tyme sa worthy was,
That off hys price & hys bounte
In fer land*is* renownyt wes he. 32

It is of them that I write.

Off *th*aim I thynk *th*is buk to ma;
Now god gyff grace *that* I may swa.
Tret It, and bryng It till endyng,
That I say no*ch*t bot suthfast thing! 36

14. *lest—furth*] may last H.
15. [*lenth of tyme*] tyme of lenth E (*an obvious error*); length of time H. *It*] may H.
17. *aulde storys*] *The* MS. *has* aul. . . . . rys; *also the beginnings of lines* 1 *to* 17 *are obliterated or torn away; but there is no doubt about the readings.* H *has* ald Stories.
19. *lywyt ar*] liued air H.
20. *in presence*] present H.
24. *in*] intill H; in A.
25. [*richt* H] right A; E *omits*. *price*] praise H.
26. *war—off*] was voyde of all H.
31. *price*] praise H.
32. *fer—wes*] sindrie lands honour wan H.
34. *gyff*] of H.
35. *till*] to gude H.

Quhow the lordis of scotland tuk the King of Ingland to be arbitar at the last.

Quhen Alexand*er* *th*e king wes deid,
That Scotland haid to steyr and leid,
The land vj ȝer, and mayr p*er*fay,
Lay desolat eftyr hys day; 40
Till *that* *th*e barnage at *th*e last
Assemblyt *th*aim, and fayndyt fast
To cheyſ a king *th*ar land to ster,
That off awncestry cu*m*myn wer 44
Off king*is*, *that* aucht *that* reawte,
And mayst had ry*ch*t *th*air king to be.
Bot enwy, *th*at is sa feloune,
[Amang *th*aim maid] discenciouñ. 48
For sum wald haiff *th*e balleoll king;
For he wes cu*m*myn off *th*e offspryng
Off hyr *that* eldest Syst*ir* was.
And o*thir* sum nyt all *that* caſ; 52
And said, *that* he *th*air king suld be
*Th*at [wes] in alsner degre,
And cu*m*myn [wes] of *th*e neist male,
And in branch collaterale. 56
*Th*ai said, successioun of kyngrik
Was nocht to lawer feys lik;

At the death of Alexander III., the land lay desolate six years.

Dispute as to the succession.

Some would choose Balliol.

Others said that no one could succeed through a female,

RUBRIC. *Loosely written in margin of* E; *the last ten words are uncertain, and scarcely legible.*

37—132. *Quoted by* Wyntown, bk. viii. ch. ii. ll. 1—54, and 57—98.

37. *the*] oure *in* Wyntown.

39. *vj*] sex H; six A.

41. *that—barnage*] all the Barouns H.

42. *fayndyt*] that full H.

44. *awncestry*] the ancestree H.

45. *aucht—reawte*] had that Royaltie H.

46. *mayst had*] had maist H.

48. [*Amang—maid*] Amang þame mad *in* Wyntown; Maid amang *th*aim gret E; *but* H *and* A *omit* gret, *and so does* Wyntown.

50. *the*] þat *in* Wyntown.

51. *Off—that*] þat of þe *in* Wyntown.

52. *And—all*] Uther sum contraryit that H.

54, 55. [*wes*] *so in* Wyntown; was HA; war E. *in alsner*] of als neir HA. *neist*] first H.

56. *in branch*] of Branches H.

58. *feys lik*] state alike H.

For *thar* my*ch*t succed na female,
Quhill foundyn my*ch*t be ony male 60
[That were in lyne] ewyn descendand;
*Th*ai bar all o*thir* wayis on hand,
For *th*an *th*e neyst cu*m*myn off *th*e seid,
Ma*n* or woma*n*, suld succeid. 64

and declared for Robert Bruce, Earl of Carrick.

Be *th*is resoun *tha*t part tho*ch*t hale,
*Tha*t *th*e lord off anandyrdale,
Robert *th*e brwyß, Erle off carryk,
Aucht to succeid to *th*e kynryk. 68
*Th*e barownys *th*us war at discord,
*Tha*t on na maner my*ch*t accord;
Till at *th*e last *th*ai all concordyt,

All agree that King Edward I. shall decide.

*Tha*t all *th*ar spek suld be recordyt 72
Till Schyr Eduuard, off yngland king;
And he suld swer *tha*t, but fenȝeyng,
He suld that arbytre disclar,
Off *th*ir twa *tha*t I tauld off ar, 76
Quhilk [suld] succeid to sic A hy*ch*t;
And lat him ryng *tha*t had *th*e rycht.
*Th*is ordynance *th*aim tho*ch*t *th*e best,
For at *th*at tyme wes peß and rest 80
Betwyx Scotland and Ingland bath;

They knew not what mischief was in store.

And *th*ai couth no*ch*t p*er*sawe *th*e skaith
*Tha*t towart *th*aim wes apperand;
For *tha*t at *th*e king off Ingland 84
Held swylk freyndschip and cumpany

59. *succed na*] not succeid a H.
61. [*That—lyne*] *so in* H; *this is more sense than the reading in* E—How *that* in his ewyn descendand. Wyntoun *quotes it in the form*—þat be lyne war discendand (Bk. viii. ch. ii. l. 25).
62. *bar*] beir H.
63. *the* (1)] thair H.
65. *that part*] the Lords H.
66. *anandyrdale*] Annandaill H.
69. *at*] in H.
70. *That*] And H.
71. *concordyt*] accordyt *in* Wyntown; accordit H.
74. *that*] H *omits.*
75. *that arbytre*] as arbiter H.
77. *Quhilk*] Quha H. [*suld*] sulde *in* Wyntown; sould H; should A; E *omits.* *sic A*] sit on H.
79. *thaim*] thay H; they A.
82. *And*] That H.
84. *that at*] why H.

To *th*ar king, *that* wes swa worthy,
*Th*ai trowyt *that* he, as gud ny*ch*tbur,
And as freyndsome compositur, 88 They thought Edward would decide justly.
Wald hawe Iugyt in lawte;
Bot o*th*ir wayis all ȝheid *th*e gle.
A! blynd folk full off all foly! [Fol. 1 *b*.]
Haid ȝe wmbetho*ch*t ȝow enkrely, 92
Quhat p*er*ell to ȝow my*ch*t apper,
Ȝe had no*ch*t wro*ch*t on that maner:
Haid ȝe tane keip how at *th*a*t* king
Alwayis, for-owtyn soiournyng, 96 Had ye noted how Edward always aimed at sovereignty,
Trawayllyt for to wyn senȝhory,
And throw his my*ch*t till occupy
Land*is*, *th*a*t* war till him m*ar*cheand,
As walis was, and als Ireland; 100 as over Wales and Ireland.
That he put to swylk thrillage,
That *th*ai, *that* war off hey p*ar*age,
Suld ryn on fute, as rebaldaill,
Quhen he wald [ony] folk assaill. 104
Durst nane of Walis in bataill ride;
Na yhet, fra ewyn fell, abyd
Castell or wallyt toune w*ith*-in,
That he ne suld lyff and ly*m*mys tyne. 108
In-to swilk thrillage *th*aim held he,
That he ourcome throw his powste.
Ȝe my*ch*t se he suld occupy
Throw sly*ch*t, *that* he ne my*ch*t throw maist*ri*. 112 ye would have dreaded his sleight.

86. *Th*] With H. *swa*] H *om*.
88. *freyndsome*] friendfull H.
89. *lawte*] leele Lawtie H.
91. *blynd—all*] Folke blinded full of great H.
92. *wmbethocht — enkrely*] bethought once earnestly H.
93. *to—mycht*] might to you A.
95. *at that*] that this H.
96. *Alwayis*] Wyntown *has* Of Walys, *and* to wyn þe *instead of* for to wyn *in* l. 97. *forowtyn soiournyng*] withoutten fainyeeing H.
98. *till*] did H.
100. *als*] all H.
101. *to*] into H.
103. *rebaldaill*] Ribalds all H.
104. [*ony*] *so in* Wyntown; any H; anie A; our E.
108. *That—lyff*] But he should lith H.
109. *held*] led H.
110. *That*] Whome H. *throw*] with H *and* Wyntown.

Had ȝe tane kep quhat was thrillag,
And had *con*sideryt his vsage,
That gryppyt ay, but gayne-gevyng,

Ye should have chosen a king without him.

ȝe suld, for-owtyn his demyng, 116
Haiff chosyn ȝow a king, *that* my*ch*t
Have haldyn veyle *the* land in ry*ch*t.
Walys ensample my*ch*t have bene
To ȝow, had ȝe It forow sene. 120
And wyß men sayis he is happy,
That be o*thir* will him chasty.
For wnfayr thing*is* may fall p*er*fay,
Alß weill to-morn as ȝhist*er*day. 124

But ye trusted in his good faith.

Bot ȝe traistyt in lawte,
As sympile folk, but mawyte;
And wyst no*ch*t quhat suld eft*ir* tyd.
For in *th*is warld, *that* is sa wyde, 128
Is nane det*er*mynat[ly] *th*at sall
Knaw thing*is* *that* ar [for] to fall;

But God alone knows the future.

But god, *that* is off maist poweste,
Res*er*wyt till his maieste 132
For to knaw, in his p*re*science,
Off alkyn tyme the mowence.

Thus, by assent of the barons,

On *th*is man*er* assentyt war
*Th*e barownis, as I said ȝow ar: 136

113. *thrillag*] thirlage H.
116. *forowtyn—demyng*] withoutten his denying H; without his devysing A.
118. *veyle—in*] well your Land at H; *so also in* Wyntown.
120. *forow sene*] well foreseene H; before sene *in* Wyntown.
121, 122. *Wrongly transposed in* E (*and in* PJ); *but* H *and* A *have*—And wise men say he is happie That will therein himselfe chastie.
123. *For wnfayr*] Wyntown *has*—And perylows.
124. *Alss—as*] The morne, as they did H.
125. *in*] into H; unto A.
126. *mawyte*] subtiltie H.
127. *suld*] might H.
129. *determynatly* H] determinat E.
130. *thingis—ar*] any thing that's H. [*for*] *so in* Wyntown *and* H; E *omits.*
131. *But*] For H *and* Wyntown.
132. *Reserwyt*] Reseru'd it H.
134. *alkyn*] *appears like* allryn *in* E, *the* k *being loosely made; printed* allryn PJ; allrin I; *but there is no such word.* H *has*—Of things to come the contingence.
135. *On*] In H. *Printed* In PJ. *The* MS. *has no large letter here, but a space is left for it, and a small* o

And throuch *th*ar aller hale assent,
Messinger*is* till hym *th*ai sent,
*Tha*t was *th*an in the haly land,
On saracenys warrayand. 140

Edward is sent for.

And fra he wyst quhat charge *th*ai had,
He buskyt hym, but mar abad,
And left purpos *tha*t he had tane;
And till Ingland agayne is gayne. 144

He returns from the holy land,

And syne till Scotland word send he,
*Tha*t *th*ai suld mak ane assemble;
And he in hy suld cum to do
In all thing, as *th*ai wrayt him to. 148

and says he will soon come.

But he tho*ch*t weile, throuch *thar* debat,
*Tha*t he suld slely fynd *th*e gate
How *tha*t he all *th*e senȝhowry,
Throw his gret my*ch*t, suld occupy. 152

He offers the crown to Bruce.

And to Robert the brwyß said he,
"Gyff *th*ow will hald in cheyff off me
For eu*ir*mar, and *th*ine ofspryng,
I sall do swa *th*ow sall be king." 156

But Bruce will only have it if left free.

"Schyr," said he, "sa god me save,
*Th*e kynryk ȝharn I no*ch*t to have,
Bot gyff It fall off ry*ch*t to me:
And gyff god will *tha*t It sa be, 160
I sall als frely in all thing
Hald It, as It affer*is* to king;
Or as myn eldr*is* forouch me
Held It in freyast reawte." 164

written in it, as a direction to the rubricator. Wyntown *has* On, *and quotes this line and the next.*

137. *aller*] awin H; owne A.

138. *sent*] went H.

139, 140. Then to the holy land boun was he To Saracens to weere surely H. *For* weere A *has* warre.

141—164 *and* 168—170. *Quoted by* Wyntown (bk. viii. ch. ii. ll. 105—128, and 130—132).

143, 144. *Transposed in* H *and* A.

148. *wrayt*] write H.

150. *the*] sum H.

162. *It afferis to*] langes to a H; afferis a *in* Wyntown.

163. *forouch*] before H *and* Wyntown.

164. *reawte*] Royaltie H.

Edward is wroth.

The to*th*ir wreyth him, and swar
That he suld have It neu*ir* mar:
And turnyt him in wreth away.

But Baliol assents.

Bot s*chir* Ihon the balleoll p*er*fay 168
Assentyt till him, in all his will;
Quhar-throuch fell eft*ir* mekill Ill.

He is king, but not for long,

He was king bot A litill quhile;
And throuch gret sutelte and ghyle, 172
For litill enchesone or nane,
He was arestyt syne and tane,

being soon degraded.

And degradyt syne wes he
Off honour and off dignite. 176
Quhe*thir* it wes throuch wrang or rycht,
God wat It, *that* is maist off mycht!

When Edward had degraded Baliol,

Quhe*n* s*chir* Edward, *the* mychty king,
Had on *th*is wyß done his likyng 180
Off Ihone the balleoll, *that* swa sone
Was all defawtyt & wndone,

he occupied all Scotland,

To Scotland went he *th*an in hy,
And all *the* land gan occupy: 184
Sa hale, *that* bath castell and toune
War in-till his possessioune,

from Wick to the Mull of Galloway.

[Fra Weik anent Orknay]

[Fol. 2 *a*.]

To mullyr-snwk in gallaway: 188
And stuffyt all w*ith* Inglißmen.
Schyrreffys and bailzheys maid he *then*;

All his officers there were Englishmen,

And alkyn o*thir* officer*is*,
That for to gowern land affer*is*, 192

165. *wreyth*] wryit H.
166. *have—neuir*] neuer haue it H.
168. *the*] HA *omit*.
169. *till—in*] sone till H; to do *in* Wyntown.
172. *And*] Quhen H; when A.
173. *nane* for nane H.
177. *it—throuch*] that it was A.
182. *defawtyt*] degradit H.
186. *in-till*] all in A.
187—194. *Quoted by* Wyntown, bk. viii. ch. xviii. 29, 30; ch. xvii. 19—22, and ch. xviii. 31, 32.
187. *From* H *and* Wyntown; E *omits*, l. 186 *being the last on the page*. A *has the same, with* From *for* Fra.
188. *mullyr-snwk*] Mulesnuke H.
192. *for—land*] to gouerne the land H; Wyntown *has* til all governale.

He maid off Inglis nation ;
*Th*at worthyt *th*an sa ryth fellone,
And sa wykkyt and cowatouß,
And swa hawtane and dispitouß, 196
*Th*at Scott*is* men my*ch*t do na thing
*Th*at eu*ir* my*ch*t pleyß to *thar* liking.
*Th*ar wyff*is* wald *th*ai oft forly, who outraged the Scotch.
And *thar* dochtrys dispitusly ; 200
And gyff ony *thar*-at war wrath,
*Th*ai watyt hym wele w*ith* gret scaith ;
For *th*ai suld fynd sone enchesone
To put hym to destructione. 204
And gyff *th*at ony man *th*aim by If any man had a valuable thing, they took it.
Had ony thing *th*at wes worthy,
As horß, or hund, or o*thir* thing,
*Th*at plesand war to *thar* liking, 208
W*ith* ry*ch*t or wrang It have wald *th*ai.
And gyf ony wald *th*aim w*ith*say,
*Th*ai suld swa do, *that th*ai suld tyne
O*th*ir land or lyff, or leyff in pyne. 212
For *th*ai dempt *th*aim eft*ir thar* will, They did as they pleased.
Takand na kep to ry*ch*t na skill.
A ! quhat *th*ai dempt *th*aim felonly !
For gud kny*chtis th*at war worthy, 216
For litill enchesoune or *th*an nane,

194. H *has*—Then worthit they sa feirs and felloun ; Wyntown *has*—þat worthyd so rwyde and so fellown. *ryth*] *printed* rych PJ ; richt I.
195. *cowatouss*] sa greuous H.
196. H *has*—Sa heuy, and sa couetous.
197—212. *Quoted by* Wyntown, *except* 203, 204.
199. *forly*] ly by H.
201. E *inserts* of *th*aim *after* ony; *but* Wyntown *and* H *omit it.*
202. *watyt—with*] wald him wait with a H.
205. *that—man*] ony man neir H.
207. *As—hund*] Hound, or hors H.
208. E *has* war plesand, *but* Wyntown *has* plesand ware ; *cf.* pleasand was H.
210. *withsay*] ganesay H.
211 *suld* (1)] wald H. *thai*] he A.
212. *land—lyff*] lyfe, or land H.
213. *dempt*] *or* demyt ; *the* MS. *seems to have* dempt, *altered to* demyt; dampnit H ; damnit A.
eftir] euen at H.
214. *na skill*] nor ill A.
215. *A quhat*] Alace H.
217. *or than*] and oft for H.

*Th*ai hangyt be *th*e nekbane.

Thus were the Scotch wickedly handled.

Al[a]s ! *that* folk, *that* eu*ir* wes fre,
And in fredome wount for to be, 220
Throw *thar* gret myschance and foly,
War tretyt *th*an sa wykkytly,
*Th*at *thar* fays *thar* Iug*is* war;
Quhat wrechitnes may ma*n* have mar? 224

Ah! freedom is a noble thing!

A ! fredome is A noble thing !
Fredome mayſ man to haiff liking;
Fredome all solace to ma*n* giff*is*:
He levys at eſ *that* frely levys ! 228

A noble heart cannot live without it.

A noble hart may haiff nane eſ,
Na ellys no*ch*t *that* may him pleſ,
Gyff fredome fail3he ; for fre liking
Is 3harnyt our all o*thir* thing. 232
Na he, *that* ay haſ levyt fre,
May nocht knaw weill *th*e propyrte,
*Th*e angyr, na *th*e wrechyt dome,
That is cowplyt to foule thyrldome. 236

He who has been a thrall prizes freedom more than gold.

Bot gyff he had assayit It,
*Th*an all per*que*r he suld It wyt ;
And suld think fredome mar to pryſ
*Th*an all *th*e gold in warld *that* Is. 240
*Th*us *con*trar thing*is* eu*ir*-mar,
Discoweryng*is* off *th*e to*thir* ar.

The thrall can call nothing his.

And he *that* thryll Is has no*ch*t hi*s*,
All *that* he haſ enbandownyt Is 244

218. Were hanged by the neckes ilkane H.
219. *Alas*] Als E; *but* H *has* Alace, *which the sense requires*. *that folk*] they fore H.
220. *in*] ay in H. *wount for*] was wont H.
221. *gret*] H *om*. *and*] and their H.
222. *tretyt*] thirlod H.
225. *A—A*] O how freedome is H.
226. *Fredome*] For it H.
230. *Na—nocht*] Nor nought els H. *him*] it H.
232. *our*] aboue H.
233. *Na*] O H. *ay hass*] hath ay H.
236. *to foule*] vnto H.
238. *suld*] might H.
240. *in—Is*] men may deuise H.
241. *Thus contrar*] For contrarie H.
243. And he that into thraldome is H.
244. *enbandownyt*] *so in* P; embandownyt J; in bandoun H.

Till hys lord, quhat eu*ir* he be.
Yheyt has he no*ch*t sa mekill fre
As fre [liking] to leyve, or do
That at hys hart hym drawis to. 248

*Th*an mayß clerk*is* questioun,
Quhen *th*ai fall in disputacioun,
That gyff man bad his thryll owcht do,
And in *th*e samyn tym come him to 252

His wyff, and askyt hym hyr det,
Quhe*thir* he his lord*is* neid suld let,
And pay fryst *that* he awcht, & syne
Do furth h*is* lord*is* *com*mandyne; 256

Or leve onpayit his wyff, and do
[It] that *com*maundyt Is him to?
I leve all *th*e solucioun
Till thaim *that* ar off mar renoun. 260

Bot sen *th*ai mak sic comperyng
Betwix the dett*is* off wedding,
And lord*is* bidding till his threll;
ȝe may weile se, *th*oucht nane ȝow tell, 264

How hard A thing *that* threldome Is;
For men may weile se, *that* ar wyß,
That wedding is the hardest band
That ony man may tak on hand. 268

And thryldome is weill wer *th*an deid;
For quhill A thryll his lyff may leid,

Some clerks dispute as to what a thrall ought to do in a certain case.

Some compare wedlock to thraldom.

Wedlock is a hard bond.

Thraldom is worse than death.

247. [*liking*] *so in* HA; E *has* wyll, *which clips the line.*
248. *That at*] It that H. *hym drawis*] drawes him H.
249. *Than—clerkis*] And yet Clarkes make H.
251. *That gyff*] If a H.
254. *lordis*] Lords H; wives A. *let*] bet H; beet A; *printed* bet PJ; *but I read the word as* let, *as required by the sense.* Mr Innes (*following* A) *has* wifis ned suld bet, *but I do not think this the right solution; see* l. 258.
255. *awcht*] ow H.
257. *onpayit—wyff*] his Wife vnpayde H.
258. It that his Lord commanded him to H. *For* It E *has Th*ai thing*is*, *which spoils the line.*
260. To men of mare discretion H.
263. *till—threll*] to their will thirl H.
264. *ȝow*] should H.
266. *se*] wit HA.

It merrys him, body and banys,
And dede anoyis him bot anys. 272

None can tell what thraldom is.

Schortly to say, is nane can tell
*Th*e halle condicioun off A threll.

Thus-gat levyt *th*ai, & in sic thrillage;
Bath pur, and *th*ai off hey p*a*rage. 276

Some of the Scotch lords were slain.

For off *th*e lord*is* sum *th*ai slew;
And sum *th*ai hangyt, and sum *th*ai drew;
And sum *th*ai put in [hard] p*r*esoune,
For-owtyn cauß or enchesoun. 280

Sir William of Douglas was imprisoned and slain.

And amang o*thir*, off dowglaß
Put in p*r*esoun s*chir* Wilȝam was,
[Fol. 2b.]
*Tha*t off dowglas was lord and syr;
Off him *th*ai makyt A martyr. 284
Fra thai in p*r*esoune him sleuch,

His land was given to Clifford.

Hys [landis] *tha*t [war] fayr Inewch,
*Th*ai [to] *th*e lord off clyffurd gave.
He had A sone, A litill knave, 288
*Tha*t wes *th*an bot a litill page;
Bot syne he wes off gret waslage,

His son well avenged his death.

Hys fadyr dede he wengyt sua.
*Th*at in Ingland, I wnd*ir*ta, 292
Wes nane off lyve *tha*t hym ne dred;
For he sa fele off harnys sched,
*Tha*t nane *tha*t lyvys *th*aim can tell.

271. *body*] both body H.
272. *bot*] not, but H.
273. *can*] to H.
274. *halle*] sore H.
275—280. *Quoted by* Wyntown, bk. viii. ch. xviii. 49—54.
275. *levyt—sic*] they liued in H.
276. *thai*] rich H.
276. *pur—thai*] sympil and *in* Wyntown.
279. *in*] into H. [*hard*] *supplied from* Wyntown; EH *omit*.
280. *For-owtyn*] Withoutten H; But ony *in* Wyntown.
282. Sir Williame put in prison was H. *schir*] PJ *om*.
284. *makyt*] haue made H.
285. *Fra*] *printed* For J. *Fra—presoune*] For in presoun they H.
286. *Hys—war*] And his lands that were H. E *has* land *that* is; *but see* l. 316.
287. [*to* H] E *om*.
288. *had*] left H.
290. *Bot—off*] And syne came to H.
293. *that—ne*] but they him H.
294. *off harnys*] in armes H.
295. *thaim can*] can it H.

Bot wond*ir*ly hard thing[*is*] fell 296
Till him, or he till state wes bro*ch*t.
*Th*air wes nane auentur *tha*t mo*ch*t
Stunay hys hart, na ger him let
To do *the* thing he wes on set; 300
For he tho*ch*t ay encrely
To do his deid awysily.
He tho*ch*t weill he wes worth na seyle,
That my*ch*t of nane anoyis feyle; 304
& als for till escheve gret thing*is*,
And hard t*ra*walys, and barganyng*is*,
That suld ger his price dowblyt be.
Quharfor, in all his lyve-tyme, he 308
Wes in gret payn, ec gret t*ra*waill;
And neu*ir* wald for myscheiff faill,
Bot dryve *the* thing ry*ch*t to *the* end,
And tak *the* vre *tha*t god wald send. 312
Hys name wes Iames of douglas;
& quhen he herd his fad*ir* was
Put in p*re*soune so fellounly,
And at his land*is* halyly 316
War gevyn to *the* clyffurd, p*er*fay,
He wyst no*ch*t quhat to do na say;
For he had na thing to dispend,

Nothing could daunt young Douglas.

He was ever hardy and persevering.

His name was James of Douglas.

296. *Bot wondirly*] Sa wonder H. *thingis*] thinges H; thing E (*but the contraction for* is *is obviously omitted*). *fell*] befell H.
298. *Thair*] Bot there H.
299. *Stunay*] Astoney H. *him*] it H.
300. *he*] *that* he *in* E, *which spoils the line; but* H *omits* that, *and for* he *has* it.
301. How that he ay thocht ernistly H; A *the same, but with* For *for* How.
303. *weill—seyle*] he was not worth na weill H.
304. *of nane*] not of H.
305. *als—escheve*] that for to encheif H.
306. *And—trawalys*] With hard trauell H.
307. *That*] H *om.* *price*] prise ay H.
308. *Quharfor*] Therefore H.
309. Forsuike neuer paine nor trauell H. *ec*] ec *or* et E.
310. *And*] Nor H.
311. *Bot*] To H. *rycht*] euen H.
312. *vre*] chance H.
316. *halyly*] sa haillely H.
318. *na*] or H.
319. *to*] for to E; *but* H *omits* for.

None would help him.

Na *thar* wes nane *that* eu*ir* [him] kend 320
Wald do sa mekill for him, *that* he
My*ch*t sufficiantly fundyn be.
*Th*an wes he wond*ir* will off wane;

He determined to go abroad to Paris.

And sodanly in hart has tane, 324
That he wald *tra*waile our the se,
And A quhile in paryſ be,
And dre myscheiff quhar nane hy*m* kend,
Till god sum succour*is* till him send. 328
And, as he tho*ch*t, he did ry*ch*t sua,
And sone to paryſ can he ga;
And levyt *th*ar full sympylly.

There he lived awhile in apparently profitless mirth.

*Th*e quhe*thir* he glaid was and Ioly; 332
And till swylk thowlesnes he ȝeid,
As *th*e courſ ask*is* off ȝowtheid;
And wmquhill in-to rybbaldaill:
And *that* may mony tyme awaill. 336
For knawlage off mony stat*is*
May quhile availȝe full mony gat*is*;

Robert, Earl of Artois, often feigned similar gaiety.

As to *th*e gud Erle off Artayis,
Robert, befell in[till] his dayis; 340
For oft feynȝeyng off rybbaldy
Availȝeit him, and *that* gretly.

Cato says it is well to feign folly sometimes.

And Catone sayis ws, in h*is* wryt,
To fenyhe foly quhile is wyt. 344
In parys ner thre ȝer duellyt he;
And *th*en come tythand*is* our *th*e se,
That his fadyr wes done to ded.

320. [*him* HA] E *omits.*
322. *sufficiantly*] with sufficience H.
323. *Than*] Thus H; *the initial* T *is a two-line letter in* H.
326. *in*] into H.
328. *succouris*] succour H.
332. *The quhethir*] Quhere that H.
333. *till—thowlesnes*] to sic exercise oft H.
334. *the*] H *om.* *askis*] craues H.
335, 336. And quhiles in play and vanitie, The quhilk sumtime may auailȝe H.
337. *statis*] estates H.
338. *full*] H *om.*
339. *Artayis*] Artois H.
340. [*intill* HA] in E.
343. *ws in*] intill H.
344. *To*] *That* to E; *but* HA *omit* That.
346. *tythandis*] tything H.

Then wes he wa and will of red; 348
And thoc*ht* *that* he wald hame agayne,
To luk gyff he, throw ony payn,
My*cht* wyn agayn h*is* her*i*tage,
And his men out off all thryllage. 352

On hearing of his father's death, he returns.

[The first rising of Lord Dowglas.]

To sanct Androws he come in hy,
Quhar *the* byschop full curtasly
Resavyt him, and gert him wer
His knyvys, forouch him to scher; 356
And cled him ry*cht* honorabilly,
And gert ordayn quhar he suld ly.
A weile gret quhile *thar* duellyt he;
All men lufyt him for his bounte; 360
For he wes off full fayr effer,
Wyß, curtaiß, and deboner;
Larg and luffand als wes he,
And our all thing luffyt lawte. 364

He comes to the bishop of St Andrews.

He is much loved.

Leavte to luff is gretumly;
Throuch leavte liff*is* men ry*ch*twisly:
W*ith* A wertu [of] leavte
A man may ȝeit sufficyand be: 368
And but leawte may nane haiff p*ri*ce,
Quhe*thir* he be wy*cht* or he be wyß;
For quhar It failȝeys, na wertu
May be off price, na off valu, 372
To mak A man sa gud, *that* he
May symply gud man callyt be.

The praise of fidelity.

348. *wa and*] wonder H.
352. *all*] A *om.*
RUBRIC. *From* HA. *Line* 353 *begins with a large* T *in* HA; *no break here in* E.
355. *wer*] beare H.
356. *forouch*] to carue to H. *to*] and H.
357. *rycht*] then full H.
358. *gert ordayn*] ordainde chamber H.
360. *lufyt him*] him loued H.
365. *gretumly*] no folly H.
367. *A*] one H. [*of* HA] & E (*which spoils the sense*).
370. *he*] that he H. *he be* (2)] H *om.*
374. *gud—callyt*] callyt gud man E; good man called HA.

He was always leal.

He wes in all his ded*is* lele;
For him dedeynȝeit no*ch*t to dele 376
W*ith* *tre*chery, na w*ith* falset.
His hart on hey honour wes set:
And hym *con*tenyt on sic maner,
[Fol. 8 *a*.] *Tha*t all him luffyt *tha*t war him ner. 380
Bot he wes no*ch*t sa fayr, *tha*t we
Suld spek gretly off his beaute:

He was gray in visage, and had black hair;

In wysage wes he sumdeill gray,
And had blak har, as Ic hard say; 384
Bot off ly*m*mys he wes weill maid,
W*ith* banys gret & schuldrys braid.

his body was well made.

His body wes weyll [maid and lenye,]
As *th*ai *tha*t saw hym said to me. 388
Quhen he wes blyth, he wes lufly,
And meyk and sweyt in cumpany:
Bot quha in battaill my*ch*t him se,
All o*th*ir *con*tenance had he. 392

He lisped somewhat.

And in spek wlispyt he sum deill;
Bot *th*at sat him ry*ch*t wondre weill.
Till gud Ector of troy mycht he
In mony thing*is* liknyt be. 396

Hector had also black hair and lisped;

Ector had blak har as he had,
And stark ly*m*mys and ry*ch*t weill maid;
And wlispyt alsua as did he,
And wes fullfillyt of leawte, 400
& wes curtaiß and wyß and wy*ch*t.
Bot off ma*n*heid and mekill mycht,

but I dare compare none with Hector.

Till Ector dar I nane comper
Off all *tha*t eu*ir* in warldys wer. 404

376. *him dedeynȝeit*] he dedeinyied H; he denyed A.
377. *trechery*] tratourie H.
379. *contenyt*] contented H.
385. *Bot*] But then H.
387. *wes*] H *om*. [*maid—lenye*] made and lenye H; made and lenyie A; *blank space in* E.
392. *All othir*] Another H.
393. *spek—he*] his speech lisped H.
394. *Bot*] And H. *sat*] set H.
400. *leawte*] all bountie H.
401. *and wyss*] wise H.
404. *warldys*] warld H (*which seems better*).

The qu[h]ethyr In his tyme sa wro*ch*t he,
That he suld gretly lovyt be.

HE duellyt *th*ar, quhill on A tid,
The king Eduuard, w*ith* mekill prid, 408 King Edward comes to Stirling.
Come to strevillyne w*ith* gret mengȝe,
For till hald *thar* ane assemble.
*Th*idd*ir*wart went mony baroune;
Byschop Wylȝame off lambyrtoun 412
Raid *th*iddyr als, and w*ith* him was
*Th*is squyer Iames of dowglas.
The byschop led him to *the* king, Bishop William leads Douglas to King Edward,
And said, "*schir*, heyr to ȝow I bryng 416
*Th*is child, *that* clemys ȝour man to be;
And pray[i]s ȝow p*ar* cheryte,
That ȝe resave her h*is* homage,
And grant*is* him his her*i*tage." 420
"Quhat land*is* clemys he?" said *the* king.
"Schyr, giff *that* It be ȝour liking,
He clemys the lordschip off douglas; saying that he claims the lordship of Douglas.
For lord *thar*off hys fad*ir* was." 424
The king *th*en wrethyt him encrely,
And said, "*schir* byschop, sekyrly,
Gyff *th*ow wald kep *th*i fewte,
*Th*ow maid nane sic speking to me. 428
Hys fadyr ay wes my fay feloune, Edward refuses the claim,
And deyt *thar*for in my p*r*esoun;
And wes agayne my maieste:

405. *The quhethyr*] For H.
407. *quhill*] thus till H.
409. *strevillyne*] Starling H; Sterling A.
411. *Thiddirwart*] Hitherward H. *mony*] many a H.
412. *Byschop*] And Bishop H.
413. *Raid*] Went A. *thiddyr*] hither H.
414. *This squyer*] His Esquyre H.
416. *to—I*] to you I HA; I to ȝow E.
418. *prayis*] prayeth H; prays E. *par*] for H.
420. *grantis*] grant to H.
425. *wrethyt — encrely*] wrythed him angerly H.
428. *maid*] mak H; make A; (*which seems better*).
429. *fay*] HA *om.*

*Th*arfor hys ayr I aucht to be. 432
Ga purches land quhar eu*ir* he may;
For *thar*off haffys he nane p*er*fay:
The Clyffurd sall *th*aim haiff, for he
Ay lely has *ser*wyt to me." 436
The byschop hard him swa ansuer,
And durst *th*an spek till him na mar;
Bot fra his presence went in hy,
For he dred sayr his felouny: 440
Swa *that* he na mar spak *thar*to.
The king did *that* he com to do;
And went till Ingland syn agayn,
W*ith* mony man off mekill mayn. 444

and says he will maintain Clifford.

The bishop retires.

Scoti assimilantur Sanctis Machabeis.

Here begins THE ROMANCE.

Lording*is*, quha likis for till her,
The Romanys now begy*n*nys her,
Off men *that* war in gret distreß,
And assayit full gret hardynes, 448
Or *th*ai my*ch*t cum till *thar* entent:
Bot syne our lord sic grace *th*aim sent,
*That th*ai syne, throw *th*ar gret walour,
Come till gret hy*ch*t & till honour, 452
Magre *thar* fayis eu*ir*ilkane,
That war sa fele, *that* [ay for] ane
Off *th*aim, *th*ai war weill a thowsand.
Bot quhar god helpys, quhat may w*ith*stand? 456
Bot and we say *the* suthfastnes,

God sent our heroes his grace,

making one of them worth a thousand.

432. *hys—aucht*] I aucht his aire H.
434. *haffys*] gets H.
435. *thaim haiff*] haue them H.
436. *lely*] leillely he H. *to*] H *om.*
442. *The king*] But H. *com*] came for H.
443. *And—syn*] The king in England went H.
RUBRIC. *Written in margin, with reference to* l. 465.
446. *Romanys*] Romanes H; Romance A.
451. *syne*] sensyne HA. *thar*] HA *om.*
452. *till* (2)] hie H.
454. [*ay for* HA] ane till E (*which makes no sense*).
456. *quhat*] quha H; who A.
457. *Bot and*] Zet yif H.

*Th*ai war sum tyme erar may *th*en les.
Bot god, *that* maist is of all my*ch*t,
Pre*ser*wyt *th*aim in his forsycht, 460
To weng *th*e harme and *th*e contrer,
At *that* fele folk and pautener
Dyd till Sympill folk and worthy,
That couth no*ch*t help *th*aim-self; for-*th*i 464
*Th*ai war lik to *th*e machabeys,
That, as men in *th*e bibill seys,
Throw *thar* gret worschip and walour,
Fawcht in-to mony stalwart stour, 468
For to delyu*ir* *th*ar countre
Fra folk *that*, throw Iniquite,
Held *th*aim and *thair*is in thrillage:
*Th*ai wro*ch*t sua throw *thar* wasselage, 472
That *with* few folk *th*ai had wictory
Off my*ch*ty king*is*, as sayis *th*e story,
And delyu*er*yt *th*ar land all fre;
Quharfor *th*ar name suld lovyt be. 476

They were like the Machabees,

who delivered their country.

[Fol. 3 b.]

Thys lord *th*e brwyß, I spak of ayr,
Saw all *th*e kynryk swa forfayr;
And swa trowblyt *th*e folk saw he,
That he *th*aroff had gret pitte. 480
Bot quhat pite *that* eu*ir* he had,
Na *con*tenance *thar*-off he maid;
Till on A tym Schyr Ihone Cumyn,
As *th*ai come ridand fra strewillyn, 484
Said till him, "s*chir*, will ȝe no*ch*t se
How *that* gou*er*nyt is *th*is countre?
*Th*ai sla our folk but enchesoune,

The Bruce has pity on his country,

and talks with Sir John Comyn.

458. They were eir maire than they were lesse H.
459. *maist—all*] is of mekill H.
461. *harme*] harmes H. *contrer*] contrares H.
462. That thay fell folke and oppressares H. *pautener*] *printed* pantener PJI.
464. *help*] save A.
475. *land*] lands A.
476. *name*] names A.
484. *strewillyn*] Striuiling H.
487. *sla*] slew A.

And hald*is* *th*is land agayne resoune, 488
And ȝe *thar*off suld lord be.

Comyn offers him the kingdom

And gyff *that* ȝe will trow to me,
ȝe sall ger mak [yow] *thar*off king,
And I sall be in ȝour helping; 492

In exchange for his lands;

W*ith*-*th*i ȝe giff me all *th*e land,
*Th*at ȝe haiff now in-till ȝour hand;
And gyff *that* ȝe will no*ch*t do sua,
Na swylk A state apon yow ta, 496

or to give his own lands to Bruce, and be king himself.

All hale my land sall ȝour*is* be;
And lat me ta *th*e state on me,
And bring *th*is land out off thyrllage.
For *thar* is no*thir* man na page, 500
In all *th*is land *th*an *th*ai sall be
Fayn to mak *th*aim-selwyn fre."
*Th*e lord *th*e brwiſ hard his carping,
And wend he spak bot suthfast thing. 504
And for It likit till his will,

Bruce consents to take the kingdom.

He gave his assent sone *thar*till:
And said, "sen ȝe will It be swa,
I will blythly apon me ta 508
*Th*e state, for I wate *that* I have ry*ch*t;
And ry*ch*t mayſ oft *th*e feble wy*ch*t."

THE barownys *thus* accordyt ar,
And *that* Ilk ny*ch*t w*r*ityn war 512

Indentures are drawn up to this effect.

*Th*air Endentur*is*, and aythis maid,
To hald *that* *th*ai forspokyn haid.
Bot off all thing, wa worth tresoun!
For *thar* is no*thir* duk ne baroun, 516

488. *haldis*] hes HA.
491. Ye shall thereof gar make you king H. [*yow*] you HA; E *om.*
494. *ȝe*] *printed* ye P; he J.
501. *than*] but H. *sall*] will H.
502. *Fayn*] With vs H.
504. *wend*] weinde H.
509. *state*] name H. *that*] H *om.*
510. *mayss*] takes H.
511. *The*] *written* yE *in* E.
513. *and*] H *om.*
516. *duk*] Earle H.

Na Erle, na prynce, na king off my*ch*t,
*Thoch*t he be neu*ir* sa wyſ na wycht, — But who can guard against treason?
For wyt, worschip, price, na renoun,
That eu*ir* may wauch hym w*ith* tresoune! 520
Wes no*ch*t all troy w*ith* tresoune tane,
Quhen x ȝer*is* of *the* wer wes gane? — The siege of Troy,
*Th*en slayn wes mone thowsand
Off *th*aim w*ith*-owt, throw strenth of hand, 524
As Dares in his buk he wrate, — as told by Dares and Dictys.
And Dyt*is*, *that* knew all *th*ar state.
*Th*ai my*ch*t no*ch*t haiff beyn tane throw my*ch*t,
Bot tresoun tuk *th*aim throw hyr sly*ch*t. 528
And Alexand*er the con*queroure, — Alexander was destroyed by treason.
That conqueryt Babilonys tour,
And all this warld off lenth and breid,
In xij yher, throw his douchty deid, 532
Wes syne destroyit throw pwsoune,
In his awyne howſ, throw gret tresoune.
Bot, or he deit, his land delt he:
To se his dede wes gret pite. 536
Iulius Cesar als, *that* wan — Julius Cæsar,
Bretane and fraunce, as dowchty man,
Affryk, arrabe, egipt, Surry,
And all evrope halyly; 540
And for his worschip & valour
Off Rome wes fryst maid Emp*er*our; — Emperor of Rome,
Syne in hys capitole wes he,
Throw *th*aim of his *con*saill pr*i*ue, 544
Slayne w*ith* pu[*n*]soune ry*ch*t to the ded. — was slain treasonably.

517. *Erle*] Duke H.
519. *price*] praise H.
520. *wauch—with*] keepe him fra H.
522. *w*] ten H. *wer*] siege H.
523. Where there was slaine aught hunder thousand H.
525. *he*] did H.
526. And dyted their battell and their state H.
532. *xij*] twelue H.
534. *gret*] H *om.*
538. *dowchty*] worthy H.
539. *Surry*] and Syrie H.
540. *all evrope*] als Europe all H.
545. *punsoune*] punsoun (=punchion *in* Halliwell) *is the reading of Freebairn's edition;* E *has* pusoune, *miswritten for* pũsoune; H *has* botkins, *evidently a gloss upon* punsoune.

And quhen he saw *thar* wes na rede,
Hys Eyn w*ith* his hand closit he,
For to dey w*ith* mar honeste. 548

King Arthur,

Als Arthur, *that* throw chevalry
Maid Bretane maistres & lady
Off xij kin[rykis] *th*at he wan;
And alsua, as A noble man, 552
He wan throw bataill fraunce all fre;

who vanquished Lucius Iberius,

And lucius yber wencusyt he,
*That th*en of Rome wes emp*er*our:
Bot ȝeit, for all his gret valour, 556

was slain by Modred.

Modreyt his Syst*ir* Son him slew,
And gud men als, ma *th*en Inew,
Throw tresoune and throw wikkitnes,

The "Brute" bears witness of it.

*Th*e broite ber*is tha*roff wytnes. 560
Sa fell off *th*is conand making:
For *th*e Cwmyn raid to *th*e king
Off Ingland, & tald all *th*is caß,
Bot, I trow, no*ch*t all as It was. 564

Comyn shows Edward the indenture.

Bot *th*e Endentur till him gaf he,
That soune schawyt *th*e Iniquite;
Quharfor syne he tholyt ded;
*Th*an he couth set *thar*for na rede. 568

Edward swears he will take vengeance,

Quhen *th*e king saw *th*e Enden*t*ur,
He wes angry out of mesur,
And swour *that* he suld wen*g*eance ta
[Fol. 4.] Off *that* brwyß, *that* pr*e*sumyt swa 572

547. *his—closit*] hand enclosed H.
550. *Maid*] Had H.
551. *kinrykis*] kin (*followed by a blank*) E; Kinrikes H.
554. *yber*] Tyber H.
555. *That then*] Then he H.
557. *Modreyt*] Modreed H; Mordreed A.
560. *broite*] Bruce H.
561. *fell*] fell it HA. *conand*] cunning HA.
562. *For*] A *om.* *raid to*] went unto A.
563. *this*] the H.
565. *Bot*] H *om.*
566. *That soune*] And syne H.
567. *Quharfor*] And therefore H.
568. That to it could set na remead H.
572. *that* (1)] the H.

Aganys him to brawle or ryß,
Or to *con*spyr on sic A wyß.
And to Schyr Ihon cumyn said he,
*Tha*t he suld, for his leawte, 576
Be rewardyt and *that* hely:
And he him thankit humyly.
Than tho*ch*t he to have *th*e leding
Off all Scotland, but gane-saying, 580
Fra at *th*e brwce to dede war bro*ch*t.
Bot oft failȝeis *th*e fulis tho*ch*t;
And wyß me*n*nys etling
Cu*m*mys no*ch*t ay to *that* ending 584
*That th*ai think It sall cum to;
For god wate weill quhat is to do.
Off hys etlyng ry*cht* swa It fell,
As I sall eft*ir*wart*is* tell. 588
He tuk his leve and hame is went;
And *th*e king A pa*r*lyament
Gert set *thar*eft*ir* hastely:
And *th*idd*ir* Somownys he in hy 592
*Th*e barownys of his reawte.
And to *th*e lord *th*e bruce send he
Bydding to com to *that* gadryng.
And he, *that* had na pe*r*sawyng 596
Off *th*e tresoun, na *th*e falset,
Raid to *th*e king but lang*ir* let;
And in lundon hym herberyd he
*Th*e fyrst day off *thar* assemble. 600
Syn on the morn to court he went,

and promises to reward Comyn.

All does not happen as expected.

The king summons his barons.

Bruce goes to London.

573. *to*] for to H.
579. *Than—he*] And thought well H.
581. *at*] that H. *dede*] death H. *war*] was H.
582. *the*] that H.
583. *etling*] ettelling H.
585. *It sall*] that it sould H.
586. *wate weill*] wats H. *to do*] ado H.
588. *eftirwartis*] afterwards you H.
590. *And*] And then A. *A*] *so in* A; cummed a H.
591. *Gert—thareftir*] Hes set, then after H.
592. *thiddir Somownys*] hidder summon H; hidder summond A.
593. *reawte*] fewtie H.
594. *send*] sent H.

*Th*e kyng sat into pa*r*leament;
And forouch hys *con*saile p*ri*ue,
Edward shows Bruce the indenture, *Th*e lord *th*e bruce *th*ar callyt he, 604
And schawyt hym *th*e Endentur.
He wes in full gret auentur
To tyne his lyff; bot god of my*ch*t
Prese*r*wyt him till hyer hycht, 608
*Tha*t wald no*ch*t *tha*t he swa war dede.
*Th*e king betaucht hym in *tha*t steid
*Th*e Endentur, *th*e Seile to Se,
and asks if he sealed it. And askyt, gyff It enselyt he? 612
He lukyit *th*e Seyle ententily,
And answeryt till hym humyly,
And sayd, "how *tha*t I Sympill be!
My Seyle is no*ch*t all tyme w*ith* me; 616
Ik have ane o*thir* It to ber.
Bruce asks for time to consider, *Th*arfor giff *tha*t ȝ*ou*r willis wer,
Ic ask ȝow respyt for to Se
*Th*is lett*ir*, and *tharwith* awysit be, 620
Till to morn, *tha*t ȝe be set.
And *th*en, for-owtyn lang*ir* let,
*Th*is lett*ir* sall I entyr heyr,
Befor all ȝour *con*saill planer; 624
and pledges his lands for his appearance. And *thar*-till in-to borwch draw I
Myn herytage all halily."
*Th*e king tho*ch*t he wes traist Inewch,
Sen he in bowrch hys land*is* drewch; 628
And let hym w*ith* *th*e lett*ir* passe,
Till entyr It, as for-spokin was.

603. *forouch*] before H.
608. *Preserwyt*] Reserued H.
610. *betaucht*] besought H.
612. *It enselyt*] that it sealde H.
613. *ententily*] full tentiuely H.
614. *till—humyly*] him full meakely H.
615. *how*] though H (*quite wrongly*).
617. *Ik*] I H.
620. *This*] The H. *awysit be*] auise me H.
621. *to*] the H.
622. *for-owtyn*] but ony H.
623. *This*] The H.
624. *all*] H *om*. *consaill planer*] Court planyéere H.
625. *borwch*] broch H; a bourgh A.
628. *Sen—landis*] Gif he his land in Borrow H.
630. *Till*] To H. *It*] H *om*.

[BOOK II.]

Quhow the bruce escheuit king edwardis deseit.

[The escaping of the Bruce, and the deade of Iohn Cuming.]

THE bruys went till his Innys swyth ;
Bot wyt ȝe weile he wes full blyth,
*Th*at he had gottyn *tha*t respyt.
He callit his marschall till him tyt, 4
And bad him luk on all maner,
*Tha*t he ma till his men gud cher ;
For he wald in his chambre be,
A weill gret quhile in p*ri*uate, 8
W*ith* him A clerk for-owtyn ma.
*Th*e marschell till *th*e hall gan ga,
And did hys lordys co*m*manding.
*Th*e lord *th*e bruce, but mar letting, 12
Gert p*ri*uely bryng Stedys twa.
He and *th*e clerk, for-owtyn ma,
Lap on, for-owtyn p*er*sawyng :
And day and nycht, but soiournyng, 16
*Th*ai raid ; quhill, on *th*e fyften day,

The Bruce gres to his lodging.

He tells his marshal he wishes to be private.

He and his clerk get steeds,

RUBRIC. *The first rubric is in* E, *the second in* H.
1. *Begins in* E *with* yE, *the small* y *being written in a square space.*
2. *Bot*] And H.
6. *ma till*] made to H.
7. *wald*] will H.
9. *A*] ane H ; one A. *for-owtyn*] and na H.
14. *He*] And he H. *for-owtyn*] withoutten H.
15. *for-owtyn*] withoutten H.
17. *fyften*] fyft H.

and ride to Lochmaben in 15 days.

Cu*m*myn till louchmaban ar *th*ai.
Hys brod*ir* Eduuard *thar th*ai fand,
*Th*at thoc*h*t ferly, Ic tak on hand, 20
*Th*at *th*ai come hame sa pr*i*uely :

Bruce tells his brother of his escape.

He tauld hys brodyr halyly,
How *that* he *th*ar soucht was,
And how he chapyt wes throw caſ. 24

Hic Iohannes cumyn & alii occiduntur in ecclesia Fratrum.

At this time Comyn was at Dumfries.

Sa fell It in the Samyn tid,
*Th*at at Dumfreſ, ry*ch*t *thar* besid,
Schir Ihone *th*e Cumyn soiornyng maid ;
The bruſ lap on, and *th*idd*ir* raid ; 28
And thoc*h*t, for-owtyn mar letting,
For to qwyt hym his discoueryng.
*Th*idd*ir* he raid, but lang*ir* let,

Bruce shows Comyn the indenture in the Friars' church, and slays him.

And w*ith* Schyr Ihone *th*e Cumyn met, 32
In *th*e frer*is*, at *th*e hye Awter,
And schawyt him, w*ith* lauchand cher,
The Endentur ; syne w*ith* A knyff,
Ry*ch*t in *that* sted, hym reft *th*e lyff. 36
Schyr Edmund cumy*n* als wes slayn,
And o*th*ir [als] off mekill mayn.
[And] no*ch*t-for-*th*i ȝeit su*m* men sayis,
At *that* debat fell o*thir* wayis : 40
But quhat sa euyr maid *th*e debate,

[Fol. 4 b.] *Th*ar-throuch he deyt, weill I wat.

18. *louchmaban*] Lochmabene H.
20. *Io tak*] he tooke H.
21. *That thui*] For to H.
23. *soucht*] summond H.
24. *chapyt wes*] escaped H.
27. *the—soiornyng*] Cumyng soiourne H.
28. *and—raid*] but ony bade H.
31. *Thiddir*] Hidder H.
32. And Sir Iohn Cumyng there he met H.
33. *freris*] Friers H. *Awter*] Altar H.
34. *lauchand*] bourding H.
36. *sted—the*] place he reft his H.
37. *Edmund*] Edward H.
38. [*als* HA] mony E.
39. [*And* HA] E *om.*
40. *At*] That H.
41. *maid the*] fell in H.
42. *wat*] waite H.

He mysdyd *thar* gretly, but wer,
*Th*at gave na gyrth to the Awter. 44
*Th*arfor sa hard myscheiff him fell,
*Th*at Ik herd neu*ir* in Romanys tell
Off man sa hard [sted] as wes he,
*Th*at eft*ir*wart com to sic bounte. 48

Bruce sinned in this, and afterwards suffered much hardship.

Hic rex anglie inquirit Robertum bruce, sed non inuenit.

Now agayne to *th*e king ga we;
*Th*at on *th*e morn, w*ith* his barne,
Sat in till his p*ar*leament;
And eftyr *th*e lord *th*e brwyß he sent, 52
Ry*ch*t till his In, w*ith* kny*ch*t*is* kene.
Quhen he oft tyme had callit bene,
And his men eft*ir* him askit *th*ai,
*Th*ai Said *th*at he, sen ȝhyst*ir*day, 56
Duelt in his chambyr ythanly,
W*ith* A clerk w*ith* him an*er*ly.
*Th*an knokyt *th*ai at his chamur *th*ar;
And quhen *th*ai hard nane mak ansuar, 60
*Th*ai brak *th*e dur; but *th*ai fand nocht,
*Th*e quhe*th*ir *th*e chambre hale *th*ai so*ch*t.
*Th*ai tauld *th*e king *th*an hale *th*e caß,
And how *th*at he eschapyt was. 64
He wes off his eschap sary;
And swour In Ire, full stalwartly,
*Th*at he suld drawyn and hangit be.
He manausyt as him tho*ch*t: bot he 68

King Edward sends for Bruce.

His door is broken open, but he is gone.

Edward swears to hang Bruce

43. *thar*] that H. *Perhaps* gretly *should precede* thar.
44. *gyrth*] *so in* HA. *Awter*] Alteere H.
46. *Romanys*] Romanes H.
47. [*sted* HA] frayit E.
48. *That—com*] And after came H.
RUBRIC. *From* E; *not in* H.
50. *morn*] morrow H. *barne*] barnie H; baronie A.
53. *In*] Innes H.
57. *ythanly*] ithandly H.
58. *With*] And H.
59. *his chamur*] the chamber H.
62. He was away that they there soght H.
63. *than*] all H.
68. *manausyt*] menassed H; mamassed A.

Thoucht *that* suld paß ane o*thir* way.

Hic robertus bruce mittit literas ad conuocandum.

And quhen he, as ye hard me say,
In-till *th*e kyrk Schyr Ihone haid slayn,
Bruce returns to Lochmaben. Till louchmabane he went agayne ; 72
And gert men, w*ith* his let*t*res, ryd
To freynd*is* apon Ilk[a] sid,
That come to hym w*ith* *th*ar mengȝe ;
& his men als assemblit he : 76
And tho*ch*t *that* he wald mak him king.
News of Comyn's death reaches the bishop of St Andrew's. Our all *th*e land *th*e word gan spryng,
That *th*e bruce *th*e cumyn had slayn ;
And, amang o*thir*, let*t*res ar gayn 80
To *th*e byschop off Androwß towne,
That tauld how slayn wes *that* baroun.
*Th*e lett*ir* tauld hym all *th*e deid :
And he till his men [can it] reid ; 84
The bishop remembers the prophecy of Thomas of Ercildoun. And sythyn said *th*aim, "sekyrly
I hop [that] Thomas prophecy
Off hersildoune sall [verray] be
In him ; for, swa our lord help me ! 88
I haiff gret hop he sall be king.
And haiff *th*is land all in leding."

[The Dowglas meeting with King Robert.]

Douglas hears the news. Iames off dowglas, *that* ay-quhar
All-wayis befor *th*e byschop schar, 92
Had weill hard all *th*e lett*ir* red ;

69. *that*] it H.
RUBRIC. *From* E ; *not in* H.
71. *Schyr Ihone*] Iohn Cumyng H.
72. *louchmabane*] Lochmabene H.
74. *Ilka*] E *has* Ilk ; *but I propose to read* Ilka, *to fill up the line ; besides*, H *has* ilke.
75. *That come*] They came H.
78. *gan*] can H.
79. *the—had*] had the Cumyng H.
82. *that*] the H.
83. *all*] haill H.
84. [*can it* HA] gert E.
85. *And—thaim*] And then he said, full H.
86. [*that* HA] E *omits*.
87. *hersildoune*] Erstiltoun H. [*verray* HA] weryfyd E.
88. *help me*] me see H.
RUBRIC. *From* H ; *not in* E.
93. *Had—all*] He had well heard H.

And he tuk alsua full gud hed
To [all] *that the* byschop had said.
And quhen *the* burdys doun war laid, 96
Till chamyr went *thai then* in hy:
And Iames off dowglas p*ri*uely
Said to *the* byschop; "s*chir*, ȝe se
How Inglis men, throw *thar* powste, 100
Dysherysys me off my land;
And me*n* has gert ȝow wnd*ir*stand
Als *that the* Erle off Carryk
Clamys to govern *the* kynryk: 104
And, for ȝon man *that* he has slayn,
All Inglis men ar him agayn,
And wald disheryſ hym bly*th*ly;
The quhe*thir* wi*th* him duell wald I. 108
*Th*arfor, Schir, giff It war *ȝour* will,
I wald tak w*ith* him gud & Ill.
Throw hym I trow my land to wyn,
Magre *the* clyffurd and his kyn." 112
*Th*e byschop hard, and had pite,
And said: "swet son, sa god help me!
I wald bly*th*ly *that* *th*ow war *thar*.
Bot, at I no*ch*t reprowyt war, 116
On *th*is maner weile wyrk *tho*u may;
*Th*ow sall tak ferrand my palfray;
For *thar* na horſ is in *th*is land
Sa [wycht], na ȝeit sa weill at hand; 120

He talks with the bishop.

He declares for the Bruce.

The bishop wishes him well,

and advises him to make off with Ferrand, his own palfray.

95. [*all* HA] E *om.*
96. *burdys*] boordes H.
97. *thai*] he H.
101. *Dysherysys—off*] Disherites me of all H.
102. *has*] haue H.
104. *the*] this H.
106. *ar*] at HA (*evidently wrong*).
108. And in a Lyne with him am I H.
109. *war*] be H.
111. *trow*] thinke H.
114. *help me*] me see H.
115. *thow*] ye H.
116. *Bot at*] Sa that H.
118. *sall—ferrand*] salt take farrand H.
119. *For—is*] E *really has* And for *thar* is na horss; *but* H *has* For thar na horse is (*far better*).
120. [*wycht*] wight HA; swycht E (*probably by confusion between* wyght *and* swift). *at hand*] rinnand H.

Tak him as off *th*ine awyne [heid],
As I had gevyn *thar*-to na reid.
And gyff his ȝhemar oucht gruchys,
Luk *th*at *th*ow tak him magre his ; 124
Swa sall I weill assonȝeit be.

The bishop blesses him.

[Almy*ch*ty] god, for his powste,
Graunt *th*at he *th*ow pass*is* to,
& *th*ow [sa weill all tyme may] do, 128
*Th*at ȝe ȝow fra ȝowr fayis defend ! "
He taucht him silu*er* to dispend ;
& syne gaiff him [his benisoun],
& bad him paß [his way off toun] ; 132
For he ne wald spek till he war gane.

Douglas takes the bishop's horse,

*Th*e dowglas *th*en his way has tane
Ry*ch*t to *th*e horß, as he him bad :
Bot he, *th*at him in ȝhemsell had, 136
*Th*an warnyt hym dispitously.
Bot he, *th*at wreth him encrely,
Fellyt hym w*ith* A suerdys dynt.

[Fol. 5.]

And syne, for-owty*n* lang*ir* stynt, 140
*Th*e horß he sadylt hastely,

and leaps on his back.

And lap on hym delyu*er*ly ;
And passyt furth but leve-taking.
Der god, *th*at Is off hevy*n* king, 144
Sawff hym, and scheld him fra h*is* fayis !
All him alane *th*e way he tais

121. [*heid*] hewid E; head HA; *but* heid *is clearly required here.*
123. *ȝhemar—gruchys*] keeper oft grunches H; *but for* oft A *has* ought.
125. *weill*] mair H. *assonȝeit*] assonyied H.
126. [*Almychty*] Almighty HA; Mych*ty* E.
127. E *has—that* he *that*; *but the second* that *should be omitted, as in* HA.
128. [*sa—do*] sa well all time may do HA; in all tyme sa weill to do E (*badly*).
130. *to dispend*] for to spend H.
131. [*his benisoun*] his bennisoun H; gud day E (*two syllables short*).
132. [*his—toun* H] furth on his way E.
133. *ne—spek*] wald sleepe H.
136. *ȝhemsell*] keeping H.
138. *wreth—encrely*] wraithes him angerly H.
140. *for-owtyn*] but ony H.
144. *off hevyn*] ouer all things H.

Towart *th*e towne off louchmabane,
And, A litill fra Aryk-stane, 148
*Th*e bruce w*ith* A gret rout he met,
That raid to Scone, for to be set
In king*is* stole, and to be king.
& quhen dowglas saw hys cu*m*myng, 152
He raid, and hailsyt him in hy,
And lowtyt him Full curtasly;
And tauld him haly all his state,
& quhat he was, & als how-gat 156
*Th*e Clyffurd held his he*ri*tage:
And *that* he come to mak homage
Till him as till his ry*ch*twiß king;
And at he boune wes, in all thing, 160
To tak w*ith* him *th*e gud and Ill.
And quhen *th*e bruce had herd h*is* will,
He resawyt him in gret daynte,
And men, and armys, till him gaff he. 164
He tho*ch*t weile he suld be worthy;
For all his eldr*is* war douchty.
*Th*usgat maid *th*ai *thar* aquentance,
That neu*ir* syne, for nakyn chance, 168
Dep*ar*tyt quhill *th*ai lyffand war.
*Th*air frendschip woux ay mar & mar:
For he *ser*wyt ay lelely;
And *th*e to*thir* full wilfully, 172
That was bat*h* worthy, wycht, & wyß,
Rewardyt him weile his *ser*uice.

Douglas goes to Lochmaben,

and meets Bruce,

and tells him his grudge against Clifford.

Bruce receives him.

Their friendship was unbroken.

148. *Aryk*] Ayrik H.
150. *That*] He H.
154. *him Full*] to him H.
156. *how-gat*] what gate H.
161. *the*] baith H.
164. *gaff*] taught H.
165. *thocht*] trowed H.
166. *eldris*] friends H.
168. *syne—chance*] yet for na mischance H.
170. *woux ay*] ay waxt H.
172. *tothir full*] other ay H.

[Coronatio Regis Roberti.]

Bruce rides to Glasgow,

THE lord *the* bruce to glaskow raid,
& send about him, quhill he haid 176
Off his freynd*is* A gret menȝhe.

and thence to Scone, and is crowned.

& syne to Scone in hy raid he,
And wes maid king but lang*ir* let,
And in *the* king*is* stole wes set; 180
As in *that* tyme wes *the* maner.
Bot off *thar* noble*is* gret affer,
*Th*ar ser*u*ice, na *thar* realte,
ȝe sall her na thing now for me; 184

Bruce receives homage.

Owtane *that* he off *the* barnage,
That thidd*ir* come, tok homage;
And syne went our all *the* land,
Frend*is*, and frendschip purchesand, 188
To maynteym *that* he had begu*n*nyn.

He expects to have hard fighting.

He wyst, or all *the* land war wonnyn,
He suld fynd full hard barganyng
W*ith* him *that* wes off Ingland king: 192
For *thar* wes nane off lyff sa fell,
Sa pautener, na sa cruell.

[Book II; Jam.]

And quhen to king Eduuard wes tauld,

Edward hears of Comyn's death.

How at *the* brwyſ, *that* wes sa bauld, 196
Had bro*cht* *the* cumyn till ending,
& how he syne had maid him king,
Owt off his wyt he went weill ner;
And callit till him Schir amer 200

RUBRIC. *From* H; *not in* E.
175. *A blank space is left for the initial* Y (= TH). *glaskow*] Glasgow H.
180. *stole*] stoole he H.
182. *nobleis gret*] noble and great H; *printed* noble gret PJ.
184. *na—for*] now nathing of H.
186. *thiddir*] hidder H. *tok*] tooke their H.
187. *went our*] he went ouer H.
189. *maynteym*] *so in* E; maintaine H. *begunnyn*] begun H.
190. *land—wonnyn*] lands were win H.
191. *He*] That he H.
193. *off*] in H.
194. *pautener*] *printed* pantener PJI; proud, sa hie H.
197. *till*] to an H.
198. *syne had*] had syne H.
199. *went weill*] yced full H.
200. *callit till*] syne gart call H.

The wallang, *that* wes wyſ and wy*ch*t,
And off his hand A worthy kny*ch*t,
And bad him men off armys ta,
& in [all] hy till Scotland ga, 204
And byrn, and slay, and raiſ dragoun,
And hy*ch*t all fyfe in warysoun
Till him, *that* my*ch*t o*thir* ta or sla
Robert *the* bruce, *that* wes h*is* fa. 208
Schir aymer did as he him bad,
Gret chewalry w*ith* him he had;
W*ith* him wes philip *the* mowbray,
And Ingram *the* wmfrawill p*er*fay, 212
That wes bat*h* wyſ and awerty,
& full of gret chewalry;
& off Scotland *the* maist p*ar*ty
*Th*ai had in-till *thar* cumpany. 216

and sends Sir Aymer de Valence to Scotland,

to seize Fife.

Sir Aymer goes, with Sir Philip de Mowbray and Sir Ingram de Umfraville.

[The first speaking of King Robert with Sir Aymer.]

For yheit *th*en mekill off *the* land
Wes in-till Inglis me*n*nys hand.
Till perth *th*en went *th*ai in A rout
*That th*en wes wallyt all about 220
W*ith* feile towr*is*, ry*ch*t hey battaillyt,
To defend giff It war assaylit.
*Th*ar-in duellyt s*chir* Amery,
W*ith* all his gret chewalry. 224
The king Robert wyst he wes *thar*,
And quhat-kyn chyftanys w*ith* him war,
And assemblyt all his mengȝe.

The Scotch come to Perth,

where Sir Aymer dwelt.

201. *The wallang*] Of Wallans H.
202. *hand A worthy*] hands a doughtie H.
203. *off*] and H.
204. [*all* HA] E *om.*
205. *dragoun*] Dungoun (!) H.
207. *mycht—ta*] outher might take H.
212. Sir Ingrayme Vmfraywile, perfay H.
213. *awerty*] als worthie H.
214. *full*] fulfilde H. *But see* ll. 245, 335.
RUBRIC. *From* H; *not in* E.
219. *then—in*] they went into H.
222. *Tb*] For to H. *assaylit*] sailyeid H.

The English outnumbered the Scotch by 1500.

He had feyle off full gret bounte; 228
Bot *thar* fayis war may then thai,
Be xv.c., as Ik herd say.
The quhe*thir* he had *thar*, at *that* ned,
Full feill *that* war douchty off deid; 232
And barownys *that* war bauld as bar.

With Bruce were the earls of Lennox and Athole, and others of note;

Twa Erlis alsua *with* him war;
Off Leuynax and Atholl war *th*ai.
[Fol. 5 b.] Eduuard *the* bruce wes *thar* alsua, 236
Thomas Randell, and hew de le hay,
And *schir* Dauid *the* berclay,
Fresale, som*er*ueile, and Inchm*er*tyn;
Iames off dowglas *thar* wes syne, 240
That yheyt *th*an wes bot litill of my*cht*;
And o*th*ir fele folk, forsye in fy*cht*:

also Sir Christopher Seton and Sir Robert Boyd.

*[Als was good Cristall of Setoun,
*And Robert Boyde of great Renoun,
*And other feill men of meekle might,]
Bot I can no*cht* tell quhat *th*ai hy*cht*.
*Thocht th*ai war qwheyn, *th*ai war worthy, 244
And full of gret chewalry.
And in bataill, in gud aray,
Befor Sanct Ihonystoun com *th*ai,

Bruce defies Sir Aymer.

And bad Schyr Amery Isch to fy*cht*; 248
And he, *that* in *the* mekill my*cht*
Traistyt off *th*aim *that* wes him by,

228. *He—full*] And had feill folke of H.
230. *xv.c.*] fifteene hunder H. *Ik*] I H.
231. *The quhethir*] And yet H.
232. Feill folke that doughtie were indeed H.
233. *bar*] Baire H.
234. *alsua*] als was H. *war*] thare H.
235. *Leuynax*] Lennox H.
238. And good Sir Dauid de Barclay H; *but see* l. 408.
239. Frescll, Somerwell, and Inchemertine H.
241. That then was but of litle might H.
242. *folk forsye*] forcle men H.
243*—245*. *From* H; *so also* A; *not in* E.
244. *qwheyn*] few H.
245. *full*] fulfilde H; *but see* ll. 214, 335.
247. *com thai*] they lay H.
248. *Amery—to*] Aymer ish and H.
249. *the*] his H.
250. *off*] on H. *wes*] were H.

Bad his men arme *th*aim hastily.
Bot Schir Ingram *the* wmfrawill 252 Sir Ingram says to Sir Aymer,
Tho*ch*t It war all to gret p*er*ill
In playne bataill to *th*aim to ga,
[While that] *th*ai war arayit sa:
And till Schyr Amer [then] said he; 256
"Schir, giff *that* ȝe will trow to me,
ȝe sall no*ch*t Ische *th*aim till assaile, "Do not attack them just now.
Till *th*ai ar purwayt in bataill.
For *thar* ledar is [wyſ and wy*ch*t], 260
And off his hand A noble kny*ch*t;
And he has in h*is* cumpany
Mony A gud man & worthi,
That sall be hard for till assay, 264
[While] *th*ai ar in sa gud aray.
For It suld be full mekill my*ch*t,
That now suld put *th*aim to *the* fly*ch*t:
For quhen [thai] folk ar weill arayit, 268 They are now in good array.
And for *the* bataill weill purwait,
W*ith-thi that th*ai all gud men be,
*Th*ai sall fer mar be awise,
And weill mar for to dreid, *th*en thai 272
War set sumdele out off aray.
*Thar*for ȝe may, *schir*, say *th*aim till, Tell them to wait till to-morrow.
*T*hat *th*ai may *th*is ny*ch*t, and *th*ai will,
Gang herbery *th*aim, and slep and rest; 276
And at to morn, but langar [frest],
ȝe sall Isch furth to *th*e bataill,

253. *war*] was H.
255. [*While that* H] Or quhill E. *sa*] alswa H.
256. [*then* HA] E *om*.
260. [*wyss—wycht*] wise and wight HA; wy*ch*t and wyss E.
261. *knycht*] kny*ch*t Is E; *but* is *must be omitted, as in* HA.
263. *man*] Knight H.
265. [*While* HA] Till E (*which is nonsense*). *See* l. 255.
268. [*thai*] thay H; they A; E *om*.
269. *weill*] are H.
271. *awise*] auisie H; avisie A.
272. *for to*] to be H (*badly*).
274. *schir*] gar H.
275. *and*] gif H.
277. *at to*] on the H. [*frest*] frist HA (*but* frest *is better spelling*); lest E.

And fecht with *th*aim, bot gyf *th*ai faile.
Sa till *thar* herbery [wend] sall *th*ai, 280
And sum sall [wend] to *th*e forray;
And *th*ai *that* duellis at *th*e logyng,
Sen *th*ai come owt off *tra*welling,

They will soon be unarmed.

Sall in schort tyme wnarmyt be. 284
*Th*en on our best man*er* may we,
With all our fayr chewalry,

Then we can attack them.

Ryd towart *th*aim ry*ch*t hardyly;
And *th*ai *that* wenys to rest all ny*ch*t 288
Quhen *th*ai se ws arayit to fycht,
Cu*m*mand on *th*aim sa sudanly,

They will be taken by surprise,

*Th*ai sall affrayit be gretumly.
And or thai [knit] in bataill be, 292
We sall speid ws swagat *that* we
Sall be all redy till assembill.

and will be scared."

Sum man for eryneß will try*m*bill,
Quhen he assayit is sodanly, 296
That with Awisement is douchty."

[The ludging of King Robert in the Parke of Methwen.]

Sir Aymer puts off the fight.

As he awisyt, now have *th*ai done;
And till *th*aim wtouth send *th*ai sone,
And bad *th*aim herbery *th*aim *th*at nycht, 300
And on *th*e morn cum to *th*e fy*ch*t.
Quhen *th*ai saw *th*ai my*ch*t no mar,
Towart Meffayn *th*en ga*n* *th*ai far;

280, 281. [*wend* HA] went E. H *has*—Sa sall they wend to their harbric, Some sall to Forray passe sickerly.
283. *Sen*] Gif H.
292. [*knit* HA] cu*m*myn E.
293. *swagat*] sic sort H.
294. *till assembill*] for to semble H.
295. *Sum man*] That some H. *oryness*] erynesse H. *will*] sall H.
296. *assayit*] assailyide H.
RUBRIC. *From* H; *not in* E.
298. *awisyt now*] deuysod, so H.
299. *wtouth*] outwith H. *send thai*] sent he H.
302. *no*] doe na H.
303. *Meffayn — gan*] Methwen soone can H; Methven soone can A.

And in *the* woud *th*aim logyt *th*ai; 304 The Scotch halt at Methven.
*Th*e thrid p*ar*t went to *th*e forray;
And *th*e lave sone wnarmyt war,
And skalyt to loge *th*aim her & *th*ar.
Schyr Amer *th*en, but mar abaid, 308
W*ith* all *th*e folk he w*ith* him haid, Sir Aymer attacks them.
Ischyt In-forcely to *th*e fy*ch*t;
And raid, in-till A randoun ry*ch*t,
*Th*e strawcht way towart meffen. 312
*Th*e king, *th*a*t* wes wnarmyt *th*en,
Saw *th*aim cu*m* swa i*n*forcely; The king bids his men arm.
*Th*en till his men gan hely cry,
"Till armys swyth, and makys ȝow ȝar! 316
Her at our hand our fayis ar!"
And *th*ai did swa in full gret hy;
And on *th*ar horß lap hastily.
*Th*e king displayit his baner, 320
Quhen *th*a*t* his folk assemblyt wer; He displays his banner,
And said, "lording*is*, now may ȝe se
*Th*a*t* ȝone folk all, throw sutelte,
Schapis *th*aim to do w*ith* sly*ch*t, 324
*Th*a*t* at *th*ai drede to do w*ith* my*ch*t.
Now I p*er*sawe, he *th*a*t* will trew
His fa, It sall him sum tyme rew. saying, "He that trusts his foe
And no*ch*t-for-*th*i, *th*oc*h*t *th*ai be fele, 328 will rue it.
God may ry*ch*t weill our werd*is* dele;
For multitud maiß na victory;
As men has red in mony story, Multitude gives not victory.
*Th*a*t* few folk [oft has] wencusyt ma. 332
Trow we *th*a*t* we sall do ry*ch*t sua.

310. *In-forcely*] enforcedly H.
312. *meffen*] Methwen H; Methven A.
314. *swa inforcely*] on enforcedly H.
316. *makys*] make H.
322. *And*] He H.
323. *all*] H *om*.
325. *That at*] It that H.
326. Now perceiue I, that wha will trow H.
327. *rew*] grow H.
330. *maiss*] makes H.
331. *has*] haue H.
332. *That*] As H. [*oft has*] oft haue HA; has oft E.

ȝe are Ilkan wy*ch*t and worthy,
[Fol. 6.] And full of gret chewalry;
And wate ry*ch*t weill quhat honour Is. 336

So attack them as to save your honour."
Wyrk yhe *th*en apon swylk wyſ,
*Th*at ȝour honour be sawyt ay.
And A thing will I to yow say,
*Th*at he *th*at [deis] for his cuntre 340
Sall herbryit in-till hewyn be."

They see their foes at hand.
Quhen *th*is wes said, *th*ai saw cu*m*and
*Th*ar fayis ridand, ner at *th*e hand,
Arayit ry*ch*t awisely, 344
Willful to do chewalry.

[The Battell of Methwen, and the first Discomfite of King Robert.]

The battle.
On a*th*ir syd *th*us war *th*ai yhar,
And till assemble all redy war.
*Th*ai straucht *thar* sper*is*, on a*th*ir syd, 348
And swa ruydly gan Samyn ryd,
*Th*at sper*is* [all] to-fruschyt war,
And feyle men dede, and woundyt sar;

The bravest plunge into the thick of the fight.
*Th*e blud owt at *thar* byrnys brest. 352
For *th*e best, and *th*e worthiest,
*Th*at wilfull war to wyn honour,
Plungyt in *th*e stalwart stour,
And rowt*is* ruyd about *th*aim dang. 356
Men my*ch*t haiff seyn in-to *th*at thrang
Kny*ch*t*is th*at wy*ch*t and hardy war,
Wndyr horſ feyt defoulyt *thar*;

335. *full*] called H. *Cf.* ll. 214, 245.
337. *then—swylk*] therefore on sic a H.
339. *A*] one H.
340. [*deis*] dois E (*an obvious error*); dies HA.
341. In hight of heauen sall harbred be H.
343. *ridand—the*] ryding at their H.
RUBRIC. *From* H; *not in* E.
349. *gan Samyn*] can raging H.
350. [*all* HA] at E. *war*] are H.
352. *at—byrnys*] of the beirnes H.
353. *Fvr—and*] Of best and of H.
355. *in the*] into that H.
358. *hardy*] worthy H.

Sum woundyt, and sum all ded: 360
*Th*e greſ woux off *th*e blud all redc, The grass grows red.
And *th*ai, *that* held on horſ, in hy
Swappyt owt swerd*is* sturdyly;
And swa fell strakys gave and tuk, 364
That all the renk about *th*aim quouk.
*Th*e bruysſ folk full hardely
Schawyt *thar* gret chewalry:
And he him-selff, atour *th*e lave, 368 Bruce bears himself bravely.
Sa hard and hewy dynt*is* gave,
That quhar he come *th*ai maid hi*m* way.
His folk *th*aim put in hard assay,
To stynt *thar* fais mekill my*ch*t, 372
*That th*en so fayr had off *th*e fy*ch*t,
*That th*ai wan feild ay mar & mar:
*Th*e king*is* small folk ner wencusyt ar.
And quhen *th*e king his folk has sene 376 He sees his folk begin to fail.
Begyn to faile, for propyr tene,
Hys assenȝhe gan he cry;
And in *th*e stour sa hardyly
He ruschyt, *that* all *th*e semble schuk: 380 He charges fiercely.
He all till-hewyt *that* he our-tuk;
And dang on *th*aim quhill he my*ch*t drey.
And till his folk he c*ri*yt hey;
"On *th*aim! On *th*aim! *th*ai feble fast! 384 He encourages his men.
*Th*is bargane neu*ir* may lang*ar* last!"
And w*ith* *that* word sa wilfully
He dang on, and sa hardely,
That quha had sene him in *that* fy*ch*t 388

361. *gress woux*] gars waxt H.
363. *sturdyly*] deliuerly H.
365. *renk*] rinke H. *quouk*] shooke H.
369. *hewy*] sa hewy E; heauie H; (sa *is best omitted*).
371. *in*] to H.
373. *That then*] Than they H.
374. *feild*] place H.
375. *ar*] were H.
378. To his Ensenye can highly cry H.
380. *ruschyt that*] raged till H.
385. *newir may*] may na H.
387. *and*] them H.
388. *fycht*] fight H; *printed* sycht J; fycht P; ficht I.

Suld hald him for A douchty kny*ch*t.

But all is of no avail.

Bot tho*ch*t he wes stout and hardy,
And o*th*ir als off his cumpany,
*Th*ar my*ch*t na worschip *th*ar availȝe; 392
For *th*ar small folk begouth to failȝe,

Many flee.

And fled all skalyt her and *thar*.
Bot *the* gude, at enchaufyt war
Off Ire, abade and held *the* stour 396
To conquyr *th*aim endles honour.

Sir Aymer notes this, and charges them.

And quhen s*chir* Amer has sene
The small folk fle all bedene,
And sa few abid to fy*ch*t, 400
He releyt to him mony A kny*ch*t;
And in *the* stour sa hardyly
He ruschyt w*ith* hys chewalry,
*Tha*t he ruschyt his fayis Ilkane. 404

Sir Thomas Randolph and others are taken.

Schir Thomas Randell *thar* wes tane,
*Tha*t *th*en wes A ȝoung bacheler;
And s*chir* Alexand*er* fraseyr;
And s*chir* dauid *the* breklay, 408
Inchm*er*tyne, and hew de le hay,
And som*er*weil, and o*thir* ma;

The king is hard beset by Sir Philip de Mowbray.

And *th*e king him-selff alsua
Wes set in-till full hard assay, 412
Throw s*chir* philip *the* mowbray,
*Tha*t raid till him full hardyly,
And hynt hys rengȝe, and syne gan cry:
"Help! help! I have *th*e new maid king!" 416

390. *wes stout*] stout was H.
393. *begouth to*] all haill they H.
394. *all*] and H.
395. *enchaufyt*] *printed* enchausyt PJ; enchausit I (*which is nonsense*); escaped HA (*which is little better*).
396. Baide fighting in that stalwart stour H.
399. *fle all*] fleeing haill H.
400. *sa—to*] saw sa few abaide the H.
401. *releyt*] drew H.
403. *chewalry*] cumpany H.
407. *fraseyr*] the Fraser H.
408. *breklay*] Barclay H.
412. *in-till full*] into sa H.
413. *schir*] good Sir H.
415. *rengȝe*] renye H; renyie A. *syne gan*] then can H.

With that come gyrdand, in A lyng,
Crystall off Seytoun, quhen he swa
Saw *the* king sesyt *with* his fa;
And to philip sic rout he raucht, 420
That thocht he wes off mekill maucht,
He gert him galay disyly;
And haid till erd gane fullyly,
Ne war he hynt him by his sted; 424
Then off his hand *the* brydill yhed;
And *the* king his *enssenȝe* gan cry,
Releyt his men *that* war him by,
That war sa few *that thai* na mycht 428
Endur *the* forß mar off *the* fycht.
Thai prikyt then out off *the* preß;
And *the* king, *that* angry wes,
For he his men saw fle him fra, 432
Said *then*: "lordingis, sen It is swa
That vre ry*n*nys agane ws her,
Gud Is we paß off *thar* daunger,
Till god ws send eftsonys *grace*: 436
And ȝeyt may fall, giff *thai* will chace,
Quyt *thaim* torn but su*m*-dele we sall."
To *this* word *thai* assentyt all,
And fra *thaim* walopyt owyr mar. 440
Thar fayis alsua wery war,
That off *thaim* all *thar* chassyt nafie:
Bot *with pri*soner*is*, *that thai* had tane,

Seton rescues him.

The king rallies his men,

and retreats.

[Fol. 6 b.]

He advises all to retreat.

Their foes are too weary to give chase,

417. *gyrdand*] girding H.
419. *Saw—sesyt*] The King saw seased H.
420. *And—rout*] To Sir Philip sik routes H.
422. *galay*] stakker H.
423. *fullyly*] haillely H.
424. War not he held him by the Steed H.
425. *Then*] Out H.
427. *Releyt*] Relieu'd H. *war*] stood H.
428. *na*] not H.
431. *angry*] all angrie H.
434. *vre—agane*] weere runneth against H.
436. *grace*] some grace H.
437. *ȝeyt*] it H.
438. *torn but*] combate H.
439. *this*] that H.
440. *owyr mar*] vppermere H; uuppermere A.
441. *alsua*] also they H.

Rycht to *the* toune *th*ai held *thar* way, 444
Ry*cht* glaid and Ioyfull off *thar* pray.

and retire to Perth.

*Tha*t ny*cht* [thai] lay all in *the* toun;
Thar wes nane off sa gret renoun,
Na ȝeit sa hardy off *th*aim all, 448
*Tha*t durst herbery w*ith*-out *the* wall.
Sa dred *th*ai sar *th*e gayne-cu*m*myng
Off s*chir* Robert, *th*e douchty king.

The English report the victory to Edward.

And to *the* king off Ingland sone, 452
*Th*ai wrate haly as *th*ai haid done;
And he wes bly*th* off *tha*t tithing,
And for dispyte bad draw and hing
All *the* p*r*isoner*is*, *thocht th*ai war ma. 456

Sir Aymer spares some of the prisoners.

Bot Schyr amery did no*cht* sua;
To sum bath land and lyff gaiff he,
To leve *th*e bruysß fewte,
And s*er*ve *th*e king off Ingland, 460
And off him for to hald *the* land,
And werray *th*e brwß as *thar* fa.

Sir Thomas Randolph submits to him.

Thomas Randell wes ane off *tha*,
*Tha*t for his lyff become *thar* man. 464
Off o*thir*, *tha*t war takyn *th*an,
Sum *th*ai ransownyt, sum *th*ai slew,
And sum *th*ai hangyt, and sum *th*ai drew.

Hic rex cum suis magnam patitur penuriam.

Bruce mourns over his lost men

In *th*is man*er* [rebutyt] was 468
The bruyß, *tha*t mekill murnyn maiß
For his men *tha*t war slayne and tane.

444. *thar*] the H.
446. [*thai*] *misworitten* y^t *in* E, *but printed* thai PJ; tha I; they HA.
448. *Na ȝeit*] Nor none H.
457. *amery*] Aymer H. *nocht*] nathing H.
458. *land—lyff*] life and land H.
459. *bruysis*] Bruce and his H.
461. *the*] their H.
465. *othir*] others H.
466. *ransownyt*] ransomde, and H.
RUBRIC. *In* E; *not in* H.
468. *In*] *so in* HA; E *has only a blank space for the capital.* [*rebutyt*] rebuted HA; E *has* Robert (!)
469. *mekill murnyn*] great mourning H.

And he wes als sa will off wane,
That he trowit in nane sekyrly, 472
Owtane *th*aim off his cumpany ;
That war sa few *that th*ai my*ch*t be — He had now only 500.
V.c. ner off all meng*z*e.
His brod*ir* alwayis wes him by, 476
Schyr Eduuard, *that* wes sa hardy ;
And w*ith* him wes A bauld baroun,
Schyr Wil*z*a*m th*e boroundoun ;
*Th*e Erle off athole als wes *th*ar. 480 — Athol was with him, but Lennox was away.
Bot ay syn *th*ai discomfyt war,
*Th*e Erle off *th*e Leuenax wes away,
And wes put to full hard assay,
Or he met w*ith th*e king agayn : 484
Bot always, as A man off mayn,
He mayntemyt him full ma*n*lyly.
*Th*e king had in his cumpany — He had also Douglas,
Iames alsua of dowglas, 488
That wy*ch*t, wyß, and awerty was.
Schyr gilbert de le hay alsua, — Hay, Campbell, and others,
Schir Nele Cambell, and o*thir* ma,
That I *thar* namys can no*ch*t say, 492
As wtelauys went mony day ; — living as outlaws.
Dreand in the month *thar* pyne ;
Eyte flesch, and drank wat*ir* syne.
He durst no*ch*t to the planys ga, 496
For all *th*e *com*mownys went hi*m* fra ; — The commons deserted him,

472. *That*] For H.
473. *Owtane*] Except H.
474. *that thai*] they scarce H.
475. Fiue hunder men of haill menzie H.
477. *hardy*] worthy H.
479. *boroundoun*] Halyburtoun H.
480. *als*] he H.
482. *the Leuenax*] Lennox H.
484. *Or*] Ere H.
486. He him maintained manfully H. Cf. l. 189.
488. *alsua*] also Lord H.
489. That wise, wight, and worthy was H.
492. *say*] tell H.
493. And Outlawes went to daill and fell H.
494. *Dreand*] Dreeing H. *month thar*] mountaines H.
495. *Eyte*] And eat H.

That for *thar* liff*is* war full fayn
To paß to *the* Inglis pes agayn.
Sa fayr*is* [it] ay *com*mounly ; 500
In *com*mownys may nane affy,
Bot he *that* may *thar* warand be.
Sa fur *th*ai *th*en w*ith* him ; for he
*Th*aim fra *thar* fais my*cht* nocht warand, 504
*Th*ai turnyt to *the* to*thir* hand.

yet they wished him well.

Bot threldome, *that* men gert *th*aim fele,
Gert *th*aim ay ȝarne *that* he fur wele.

Hic rex robertus cum suis vadit vsque abberdeñ.

THws in *the* hyllis levyt he, 508
Till *the* maist p*ar*t off his me*n*ȝe
Wes rewyn, and rent ; na schoyne *th*ai had,
Bot as *th*ai *th*aim off hydys mad.

The king goes to Aberdeen, where he meets the queen and other ladies.

*Th*arfor *th*ai went till Abyrdeyne, 512
Quhar Nele *the* bruyß come, & *the* queyn,
And o*th*ir ladyis fayr and farand,
Ilkane for luff off *thar* husband ;
That for leyle luff, and leawte, 516
Wald p*ar*tenerys off *thar* paynys be.
*Th*ai chesyt tyttar w*ith* *th*aim to ta
Angyr and payn, na be *th*aim fra.

Amor. Love is of great might.

For luff is off sa mekill mycht, 520
That It all paynys mak*is* lych[t] ;
And mony tyme maiß tend*ir* wy*chtis*

498. *liffis*] liues H ; *misprinted* liff PJ ; lif I. Cf. l. 527.
499. *the*] H *om.*
500. [*it* HA] E *om.* *ay*] alwayes H.
501. *nane*] na man H.
503. *fur*] fare H.
505. *turnyt*] turned all H. *tothir*] other H.
RUBRIC. *From* E ; *not in* H.
510. *na—thai*] and na shoone H.
511. *thaim*] then H.
514. *farand*] pleasand H.
516. *leawte*] loyaltie H.
517. Partner of their paines would be H.
518. *tyttar*] rather H.
519. *payn na*] paines than H.
520. *For luff*] Syne loue it H. *sa mekill*] sik a H.
521. *all*] does all the H. *makis*] make H.
522. *tyme—wychtis*] times makes tender wight H

Off swilk strenthtis, and swilk mychtis,
That thai may mekill paynys endur, 524
And forsakis nane auentur
That euyr may fall, with-thi *that thai*
Thar-throw succur *thair* liffys may.
Men redys, quhen thebes wes tane, 528
And kyng [Adrastus] men war slane,
That assailyt *the* cite,
That the wemen off his cuntre
Come for to fech him hame agayne, 532
Quhen *thai* hard all his folk wes slayne;
Quhar [that] *the* king campaneus,
Throw *the* help off menesteus,
That come percaß ridand *thar*by, 536
With iij.c. in cumpany,
That throw *the* king*is* prayer assailyt,
That ȝeit to tak *the* toun had failȝeit;
Then war *the* wiffys thyrland *the* wall 540
With pikk*is*, quhar *the* [assailȝeours] all
Entryt, and dystroyit *the* tour,
And slew *the* pupill but recour.
Syn quhen *the* duk his way wes gayne, 544
And all *the* king*is* men war slayne,
The wiff*is* had him till his cuntre,
Quhar wes na man leiffand bot he.
In wemen mekill *com*fort lyis; 548

[Fol. 7.]
thebes.
When Thebes was taken,

the women of his country came to fetch home king Aristas (Adrastus).

They pierced the walls with pikes, enabling the assailants to enter.

Much comfort is there in women.

523. Als of sik strength and of sik might H.
524. *paynys*] paine H.
525. *forsakis*] to forsake H.
528. *Men*] ¶ Men H.
529. [*Adrastus* A] Adrestus H aristas E.
530. *assailyt*] assieged H.
531. *That*] All H.
534. [*that* HA] E *om.* *campaneus*] Campeus H.
535. *help*] Oast H; host A. *menesteus*] Menestheus H.
536. That came through cace rydding them by H.
537. *iii.c.*] three hunder H.
539. *That*] And H.
540. War not the Wiues that thrilde the wall H.
541. [*assailȝeours*] assailyeours H; assailyours A; assailȝeis E.
542. *tour*] toun H.
543. *pupill*] people H. *recour*] ransoun H.
544. *way*] wayes H.
547. *man leiffand*] liuing man H.

And gret solace on mony wiß.
Sa [fell it] her, for *th*ar cu*m*myng
Reiosyt ry*ch*t gretumly *th*e king;
*Th*e quhe*thir* Ilk ny*ch*t him-selwyn wouk, 552
And his rest apon daiis touk.

Bruce rests his men.

A gud quhile *thar* he Soiournyt *th*en,
And esyt wond*ir* weill his men;
Till *that th*e Inglis men herd say 556
*Tha*t he *thar* w*ith* his mengȝe lay,
[At alkyn] ese and sekyrly.

The English hope to surprise him.

Assemblit *th*ai *thar* ost in hy;
And *thar* him trowit to suppriß. 560
Bot he, *tha*t in his deid wes wyß,
Wyst *th*ai assemblyt war, & quhar;
And wyst *that th*ai sa mony war,
*Tha*t he my*ch*t no*ch*t agayne *th*aim fy*ch*t. 564
His men in hy he gert be dycht,
And buskyt of *th*e toune to ryd;

The ladies ride away, protected by Douglas,

*Th*e ladyis raid ry*ch*t by his syd.
*Th*en to *th*e hill *th*ai raid *th*ar way, 568
Quhar gret defaut off mete had *th*ai.
Bot worthy Iames off dowglas
Ay t*ra*wailland and besy was,
For to purches *th*e ladyis mete; 572
And It on mony wiß wald get.

who procures them food.

For quhile he venesoun *th*aim bro*ch*t:
And w*ith* his handys quhile he wro*ch*t
Gy*n*nys, to tak gedd*is* & salmonys, 576

550. [*fell it* HA] fellyt E.
551. *Reiosyt rycht*] Comforted H.
552. For why euerik night he woke H.
553. *apon daiis*] on the day he H.
558. [*At alkyn*] At all kin H; All at E.
559. *Assemblit—ost*] Their Oast assembled they H.
560. *thar—trowit*] trowed there him H.
566. *buskyt*] buske them H.
568. *hill—raid*] hilles they held H.
571. *trawailland*] trauellde he H.
573. *It on*] eeles in H.
574, 575. *quhile*] whyles H. *he venesoun*] vennison he H.
576. *Gynnys*] Girnes H; Girns A.

Trowt*is*, elys, and als menovnys.
And quhill *th*ai went to *th*e forray;
And swa *thar* purchesyng maid *th*ai.
Ilk man t*ra*weillyt for to get 580
And purchef *th*aim *that* *th*ai my*ch*t ete.
Bot off all *that* eu*ir* *th*ai war,
*Th*ar wes no*ch*t ane amang *th*aim *thar*,
That to *th*e ladyis profyt was 584
Mar *th*en Iamys of dowglas;
And *th*e king oft *con*fort[yt] wes
Throw his wyt, and his besynes.
On *th*is maner *th*aim gou*er*nyt *th*ai, 588
Till *th*ai come to *th*e hed off tay.

None were of more profit to the ladies than Douglas.

577. *als*] H *om.* *menovnys*] *printed* menownys P; Menons H.
578. *quhill*] whyles H.
579. *purchesyng maid*] meat purchased H.
581. *purchess*] purchast H.
582. *thai*] there H.
584. *to*] with H. *profyt*] mair praisde H.
585. *Mar then*] Than was Sir H.
586. *confortyt*] comforted HA; *con*fort E.
588. *thaim*] then H.

[BOOK III.]

Hic dominus de Lorne inuadit regem propter mortem Io. cumyn.

[How Iohn of Lorne discomfite King Robert.]

The Lord of Lorn hopes to avenge Comyn's death.

THE lord off lorne wo*n*nyt *thar*-by,
*Tha*t wes capitale ennymy
To *th*e king, for his Emys sak,
Ihon comyn ; and tho*ch*t for to tak 4
We*n*geance apon cruell maner.
Quhen he *th*e king wyst wes sa ner,
He assemblyt his men in hy ;
And had in-till his cumpany 8
*Th*e barownys off Argyle alsua ;

With a thousand men, he attacks the king.

*Th*ai war A thowsand weill or ma :
And come for to supprisſ *th*e king,
*Tha*t weill wes war of *thar* cu*m*myng. 12
Bot all to few wi*th* him he had,
*Th*e quhe*th*ir he bauldly *th*aim abaid ;
And weill ost, at *thar* fryst metyng,
War layd at erd, but recoveryng. 16
The king*is* folk full weill *th*aim bar,

RUBRIC. *The first rubric is from* E ; *the second from* H.
1. *Initial* y (*for* TH). *wonnyt*] winned H.
4. *comyn*] the Cumyng H. *for*] H *om.*
6. *he*] H *om.* *wes*] he was H (*which reverses the sense*).
10. *weill or*] well and H.
11. *And come*] That came H.
12. *weill wes*] was well H.
14. *The quhethir*] And yet H.
15. *weill ost*] feill of them H.

And slew, and fellyt, and woundyt sar. — The king's men fight bravely.
Bot *the* folk off *the* to*thir* par*t*y
Fawcht w*ith* axys sa [felounly], 20
For *th*ai on fute war eu*ir*-Ilkane,
*That th*ai feile off *thar* horß has slayne;
And till sum gaiff *th*ai wound*is* wid.
Iames off dowglas wes hurt *that* tyd; 24 — Douglas is wounded.
And als Schyr gilbert de le hay.
*Th*e [king his] men saw in affray,
And his ensenȝe can he cry; — The king cries his war-cry, and charges.
And amang *th*aim ry*ch*t hardyly 28
He rad, *that* he *th*aim ruschyt all;
And fele of *th*aim *thar* gert he fall.
Bot quhen he saw *th*ai war sa feill,
And saw thaim swa gret dynt*is* deill, 32
He dred to tyne his folk, for*th*i — Fearing defeat, he advises a retreat.
His men till him he ga*n* rely,
And said: "Lordyng*is*, foly It War — [Fol. 7 *b*.]
Tyll ws for till assembill mar, 36
For *th*ai fele off our horß has slayn;
And gyff [we] fecht w*ith* *th*aim agayn,
We sall tyne off our small mengȝe,
And our-selff sall in p*e*rill be. 40
*Th*arfor me thynk maist awenand
To w*ith*draw ws, ws defendand,
Till we cum owt off *th*ar daunger,
For owr strenth at our hand is ner." 44
*Th*en *th*ai w*ith*drew *th*aim halely: — They retreat slowly.

18. *fellyt and*] feill H.
20. [*felounly*] fellounly HA; fellyly E (*which is an impossible word*).
22. *That*] Bot H.
26. [*king his* HA] king*is* E (*which is absurd*); *printed* king his J.
27. *can he*] right fast gan H.
28, 29. And in the stour full hardely He rade, and rushed amang them all H.
33. *folk*] men H.
34. *men*] folke H.
35. *foly—War*] it folly were H.
37. *has*] haue H.
38. [*we* HA] yhe E.
40. *selff*] selues H.
41. *awenand*] according H.
42. *defendand*] defending H.
44. *Fbr*] H *om.* *at—is*] is at our hand well H.

Bot *that* wes no*ch*t full cowartly ;
For samyn in-till A sop held *th*ai ;
And *th*e king him abandonyt ay 48
To defend behind his mengȝe.
And throw his worschip sa wrouch[t] he,
*Tha*t he reskewyt all *th*e flear*is*,

The king stops the pursuers.

And styntyt swagat *th*e chassar*is*, 52
*Tha*t nane durst owt off batall chaſ,
For alwayis at *thar* hand he was.

He defends his men well.

Sa weile defendyt he his men,
*Tha*t quha sa eu*ir* had seyne him *th*en 56
Prowe sa worthely wasselage,
And turn sa oft sythis *th*e wisage,
He suld say he awcht weill to be
A king of A Gret Rewate. 60

Quhen *that th*e lord of lorne saw
His men stand off him ane sik aw,
*Tha*t *th*ai durst no*ch*t folow *th*e chase,

The Lord of Lorn is angry.

Rycht angry in his hart he was ; 64
And for wondyr *th*at he suld swa
Stot *th*aim, him [allane] but ma,

He likens Bruce to Gaul, son of Morni.

He said : " me think, marthokys sone,
Ry*ch*t as golmakmorn was wone 68
To haiff fra [Fyngall] his mengne,
Ry*ch*t swa all his fra ws has he."
He set ensample *th*us mydlike,
*Th*e quhethir he my*ch*t, mar man*er*lik, 72

46. *nocht full*] nathing H.
52. And sa astonisht all the chasers H.
54. *alwayis*] H *om.* *he*] alwayes he H.
57. *Prowe*] Prooue H. *worthely*] worthy H.
58. *sythis the*] time his H.
60. *A—Rewate*] full great Royaltie H ; great Royaltie A.
62. *ane*] H *om.*
65. *for wondyr*] sair wondred H.
66. *Stot*] Stoney H. [*allane* H] alone A ; ane E.
67. *marthokys*] Martheokes H.
68. *golmakmorn*] Gowmakmorne A.
69. [*Fyngall* HA] hym all E (*which is nonsense*).
70. *all—ws*] fra vs all his H.
71. *mydlike*] hym like H.
72. *quhethir*] whilk H.

Lyknyt hym to gaudifer de laryß,
Quhen *that the* mych*t*y duk betyß
Assailȝeit in gadyrr*is the* forrayours.
And quhen *the* king *th*aim maid rescours, 76
Duk betyß tuk on him *the* fly*ch*t,
That wald ne mar abid to fy*ch*t.
Bot gud gaudifer *the* worthi
Abandonyt him so worthyly, 80
For [to] reskew all the fleier*is*,
And for to stonay *the* chasser*is*,
That Alysand*ir* to erth he bar;
And alsua did he tholimar, 84
And gud coneus alsua,
Dauklyne alsua, & o*th*ir ma.
But at *the* last *th*ar slayne he wes:
In *th*at failȝeit *the* liklynes. 88
For *the* king, full chewalrusly,
Defendyt all his cumpany,
And wes set in full gret danger;
And ȝeit eschapyt haile and fer. 92

He might have likened him to Gaudifer,

who, when duke Betys fled,

unhorsed Alexander and others.

But Gaudifer was slain, unlike Bruce.

[How the king slew the three men that swore his death.]

Twa bre*th*ir war [into] *that* land,
That war *the* hardiest off hand
That war in-till all *that* cuntre;
And *th*ai had sworn, iff *th*ai mi*ch*t se 96
The bruyß, quhar *th*ai my*ch*t him our-ta,

Two hardy brethren swear to slay Bruce.

73. *de laryss*] Delatyse A.
74, 77. *betyss*] Betyse H.
75. *Assailȝeit—gadyrris*] Assayed in Gaders H.
76. *rescours*] recourse H.
78. *That*] And H. *ne*] na H. *to*] the H.
80. *worthyly*] hardely H.
81. [*to* HA] his E. *fleieris*] fleears H.
82. *stonay*] astoney H.
84. *alsua*] sa H. *tholimar*] Ptolome there H.
85. *coneus*] Corneus H.
86. *Dauklyne*] *so printed in* I; Danklyne PJ; Danchine H. *alsua &*] and also H.
89. *the—full*] that the King H.
91. *And*] That H.
RUBRIC. *In* H; *not in* E.
93. *Twa*] *so in* H; Two A; For twa E. [*into* HA] in E.
95. *in-till—that*] in all that same H.

That thai suld dey, or *then* hym sla.

Their name was Macindrosser, or "sons of the doorkeeper."

Thar surname wes makyne-drosser;
That is al-so mekill to say her 100
As "*the* Durwarth so*nn*ys" p*er*fay.
Off *thar* cowyne *the* thrid had *thai*
That wes ry*ch*t, stout, Ill, and feloune.
Quhen *thai the* king of gud renoune 104
Saw sua behind his mengne rid,
And saw him torne sa mony tid,

They attack him in a narrow pass.

Thai abaid till *that* he was
Entryt in ane narow place, 108
Betuix a louchside and a bra;
That wes sa strait, Ik wnd*er*ta,
That he my*ch*t no*ch*t weill turn his sted.
Then w*ith* A will till him *thai* ȝede; 112

One catches him by the bridle;

And ane him by *the* bridill hynt:
Bot he raucht till him sic A dynt,

Bruce cuts off his arm.

That arme and schuldyr flaw hi*m* fra.
W*ith that* ane *othir* gan him ta 116

Another catches him by the leg,

Be *the* lege, and his hand ga*n* schute
Betuix *the* sterap and his fute:
And quhe*n the* king felt *thar* his hand,
In his sterapys stythly ga*n* he stand, 120

but Bruce spurs his horse forward.

And strak w*ith* spur*is the* stede in hy;
And he lansyt furth delyu*er*ly,
Swa *that the* to*thir* failȝeit fete;
And no*ch*t-for-thi his hand wes ȝeit 124
Wndyr *the* sterap, magre his.

The third leaps behind him on the horse;

The thrid, w*ith* full gret hy, w*ith* *this*
Ry*ch*t till *the* bra syd he ȝeid,
And stert be-hynd hym on h*is* sted. 128

99. *makyne-drosser*] Makindorser H.
101. *the Durwarth*] Durwarts H.
102. *cowyne*] conueene H.
106. *tid*] a tyde H.
107. *till*] ay while H.
108. *in ane*] into a H.
120. *his*] H *om.* *gan he*] can he vp H.
122. *lansyt furth*] lanced H.
126. *with* (1)] in H.
127. *bra*] braes H.

*Th*e king wes *th*en *in* full gret preſ;
*Th*e quhe*thir* he tho*cht*, as he *tha*t wes [Fol. 8.]
In all hys dedys awise,
To do ane owtrageouſ bounte. 132
And syne hyme *tha*t behynd hym waſ,
All magre his will, him gan he raſ
Fra be-hynd hym, *thocht* he had sworn, Bruce drags him forward,
He laid hym ewyn him beforn. 136
Syne w*ith th*e suerd sic dynt hym gave,
*Tha*t he *th*e heid till *th*e harnys clave. and slays him.
He rouschit doun off blud all rede,
As he *tha*t stound feld off dede. 140
And *th*en *th*e king, in full gret hy,
Strak at *th*e to*thir* wigorusly, Lastly, he slays the second, who held by the stirrup.
*Th*at he eft*ir* his sterap drew,
*Tha*t at *th*e fyrst strak he him slew. 144
On *th*is wiſ him delyu*er*it he
Off all *th*ai felloun fayis thre.

Quhen *th*ai of Lorne has sene *th*e king
Set in hy*m*-selff sa gret helping, 148
And [defend] him sa manlely;
Wes nane amang *th*aim sa hardy No more dare attack him.
That durst assailȝe him mar in fy*cht*:
Sa dred *th*ai for his mekill my*cht*. 152
*Th*ar wes a baroune maknàuchtan, macnachtan laudat regem.
*Tha*t in his hart gret kep has tane One Macnaughtan much praised the king,
[Vnto] *th*e king*is* chewalry,
And p*ri*syt hym in hert gretly. 156

130. *quhethir—thocht*] whilk bethought H.
133. *And syne*] He hint H.
134. And magre him, he can him raise H.
136. *He*] And H.
137. *the*] his H. *dynt*] dints H.
138. *the* (2)] H *om.*
140. *dede*] the dead H.
143, 144. *Transposed in* H, *with* And *for the second* That.
147. *thai*] John H.
148. *in*] for H.
149. [*defend* HA] defendyt E. *manlely*] manfully H.
152. *for*] of H.
155. [*Vnto* HA] To E. *chewalry*] great Cheualry H.
156. *prisyt*] praisde H; praised A. *hert*] his hart H.

saying to the Lord of Lorn,

And to *the* lord off lorne said he;
"Sekyrly now may ȝe se
Betane *the* starkest pundelan,
That ewyr ȝour lyff-tyme ȝe saw tane. 160

"Yon knight has felled three."

For ȝone kny*cht*, throw his douchti deid,
And throw his owtrageous ma*n*heid,
Has fellyt in-till litill tyd
Thre men of mekill [mycht and] prid: 164
And stonayit all our mengȝe swa,
That eftyr him dar na man ga;
And tournys sa mony tyme h*is* stede,
That semys off ws he had na dred." 168

Lorn says, "You seem to like it!"

*Th*en gane *the* lord off lorn say;
"It semys It likis *the* p*er*fay,
That he slayis ȝongat our mengȝe."
"Schyr," said he, "sa our lord me se! 172

"Nay," said he,

To sauff ȝour presence, It [is] no*ch*t swa.
Bot quhe*thir* sa [he] be freynd or fa,
That wynnys pryß off chewalry,
Men suld spek *thar*off lelyly. 176
And sekyrly, in all my tyme,

"but I never heard tell of such a feat."

Ik hard neu*ir*, in sang na ryme,
Tell off A man *that* swa smertly
Eschewyt swa gret chewalry." 180
Sic speking off *the* king *th*ai maid:
And he eftyr his mengȝe raid;
And in-till saufte *th*aim led,
Quhar he his fayis na thing dred. 184
And *th*ai off lorne agayn ar gayn,
Menand *the* scaith *that* *th*ai haiff tayn.

158. *Sekyrly*] Surely Sir H.
159. *pundelan*] pondlayne H; pondlyane A.
160. *ewyr*] in H.
162. *owtrageous*] couragious H.
163. *in-till*] into a H.
164. [*mycht and*] might and HA; *blank space in* E.
168. *That*] It H.
173. *presence*] peace H. [*is* HA] E *om.*
174. [*he* HA] yhe E.
180. *Eschewyt*] Encheefed H.

THE king *tha*t ny*ch*t his wachis set,
And gert ordayne *tha*t *th*ai my*ch*t et ; 188
And bad [thaim comfort] to *th*aim tak,
And at *th*ar my*ch*t*is* mery mak.
" For disconford," as *th*en said he,
" Is *th*e werst thing *th*at may be. 192
For throw mekill disconforting
Men fallis off in-to disparyng.
And fra A man disparyt be,
*Th*en wt*ra*ly wencusyt Is he. 196
And fra *th*e hart be discumfyt,
*Th*e body is no*ch*t worth A myt.
*Th*arfor," he said, " atour all thing,
Kepys ȝow fra disparyng : 200
And thynk *th*ouch we now harmys fele,
*Tha*t god may ȝeit releve ws weill.
Men redys off mony men *tha*t war
Fer hardar stad *th*en we yhet ar ; 204
And syne our lord sic grace *th*aim lent,
*Tha*t *th*ai come weill till *thar* entent.
For Rome quhilu*m* sa hard wes stad,
Quhen ha*n*niball *th*aim wencusyt had, 208
*Tha*t, off Ryng*is* w*ith* rich [stane],
*Tha*t war off kny*ch*t*is* fyng*er*ys [tane],
He send thre bollis to cartage :
And syne to Rome tuk his wiage, 212
*Th*ar to Distroye *th*e Cite all.
And *th*ai w*ith*-in, bath gret and small,

The king comforts his men.

"Lack of comfort brings despair.

Ever keep from despair.

hanibal.

Rome was hard beset by Hannibal, who sent three measures of rings of Roman knights to Carthage;

187. E *has* y *for initial* TH.
188. *et*] eat H.
189. [*thaim comfort* HA] *com*ford E.
192. *that*] in warld H.
194. *fallis—in-to*] ofttimes falles in H.
196. Then vtterly vanquisht is he H. *wtraly*] trewly wtraly (!) E.
200. *fra disparyng*] well fra discomforting H.
203. *redys off*] reades oft of H.
204. *stad*] sted H ; *see* l. 207.
207. *quhilum*] vmwhile H ; umquhile A.
209. [*stane* HA] stanys E ; *see next line.*
210. [*tane* HA] taneys E (*an impossible word*).
212. *wiage*] voyage H.
213. *Thar*] For H.

Had fled, quhen *th*ai saw h*is* cu*m*myng,
but Scipio encouraged the Romans, Had no*ch*t bene Scipio *th*e [ying]; 216
*Th*a*t*, or *th*ai fled, wald *th*aim haiff slayn,
And swagat turnyt *th*aim agayn.
Syne for to defend the Cite,
[Fol. 8 *b*.] S*er*wand*is* and threllis mad he fre; 220
and freed the slaves, And maid *th*aim kny*ch*t*is* eu*ir*ilkane:
And syne has off *th*e templis tane
*Th*e armys, *th*a*t* *th*ar eldrys bar,
giving them arms; In name off wictory offerryt *th*ar. 224
And quhen *th*ai armyt war, and dycht,
*Th*a*t* stalwart karlis war and wycht,
And saw *th*a*t* *th*ai war fre alsua,
*Th*aim tho*ch*t *th*a*t* *th*ai had leu*ir* ta 228
*Th*e dede, na lat *th*e toun be tane.
And w*ith* *com*mowne assent, as ane,
who went to attack Hannibal. *Th*ai Ischit off *th*e toune to fy*ch*t,
Quhar hannyball his mekill my*ch*t 232
Aganys *th*aim arayit was.
Bot, throw my*ch*t off godd*is* grace,
There fell heavy rain, It ranyt sa hard and hewyly,
*Th*a*t* *th*a*r* wes nane sa hardy 236
*Th*a*t* durst in-to *th*a*t* place abid;
Bot sped *th*aim in-till hy to rid:
*Th*e ta p*ar*t to *th*ar pail*ȝ*ownys,
*Th*e to*th*i*r* p*ar*t went in *th*e toune Is. 240

216. [*ying* HA] king E (*an obvious error*).
218. *swagat*] sa he H. *thaim*] he *th*aim E; *but* he *is not wanted.*
220. *Serwandis—threllis*] Bath *ser*wand*is* and threllis E (*but* Bath *is not wanted*); Thrilled, and seruants H (*where* Thrilled *is for* Thrilles).
222. *syne—templis*] of the Temple syne hes H.
224. *offerryt*] effeered H: offred A.
226. *That*] Thay H.
228. *leuir*] rather H.
229. *na*] than H; then A.
232. *his*] of H. *But* Hannyball his *is clearly miswritten for* Hannyballis.
234. *mycht*] the might H.
235. *hewyly*] sa heauie H.
237. *that place*] the plaine H.
238. *in-till*] all in H.
239. *ta*] ane H; one A. *pailȝownys*] Pallioun H.
240. And the other part to the tounes H.

*Th*e rayne *th*us lettyt *th*e fechtyn :
Sa did It twyß *thar*-eft*ir* syne.
Quhen hanibal saw *th*is ferly,
W*ith* all his gret chewalry 244
He left *th*e toune, & held his way ;
And syne wes put to sik assay,
Throw *th*e power off *tha*t Cite,
*Tha*t his lyff and his land tynt he. 248
Be *th*ir quheyne, *tha*t sa worthily
Wane sic A king, and sa my*ch*ty,
ȝe may weill be ensampill se,
*Tha*t na man suld disparyt be : 252
Na let his hart be wencusyt all,
For na myscheiff *tha*t eu*ir* may fall.
For nane wate, in how litill space
*Tha*t god wmquhile will send [his] grace. 256
Had *th*ai fled, and *thar* wayis gane,
*Th*ar fayis swith *th*e toune had tane.
*Th*arfor men, *tha*t werrayand [ar],
Suld set *thar* etlyng eu*ir*-mar 260
To stand agayne *thar* fayis my*ch*t,
Wmquhile w*ith* strenth, & quhile with sly*ch*t ;
And ay think to cum to purpos :
And giff *tha*t *th*aim war set in choß, 264
To dey, or to leyff cowartly,
*Th*ai suld erar dey chewalrusly."

which stopped the battle thrice.

Hannibal was afterwards defeated.

None should despair.

Always withstand your foes.

Prefer death to a coward's life."

249. Sen sa wheene and sa vnworthy H.
250. *king*] Knight H.
256. *wmquhile—grace*] will sometime send his grace H. E *omits* his.
257. *gane*] tane H; *but see next line.*
258. *swith*] sould H. *had*] haue H.
259. *werrayand*] weering H. [*ar*] are HA ; war E.
260. *etlyng*] intent H.
262. *Wmquhile*] Outher H. & *quhile*] or els H.
263. *And ay*] As they H.
264. *thaim*] they H.
265. *leyff*] liue H.

THusgat *th*aim *con*fort[yt] *th*e king;
He often told them old stories, And, to *con*fort *th*aim, ga*n* Inbryng 268
Auld storys off men *that* wer
Set in-tyll hard assayis ser,
And *that* fortoun *contra*ryit fast,
and encouraged them. And come to purpoſ at *th*e last. 272
*Th*arfor he said, "*that* *th*ai *that* wald
*Th*ar hart*is* wndiscumfyt hald
Suld ay thynk [ythandly] to bryng
exemplum. All *thar* enpreſ to gud ending: 276
"Cæsar was always busy. As quhile did Cesar *th*e worthy,
That traweillyt ay so besyly,
W*ith* all his my*ch*t, folowing to mak
To end *th*e purpoſ *that* he wald tak, 280
That hym tho*ch*t he had doyne ry*ch*t no*ch*t,
Ay quhill to do him levyt ocht:
Therefore he did great things. For-*th*i gret thing*is* eschewyt he,
As men may in his story se. 284
Men may se be his [ythand] will,
And It suld als accord to skill,
Perseverance *That* quha taiſ purpos sekyrly,
And followis It syne [ythandly], 288
For-owt fayntice, or yheit faynding,
W*ith*-*th*i It be conabill thing,
Bot he *th*e mar be wnhappy,
ensures partial success, He sall eschew It In p*a*rty. 292

267. *The initial is* y (*for* TH). *confortyt*] comforted HA; *con*fort E; *but see* l. 365.
268. *gan Inbryng*] in can bring H.
270. *ser*] feere H.
273. *thai*] wha H; he A; *but see next line.*
275. [*ythandly*] Ithingly HA; ententily E; *but cf.* ll. 285, 288.
276. *enpress*] purposes H.
277. *quhile*] whylum H.
280. *To end*] End of H.
282. Ay to doe while he left oght H.
283. *eschewyt*] encheeued H.
285. [*ythand*] Ithand HA; ythen (*an obvious error*) E.
287. *sekyrly*] intierly H.
288. *It syne*] on it H. [*ythandly*] Ithandly HA; ententily E; *cf.* ll. 275, 285.
289. Withoutten fainting or falding H.
290. *conabill*] cunnable H.
292. *eschew—In*] encheeue it be H.

And haiff he lyff-dayis, weill mai fall
*Tha*t he sall eschew It all.
For-*th*i suld [nane] haiff disparing
For till eschew A full gret thing: 296
For giff It fall he *thar*-off failȝe,
*Th*e fawt may be in his trawailȝe."

sometimes entire success."

HE p*r*echyt *th*aim on *th*is maner;
And fenȝeit to mak bett*ir* cher, 300
*Th*en he had mat*ir* to, be fer:
For his cauſ ȝeid fra ill to wer.
*Th*ai war ay in sa hard t*ra*waill,
Till *th*e ladyis began to fayle, 304
*Tha*t my*ch*t *th*e t*ra*waill drey na mar;
Sa did o*thir* als *tha*t war *th*ar.
*Th*e Erle Ihone wes ane off *th*a,
Off athole, *tha*t quhen he saw sua 308
*Th*e king be discumfyt twyſ,
And sa feile folk agayne him ryſ;
And lyff in sic t*ra*waill and dout,
His hart begane to faile all-out. 312
And to *th*e king, apon a day,
He said: "gyff I durst to ȝow say,
We lyff in-to sa mekill dreid,
And haff*is* oft-syſ off met sik ned, 316
And Is ay in sic t*ra*wailling,
W*ith* cauld, and hung*ir*, and waking;
*Tha*t I [set] off my-selwyn sua,

His cause grows worse daily.

The ladies cannot hold out.

John of Athol says, "We are often in great need;

[Fol. 9.]

293. *And*] H *om.* *weill—fall*] it may befall H.
294. *eschew*] well encheeue H.
295. [*nane* H] none A; E *omits.*
296. *eschew*] encheeue H.
298. *be*] ly H.
306. *war thar*] were there HA; E *has th*ar war (*which is karsher*).
308. *that quhen*] when that H. *sua*] say H; sa A.
309. *be*] thus be H; *but see last line. Perhaps we should read* to be.
311. *lyff*] leaue him H.
316. And of meat hes sa meekle need H.
319. [*set* HA] am sad E (*which is clearly corrupt*). *my-selwyn*] my selfe in H; my selfe am A. *sua*] sa H; so A.

That I count no*ch*t my lyff A stra. 320

I cannot hold out longer;

*Th*ir angrys may I [na] mar drey,
For *th*oucht me *th*arfor worthit dey,
I mon soiourne, quhar-eu*ir* It be.

leave me."

Levys me *th*arfor, p*ar* cheryte." 324
*Th*e king saw *that* he sa wes failyt,
And *th*at he Ik wes for-trawaillyt.
He said: "s*chir* Erle, we sall sone Se,
& ordayne how It best may be. 328
Quhar-eu*ir* ȝe be, our lord ȝow send
Grace, fra ȝour fais ȝow to defend!"

The king orders

W*ith* *th*at in hy to him callyt he
*Th*aim, *that* till him war mast p*ri*ue: 332
*Th*en amang *th*aim *th*ai tho*ch*t It best,
And ordanyt for *th*e liklyest,

that the queen and others should go to Kildrummy castle.

That *th*e queyne, and *th*e erle alsua,
And *th*e ladyis, in hy suld ga, 336
W*ith* Nele the bruce, till kildromy.
For *th*aim tho*ch*t *th*ai my*ch*t sekyrly
Duell *th*ar, quhill *th*ai war wictaillit weile:
For swa stalwart wes *th*e castell, 340
That It w*ith* strenth war hard to get,
Quhill *th*at *th*ar-in war men and mete.
As *th*ai ordanyt, *th*ai did in hy:
*Th*e queyne, and all hyr cumpany, 344
Lap on *thar* horß, and furth thai far.
Men my*ch*t haiff sene, quha had bene *thar*,

The ladies weep at taking leave.

At leve-takyng *th*e ladyis gret,
And mak *th*ar face w*ith* ter*is* wet: 348

320. *That*] E *om.* *nocht*] not of H. *stra*] stro A.
321. [*na* H] no A; ne E.
322. *tharfor—dey*] worthed therefore to die H.
324. *Levys—par*] Leaue me thereto for H.
325. *sa wes*] thus gate H.
326. *Ik*] H *om.* *for-trawaillyt*] *printed* sor trawaillyt P (*but* E *has a plain* f); sa sair trauailyied H.
328. *best may*] may best H.
332. *Thaim*] They H. *till—war*] were to him H.
340. *stalwart*] starke H.
342. *thar-in*] within H.
348. *mak*] made H. *face*] cheekes H.

And kny*ch*t*is*, for *th*ar luffi*s* sak,
Ba*ith* sich, and wep, and murnyng mak.
*Th*ai kyssyt *thar* luffi*s*, at *thar* p*ar*tyng,
*Th*e king wmbetho*ch*t him off A thing; 352
*Tha*t he fra-*th*ine on fute wald ga,
And tak on fute bath weill and wa;
And wald na horß-men w*ith* him haiff.
*Th*arfor his horß all haile he gaiff 356
To *th*e ladyis, *tha*t myst*ir* had.
*Th*e queyn furth on hyr wayis rade;
And sawffly come to *th*e castell,
Quhar hyr folk war ressawyt weill; 360
And esyt weill w*ith* meyt and drynk.
Bot my*ch*t nane eyß let hyr to think
On *th*e king, *tha*t sa sar wes stad,
*Tha*t bot ij.C. w*ith* him had. 364
*Th*e [quhilk] *th*aim weill *con*fortyt ay:
God help him, *tha*t all my*ch*t*is* may!

The king gives up his horse to the ladies.

The queen comes to the castle.

The king had but 200 with him.

[The paines of King Robert amang the Mountaines.]

THE queyne duelt *th*us in kyldromy:
And *th*e king, and his cumpany, 368
*Tha*t war ij.C., and na ma,
Fra *th*ai had send *th*ar horß *th*aim fra,
Wandryt emang *th*e hey montanys
Quhar he and his oft tholyt paynys. 372

They wander among the mountains.

351. *partyng*] departing A.
352. *wmbethocht*] bethought H.
356. Fra them there all haill they gaue H.
363. *sa—wes*] sa hard was H; wes sa sar (*a harsh order of words*) E.
364. *ij.C.*] twa hunder H.
365. E *has—The* quhe*th*ir *th*aim weill *con*fortyt he ay; *but* he *must be rejected, and therefore* quhethir *must become* quhilk; *hence* H *has*—The whilke them wel gouerned ay (*where* gouerned *should be* confortyt; *see* l. 267).
366. *him*] them H.
RUBRIC. *From* H; *not in* E.
367. *The initial letter is* y (*for* TH).
369. *ij.C.*] twa hunder H.
371. *Wandryt*] Waured H; Wandred A.

It is winter.

For It wes to *the* wynt*er* ner ;
And sa feile fayis about him wer,
That all *the* countre *th*aim werrayit.
Sa hard anoy *th*aim *th*en assayit, 376
Off hung*ir*, cauld, w*ith* schowr*is* snell,
*Th*at nane *that* levys can weill It tell.

The king sees his men's distress,

The king saw how his folk wes stad,
And quhat anoyis *that th*ai had ; 380
And saw wynt*er* wes cu*m*mand ner ;
And *that* he my*ch*t on na wyſ der,
In *the* hillys, *th*e cauld lying,
Na *th*e lang ny*ch*t*is* waking. 384

and resolves to go to Cantire.

He tho*ch*t he to kyntyr wald ga,
And swa lang soiowrnyng *thar* ma,
Till wynt*ir* wedd*ir* war away :
And *th*en he tho*ch*t, but mar delay, 388
In-to *th*e manland till arywe,
And till *th*e end hys werd*is* dryw[e].
And for kyntyr lyis in *th*e Se,

Sir Nigel Campbell is sent on before,

Schyr Nele Cambel befor send he, 392
For to get him nawyn and meite :
And certane tyme till him he sete,
Quhen he suld meite him at *th*e se.
Schir Nele cambell, w*ith* his mengȝe, 396
Went his way, but mar letting,
And left his bro*thir* w*ith* *th*e king.

and makes all ready in twelve days.

And in xij dayis sua t*ra*weillit he,
That he gat schippyne gud plente, 400

374. *him*] them H.
376. *Sa—then*] With sa hard noy they them H.
377. *with*] and H.
378. *That*] Is H. *can—It*] that can H.
380. *anoyis*] annoy els H.
381. *cummand*] drawing H.
382. *wyss der*] maneere H.
383. *In*] Drce in H.
384. *Na*] Nor yet H.
385. *to—wald*] wald to Kintyre H.
386. *soiowrnyng thar*] soiourne there to H.
389. *In-to*] In H. *till*] for to H.
390. *werdis*] weirds H. *drywe*] dryw E ; driue H.
393. *nawyn*] Nauing H.
394. *And*] A H.
399. *xij*] ten H. *sua*] H *om.*

And wictalis in gret aboundance:
Sa maid he nobill chewisance.
For his Sibmen wonnyt *thar*-by,
That helpyt him full wilfully. 404

[How the king past over Loch Lowmond.]

The king, eft*ir* *that* he wes gane,
To lowchlomond *the* way has tane,
And come *thar* on *the* thrid day.
Bot *thar*-about na bait fand *thai*, 408
That my*ch*t *th*aim our *the* wat*ir* ber:
*Th*an war *th*ai wa on gret manor:
For It wes fer about to ga;
And *th*ai war in-to dout alsua, 412
To meyt *thar* fayis *that* spred war wyd.
*Th*arfor, endlang *the* louchh*is* syd,
Sa besyly *th*ai socht, and fast,
Tyll Iamys of dowglas, at *the* last, 416
Fand A litill sonkyn bate,
And to *the* land It drew, fut hate.
Bot It sa litill wes, *th*at It
My*ch*t our *the* watt*ir* bot thresum flyt. 420
*Th*ai send *th*ar-off word to *the* king,
That wes Ioyfull off *that* fynding;
And fyrst in-to *the* bate is gane,
W*ith* him dowglas; *the* thrid wes ane 424
That rowyt *th*aim our deliu*e*rly,
And set *th*aim on *the* land all dry:
And rowyt sa oft-syß to & fra,
Fechand ay our twa & twa, 428
That in A ny*ch*t and in A day,
Cu*m*myn owt our *the* louch ar *th*ai.

The king reaches Loch Lomond,

but can find no boat.

[Fol. 9 b.]

They search about till James of Douglas finds a small boat that will hold but three.

The king and Douglas cross over,

and at last all the rest follow them.

403. *Sibmen wonnyt*] friends winned H.
RUBRIC. *From* H; *not in* E.
410. *wa on*] noyed in H.
415. They soght sa busily and sa fast H.
417. *sonkyn*] sinking H.
420. Might bot three ouer the Water flit H.
421. *send*] sent A.
430. *owt our*] ouer H.

For sum off *th*aim couth swome full weill,
And on his bak ber a fardele. 432
Swa w*ith* swy*m*myng, and w*ith* rowyng,
*Th*ai bro*ch*t *th*aim our, and all *thar* thing.

The king reads to his men the romance of Fierabras,

*Th*e king, *th*e quhilis, meryly
Red to *th*aim, *tha*t war him by, 436
Romanys off worthi ferambrace,
That worthily our-cu*m*myn was
Throw *th*e ry*ch*t douchty olywer;

and how the twelve peers (*douze pairs*) were besieged, in Aigremont by Lavyne (Baland), and were hard pressed,

And how *th*e duk-p*er*is wer 440
Assegyt In-till egrymor,
Quhar king lawyne lay *th*aim befor,
W*ith* may thowsand*is* *th*en I can say.
And bot xi w*ith*in war *th*ai, 444
And A woman: and war sa stad,
*Tha*t *th*ai na mete *thar*-w*ith*in had,
Bot as *th*ai fra *thar* fayis wan.
Yheyte sua *con*tenyt *th*ai *th*aim *th*an, 448

but held out till delivered.

*Tha*t *th*ai *th*e tour held manlily,
Till *tha*t Rychard off Norma*n*dy,
Magre his fayis, warnyt *th*e king,
*Tha*t wes Ioyfull off *th*is tithing; 452
For he wend *th*ai had all bene slayne.

Charlemagne then discomfited King Lavyne

*Th*arfor he turnyt in hy agayne,
And wan mantrybill and passit flagot;
And syne lawyne and all his flot 456
Dispitusly discumfyt he:

and released his men, and won the

And deliu*er*yt his men all fre,
And wan *th*e naylis, and *th*e sper,

439. *Throw*] With H.
440. *duk-peris*] doughtie Dutch-peeres H (*where* doughtie *is repeated from* l. 439).
442. *lawyne*] Lauyn H; Lanyn A.
444. *xi*] eleuen H.
445. *and*] that H.
446. *within*] with them H.
447. *wan*] it wan H.
448. *sua—thaim*] they conteined sa them H.
449. *tour*] toun H.
452. *this*] that H.
455. *mantrybill*] Monetribill H. *flagot*] Flagote H.
456. *lawyne*] Lauyn H; Lanyn A. *flot*] flote H.

And *the* croune, *that* Ihesu couth ber; 460 holy nails, spear, crown, and part of the cross.
And off *the* croice A gret p*ar*ty
He wan throw his chewalry.
The gud king, apon *th*is maner,
Comfort[yt] *th*aim *that* war him ner; 464 Thus the Bruce comforted his men.
And maid *th*aim gamyn [and] solace,
Till *that* his folk all passyt was.

Quhen *th*ai war passit *the* wat*ir* brad, They were glad when they had all crossed over.
Suppoß *th*ai fele off fayis had, 468
*Th*ai maid *th*aim mery, and war blyth;
No*ch*t-for-*th*i full fele syth
*Th*ai had full gret defaut off mete,
And *th*arfor venesoun to get 472
In twa p*ar*tyß ar *th*ai gayne. They divide into two parties to seek venison.
The king him-selff wes in-till ane;
And s*chir* Iames off Dowglas
In-to *the* to*thir* p*ar*ty was. 476
*Th*en to *the* hy*ch*t *th*ai held *thar* way,
And huntyt lang quhill off *the* day;
And soucht schawys, and Set*is* set;
Bot *th*ai gat litill for till ete. 480
*Th*en hapnyt at *that* tyme p*er*caß, The earl of Lennox was then among the hills,
That the Erle of *the* Leuenax was
Amang *the* hillis, ner *thar*by;
And quhen he hard sa blaw & cry, 484
He had wond*ir* quhat It my*ch*t be;
And on sic maner spyryt he,

460. *couth ber*] beare H. *Perhaps that should be omitted.*
462. *his*] his great H.
464. *Comfortyt*] Comforted H; Comfort E.
465. *thaim*] him H. [*and* H] et E (*probably by an error*).
466. *folk—passyt*] men ouerpassed H.
467. *war*] had H.
470. *Nocht*] Yet not H.
475. *schir*] good Sir H.
480. But litle good gate they to eat H.
481. *at*] in H. *percass*] through cace H.
482. *the Leuenax*] Lennox H.
484. *sa*] sik H.
486. *spyryt*] spyed H.

and knew the king was near.

That [he] knew *that* It wes *the* king:
And *th*en, for-owtyn mar duelling, 488
W*ith* all *th*aim off his cumpany,
He went ry*ch*t till *the* king in hy,
Sa bly*th* and sa Ioyfull, *that* he
My*ch*t on na maner blyther be. 492

He thought the king had been dead.

For he *the* king wend had bene ded;
And he wes alsua will off red,
That he durst rest in-to na place;
Na, sen *the* king discumfyt was 496
At meffan, he herd neu*ir* thing
That eu*ir* wes certane off *the* king.
*Th*arfor, in-to full gret daynte,

Therefore he welcomed him blithely.

The king full humyly haylist he; 500
And he him welcu*m*myt ry*ch*t bly*th*ly,
And [kyssyt] him full tend*ir*ly.
And all *the* lord*is*, *that* war *th*ar,
Ry*ch*t Ioyfull off *thar* meting war, 504

[Fol. 10.]

And kyssyt him in gret daynte.
It wes gret pite for till Se

Many weep for joy.

How *th*ai for Ioy and pite gret,
Quhen *that th*ai w*ith th*ar falow[*is*] met, 508
*That th*ai wend had bene dede; for*th*i
*Th*ai welcu*m*myt him mar hartfully.
And he for pite gret agayne,
That neu*ir* off metyng wes sa fayne. 512

Such weeping was not real weeping.

*Thoch*t I say *that th*ai gret, sothly
It wes na greting propyrly:

487. [*he* HA] E *om.* *that*] well H.
488. *for-owtyn*] but ony H.
490. Right to the King he went in hy H.
495. *rest*] no*ch*t rest E; *but* H *omits* nocht, *which is not wanted.*
496. *Na sen*] Sen that H.
497. *meffan*] Methwen H; Methven A. *thing*] tithing H.
498. *wes certane*] certaine was H.
499. *in-to*] in H.
500. *humyly*] hamely H. *haylist*] *so in* E; hailsed H.
502. [*kyssyt*] kissed HA; askyt E; *cf.* l. 505.
503. *war thar*] there were H.
504. *Rycht*] Were H. *war*] there H.
508. *falowis*] fellowes H; falow E.

For I trow traistly, *that* gretyng
Cu*m*mys to men for myaliking; 516
And *that* nane may but [anger] gret,
Bot It be wemen, *that* can wet
*Th*air chekys, quhen *th*aim list, w*ith* ter*is*, — Women can weep at anything;
*Th*e que*th*ir weill oft *th*aim na thing der*is*. 520
Bot I wate weill, but lesyng,
Quhat eu*ir* men say off sic greting,
That mekill Ioy, or ȝeit pete, — men sometimes weep for great joy,
May ger men sua amowyt be, 524
That wat*ir* fra *th*e hart will ryß,
And weyt *th*e eyne on sic a wyß,
That [It] is lik to be greting,
Thocht It be no*cht* sua in all thing. 528
For quhen men gret*is* enkrely,
*Th*e hart is sorowfull or angry. — but only really weep for sorrow or anger.
Bot for pite, I trow, gretyng
Be na thing bot ane opynnyng 532
Off hart, *that* schawis *th*e tend*ir*nys
Off rewth *that* in It closyt Is.
*Th*e barownys, apon *th*is maner,
Throw godd*is* grace, assemblyt wer. 536
*Th*e Erle had mete, and *that* plente,
And w*ith* glaid hart It *th*aim gaiff he; — The earl gives them all plenty of meat.
And *th*ai eyt It w*ith* full gud will,
That soucht [nane o*thir*] salß *th*ar-till 540
Bot appetyt, *that* oft men takys;

516. *for*] through H.
517. [*anger* HA] angry E.
519. *quhen*] quhen eu*ir* E; *but* HA *omit* euir.
520. The whilk oft times nane ill them deeres H.
521. *weill*] right well H.
522. *Quhat—say*] Where euer men hes H.
523. *or ȝeit*] and great H.
525. *the*] their H.
526. *the*] their H. *a wyss*] E *has* awyss; a wise HA.
527. [*It*] it HA; E *om.*
528. *be*] *misprinted* to be J. *sua*] like H.
529. *enkrely*] inkerly H.
538. *glaid*] blyth H. *It thaim*] them it H.
540. *That*] And H. [*nane othir*] nane other H; na no*thir* E (*probably miswritten for* nane othir). *salss*] sauce H.

For weill scowryt war *thar* stomakys.

All eat and drink.

*Th*ai eit and drank sic as *th*ai had ;
And till our lord syne lowyng maid, 544
And thankit him, w*ith* full gud cher,
*That th*ai war met on *that* maner.
*Th*e king *th*en at *th*aim speryt ȝarne,
How *th*ai, sen he *th*aim seyne, had farne ; 548

They tell the king their adventures,

And *th*ai full pitwysly gan tell
Auentur*is that th*aim befell,
And gret anoyis, and powerte.
*Th*e king *thar*-at had gret pite : 552

and he tells them his.

And tauld *th*aim petwisly agayne
*Th*e noy, *th*e trawaill, and *th*e payne,
*Th*at he had tholyt, sen he *th*aim saw.
Wes nane amang *th*aim, hey na law, 556

All feel pity and pleasure,

That he ne had pite and plesaunce,
Quhen *that* he herd mak remembrance
Off *th*e p*er*ellys *that* passyt war.
[For] quhen men oucht at liking ar, 560
To tell off paynys passyt by

for to tell of past pains gives pleasure.

Plesys to heryng [wonderly] ;
And to reherß *th*ar auld disese
Dois *th*aim oft-syß *con*fort and ese ; 564
W*ith-th*i *th*ar-to folow na blame,
Dishonour, wikytnes, na schame.

542. *weill*] E *has* ry*c*ht weill, *but* HA *omit* rycht.
544. *our*] the H. *syne lowyng*] sik louing H.
546. *met*] *so in* H; *badly spelt* mete *in* E.
547. *speryt*] asked H.
548. *How—seyne*] Sen he them saw, how they H.
550. *Auenturis*] Of auentures H.
556. *na*] nor H.
557. *That—ne*] But he H.
560. [*For* HA] Bot E.
562. [*wonderly*] wondrously HA (*of which* wonderly *is an older form*); petuisly E (*which cannot be right*).
563. *disese*] diseases HA.
564. Does them oft comfort, and eases H ; Does them oft comfort more nor eases A.

[How the king past to the sea, and how the Erle of Lennox was chaist.]

Eftir *the* mete sone raiß *the* king,
Quhen he had lewyt hys speryng; 568
And buskyt him, *with* his mengȝe,
And went in hy towart *the* Se;
Quhar *schir* Nele Cambell *th*aim met,
Bath *with* schippis, and *with* meyte; 572
Saylys, ayr*is*, and o*thir* thing,
That wes spedfull to *th*ar passyng.
*Th*en schippyt *th*ai, for-owtyn mar;
Sum went till ster, and sum till ar, 576
And rowyt be *the* Ile of but.
Men mycht se mony frely fute
About *the* cost[is] *thar* lukand,
As *th*ai on ayr*is* raiß rowand: 580
And newys *th*at stalwart war & squar,
That wont to spayn gret sper*is* war,
Swa spaynyt ar*is*, *that* men my*ch*t Se
Full oft *the* hyde leve on *the* tre. 584
For all war doand, kny*ch*t and knawe;
Wes nane *that* eu*ir* disport my*ch*t have
Fra steryng, and fra rowyng,
To furthyr *th*aim off *thar* fleting. 588

The king goes to the sea.

All embark,

and row by the Isle of Bute.

Fists well used to span spears now span oars.

All are engaged in steering or rowing.

Hic comes de levenax insequitur a suis proditoribus.

Bot in *the* samyn tyme at *th*ai

RUBRIC. *From* H; *not in* E.
568. *speryng*] speaking H.
571. *Quhar*] When A. *thaim*] soone them H. *met*] *so in* H; *spelt* mete *in* E.
574. *passyng*] faring H.
575. *for-owtyn*] withoutten H.
576. *ar*] Aire H.
577. *be*] about H. *but*] Boot H.
579. *costis*] Coastes H; Coasts A; cost E. *lukand*] bowning H.
580. *raiss rowand*] were rowing H.
581. *newys*] neeues H.
582. *spayn*] span H.
583. *spaynyt*] *so printed in* P; *misprinted* spanyt J; spanned H.
584. Feele of their Hyde left on the tree H. *hyde*] *the first two letters of this word indistinct in* E.
585. *war*] was H.
586. *euir*] other H.
587. Fra Steere, fra Aire, and fra rowing (*which is tautology*) H.
588. *off*] in H. *fleting*] flitting H.
RUBRIC. *From* E; *not in* H.
589. *the*] A *om.*

War in schipping, as ȝe hard me say,
The Erle off the leuenax was,
I can no*ch*t tell ȝow throw quhat caſ,
Lewyt behynd w*ith* his galay,
Till *the* king wes fer on his way.
Quhen *that* *th*ai off his cuntre
Wyst *that* so duelt behynd wes he,
Be Se w*ith* Schippys *th*ai him so*ch*t;
And he, *that* saw *that* he wes nocht
Off pith to fecht w*ith* *th*ai traytour*is*,
And *that* he had na ner socour*is*
*Th*en *the* king*is* flote, for-*th*i
He sped him eft*ir* *th*aim in hy.
Bot *the* tratour*is* hym folowyt sua,
That *th*ai weill ner hym gan our-ta.
For all *the* my*ch*t *that* he my*ch*t do,
Ay ner and ner *th*ai come him to.
And quhen he saw *th*ai war sa ner
That he my*ch*t weill *th*ar manauce her,
And saw *th*aim ner and ner cum ay,
*Th*en till his mengȝe gan he say;
"Bot giff we fynd sum sutelte,
Ourtane all sone sall we be.
*Th*arfor I rede, but mar letting,
That, owtakyn our armyng,
We kast our thing all in *the* se:
And fra our schip swa ly*ch*tyt be,
We sall swa row, and speid ws sua,
That we sall weill eschaip *th*aim fra;
W*ith* *th*at *th*ai sall mak duelling

The earl of Lennox with his galley is left behind,

and is pursued.

[Fol. 10 b.]

He makes all speed,

but, seeing his enemies gain upon him,

says, "We must try and beguile them.

We must cast our things into the sea."

590. *in schipping*] shipped H.
591. *The*] The good H. *the leuenax*] Lennox H.
593. *Lewyt*] Left H. *with*] all with H. *galay*] Gaillay H.
595. *Quhen*] And when HA.
596. *duelt*] left H.
601. *Then*] Nor H.
604. *hym gan*] can him H.
608. *manauce*] *so in* P; manance HJ.
612. We sall all soone ouertaken be H.
615. *our—in*] all thing into H.
617. *swa*] all H.

Apon *the* Se, to tak our thing; 620
And we sall row but resting ay,
Till we eschapyt be away."
As he deuisyt *th*ai have done;
And *th*ar schip *th*ai ly*ch*tyt sone: 624
And rowyt syne, w*ith* all *th*ar my*ch*t;
And scho, *that* swa wes maid lycht,
Raykyt slidand throw *the* Se.
And quhen *th*ar fayis gan *th*aim Se 628
Forowth *th*aim alwayis, mar and mar,
The thing*is that th*ar fletand war
*Th*ai tuk; and turnyt syne agayne,
And [swa] *th*ai lesyt all *thar* payne. 632

They lighten the ship.

Their enemies cease the pursuit.

Quhen *that the* Erle on *this* maner,
And hys mengȝe, eschapyt wer,
Eftyr *the* king he gan hym hy,
*That th*en, w*ith* all his cumpany, 636
In-to kyntyr arywyt was.
The Erle tauld him all his caß;
How he wes chasyt on *the* Se,
W*ith th*aim *that* suld his awyn be; 640
And how he had bene tane but dout,
Na war It *that* he warpyt owt
All *that* he had, him ly*ch*t to ma;
And swa eschapyt [he] *th*aim fra. 644
"Schyr Erle," Said *the* king, "per*f*ay,
Syn *th*ow eschapyt is away,
Off [thi] tynsell is na plenȝeing.

The earl follows the king,

and tells his adventure.

"Sir Earl," says the king,

622. *away*] them fray H.
623. *thai have*] so haue they H.
624. *thai*] haue they H.
625. *syne*] soon A.
626. And when their ship was sa made light H.
627. *Raykyt*] Sho raiked H.
629. *Fbrowth*] Before H.
632. [*swa*] sa H; so A; be *that* E (*which makes the line too long*).
638. *tauld*] he told H.
640. *awyn*] awne men H.
642. *Na—It*] War not it H. *warpyt*] wapped H.
644. [*he* HA] E *om.*
646. *Syn*] Gif H.
647. [*thi*] thy HA; *the* E.

"you should not part company from me."

Bot I will say *th*e weile a thing; 648
*That th*ar will fall *th*e gret foly
To paß oft fra my cumpany.
For fele Syß, quhen *th*ow art away,
*Th*ow art set in-till hard assay. 652
*Th*arfor me thynk [it] best to *th*e,
To hald *th*e alwayis ner by me."

"Sire, I will never again go far from you."

"Schyr," said *th*e Erle, "It sall be swa.
I sall na wyß paß fer ȝow fra, 656
Till god giff grace we be of my*ch*t
Agayne our fayis to hald our sty*ch*t."

Angus, lord of Cantire, receives the king kindly,

Anguß off Ile *that* tyme wes Syr,
And lord and ledar off kyntyr. 660
*Th*e king ry*ch*t weill resawyt he;
And wnd*er*tuk his man to be:
And him and his, on mony wyß,
He abandownyt till his *ser*wice. 664

and gives him his castle of Dunaverty.

And, for mar sekyrneß, gaiff hi*m* syne
Hys castell off Donavardyne,
To duell *thar*in, at his liking.
Full gretumly thankyt him *th*e ki[n]g; 668
And resawyt his *ser*uice.
No*ch*t-for-*th*i, on mony wyß,

The king is afraid of treason.

He wes dredand for tresoun ay:
And *th*arfor, as Ik hard men say, 672
He traistyt in nane sekyrly,
Till *that* he knew him wt*ra*ly.
Bot quhatkyn dred *that* eu*ir* he had,

He dwells in Dunaverty for three days,

Fayr *con*tenance to *th*aim he maid. 676
And in donavardyne dayis thre,

648. *say*] tell H.
651. *fele*] oft H.
652. *in-till*] in full H.
653. *me*] we A. [*it* HA] E *om.*
658. *stycht*] sty*ch*t *or* fly*ch*t *in* E (*but more like the former*); *printed* flycht PJ, *but* stycht I; right HA.
659. *Anguss*] And anguss E, *but* HA *omit* And. *Ile*] the Iles H.
666. *Donavardyne*] Donabardyne H.
668. *gretumly*] greatly H.
670. *Nocht*] Yet not H.
677. *donavardyne*] Donabardyn H.

For-owtyne mar, *th*en duellyt he.
Syne gert he his mengȝe mak *th*aim ȝar,
Towart Rauchryne be se to far. 680
*Tha*t is ane Ile in[to] *th*e Se ;
And may weill in mydwart be
Betuix kyntyr and Irland :
Quhar als gret stremys ar ry*n*nand, 684
And als p*er*alous, and mar,
Till our-saile *th*aim in-to schipfair,
As Is *th*e raiſ of bretangȝe,
Or strait off marrok in-to spanȝe. 688
*Th*air schippys to *th*e Se *th*ai set ;
And maid redy, but langer let,
Ankyrs, rapys, bat*h* saile and ar,
And all *tha*t nedyt to schipfar. 692
Quhen *th*ai war boune, to saile *th*ai went :
*Th*e wynd wes wele to *thar* talent.
*Th*ai raysyt saile, and furth *th*ai far ;
And by *th*e mole *th*ai passyt ȝar, 696
And entryt sone in-to *th*e rase,
Quhar *that th*e strem sa sturdy was,
*Tha*t wawys wyd [that] brekand war
Weltryt as hillys her and *th*ar. 700
*Th*e schippys our *th*e wawys slayd,
For wynd at poynt blawand *th*ai had.

and then goes to the isle of Rathlin.

The sea near it is very dangerous.

They all get ready.

The wind is fair.

They enter the "race" or current.

[Fol. 11.]

The stream is strong and the waves run high.

678. He soiournde still with his menyie H.
679. *he—mengȝe*] his men all H.
680. *Rauchryne*] Ranchoyn H ; Rachrin A.
681. [*into* HA] in E.
682. *mydwart*] *so in* E ; *printed* mid wattir P ; mydwatter J ; midwart I; the midway HA; the midwart *in edition of* 1758.
686. *Till—in-to*] For to saile them in HA.
687. *As—raiss*] As the great Raes H.
688. *strait*] Straites H.
689. *to—Se*] to sea right soone A.
693. *saile*] ship H.
694. *talent*] intent H.
695. *saile*] Sailes H. *furth*] swyth H.
696. *mole*] Mule H ; Mull *in edition of* 1758. *ȝar*] there A.
698. *Quhar—strem*] Whereat the storme H ; Quhar *that the* stremys E (*where* stremys *is miswritten from confusion with* wawys *in* l. 699.)
699. *That*] With H. [*that* HA] wyc*h* *or* wyt*h* *or* wyc*h*t E ; *printed* wycht PJ. *brekand*] bolning H.
700. *Weltryt*] Waltering H.
702. *poynt*] will H.

Bot no*ch*t-for-*th*i quha had *th*ar bene,
A gret stertling he my*ch*t haiff seyne 704

Some ships are seen on the summit of waves,

Off Schippys; for quhilum sum wald be
Ry*ch*t on *th*e wawys [summite];
And sum wald slyd fra heycht to law,
Ry*ch*t as *th*ai doune till hell wald draw; 708
Syne on *th*e waw stert sodanly.

others down in the deep.

And o*thir* schippys, *that* war *thar*-by,
Deliu*e*rly drew to *th*e depe.
It wes gret cu*n*nannes to kep 712
*Th*ar takill in-till sic A thrang,
And wy*th* sic wawis; for, ay amang,

They often lose sight of land.

The wawys reft *thar* sycht of land.
Quhen *th*ai *th*e land wes ry*ch*t ner hand, 716
And quhen Schippys war sailand ner,
The Se wald ryß on sic maner,
That off *th*e wawys *th*e weltrand hy*ch*t
Wald refe *th*aim oft off *thar* sy*ch*t. 720
Bot in-to Rauchryne, nocht-for*th*i,

Yet all arrive safely at Rathlin,

*Th*ai arywyt Ilkane sawffly:
Bly*th*, and glaid, *that* *th*ai war sua
Eschapyt *th*ai hidwyß wawis fra. 724
In Rauchryne *th*ai arywyt ar;

and disembark.

And to *th*e land *th*ai went but mar,
Armyt upon *thar* best maner.

The people of the island flee to a castle.

Quhen *th*e folk, *that* *th*ar wo*n*nand wer, 728
Saw men off Armys in *thar* cuntre
Aryve in-to sic quantite,
*Th*ai fled in hy, w*ith* *th*ar catell,
Towart A ry*ch*t stalwart castell, 732

703. *had thar*] there had H.
706. [*summite*] summitie HA; as on mounte E.
707. *wald slyd*] slade H. *to*] sa H.
709. *waw*] waues H.
712. *cunnannes*] Cunning for H.
714. *wyth*] waite H. *for*] H *om.*
715, 716. That reft them oft sight of the land, When that they to it were marchand H.
719. *weltrand*] waltering H.
721. *nocht-forthi*] sikkerly H.
723. *Blyth*] Right blyth H.
724. *thai*] the H.
732. *Towart—rycht*] Right toward a H.

That in *the* land wes ner *th*ar-by.
Men my*ch*t her wemen hely cry,
And fle w*ith* cataill her and *th*ar.
Bot *the* king*is* folk, *that* war 736 But the king's men follow them, and capture them.
Deliu*er* off fute, *th*aim gan our-hy;
And *th*aim arestyt hastely,
And bro*ch*t *th*aim to *the* king agayne,
Swa *that* nane off *th*aim all wes slayne. 740
*Th*en w*ith* *th*aim tretyt swa *the* king,
That *th*ai, to fullfill hys ȝarnyng, They become his men,
Become his men eu*ir*ilkane:
And has him trewly wnd*er*tane 744
That *th*ai and *th*air*is*, loud and still,
Suld be in all thing at his will:
And, quhill him likit *thar* to leynd,
Eu*ir*ilk day *th*ai suld him seynd 748 and agree to send him food for 300 men daily.
Wictalis for iij C. men:
And *th*ai as lord suld him ken;
Bot at *th*ar possessioune suld be,
For all his men, *thar* awyn fre. 752
*Th*e cu*n*nand on *th*is wyſ was maid;
And on *the* morn, but lang*ir* baid,
Off all rauchryne bat*h* man & page The men of Rathlin do him homage.
Knelyt, and maid *th*e king homage; 756
And *tharwith* swour him fewte,
To serve him ay in lawte:
And held him ry*ch*t weill cu*n*nand.
For quhill he duelt in-to *the* land, 760
*Th*ai fand meit till his cumpany;
And *ser*wyt him full humely.

733. *thar-by*] them by H.
738. *hastely*] haillely H.
749. *iij C.*] three hunded (*sic*) H.
750. And ay for Lord they sould him ken H.
751. Sa that their Fortresses might be H.
757. *him*] to him H.
758. *ay in*] into leele H.
759. *rycht weill*] therewith leele H.
761. *fand*] gaue H.
762. *full humely*] right faithfully H.

[BOOK IV.]

[How the QVEENE and other ladies were tane, & prisoned & her men slaine.]

We now speak of the king's foes,

IN rauchryne leve we now *th*e king
In rest, for-owtyn barganyng;
And off his fayis A quhile spek we
*Th*at, throw *th*ar my*ch*t and *thar* powste, 4
Maid sic A p*er*secucioune,
Sa hard, sa strayt, and sa feloune,
On *th*aim *th*at till hym luffand wer,
Or kyn, or freynd on ony maner, 8
*Th*at [it] till her is gret pite.

who spared none that seemed friendly to him.

For *th*ai sparyt, off na degre,
*Th*aim *th*at *th*ai trowit his freynd wer,
No*thir* off *th*e kyrk, na seculer. 12

They imprison Robert, bishop of Glasgow.

For off glaskow byschop Robert,
And [Marcus] off man *th*ai stythly sp*e*ryt
Bath in fetrys and in p*r*esoune.

Setoun is betrayed by one Macnab.

And worthy crystoll off Seytoun 16
In-to Loudon betresyt was,
Throw A discipll off Iu las,

1. *In*] At H.
2. *for-owtyn*] withoutten H.
8. *on*] *miswritten* or *in* E; in H.
9. [*it* HA] at E. *is*] was H.
10. *off*] nane of H.
11. *Thaim*] H *om.* *freynd*] friends H.
14. [*Marcus* H] makis E; *printed* Makus J. *man*] Maine H.
15. *fetrys*] the fetters A.
16. *worthy*] als good H.
17. *Loudon*] *so printed by* P; London J; Lundon I; Lochdon H. *betresyt*] betrayed H.

Maknab, A fals tratour, *that* ay
Wes off his duelling, nycht & day; 20
Quhom to he maid gud cumpany.
It wes fer wer *th*an tratoury
For to betreyß sic A p*er*soune,
So nobill, and off sic renoune; 24
Bot *thar*-off had he na pite:
In hell *con*dampnyt mot he be!
For quhen he him bet*ra*syt had,
*Th*e Ingliß men ry*ch*t w*ith* him rad 28
In hy, in Ingland, to *th*e king,
*Th*at gert draw hym, & hede, & hing,
For-owtyn pete, or mercy.
It wes gret sorow sekyrly, 32
That so worthy p*er*soune as he
Suld on sic maner hangyt be;
*Th*usgate endyt his worthynes.
Off Crauford als Schyr Ranald wes, 36
And s*chir* bruce als *th*e blar
Hangyt in-till A berne in ar.
*Th*e queyn, & als dame mariory,
Hyr docht*ir*, *that* syne worthily 40
Wes coupillyt in-to godd*is* band
W*ith* Walt*er* stewart off Scotland;
That wald on na wyß lang*ar* ly
In [the] castell off Kyldromy 44
To byd A sege, ar ridin raith
W*ith* kny*chtis* and [with] squyer*is* bath
Throw Roß, ry*ch*t to *th*e gyrth off tayne;
Bot *that* tra*w*aill *th*ai maid in wayne. 48

It was worse than treachery to betray so noble a person.

The Englishmen take him to King Edward,

[Fol. 11 *b*.]

who had him drawn, beheaded, and hung.

Sir Ranald Crauford is hung in a barn in Ayr.

The queen and her daughter Margery

would not remain at Kildrummy,

but ride to the sanctuary at Tain.

19. *Maknab*] Maknaght H.
20. *off his*] with him H.
24. *sic*] sa good H.
30. *That*] And H.
35. *his*] the H.
36. *Off*] And off E; *but* H *omits* And, *which is not wanted*. *Ranald*] Reynald H.
37. *schir*] good Sir A. *bruce*] Bryse H. *the blar*] of the Blaire H.
38. *in ar*] at Aire H.
44. [*the* HA] E *om*.
45. *ar*] Bot H.
46. [*with* HA] E *om*.
47. *tayne*] Thane H.

The people of Ross

For *th*ai off roß, *that* wald no*ch*t ber
For *th*aim na blayme, na ȝeit danger,
Owt off *th*e gyrth hame all has tayne,

deliver them up to the English.

And syne [has send] *th*aim eu*ir*ilkane 52
Ry*ch*t in-till Ingland, to *th*e king,
That gert draw all *th*e men, and hing;
And put *th*e ladyis in p*r*esoune,
Sum in-till castell, sum in dongeoun. 56

[Fol. 26. Cambridge MS.]

It wes gret pite for to heir
Folk till be tribulit on *th*is maneir.

How prynce eduard of yngland assegit kyndrwmy.

THat tym wes in-to kyndrumy
Men *th*at wicht war and hardy, 60

Sir Neill Bruce and the Earl of Athol were then at Kildrummy.

Schir neill *th*e bryß, I wat weill,
And *th*ar wes *th*e erll of adeill.
*Th*e castell weill vittalit *th*ai,
With met and Fwaill can purvay, 64
And inforsit *th*e castell sua,
*Th*ame thocht *th*at na strinth my*ch*t It ta.

Edward hears that they are

And quhen *th*at it *th*e king wes tald
Of yngland, how *th*ai schup to hald 68

49. *that*] they H.
50. *na ȝeit*] nor na H.
52. [*has send* (sic) HA] E *om.*
55. *in*] into H.
56. *sum*] and some H.
57. *Here begins the* Cambridge MS. (C), *which is adopted for the text from this point to the end. It must be noted that readings to which* no *letter is appended are from the* Edinburgh MS., *which is also* sometimes *denoted by* E; *viz. chiefly when it is also necessary to give readings from* Hart's edition (H).
57. *to*] till.
58. *Folk till*] *Th*e folk. *till be*] H *om.* *this*] sik H.
RUBRIC. *So in* C; Hic cas*tellum* de kyldrome obside*tur* & p*r*odicione cap*itur* E; How Englishmen sieged the Castle of Kildromy H.
59. *That*] Yat C; *with large* Y. *in-to*] into H; in E. *kyndrumy*] kyldromy E; Kildromy H.
60. *Men*] Wyth men E; Good men H.
61. *bryss*] bruce. *I wat*] and I wate E; this wate ye H.
62. *And*] *That*. *wes the erll*] *th*e erle wes E; the Erle also H. *adeill*] Adheill E; Atholl H.
63. *The*] In *the*. *weill*] right well H. *thai*] ay.
64. *With*] And EH.
66. *Thame thocht that*] *That th*aim tho*ch*t.
67. *that it*] It to.
68. *to*] till.

*Th*at castell, he wes all angry.
He callit his son till him in hy,
*Th*e eldest and apperande air,
A ȝoung bachiller, stark and fair,
Schir Eduard callit of carnavirnane,
*Th*at wes *th*e starkest man of ane,
*Th*at men fynd my*ch*t in ony cu*n*tre;
Prynce of valys *th*at tym wes he.
He gert als call erlis twa,
Glowsister and herfurd war *th*ai,
And bad *th*ame wend in-to scotland,
And set a sege with stalward hand
To *th*e castell of kyndrwmy;
And all *th*e haldar*is* halely
He bad distroy without ransoune,
Or bring *th*ame till him in presoune.

holding the castle against him,
72 and sends his son, Edward of Carnarvon,
76 Prince of Wales,
to Scotland, to besiege the
80 castle.
84

[Hic rex anglie congregat suos in scociam].

Quhen *th*ai *th*e mandment all had tane,
*Th*ai assemblit ane ost on-ane,
And to *th*e castell went in hy,
And assegit it rygorusly;
And mony tyme fufll hard assalit,
Bot for to tak it ȝeit *th*ame falit.
For *th*ai within war richt vorthy,
And *th*ame defendit douchtely,
And ruschit *th*air fais oft agane,
Sum best voundit, and sum ves slane.
And mony tymes ysche *th*ai wald,

They gather a host, and assail the castle.
88
The besieged defend it
92 vigorously.

70. *He*] And.
72. *stark*] and stark.
73. *carnavirnane*] carnauerane.
75. *fynd*] E *om.* *men—ony*] might be found in a H.
77. *He*] And he.
78. *Glowsister*] Glosystyr. *herfurd*] harfurd.
81. *kyndrwmy*] kyldromy.
83. *without*] for-owtyn.
RUBRIC. *In* E; *but on* fol. 12 *a*.
85. *mandment all*] *com*maundment.
88. *assegit it*] It assegyt. *rygorusly*] wigorusly.
90. *thame*] *th*ai.
93. *ruschit*] repugned H. *oft*] oft *or* ost *in* E; *printed* off P; ost J; oft HI.
94. *best*] baissed H. *voundit*] sum woundyt. *and—slane*] sum alslayn.

And bargane at *the* barras hald, 96
And wound *th*air fais oft and sla.
Suthly *th*ai [*th*aim *con*tenyt] swa,
[Fol. 26 b. C.] *Th*at *th*ai without disparit war,
The besiegers think of returning home. And thoucht [till] yngland for to far. 100
For *th*ai sa stith saw *the* casteill,
And wist *th*at it wes varnist weill,
And saw *the* men defend *th*ame swa,
*Th*at *th*ai na hop had *th*ame to ta. 104
Nane had *th*ai done all *th*at sesoune,
Gif na had beyn *th*air fals tresoune.
But a traitor, named Osbarn, For *th*ar within wes a tratour,
A fals lurdane, ane losengeour, 108
Osbarn to name, maid *the* tresoun;
I wat nocht for quhat enchesoun,
Na quham with he maid *the* cowyne.
Bot as *th*ai said, *th*at war *th*ar-in, 112
throws a red-hot coulter He tuk a culter hat glowand,
*Th*at het wes in a fyre byrnand,
And went in-to *the* mekill hall,
*Th*at *th*an with corne wes fillit all, 116
into a heap of corn in the hall. And heych vpon a mow [It] did,
Bot it full lang wes *th*ar no*ch*t hyd.
For men sais [oft], *th*at fire, na pryd,
But discou*er*yng, may no man hyd. 120
*Th*e pomp of pryde ay furth shawis,
Or ellis *th*e gret bost *th*at it blawis;

96. *barras*] barraiss.
98. *Suthly*] Schortly E; Surely H. [*thaim contenyt* E] them contemned H; continuit C.
100. [*till* E] to A; in CH.
101. *stith*] starke H.
102. *wist*] with E; thought H. *varnist*] warnyst E; weaponde H.
106. *na—thair*] It ne had bene E; it not war right H.
107. *within*] with *th*aim.
109. *Osbarn*] Hosbarne.
111. *the*] *that*. *cowyne*] conwyn E; conuyne H.
114. *het*] ȝeit E; red H. *byrnand*] brynnand.
115. *in-to*] him to.
117. *vpon*] wp in. [*It* E] it H; he C.
118. *thar nocht*] nocht *thar*.
119. [*oft* EH] C *om*.
121. *The—ay*] For *the* pomp oft *the* prid E; For the pompe of the pride H.
122. *bost*] boist.

And *th*air may no man fire sa covir, [Fol. 12. E.]
[Bot] low or reyk sall it discovir. 124
So fell it heir; for fyre all cleir — Fire soon bursts out,
Soyn throu *th*e thik burd can appeir,
Ferst as a stern, syne as a moyne,
And wele bradar *th*ar-eft*er* soyn. 128
*Th*e fyre out syne in blasis brast,
And *th*e reik raiß richt vound*er* fast.
*Th*e fyre our all *th*e castell spred, — and spreads everywhere.
*Th*ar my*ch*t no fors of men it red. 132
*Th*an *th*ai within drew till *th*e wall,
*Th*at at *th*at tym wes battalit all
Within, richt as it wes with-out.
*Th*at battalyng, withouten dout, 136 — The baftlements partly protect those within.
Saffit *th*air liff*is*, for it brak
Blesis *th*at wald *th*ame ourtak.
And quhen *th*air fais *th*e myscheiff saw,
Till Armys went *th*ai in a thraw, 140 [Fol. 27. C.]
And assalit *th*e castell fast,
Quhar *th*ai durst cum for fyris blast.
Bot *th*ai within, *th*at myster had, — The defenders fight bravely,
Sa gret defens ande worthy maid, 144
*Th*at *th*ai full oft *th*air fais ruschit,
For *th*ai nakyn peralis refusit.
*Th*ai trawaill for to sauf *th*air lif*is*,
Bot werd, *th*at to *th*e end ay driff*is* 148 — but fate is against them.
*Th*e varld*is* thing*is*, sa *th*ame travalit,
*Th*at *th*ai on twa half*is* war assalit;
Within with fyre, *th*at *th*ame sa brul*ȝ*eit,

123. *And—no*] Na *thar* may na. *fire*] E *om.*
124. [*Bot* H] *Th*an E; *Th*at C.
126. *thik*] thak E; thicke H. *burd*] *so in* E; boord H.
127. *moyne*] mone.
129. *blasis*] blesis.
133. *till*] to.
135. *as*] *misprinted* at J.
138. *Blesis*] Fire-blasts H. *wald thame*] *th*aim wald.
143. *that*] E *om.*
145. *ruschit*] ruflyt E; rushed H.
146. *peralis*] perall.
147. *trawaill*] trawaillyt.
148. *to*] till.
151. *Within*] In. *brul*ȝ*eit*] broil-ȝit.

Without with folk *th*at *th*aim sa tul*ȝ*eit, 152

The entrance-gate is burnt.

*Th*at *th*ai brynt magre *th*air*is* *th*e ȝet;
Bot for *th*e fyre, *th*at wes so het,
*Th*ai durst no*ch*t ent*er* swa in hy.

The assailants wait till day-break.

*Th*ar folk *th*ar-for *th*ai can rely, 156
And went to rest, for it wes ny*ch*t,
Till on *th*e morn, *th*at day wes ly*ch*t.

How kyng Eduarde deit in-to burch in sand.

At sic myscheiff, as ȝhe herd say,
War *th*ai within; *th*e quhe*thir* *th*ai 160

The defenders block up the entrance.

Eu*ir* *th*ame defendit worthely,
And *th*ame contenit sa manfully,
*Th*at *th*ai or day, throu mekill pañe,
Had mwryt vp *th*e ȝet agane. 164

Next day, the assailants again attack them.

Bot on *th*e morn, quhen day wes ly*ch*t,
And sone wes ryssyn schynand bry*ch*t,
*Th*ai without in hale battale
Com purvait, reddy till assale; 168

The defenders submit;

Bot *th*ai within, *th*at sa war stad,
*Th*at na wittaill na fwaill had,
Quhar-with *th*ai mycht *th*e castell hald,
Tretit ferst, and syne *th*ame ȝald, 172
To be in-to *th*e kyng*is* will,
*Th*at *th*an to scottis wes full Ill.
And *th*at soyn eft*er* wes weill knawin,
For *th*ai war hangit all and drawin. 176

152. *Without*] And wtouth. *tul-ȝeit*] toilȝit.
153. *thairis*] *th*aim.
154. *Bot*] *That*.
156. *Thar—thar-for*] *Th*arfor *th*ar folk. *can*] gan E; gart H.
RUBRIC. *From* C. Hic edward*us* a de*m*one deci*p*i*t*ur & mori*t*ur E.
159. *herd*] her.
160. *thai*] ay.
161. *Euir*] *Th*ai. *worthely*] dowchtely.
162. *thame contenit*] *con*tenyt *th*aim. *manfully*] manlily.
163. *thai*] E *om*.
164. *Had*] *Th*ai had. *mwryt*] tymmered H. *the*] *thar*.
170. *na* (1)] *th*ai E; they na H. *wittaill*] meat H. *fwaill*] fewell.
174. Bot *th*at ay to scott*is* men wes Ill.
175. *And that*] As. *wes weill*] weill wes.

Quhen *this* cu*n*nand *th*us tretit wes,
And affermit with sekirnes,
*Th*ai tuk [*th*aim] of *the* castell soyn, — and are made prisoners.
And in[till] schort tym swa has done, 180
*Th*at all a quartar of snawdouñe,
Ry*ch*t to *the* erd, *th*ai tu*m*lit douñe. — [Fol. 27 b. C.]
Syne toward yngland *th*ai wend *thar* way;
Bot quhen *the* king Eduard herd say, 184 King Edward
How neyll *the* bruce held kyndru*m*my
Agane his sone sa stallwardly,
He gaderit a gret cheuelry, — gathers a host,
And toward scotland went in hy. 188
And as in-to northu*m*birland — but is attacked by sickness on reaching Northumberland,
He wes with his [gret] rowt Rydand,
A Seiknes tuk him in *the* vay,
And put him in sa hard assay, 192
*Th*at he my*ch*t nou*thir* gang no ryde.
Him worthit, magre his, abyde
In till añe hamelat neir *th*air-by,
A litill touñe and vnworthy. 196 at a small town.
With gret payn *thiddir th*ai hym bro*ch*t;
He wes sa stad *th*at he na mocht
His aynd bot with gret panys draw,
Na spek, bot gif it war weill law. 200
The quhe*thir* he bad *th*ai suld him say — He asks the name of the town.
Quhat toune wes *th*at, *th*at he in lay.
"Schir," *th*ai said, "bowrch-in-the-sand
Men callis *this* toune, in-to *th*is land." 204 It is called Burgh-on-the-sand.
"Call *th*ai it burch? allace," said he,
"My hope is now fordone to me.

179. [*thaim* E] them H; hym C.
180. [*intill* E] in CH. *swa*] sa H; E *om.* *has*] haue they H.
182. *to*] till. *tumlit*] tummyllyt.
183. *thai wend*] went.
185. *kyndrummy*] kildromy.
187. *a*] E *om.*
189. *in-to*] in-till.
190. [*gret* E] great H; C *om.*
192. *in*] to.
194. *worthit*] behooued H.
195. *neir*] E *om.*
203. *bowrch*] burch.
204. *in-to*] in-till.

"I thought," he says, "to reach the borough of Jerusalem.

For I wend neu*ir* to thole *th*e payn
Of dede, quhill I, throu mekill mayn, 208
*Th*e burch of Ierusalem had tane;
My lif wend I *th*air suld be gane.
In burch I wist weill I suld de,

I thought of no other borough."

Bot I wes nou*thir* wiß no sle 212
Till o*thir* burchis kepe to ta;
Now may I no wiß for*thir* ga."
*Th*us plenȝeit he off his folye,

[Fol. 12 b. E.]

As he had mater sekirly, 216
Quhen he wend to wit certante
Of *th*at *th*at nane may certane be.

Some say, he had an evil spirit to answer his inquiries.

*Th*e quhe*thir* men said, enclosit he had
Ane spirit, *th*at hym ansuer mad 220
Of thing*is* *th*at he vald Inqueir.
Bot he wes fule, forouten weir,

[Fol. 28. O.]

*Th*at gaf treuth to *th*at Creature.
For fend*is* ar of sic nature, 224
*Th*at *th*ai to mankynd has Invy;
For *th*ai wat weill and wittirly,

Fiends know that men will win the seats which they lost through pride.

*Th*at *th*ai *th*at weill ar liffand heir
Sall wyn *th*e seg*is*, quhar-of *th*ai weir 228
Tu*m*lit doune throu *th*air mekill pryde.
Quharfor oftymis will betyde,
*Th*at quhen fendis distrenȝit ar
For till apper and mak ansuar, 232
Throu force of co*n*iuracioune,

Therefore they give answers

*Th*at *th*ai sa fals ar and sa fellouñe,
That *th*ai mak ay *th*air ansuering

213. *burchis*] burch.
217. *wend*] weind H; E *om.* *to wit*] *written* towyt *in* E, *and printed* cowyt *in* J; *but* P *has* to wyt.
218. *that* (2)] at.
219. *enclosit he*] he chesyt E; inclosde he H.
220. *Ane*] A.
222. *wes fule*] was foole H; fulyt E.
223. *treuth*] traist H; throuth E; *printed* throuch J.
228. *segis*] sege E; Siege H.
229. *doune*] E *om.*
230. *Quharfor*] Quhar throw.
234. *sa* (2)] E *mo.*

In-till dowbill vndirstanding, 236 with double meanings.
Till dissaf *th*ame *th*at will *th*ame trow.
Ensampill will I set heir now,
Of a were, as I herde tell,
Betuix france and [*the*] flemy*n*nis fell. 240 In a war between France and the Flemings, the Earl Ferrand's mother raised a spirit,
*Th*e erll ferrandis moder was
Ane nygramansour, and sathanas
Scho rasit, and him askit syne,
Quhat suld worth of *th*e fichtyne 244
Betuix *th*e franch kyng and hir sone.
And [he], as he all tyme wes wone,
In-to dissat maid his ansuer,
And said to hir *th*ir versis heir. 248 who gave her this response.

[Versus Belli de Bosbek.]

Rex Ruet in bello tumulique carebit honore;
*Ferrandus, comitissa, tuus, mea cara mi*n*erua,*
*Pa*r*isius veniet, magna comitante caterua.*
*Th*is wes *th*e spek he maid, perfay; 252
As is in ynglis for to say,
'*Th*e king sall fall in *th*e fichting,
And sall fale honor of Erding,
And *th*i ferrand, mynerff my deir, 256
Sall richt to pariſ went, but weir,
Followand him gret cu*m*pany
Of nobill men and of worthy.'
*Th*is is *th*e sentens off *th*e saw, 260
*Th*at he in latyne can hir schaw.

"The king of France shall go unburied, and thy son shall go to Paris with a great company."

236. *till*] to (*here and in more places than need be specified; cf.* ll. 189, 204, *&c.*)
240. [*the* EH] C *om.* *flemynnis*] flemyngis.
241. *ferrandis*] of Flanders H.
242. *Ane*] E *om.*
245. *franch*] fraunce E; French H.
246. [*he* EH] C *om.* *he all tyme*] all tyme he.
248. *versis*] thre werss.
RUBRIC. *In* H; C *has* Nota versus.
250. *cara*] chara H. *minerua*] *misvritten* mene*r*ua *in* C; *but* E *has* min*er*ua.
251. *Parisius*] Parasius E; *printed* Parisios HJ; Parisiis P; Parasius I. Parisius *is for* Parisios.
253. *As*] And. *for*] thus H; toung E.
257. *went*] *so in* E; wend H.
260. *the* (2)] *th*is.
261. *he in*] *the*.

He callit hir his deir mynerfe,
For mynerfe ay wes wont to serfe
[Fol. 28 b. C.] Hym fullely at all deuiß; 264
And for scho maid him *the* sam se*r*uice,
How the fiend deceived the lady, [His] mynerf hir callit he;
And als, throu h*is* gret sutelte,
He callit hir deir, sone till dissaf, 268
*Th*at scho *th*e titar suld consaf
Of his spek *th*e vndirstanding,
*Th*at plesit mast to hir liking.
His doubill spek hir sua dissauit, 272
*Th*at throu hir feill *th*e ded resauit.
For scho wes of his ansuer blith,
who told her son he should succeed; And till hir sone scho tald it swith,
And bad him till *th*e battale spede, 276
For he suld victor haf but drede.
And he, *th*at herd hir se*r*monyng,
Sped hym in hy to *th*e fichting,
but he was taken captive. Quhar he discu*m*fit wes & schent, 280
And takyn, and to pariß sent.
Bot in *th*e fechting nocht-for-*th*i
The French king was thrown down. *Th*e kyng, throu his cheuelry,
Wes laid at Erd and lamyt bath; 284
Bot his men horsit hym weill rath.
And quhen ferrand*is* moder herd
How hir sone in *th*e Battale ferd,
And *th*at he swa wes discumfit, 288
Scho rasit *th*e euill spirit als tit,

262. *deir*] E *om.*
263. *to*] E *om.*
264. *fullely at all*] till Scho leffyt at his. *For* leffyt, H *misprints* leesed, P *and* J lessyt.
266. [*His* EH] Hir C.
267. *gret*] E *om.*
268. *sone*] hyr.
271. *plesit—to*] mast plesyt till.
272. *His*] *Th*is. *hir sua*] sua hyr.
273. *feill*] foly (!) E; sonne H (*which for* throu *has* through it).
274. *his*] hyr.
277. *victor*] wictory.
284. *Erd*] *th*e erd. *lamyt*] lawit E; lamed H.
285. *horsit*] helpyt E; horsed H.
288. *that*] at (*here, and in places too numerous to be worth specifying; cf.* l. 218.)
289. *euill*] Ill.

And askit quhy he gabbit had
Of *the* Ansuer *th*at he hir mad.
And he said *th*at he suth said all:— 292
"I said [*the*], *th*at *th*e kyng suld fall
In *the* Battale, and sua did he,
And falis Erdyng, as men may se!
And I said, *th*at *th*i sone suld ga 296
To pariſ, and he did ry*ch*t sua,
Followand hym sic a menȝhe,
*Th*at neu*ir* in his lif-tyme he
Had sic menȝe at his leding; 300
Now seis *th*ow I mak na gabbing."
The vif confusit wes, perfay,
And durst no mair on-till him say.
*Th*usgat, throu doubill vnd*ir*standing, 304
*Th*at bargane come to sic ending,
*Th*at *th*e ta part dissauit was;
Richt sua-gat fell it in this caſ.
At Ierusalem *th*us trowit he 308
Gravyn in *the* burch to be;
The quhe*thir* [at] bourch in-to *th*e sand
He suelt ry*ch*t in his awne land.
And quhen he to *th*e ded wes ner, 312
The folk *th*at at kyndru*m*my wer,
Com with *th*e presoners at *th*ai had tane,
And syne [vn]to *th*e kyng ar gane.
And for to confort him *th*ai tald, 316
How *th*ai *th*e castell to *th*ame ȝald,
And how *th*ai to his will var brocht,
Till do of *th*ame quhat eu*ir* he thocht;

The evil spirit shews how his prophecy had been fulfilled.

The lady could not deny it.

[Fol. 29. C; Fol. 13. E.]
So Edward thought to be buried at Jerusalem.

The prisoners from Kildrummy are brought to him.

292. *that—said*] he had said suth.
293. [*the* E] thee H; C *om.*
295. *falis*] failȝeid.
298. *hym*] E *om.*
300. *sic*] sic a. *at his*] in.
301. *mak*] maid.
302. *confusit*] conuicted H.
303. *on-till*] *th*an till.
308. *thus*] E *om.*
310. [*at* E] *the* C. H *has*—At the whilk Burgh, &c.
313. *kyndrummy*] kildromy.
314. *the*] E *om.* *at*] *th*at E; H *om.*
315. [*vnto* H] to CE.
319. *thame*] *that* E; them H.

And askit quhat *th*ai suld of *th*aim do. 320
*Th*an lukit he awfully *th*ame to,
And said, gyrnand, " hangis & drawis !"
It wes gret vound*er* of sic sawis,
*Th*at he, *th*at to *th*e ded wes neir, 324
Suld ansuer apon sic maneir,
Forouten menyng of mercy.
How mycht he trastly on hym cry,
*Th*at suthfastly demys all thing, 328
To haf m*er*cy for his crying
Of him *th*at, throu his felony,
In-to sic poynt had no m*er*cy?
His men his mandment has all doñe, 332
And he deit *thar*-eft*ir* soñe;
And syne wes brocht to berynes;
His son syne eft*ir* kyng he wes.

He says, "Hang and draw them!"

How could he hope for mercy?

He dies.

His son succeeds him.

[How Iames of Dowglas past into Arrane.]

To kyng robert agane ga we, 336
*Th*at in [rauchryne], with his menȝe,
Lay till *th*e vynt*ir* neir wes gane,
And of *th*at Ile his met has tane.
Iames of douglas wes angry 340
*Th*at *th*ai so lang suld ydill ly,
And to s*chir* robert boyd said he;
" *Th*e pou*ir* folk of *th*is cu*n*tre
Ar chargit apon gret maner 344
Of vs, *th*at ydill lyis her.

James of Douglas proposes to Sir Robert Boyd

320. *thai*] men.
321. *awfully*] angyrly.
322. *gyrnand*] grynnand E; girning H. *hangis—drawis*] gar hang and draw H.
323. *It*] *That* E; It H. *gret*] great H; *omitted in* E, *but there is a small blank space.*
326. *of*] and.
327. *trastly on hym*] traist on hym to.
332. *all*] E *om.*
334. *berynes*] Burying H.
335. *eftir kyng he*] king eft*ir*. H *has*—His sonne syne after him was King.
RUBRIC. *From* H; *not in* CE.
336. *kyng*] *the* king.
337. [*rauchryne* E] Raughring H; rathgyrn *or* rachgyrn C.
338. *the*] E *om.*
341. *so lang*] langer E.

And I heir say, *th*at in arane, — to go to Arran.
In-till a stith castell of stañe,
Ar ynglis men *th*at, vith strang hand, 348
Haldis *th*e lordschip of *th*e land.
Ga we *th*iddir; and weill may fall, — [Fol. 29 *b*. C.]
Anoy *th*ame in sum thing we sall."
Schir robert said, "I grant *th*ar-till 352 — Sir Robert agrees to go,
To ly heir mair war litill skill:
*Th*arfor till Arane pas will we,
For I knaw rycht weill *th*at cu*n*tre,
And *th*e castell alsua knaw I. 356
We sall cum *th*air sa preuely, — and proposes to set an ambush.
*Th*at *th*ai sall haff na persavyng,
Na ȝeit witting of our cu*m*my*n*g.
And we sall neir enbuschit be, 360
Quhar we *th*air out-cu*m*myng may se,
Sa sall it on na maner fall,
*Th*an scath *th*ame on sum viß we sall."
With *th*at *th*ai buskit *th*ame on-ane, 364
And at *th*e kyng *th*air leyf has tañe,
And went [*th*aim] furth syne on *th*air way.
In-to kentyre soyn cu*m*in ar *th*ai. — They come to Cantire,
Syne rowit all-wayis by *th*e land, 368
Till at *th*e nycht wes neir at hand;
*Th*an till Arane *th*ai went *th*air way, — and arrive at Arran,
And saufly *th*air arivit *th*ai,
And vnder ane bra *th*air galay dreuch, 372
And syne it helit weill eneuch. — hiding their galley.
*Th*air takill, ayr*is*, and *th*air stere,
*Th*ai hyde all on *th*e sam manere.

346. *I*] Ik.
353. *To—mair*] Till her mar ly E; To ly here mair H.
355. *that*] *the*.
356. *alsua*] ry*ch*t swa.
361. *out-cummyng*] outecome E; comming well H.
362. *na*] E *om*.
363. *Than*] Bot H; Na E. *scath*] catch H.
366. [*thaim* E] soone H; C *om*.
369. *at* (2)] on.
372. *vnder ane bra*] in A glen EH.
375. *sam*] samyn.

And held *th*air way ry*cht* in *th*e nycht, 376

They set an ambush near the castle.

Sa *th*at, or day wes dawyn lycht,
*Th*ai war enbuschit *th*e castell neir,
Arayit on *th*e best maneir;
And *th*ouch *th*ai wate war and wery, 380
And for lang fastyng all hungry,
*Th*ai thoucht to hald *th*ame all preue,
Till *th*at *th*ai weill *th*air p[o]ynt my*cht* se.

Sir John Hastings was then in Brodie castle.

Schir Iohñe *th*e hastyng*is*, at *th*at tyde, 384
With knychtis of full mekill pryde,
With squyaris and gude ȝhemanry,
*Th*at war a [weill] gret cumpany,
Wes in *th*e castell of brathwek. 388
And oftsiß quhen it wald him lik,
He went to hunt with his menȝhe,
And sua *th*e land abandonit he,
*Th*at nane durst warn [to] do his will. 392
He wes in-to *th*e castell still,
*Th*e tym *th*at Iames of douglaß,
[Fol. 20. C.] As I haf tald, enbuschit was.

Just then, the under-warden had arrived there with three boats.

Sa hapnyt at *th*at tyme throu chans, 396
With vittalis and ek purvians,
And with clething and armyng,
*Th*e day befor, in *th*e evynnyng,
*Th*e vnd*ir*wardane arivit was 400
[Fol. 12 *b*. E.] With thre batis, weill neir *th*e place,
Quhar *th*at *th*e folk I spak off ere
Preuely enbuschit were.
Soyn fra *th*e batis saw *th*ai ga 404

379. *Arayit—the*] Armyt apon *thar*.
383. *poynt*] *so in* E; pynt C; time H.
386. *With*] And E. *gude*] E *om*.
387. *That war*] And *that* E; And had H. [*weill* E] well H; C *om*.
388. *brathwek*] brathwik.
390. *to hunt*] till huntyng. *menȝhe*] menȝe, *printed* men J.
392. *nane durst*] durst nane. *warn to*] warn him C; warne to EH.
395. *I*] Ik. *As—tald*] Sa neere hand by H.
396. *at*] E *om*.
397. *With*] *That* with. *ek*] E *om*.
398. *and*] and with E; and als H.

Of ynglis men thretty and ma,
Chargit all with syndry thing,
Sum bare vyne and sum armyng,
*Th*e remanand all chargit were 408
With thing*is* on syndry manere,
And o*thir* syndry ȝeid thame by,
As *th*ai war mast*er*is, ydilly.
*Th*ai *th*at enbuschit war *th*ame saw, 412
Ande, for-outen dreid or aw,
*Th*air buschement apon *th*ame brak,
And slew all *th*at *th*ai mycht ourtak.
*Th*e cry raiß hydwisly and hee, 416
For *th*ai, *th*at dredand war to de,
Rycht as bestis can rair and cry,
And *th*ai slew fast without m*er*cy.
Swa *th*at, in[to] *th*e samyn sted, 420
Weill neir to fourty *th*ar war ded.
Quhen [*th*ai *th*at] in *th*e castell war,
Herd the folk sa cry and rair,
[*Th*ai] yschit furth to *th*e fechtyng; 424
Bot quhen douglas saw *th*ar cu*m*myng,
His men till hym he can rely,
And went till meit *th*ame hastely.
And quhen *th*ai of *th*e castell saw 428
Hym cum on [*th*aim] forouten aw,
*Th*ai fled forouten mair debate;
And *th*ai *th*ame followit to *th*e ȝate,
And slew of *th*ame, as *th*ai in past. 432
Bot *th*ai *th*air ȝet barrit so fast,

Douglas sees 30 Englishmen well provided with things.

The men in ambush rush out and slay the English.

Douglas kills nearly 40 Englishmen.

Douglas attacks the men of the castle,

who flee before him.

406. *thing*] thing*is*.
407. *armyng*] armyng*is*.
409. *on*] off.
412. *thame*] *that*.
413. *Ande*] All E; And then H.
414. *buschement*] enbuschyt. *apon thame*] on *th*aim *th*ai.
419. *And*] E *om*. *fast without*] *th*aim for-owtyn E; them without H.
420. [*into* EH] in C.
421. *to fourty*] xl.
422. [*thai that*] *so in* E; *that thai* C; *but cf.* ll. 412, 417, 438.
424. [*Thai* E] They H; *That* C.
425. *douglas*] *the* dowglas.
429. [*thaim* E] them H; hym C. *forouten*] but dread or H.
433. *so*] E *om*.

At *th*ai mycht do at *th*ame no mair.

Douglas retreats.

*Th*arfor *th*ai left *th*ame ilkane *th*air,
And turnit to *th*e see agane, 436
Quhar *th*at *th*e men war forrow slaſie.
And quhen *th*ai *th*at war in *th*e batis

[Fol. 30 b. C.]

Saw *th*air cu*m*myng, and wist how-gatis
*Th*ai had discu*m*fit *th*air menȝhe, 440

The English in the boats put to sea,

In hy *th*ai put *th*ame to *th*e se,
And rowit fast with all *th*are mayn.
Bot *th*e vynde wes *th*ame agayn,
*Th*at it gert sa *th*e land-brist ryſ, 444
*Th*at *th*ai mycht weld *th*e se na viſ;
Na *th*ai durst nocht cum to *th*e land,

but lose 2 boats out of 3.

Bot held *th*ame *th*air so lang hobland,
*Th*at of thre batis drownyt twa; 448
And quhen douglas saw it wes swa,

Douglas and his men return.

He tuk *th*e Armyng and clethyng,
Wittalis, vyne, and o*thir* thyng
At *th*ai fand *th*ar, and held *th*air way, 452
Richt glad and Ioyfull of *th*air pray.

The cuming of king robert bruce in arane.

Thus James of Douglas and his men provided for themselves.

On *th*is wiſ Iames of douglas,
And his menȝe, throu goddis grace,
War weill releyit with Armyng, 456
With vittale als, and with clething;
Syne till a strate *th*ai held *th*air way,
And *th*ame full manly gou*e*rnit *th*ai.

The king himself

Till on *th*e tend day, at *th*e kyng, 460
Vith all *th*at war in his ledyng,

437. *forrow*] forowth *or* forowch.
438. *thai that*] *so in* E; they that H; C *transposes these words.*
444. *it—sa*] swa hey gert. H *has* —And sa great the land byrst rise.
446. *Na*] *Then* E; Nor H.
448. *thre*] *the* thre. H *omits* the.
450. *the*] E *om.*

RUBRIC. *From* C.
454. *On—wiss*] On this maner H; Quhen *this* E.
456. *weill*] E *om.* *releyit*] relewyt.
457. *With—als*] And with wictaill. *with* (2)] als H; E *om.*
458. *strate*] strait H; strenth E.
459. *thai*] they H; ay E.

Arivit in-to *th*at cuntre,
Vith thretty small galais and thre.
*Th*e kyng arivit in Arañe, 464 arrives in Arran,
And syne to *th*e land is gañe,
And in a toune tuk his herbery;
And sperit syne full specialy,
Giff ony man couth tell tithand 468 and asks if any know of any strangers there.
Of any strange man in *th*at land.
"ȝai," said a voma*n*, "s*chir*, perfay, A woman says she can find some,
Of strange men I can ȝow say,
*Th*at [ar] cu*m*in in *th*is cu*n*tre; 472
And schort quhill sen, throu *th*are bounte,
*Th*ai [haff] discumfit our vardañe,
And mony of his folk has slañe.
In-till a stalward place heir-by 476
Reparis all *th*air cumpany."
"Dame," said *th*e king, "wald *th*ou me viß
To *th*at place quhar *th*air repair is,
I wald revard *th*e but lesing: 480
For *th*ai ar all of my duelling; [Fol. 31. C.]
And I richt blithly vald *th*ame se,
And richt sua trow I *th*ai vald me."
"ȝis," said scho, "s*chir*, I will blithly 484 and offers to shew Bruce where they are.
Ga vith ȝow and ȝour cu*m*pany,
Till *th*at I schaw ȝow *th*air repair."
"*Th*at is eneuch, my sister fair;
Now ga furthward*is*," said *th*e kyng. 488
*Th*an went *th*ai furth but mair letting,
Followand hir, as scho *th*ame led,
Till at *th*e last scho schewit *th*e sted,

467. *full*] *so in* H; E *om.*
469. *man*] men.
470. *ȝai*] ȝhis E; Yes H.
472. [*ar* E] are H; war C.
474. [*haff* E] C *om.* *haff discumfit*] discomfited H.
475. *folk*] men.
476. *In-till*] And till.
480. *wald*] sall.
483. *richt*] E *om.* *thai*] *that* *thai*.
488. *furthwardis*] we forth-wart.
491. *the*] A.

She leads Bruce to a glen.

Till *the* king, in a woddy glen, 492
And said, "*schir*, heir I saw *the* men,
*Th*at ȝhe speir eft*ir*, mak luging.
[Fol. 14. E.] Heir trow I be *th*air reparyng."

The king blows his horn.

*Th*e king *th*an blew his horn in hy, 496
And gert *the* men *th*at war him by,
Hald *th*ame all still *th*an preue,
And syne agane his horn blew he.

Douglas knows the blast.

Iames of douglas herd him blaw, 500
And he *the* blast all soyn can knaw,
And said, "suthly, ȝon is *the* kyng,
I knaw lang quhill syne h*is* blawyng."
*Th*e thrid tyme *th*ar-with-all he, blew, 504

Sir Robert Boyd also knows it.

And *th*an *schir* robert boyde It knew,
And said, "ȝon is *the* kyng, but dreid;
Ga we furth till hym bettir speid."
*Th*an went *th*ai to *the* kyng in hy, 508

Their joyful meeting with the king.

And hym salusit full curtasly;
And blithly welcu*m*it *th*ame *the* kyng,
*Th*at Ioyfull wes of *th*air metyng,
And kyssit *th*ame, and sperit syne 512
How *th*ai had farñ in *th*air [h]ontyne.
And *th*ai hym tald [all] but lesyng:
Syne lovit *th*ai god of *th*air metyng.
Syne with *the* kyng to his herbry 516
*Th*ai wend, bath Ioyfull ande Ioly.

492. *Till*] To. *woddy*] wode.
498. *all—than*] still and all. *all—preue*] still in priuitie H.
501. *he—blast*] at *the* last. H *has*—And well the blast soone can he knaw.
503. *knaw—syne*] ken him well by H.
509. *hym—full*] him Inclynyt E; to him inclined H.
511. *That—wes*] And wes Ioyfull.
513. *hontyne*] ontyne C; huntyn E; huntyne H.
514. [*all* EH] C *om.*
515. *lovit*] lowyt.
517. *Thai wend*] Went. *Ioyfull—Ioly*] blyth and ioyfully H.

[How the king sent his man to spy in Carrik, wha were to him friendly.]

THE king apon *th*e tothi*r* day
Can till his preue menȝe say,
"Ȝe knaw all weill, and wele may se, 520
How we ar out of our cuntre
Banyst, throu ynglis me*n*nys mycht;
And it, *th*at our*is* suld be of richt,
Throu *th*air mastrice *th*ai occupy, 524
And vald alsua, vithout mercy,
Gif *th*ai had mycht, distroy vs all.
Bot god forbeid *th*at it suld fall
Till vs, as *th*ai mak mannasyng! 528
For *th*an war *th*air na recou*er*yng.
And mankynd biddis vs *th*at we
To procur vengeans besy be.
And ȝe may se we haf thre thing*is*, 532
*Th*at mak*is* vs amonestyng*is*
For to be vorthy, wiß, and vicht,
And till anoy *th*ame at our mycht.
Ane is our liffis savite, 536
*Th*at suld on na viß savit be,
Gif *th*ai had vs at *th*air liking.
*Th*e to*thir th*at mak*is* vs Egging,
Is *th*at *th*ai our possessiouñe 540
Haldis with strinth agane resouñe.
*Th*e thrid is *th*e Ioy [*th*at] we abyde,
Gif *th*at it hapyn, as weill may tyde,

The king says they all know how they are exiles,

[Fol. 31 b. C.]

and exhorts them to vengeance, for three reasons:

1. To preserve their own lives.

2. Because the English hold their fortresses.

3. Because of the hope of victory.

RUBRIC. *From* H.
518. C *has large* Y, *for* TH.
520. *wele*] ȝe. *But* H *has* well.
523. *it*] *that*. *it that*] that whilke H. *ouris—be*] suld be owris.
524. *mastrice*] maistrys. *But* H *has* mastrie.
525. *vithout*] for-owtyne.
527. *that—suld*] it suld sa.
530. *mankynd*] manheed H.
532. *And*] For.
533. *amonestyngis*] admonishings H; oft monestingis E.
536. *savite*] sawfte.
537. *suld—savit*] on na wyss suld sawft.
541. *with strinth*] strenthly.
542. [*that* EH] C *om*.

*Th*at we haf victor and mastry 544
Till ourcum *th*air felony.
*Th*arfor we suld our hertis raiß,
Sua *th*at na myscheif vs abaiß;
And schape all-wayis to *th*at ending 548
*Th*at beris mensk and ek lovyng.

He proposes to send a man to Carrick,

And *th*arfor, lordis, gif ȝhe se
Emang ȝow *th*at it spedfull be,
I will send a man to carrik, 552
To spy and speir how *th*e kynrik
Is led, or quha is frend or fa.
And gif he seis we land may ta,

who may make a fire on Turnberry nook as a signal,

On turnberyis nwk he may 556
Mak a fyre, on a certane day,
And mak taknyng till vs, *th*at we
May *th*air ariffe in-to saufte.

unless it is unsafe for them to land there.

And gif he seis we may no*ch*t swa, 560
Luk on na viß *th*e fyre he ma.
Swa *th*at we may haff vitt*er*ing
Of our passage, or our duelling."
To *th*is spek all assentit ar, 564

[Fol. 32. C.]

And *th*an *th*e king, vithouten mair,
Callit till him ane *th*at wes preue,
And born of carrik, his cuntre:

He charges a trusty man with the message.

And chargit him, in leß and mare, 568
As ȝe herd me deuiß it are:
And set him certane day to may
*Th*e fyre, gif he saw it wes sway
*Th*at *th*ai had possibilite 572

544. *haf victor*] wyn wictour.
549. *beris*] beris in It E; beares in it H. *ek*] EH *om.*
550. *lordis*] lordingis E; Lordings H.
551. *that*] giff *th*at.
552. *to*] in EH.
553. *how the*] our.
554. *Is—is*] How It is led and.
556. *turnberyis nwk*] turnberys snuke.
558. *And*] *That.*
559. *in-to*] in.
562. *that—may*] may we *th*arthrow.
566. *till him*] E *om.* *wes*] wes him.
567. *born*] E *om.*
571. *wes*] war.

To manteme were in *th*at cu*n*tre.
And he, *th*at wes richt weill in will — The man promises to faithfully perform his lord's command,
His lordis ȝarnyng to fulfill,
As he *th*at worthy wes and leill, 576
And couth secretis rycht weill conceil,
Said he wes boune in-till all thing
For till fulfill his *com*maunding;
And said he suld do sa wisly, 580
*Th*at na repreif suld eft*ir* ly.
Syne at *th*e kyng his leif has tane,
And furth apon his vay is gane. — and sets out.

Now gais *th*e messinger his vay, 584
*Th*at hat cuthbert, as I herd say; — His name was Cuthbert.
In carrik soyn arivit he,
And passit throu all *th*e cu*n*tre.
Bot he fand few *th*air-in, perfay, 588 — He finds few who speak well of his master.
*Th*at gud wald of his mastir say.
For feill of *th*ame durst no*ch*t for dreid,
And o*th*ir sum, rycht in-to ded,
War fais to *th*e nobill kyng, 592
*Th*at rewit syne *th*air barganyng. — [Fol. 14 b. E.]
Bath hye and law, *th*e land wes *th*en
All occupyit with ynglis men;
*Th*at dyspitit, atour all thing, 596
Robert *th*e bruce, *th*e douchty kyng.
Carrik wes gevyn *th*an halely — Carrick then was occupied by Sir Henry Percy with 300 men.
To *sir* henry *th*e lord persy;
*Th*at in turnberyis castell *th*en 600
Wes, with weill neir thre hundreth men;
And dantit suagat all *th*e land,
*Th*at all wes till hym obeysand.
*Th*is cuthbert saw *th*air felony, 604 — Cuthbert perceives this.

573. *were*] *th*e wer.
577. *secretis—weill*] ry*ch*t weill secreis E; his secret well H.
585. *cuthbert*] cutbert.
596. *dyspitit*] despised H.
599. *the lord*] lord *th*e.
602. *dantit*] dawntyt.

And saw *the* folk sa halely
Be [worthyn] ynglis, rych and pure,
*Th*at he to nane durst hym discure,
[Fol. 32 b. C.] Bot thoucht to leif *the* fyre vnmaid, 608
He concludes to leave the fire unmaid.
Syne till his mastir to vend but baid,
And all *th*air cowyne till hym tell,
*Th*at wes sa angry and sa fell.

[Of the fire the king saw burning.]

The king looks to see if the fire is lighted.
THE kyng *th*at in-to Arane lay, 612
Quhen *th*at cu*m*in wes *the* day,
*Th*at he set till his messyngere,
As I deuisit ȝow lang ere,
Eft*ir* *th*e fyre he lukit fast. 616
And als soyn as *the* moyn wes past,
He fancies he sees one.
Hym thoucht weill *th*at he saw a fyre,
By turnbery byrnand weill schyre;
And till his menȝe can it schaw; 620
His men fancy the same.
Ilk man thoucht weill *th*at he it saw.
*Th*an vith blith hert *the* folk can cry,
"Gud king, speid ȝow deliuerly,
Swa *th*at we soyn in *the* evy*n*nyng 624
Arif, withouten persavyng!"
"I grant," said he, "now mak ȝow ȝair;
God fur*th*ir vs in-till our fair!"
All prepare to embark, to row towards Turnberry.
*Th*an in schort tym men mycht *th*aim se 628
Schute all *th*air galais to *the* se,
Ande beir to se bath ayr and steir,
And o*th*ir thyngis *th*at mystir weir.
[Hic hospita predicit regi futura, et dat ei ij. filios.]

606. [*worthyn* E] worthen H; won C. *rych*] baith rich.
609. *to vend*] went EH.
610. *And—thair*] All that H. *cowyne*] conwyne E; conuyne H. *tell*] gan tell E; to tell H.
RUBRIC. *From* H.
612. *For initial* TH, C *has* Y.
615. *I*] Ik.
617. *moyn*] none E; noone H.
618. *that*] E *om.*
620. *can it*] It gan.
621. *Ilk man*] Ilkane H. *he*] they H.
625. *withouten*] for-owtyn.
631. *mystir*] needful H.
RUBRIC. *From* E.

And as *th*e king apon *th*e land 632
Wes gangand vp and doun, bydand
Till *th*at his menȝhe reddy war,
His hostes com rycht till hym *th*ar.
And quhen *th*at scho him halsit had, 636
A preue spek till hym scho mad,
And said, "ta gude tent to my saw;
For, or ȝe paß, I sall ȝow schaw
Of ȝour fortoun a gret party, 640
And atour all thing specialy
A witt[*er*]ing heir I sall ȝow may,
Quhat end *th*at ȝour purpoß sall ta;
For in *th*is varld is naňe trewly 644
Wat thing*is* to cum sa weill as I.
Ȝe pas now furth [on] ȝour w[i]ag*e*,
To venge *th*e harme and *th*e outrag*e*,
*Th*at ynglis men has to ȝow done; 648
Bot ȝe wat nocht quhat-kyn fortoň
Ȝhe mon dre in ȝour warraying.
Bot wit ȝhe weill, without lesing,
*Th*at fra ȝe now haf takyn land, 652 [Fol. 33. C.]
*Th*air sal no mycht, no strinth of hand
Ger ȝow furth pas of *th*is cu*n*tre,
Quhill all to ȝow abandonyt be.
Within schort tym ȝe sall be king, 656
And haf *th*e land at ȝour liking,
And ourcum ȝour fayis all.
Bot feill anoyis thoill ȝhe sall,

The king talks to his hostess,

who tells him his fortune.

She says he little knows what he must go through;

yet no power shall ever drive him away again.

632. *land*] Sand EH.
635. *hostes*] Osteis H; ost E.
636. *halsit*] hailsed H; halyst (*sic*) E.
638. *ta*] takis. *tent*] kep.
641. *And—thing*] Bot our all.
642. [*wittering* H] wyttring E; witting (*for* witt*er*ing) C.
643. *ȝour—sall*] *so arranged in* EH; C *has*—sall ȝour purpos.
644. *varld*] land.
646. [*on* E] in H; with C. *wiage*] wiage E; wag*e* (*or* wag*is*) C; voyage H.
647. *outrage*] outrag*e* (*or* outragis) C; owtrag E; outrage H.
651. *without*] with-outy*n*.
653. Nane sa my*ch*ty ne sa strenthi of hand.
654. *Ger*] Sall ger. *furth pas*] pass owt. *this*] ȝour.
655. *Quhill*] Till.

Or *th*at ȝour purpoſ ende haf tañe; 660
Bot ȝhe sall *th*ame ourdriff ilkañe.
And, *th*at ȝhe trow *th*is sekirly,

"I intend to send my two sons with you."

My twa sonnys with ȝow sall I
Send to tak with ȝow [ȝour] trawell; 664
For I wat weill *th*ai sall no*ch*t fale
Till be revardit weill at rycht,
Quhen ȝe ar heyt on to ȝour hicht!"

The king thanks her heartily,

*Th*e kyng, *th*at herd all hir carpyng, 668
*Th*an thankit hir in mekill thing;
For scho confortit hym sumdeill;

though not quite believing her.

The quhe*thir* he trowit no*ch*t full weill
Hir spek, for he had gret ferly 672
How scho suld wit it sekirly.

And, indeed, it is wonderful how any man can read the stars.

As it wes vounde*r*full, perfay,
How ony man throu steris may
Knaw *th*e thingis *th*at ar to cum 676
Determinabilly, all or sum,
Bot gif *th*at he enspirit war
Of him, *th*at all thing eu*ir*mar
Seis in his presciens, 680
*As it war ay in his presens:

Yet David and the prophets could foretell things by inspiration.

As dauid wes, and Ieromy,
Samuell, Ioell, and ysay,
*Th*at throu his haly grace can tel
Feill thing*is* *th*at eft*ir*ward befell. 684
Bot *th*ai pr*o*phetis so thyn ar sawin,
*Th*at *th*air in erd now nane is knawin.

[Fol 15. E.] Bot feill folk ar sa curiouſ,

664. *with ȝow*] part of EH. [*ȝour* E] your H; C *om.*
667. *heyt on to*] heyit to E; raised to H.
669. *Than*] E *om.*
670. *confortit*] *con*fort.
675. *man—steris*] mannys science.
676. *the*] E *om.*
680. *his*] his awne H.
680*. *his*] E *om.* P *omits this line, by accident.*
681. *dauid wes*] wes dauid. *Ieromy*] Ieremy.
683. *That*] *Th*at at.
684. *eftirward*] eft*ir*.
685. *thai*] *the* E; thay H.
686. *thair—nane*] nane in erd now E; nane in eird may now H.

And to wit thingis sa covatouſ, 688 Many are so curious to know the future, that they attempt to learn it by *astrology*,
*Th*at *th*ai, throu *th*air gret clergy,
Or ellis throu *th*air deuilry,
Of *th*ir twyn maners mak*is* fanding
Of thingis to cum to haf knawing. 692
Ane of *th*ame is astrology,
Quhar-throu clerk*is*, *th*at ar vitty,
May knaw co*n*iu*n*ctioñe of planetis, [Fol. 33 *b*. C.]
And quhe*thir th*at *th*air cours thai*m* settis 696
In soft seg*is*, or in angry;
And of the hevyn all halely
How *th*at *th*e disposiciouñe as, e.g. by the disposition of the planets.
Suld apon thingis virk heir douñe, 700
On regiones, or on [climat*is*],
*Th*at virk*is* nocht ay-quhar a gatis,
Bot sum ar leſ, sum o*thir* mair,
Eftir as *th*air bemys strekit air, 704
Ow*thir* all evin, or on wry.
Bot me think it war gret mastry But how can any astrologer tell things,
Till ony astrolog to say,
*Th*is sall fall heir, and on *th*is day. 708
For *th*ouch a man his liff haly
Studeit [swa] in astrology,
*Th*at on *th*e sternis his hed he brak,
Wiſ men sais he suld nocht mak, 712 since he can never make three certain predictions?
His liftyme, certane domys thre;
And ȝeit suld he ay dout quhill he

688. *sa*] E *om*.
691. *Of*] On. *twyn*] twa E; twaine H.
694. *throu*] E *om*; through H.
695. *coniunctioñe*] *con*iunctions.
701. [*climatis* E] Clemates H; elimentis C; *but observe the rime*.
702. *a gatis*] a gat is C; agat*is* E; all gaites H.
703—726. *Wanting in* H.
703. *ar*] quhar. *sum othir*] & sum quhar.
705. *evin*] *miswritten* hevin *in* C; ewyn E.
706. *gret*] gud.
707. *astrolog*] *so in* E; astrelog C.
710. [*swa* E] C *om*.
711. *the*] E *om*.
712. *Wiss men*] *Th*e wyss man.
713. *His liftyme*] All hys lyff. *domys*] dayis; *but cf*. demyng *in* l. 716, *and cf*. ll. 745, 746.

Saw how *th*at it com till ending:
*Th*an is *th*ar na certane demyng. 716

If astrologers can tell men's natural dispositions,

Or gif *th*ai men, *th*at will study
In *th*e craft of astrology,
Knaw all me*n*nis naciouñe,
And als *th*e constillaciouñe, 720
*Th*at kyndly maner*is* giff*is* *th*ai*m* til
For till Inclyne to gud or Ill;
How *th*at *th*ai, throu craft of clergy,
Or throu slicht of astrology, 724
[Couth] tell quhatkyn perell apperis
To *th*ame *th*at haldis kyndly maner*is*,

yet they fail to know in what circumstances they will be placed.

I trow *th*at *th*ai suld faill to say
*Th*e thing*is* *th*at *th*ame happyn may. 728
For quhe*thir* sa men Inclynit be
Till virtu or to mawite,
He may richt weill refrenȝe his vill,
Ou*thir* throu nwrtour or throu skill, 732
And to *th*e contrar turne him all.
And men has mony tymis seyn fall,

Some men, inclined to evil, overcome it.

*Th*at men, kyndly to I[wi]ll giffin,
Throu *th*air gret vit avay has drivin 736
*Th*air ewill, and vorthyn of gret renouñe,
Magre *th*e constillaciouñe.
As arestotill, gif, as men red*is*,

[Fol. 34. C.] Aristotle's wit made him virtuous.

[He] had followit his kyndly ded*is*, 740
He had beyn fals and couatuß;
Bot his vit maid him virtuouß.

716. *thar*] *that*.
720. *als*] knew.
723. *craft*] science.
725. [*Couth* E] To C.
726. *kyndly*] kyndlik.
727. Yet may they faile the trueth to say H.
728. *The*] In H.
729. *sa men*] that man H.
730. *to mawite*] iniquitie H.
732. *nwrtour*] nurtur E; vertue H; *apparently miswritten* mwrtour *in* C.
733. *him*] it H.
734. *tymis*] tyme.
735. [*Iwill* E] Ill C; ill are H; *see* l. 737.
737. *ewill*] Ill EH. *gret*] H *om.*
740. [*He* EH] C *om.*

And syn men may on *th*is kyn viß
Virk agane *th*at cours, *th*at is 744
Pri*n*cipal cauß of *th*air demyng,
Me think *th*air dome na certane thing.
Nigramansy ane othir is,
*Th*at kennys men, on syndry viß, 748 Another method of divining is by *necromancy*,
Throu stalward co*n*iuraciones,
And throu [e*x*orcizaciones],
To ger spiritis to *th*ame apeir,
And gif ansuer on seir maneir. 752
*Th*at quhilom did the [Pithones], as the Pythoness did
*Th*at, quhen saull abasit [wes]
Of *th*e philistianis mycht,
Rasit, throu [hyr] mekill [slycht], 756
Samuell sperit als tit, who raised Samuel's spirit.
Or in his sted *th*e euill spirit,
*Th*at gaf [ry*ch*t] gra[i]th ansueir hir to:
Bot of hir-self ry*ch*t no*ch*t wist scho. 760
And man is in-to dreding ay Men never know what is to come till it happens;
Of thing*is* *th*at he has herd say,
And namly of thing*is* to cu*m*, quhill he
Haue of *th*e end *th*e certante. 764
And sen *th*ai ar in sic venyng,
Forouten certane vitting,
Me think, quha sais he knawis thing*is* those who pretend to know the future only lie.
To cu*m*, he mak*is* gret gabbing*is*. 768
But quhe*thir* scho [*that*] tald *th*e king
How his purpos suld tak ending,

747. *ane othir*] *the tothir*.
749. *stalward*] stalwart.
750. [*exorcizaciones*] exorcizacionys E; exortaciones C; Exhortation H.
753. *That*] As EH. [*Pithones*] Pithonesse H; Phitones E; fetonass C.
754. [*wes* E] was CH.
755. *philistianis*] felystynys E; Philistims H.
756. [*hyr* E] her H; *th*air C. [*slycht* E] slight H; mycht C.
757. *Samuell*] Samuel*is* E; Samuels H.
759. [*rycht* EH] C *om.* *graith*] *so in* EH; grath C.
763. *And*] EH *om.* *of thingis*] that are H.
764. *Haue*] Knaw EH.
766. *certane*] certante off. H *has* —Withoutten certaine witting.
769. [*that* EH] had C.

Yet, in this case, it *did* fall out as she predicted.

Wenit, or vist it vitt*er*ly,
It fell eft*ir* all halely 772
As scho said: for syne king wes he,
And of full mekill [renomme].

772. *It*] C *has* Bot It, *but* EH *omit* Bot.
774. [*renomme* E] renowne C; poustie H. H *has*—And reigued into free poustie.

[BOOK V.]

[Hic rex robertus applicat nauigio ad carryk.]
[Of the kings hansaling in Carrik, at his first arriuing.]

THis wes in were, quhen vynt*ir* tyde — This was in spring,
Vith his blastis, hydwiß to byde,
Wes ourdriffin: and byrdis smale,
As thristill and *th*e nychtingale, — 4 when small birds began to sing,
Begouth rycht meraly to syng,
And for to mak in *th*air synging — [Fol. 15 b. E.]
Syndry notis, and sound*is* sere,
And melody plesande to here. — 8
And *th*e treis begouth to ma — and trees to blossom.
Burgeonys and bry*ch*t blwmys alsua,
To vyn *th*e heling of *th*ar he[ve]de, — [Fol. 34 b. C.]
*Th*at vikkit vynt*ir* had *th*ame revede; — 12
And all grewis begouth to spryng.
In-to *th*at tyme *th*e nobill king, — Then the king with 300 men
Vith his flot and a few menȝe,
Thre hund*ir* I trow *th*ai my*ch*t weill be, — 16

First rubric from E; *second from* H.
1. *Fvr initial* TH, C *has* Y. *were*] ver.
4. *thristill*] turturis (*added afterwards in a previously blank space*) E; Turtle H.
5. *meraly*] sariely E; sweetly for H.
6. *in—synging*] their solacing H.
7. *Syndry*] Swete.
8. *melody*] melodys.
11. *hevede*] hewid E; hede C (*but note the rime*); head H.
12. *revede*] made H (*wrongly*).
13. *grewis*] gressys E; gersse H.
14. *In-to that*] In that sweet H.
16. *Thre*] Four H. *weill*] EH *om.*

puts to sea.

[Wes] to *th*e se, furth of Arañe,
A litill forrow *th*e evyn gañe.
*Th*ai rowit fast with all *th*ar mycht,
Till *th*at apon *th*ame fell *th*e nycht, 20

It grows very dark.

*Th*at It wox myrk on gret maner,
Swa *th*at *th*ai wist no*ch*t quhar *th*ai wer.

They have no needle or stone.

For *th*ai na nedill had na stane,
But rowit alwayis in-till añe, 24
Ste*m*mand alwayis apon *th*e fyre,
*Th*at *th*ai saw byrnand licht and schire!
It wes bot auentur *th*at *th*ame led:
And *th*ai in schort tym swa *th*ame sped, 28

They land near the fire.

*Th*at at *th*e fyre arivit *th*ai,
And went to land but mair delay.
And cuthbert, *th*at has seyn *th*e fyre,
Wes full of angir and of Ire, 32
For he durst nocht do it avay;
And he wes alsua doutand ay
*Th*at his lord suld paß *th*e se.

Cuthbert awaits them,

*Th*arfor *th*air cu*m*myng vatit he, 36
And met *th*ame at *th*air ariving.
He wes weill soyne brocht to *th*e king,
*Th*at sperit at hym how he had doñe,

and tells the king that all are his foes there,

And he with sair hert tald him sone, 40
How *th*at he fand nane weill willand,
Bot all war fais *th*at eu*ir* he fand:
And at *th*e lord *th*e persy,
With neir thre hundreth in cu*m*pany, 44

and Percy's men are close by.

Wes in *th*e castell *th*ar besyde,

17. [*Wes*] *such must be the right reading; wrongly altered to* Went *in* CH; *but* E *has* Is. *furth*] owte.
18. *the*] E *om.* *gane*] ar gañe C; was gane H; *but* E *has* gane *only. The insertion of* ar *or* was *arose from altering* Wes *into* Went.
21. *It*] EH *om.*
24. *in-till*] foorth in H.
25. *Stemmand*] Sterand E; Steering H. *alwayis*] all tyme.
27. *that*] E *om.*
34. *he*] E *om.*
35. *the*] to E; to the H.
41. *willand*] *so in* H; luffand E.
42. *euir*] euer H; E *om.*
43. *at*] *that.* *the lord*] *so in* E; Sir Henry H.

Fulfillit of dispit and pride.
Bot mair *th*an twa part of h*is* rout
War herbreit in *th*e touñe *thar*out; 48
"And dispisis ȝow mair, s*chir* king,
*Th*an men may dispiß ony thing."
*Th*an said *th*e kyng, in full gret Ire;
"Tratour, quhy maid *th*ou on *th*e fyre?" 52
"A! s*chir*," he said, "sa god me se!
*Th*at fyre wes neu*ir* maid on for me.
Na, or *th*is ny*ch*t I wist it nocht;
Bot fra I wist it, weill I thocht 56
*Th*at ȝhe, and haly ȝour menȝhe,
In hy suld put ȝow to *th*e se.
For*th*i I com to meit ȝow her,
To tell peralis *th*at may aper." 60
*Th*e king wes of his spek angry,
And askit his preue men in hy,
Quhat at *th*ame thoucht wes best to do?
Schir Eduard ferst ansuerd *thar*-to, 64
His bro*thir*, *th*at wes so hardy,
And said, "I say ȝow sekirly,
*Th*ar sall na peralis *th*at may be
[Dryve] me eftsonis to *th*e se; 68
Myne auenture heir tak will I,
Quhe*thir* it be eisfull or angry."
"Bro*thir*," he said, "sen *th*ou vill [sa],
It is gud *th*at we sa*m*myn ta 72
Disei̇ß or ese, [or] pyne or play,
Eft*ir* as god will vs purvay.
And sen men sais *th*at *th*e persy

The king asks why he made the fire.

[Fol. 35. C.] Cuthbert denies having made it.

The king asks what is to be done.

Sir Edward refuses to return.

Bruce consents to take his chance,

47. *part*] p*a*rtis.
48. *tharout*] w*i*thout.
49. *dispisis*] despises H; dyspytyt E.
50. *dispiss*] despise H; dispyt E.
52. *on*] *th*an; *but cf.* l. 54.
54. *That*] *The*. *on*] EH *om*. *for*] through H.
55. *this*] *the*.
61. *angry*] ry*ch*t angry C; *but* EH *omit* rycht.
67. *peralis*] p*e*rell.
68. [*Dryve* EH] Draw C.
71. [*sa* H] sua E; say C.
73. [*or* EH] C *om*.

Myne heritage will occupy, 76
And his menȝe sa neir vs lyis,
*Th*at vs [dispyt*is*] mony viſ,
Ga we wenge sum of *th*e dispit,
And *th*at we may haſ don als-tit; 80
For *th*ai ly trastly, but dreding
Of vs, and of our heir-cu*m*myng.
And *th*ouch we slepand slew thai*m* all,
Repreif vs *th*aroſ na man sall. 84
For veriour na fors suld ma,
Quhe*thir* he my*ch*t ourcum his fa
Throu strynth, or throu sutelte;
Bot at gud fa[i]th ay haldin be." 88

[Hic rex intrat villam latenter, occidens omnes.]

Quhen *th*is wes said, *th*ai went *th*are way;
And till *th*e toun soyn cu*m*in ar thai
Sa preuely, bot noyſ making,
*Th*at naſie persauit *th*air cu*m*myng. 92
*Th*ai scalit throu *th*e touſie in hy,
And brak vp dures sturdely,
And slew all *th*at *th*ai my*ch*t ourtak:
And *th*ai *th*at na defens mycht mak, 96
Full pitwisly couth rair and cry;
And *th*ai slew *th*ame dispitwisly,
As *th*ai *th*at war in-to gud will
To wenge *th*e angir and *th*e Ill, 100
*Th*at *th*ai and *th*air*is* had to *th*ai*m* vro*ch*t;
*Th*ai with so felloun will *th*ai*m* socht,
*Th*at *th*ai slew *th*ame eu*ir*ilkaſie,
Outtak makdowall hym allaſie, 104

and proposes to avenge himself.

"No one would blame us for slaying them while asleep."

They enter the town quietly.

They slay all they meet.

[Fol. 35 b. C.]

[Fol. 16. E.]

They avenge themselves mercilessly.

78. [*dispytis* E] dispiss (= dispis*is*) C; despises H; *but see next line.*
79. *we*] we and.
80. *we may*] may we.
82. *and*] or.
84. *vs*] E *om.*
85. *veriour*] werrayour EH; veriours *in* C; *but see next line.*
88. *faith*] *so in* EH; fath C.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
97. *couth*] gan.
98. *dispitwisly*] dispitously.
99. *in-to*] in full.
101. *to*] E *om.*
102. *Thai*] E *om.*

*Th*at eschapit, throu gret slicht,
And throu *the* myrknes of *th*e nycht.
In *th*e castell *th*e lorde persy
Herd weill *th*e noyis and *th*e cry. 108
[Sa did *th*e men, *th*at with-in wer,
And full effraytly gat *th*air ger.
But off *th*aim wes nane sa hardy,
*Th*at eu*ir* ischyt fourth to *th*e cry.] 112
In sic a-fray *th*ai baid *th*at nycht,
Till on *th*e morn, *th*at day wes licht;
And *th*an cesit in-to party
*Th*e noyis, slauchtir, and *th*e cry. 116
The king gert be departit *th*en
All haill *th*e reif amang his men;
And duelt all still *th*air dais thre.
Sic hansell to *th*e folk gaf he, 120
Richt in *th*e first begy*n*nyng,
Newly at his ariwyng.

Only Macdowell escaped.

Lord Percy hears the noise, but dares not sally out.

The king divides the spoil among his men.

[Quedam domina regis consanguinea venit ad eum cum xl.]

Q when at *th*e king and his folk ware
Arivit, as I tald ȝow are, 124
A quhill in carrik lendit he,
To se quha frend or fa vald be.
Bot he fand litill tendirnes;
And nocht-for-*th*i *th*e pepill wes 128
Inclynit to hym in-to party;
Bot ynglis men sa angirly
Led *th*ame with danger & wyt*h* aw,

Whilst the king stays in Carrick,

he finds many secret friends.

107. *perty*] *the* persy.
109—112. *From* E; *also in* H; C *om.*
109. *Sa*] And sa H. *that with-in*] with him H.
110. *effraytly*] infrainly H.
112. H *has*—And durst ishe foorth to cry.
113. *a-fray*] effray.
116. *slauchtir*] *the* slawchtyr.
118. *reif*] reff E; spraith H.
120. *the*] *that*.
122. *Newly*] Newlingis.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
125. *lendit*] leyndyt.
129. *to*] till. *in-to*] in.

*Th*at *th*ai na frendschip durst him schaw, 132

A lady and relative

Bot a lady of *th*at cuntre,
*Th*at wes till hym in neir degre
Of cosynage, wes vounde*r* blith
Of his arivale, and als swith 136

comes to him with 15 men.

Sped hir till hym in ful gret hy,
With xv men in Cumpany,
And betacht *th*ame all to *th*e king,
To help hym in his warrayng. 140

He thanks her, and asks about the queen.

And he resauit *th*ame in daynte,
And hir full gretly thankit he,
And sperit tithandis of *th*e queyn,
And of his frendis all bedeyn, 144
*Th*at he had left in *th*at cu*n*tre,
Quhen *th*at he put hym to *th*e se.

She tells him all about the siege of Kildrummy,

And scho hym tald, sychand full sair,
How *th*at his bro*thir* takyn wair 148

[Fol. 36. C.]

In *th*e castell of kyndru*m*my,
And syne distroyit vilonysly;
And of *th*e erll adell alsua;
And how *th*e queyn & o*thir* ma, 152
*Th*at till his party war heldand,
War tane & led in-to yngland,
And put in-to [feloun] presoune;

and how Setoun was slain.

And how *th*at cristole of Setoun 156
Wes slane, gretand scho tald *th*e king,
*Th*at soroufull wes of *th*at tithing;
[And] saide, quhen he had thoucht a thraw,
*Th*ir wordis *th*at I sall ȝow schaw:— 160
"Allas!" he said, "for luf of me,
And for mekill gud laute,

136. *arivale*] arywyng (*added afterwards*). *and*] E *om.*
138. *æv*] fourty E; fourtie H.
140. *To*] Till.
149. *kyndrummy*] kyldromy.
150. *syne distroyit*] destroyit sa.
151. *of*] E *om.* *adell*] off Athall E; of Atholl H.
154. *in-to*] in.
155. *in-to*] in. [*feloun* E] felloun H; fell C.
159. [*And* EH] *Th*at C.
162. *mekill gud*] *thar* mekill E; their meekle leele H.

*Th*ai nobill men and *th*ai worthy
Ar distroyit sa vilonisly! 164
Bot and I lif in lege pouste,
*Th*air ded sall ry*ch*t weill vengit be.
*Th*e king, *th*e quhe*thir*, of yngland
Thoucht *th*at *th*e kinrik of scotland 168
Wes to litill to hym and me;
*Th*arfor I will it all myn be.
Bot of gud cristal of Setoune,
*Th*at wes of sa nobill renoune, 172
*Th*at he suld de war gret pite,
Bot quhar vorschip my*ch*t prufit be."

The king laments,

but vows revenge.

He mourns for Setoun.

[Hic henricus percy fleys in Ingland.]

THE kyng *th*us sychand maid h*is* mayn,
And *th*e lady hir leif has tane, 176
And went [hyr] hame to hir wo*n*nyng.
And feill siß confort scho *th*e kyng
Bath with silu*er* and vith met,
As scho in-to *th*e land mycht get. 180
And he oft ryot to *th*e land,
And maid all his *th*at eu*ir* he fand;
And syne he drew him to *th*e hicht,
To stynt bettir his fais mycht. 184
In all *th*at tym wes *th*e persy,
With a full sympill cu*m*pany,
In turnberyis castell lyand;
For *th*e king robert sua dredand, 188
*Th*at he durst no*ch*t ysche out to fair,
Fra *th*ine to *th*e castell of air,

The lady takes her leave,

and often sends him silver and meat.

Meanwhile Percy lies in Turnberry castle,

166. sall *follows* weill *in* E.
169. *hym*] *th*aim.
170. *I*] he. *all myn*] myn all.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
176. *For initial* TH, C *has a* Y. *thus sychand*] sichand *thus*.
177. [*hyr* E] C *om*. *went—hame*] syne went H.
178. *scho*] E *om*.
180. *As—in-to*] Sic as scho.
181. *ryot*] ryoted H. *to*] all E; H *om*.
183. *he*] E *om*.
189. *out*] furth.

*Th*at *th*an wes full of ynglis men;

[Fol. 36 b. C.] Bot [lay] lurkand as in a deñ, 192

[Fol. 16 b. E.] To *th*e men of northu*m*berland

waiting till the men of Northumberland should help him.

Suld cum armyt, & vith strang hand,

Till convoy him till his cuntre;

For his saynd to *th*ame send he. 196

And *th*ai in hy assemblit *th*en,

Passand, [y trow], a thousand men,

And askit avisment *th*ame emang,

Quhe*thir* at *th*ai suld duell or gang. 200

Bot *th*ai war schonand vounder sair

Sa fer in scotland for to fair.

Sir Walter de Lisle advises the English not to venture into Scotland,

[For] a kny*ch*t, schir gawter *th*e lile,

Said it wes to gret perell, 204

So neir *th*e schavaldwr*is* to ga.

His spek discomfort *th*ame all sua,

*Th*at *th*ai had left haill *th*at viage,

Na war a knycht of gret corage, 208

but Sir Roger St John persuades them to release Lord Percy.

*Th*at s*chir* roger of Sanct Iohñe hicht,

*Th*at *th*ame confort vith all his my*ch*t;

And sic vordis can till *th*ame say,

*Th*at *th*ai all sa*m*myn hold *th*air way 212

To turnbery; quhar *th*e persy

Lord Percy slips away to England, and remains there.

Lap on, and went vith *th*ai*m* in hy

In-to yngland, his castell till,

Vithout distrowbilling or Ill. 216

Now in yngland is *th*e persy

Quhar he, I trow, a quhill sall ly,

191. *than wes*] wes *th*en.
192. [*lay* EH] *th*ai C.
193. *Tb*] Tyll E; While H.
195. *Till*] E *om*
198. *Passand, y trow*] *miswritten* Passandly trowand *in* C; Passing attour H; Passand I weyne E.
201. *schonand*] skownrand E; stonisht H.
203. [*For* EH] Bot C. *the*] de H.
204. *to*] all to.
205. *schavaldwris*] sodiourys E; Souldiers H.
206. *all*] E *om*.
211. *can—thame*] to *th*aim gan.
215. *In-to*] In.
216. *Vithout distrowbilling*] Forowtyn distrowblyne. *or*] or ony C; *but* E *omits* ony.
218. he *follows* trow *in* E.

Or *th*at he schap hym for to fair
To warray carrik *th*an no mair. 220
For he wist *th*at he had no richt,
And als he dred *th*e kyng*is* my*ch*t, — Percy is afraid of the Bruce.
*Th*at in carrik wes travalland,
Quhar *th*e mast strynth wes of *th*e land. 224
Quhar Iames of douglas, on a day,
Com to *th*e kyng and can him say:
"Schir, with ȝour leiff, I vald ga se — Douglas asks leave to go to Douglasdale.
How *th*at *th*ai do in my cu*n*tre; 228
And how my men demanit are.
For it anoyis me vound*er* sare,
*Th*at *th*e [clyffurd] sa pesabilly
Bruk*is* and haldis *th*e senȝory, 232
*Th*at suld be myn with alkyn rycht.
Bot quhill I liff, and may haf my*ch*t
To lede A ȝheman or a swañe, — [Fol. 37. C.]
He sall nocht bruk it but bargañe!" 236
The kyng said, "certis I can nocht se — The king advises him not to go.
How *th*at *th*ou ȝeit may sekir be
In-to *th*at cu*n*tre for to fair,
Quhar ynglis men sa mychty are; 240
And *th*ou vat no*ch*t quha is *th*i frend."
He said, "*schir*, neidwais I will wend, — Douglas says he will take his chance.
And tak auentur *th*at god will giff,
Quhe*thir* sa it be till de or liff." 244
*Th*e king said, "sen *th*at it is sua,
*Th*at *th*ou sic ȝarnyng has to ga,
*Th*ou sall pas furth with my blessing, — The king encourages him.
And gif *th*e hapnys ony thing, 248
*Th*at anoyus or scathfull be,
I pray *th*e, speid *th*e soyne to me;

220. *than no*] ony.
221. *that*] E *om.*
224. *Quhar*] In. *wes*] E *om.*
231. [*clyffurd* E] castell C (*an obvious error*).
234. *Here follows the catchword in* C—To led a ȝeman or a swane.
243. *auentur—god*] *that* auentur.
245. *that*] E *om.*

Tak we sa*m*myn quhat eu*ir* ma fall."
"I grant," he said; and *th*ar-with-all 252
He lowtit, and his leyf has tañe,
And is towart his cu*n*tre gañe.

Douglas takes his leave.

The passing of Iames of douglas to douglass daill, his heritage.

Douglas repairs to Douglasdale.

Now tak*is* Iames his viage
Toward douglas, his heritage, 256
Vith twa ȝhomen, forouten ma;
*Th*at ves A sympill stuff to ta,
A land or castell for to vyn!
*Th*e quhe*thir* he ȝarnit to begyn, 260
To bryng his purpos till ending,
For [gude help is in] begy*n*nyng.

A good beginning is an excellent thing.

For gude begy*n*nyng and hardy,
And it be followit vittely, 264
May ger oftsiß vnlikly thing
Com to full [conabill] endyng.
Sa did it her; bot he wes viß,
And saw he my*ch*t, on nakyn wiß, 268
Warray his fais vith evyn mycht;

Douglas determines to use craft.

*Th*arfor he thoucht to virk with slicht.
In douglasdaill, his awn cu*n*tre,
Apon ane evy*n*nyng ente*r*it he, 272

He lodges with an old servant of his father's,

And vith a man wo*n*nit *th*ar-by,
*Th*at wes of frend*is* ry*ch*t mychty,

251. *Tak*] And tak.
254. And towart his countre is he gayne.
RUBRIC. *From* C. E *has*—hic Ia. dowglas vadit ad recup*er*and*um* suu*m* heritag*ium*. H *has*—The first winning of the Castle of Dowglas.
258. *stuff*] store H.
259. *or—for*] or A castell. H *has*—Castle or land of weere to win.
261. *his*] E *om*.
262. E *has*—For gud help is in gud; H *has*—And good helpe lyes in; C *has*—For god helpit his. *Here* E *is right in all but the repetition of* gud.
266. *full conabill*] *so in* E; full gud C; right good and fair H.
269. *fais*] fa.
271. *In*] And in. *awn*] E *om*.
273. *vith*] *th*an.
274. *rycht*] weill.

And rich of mwbill and catell,
And had beyn till his fader lele ; 276
And till him-self in his ȝoutheid [Fol. 37 b. C.]
He had done mony thankfull deid.
Thom dicson wes his name, perfay, Tom Dickson by name,
Till him he send, and can him pray, 280
*Th*at he wald cu*m* all anerly,
For to spek with hym preuely.
And he but danger till him gais ;
But fra he tald him quhat he wes, 284
He gret for Ioy and for pite, who weeps for pity.
And hym richt till his houſ had he ;
Quhar, in a chalm*er* preualy, [Fol. 17. E.]
He held him and his cu*m*pany, 288
*Th*at nane of him had persaving.
Of mete [&] drink, and o*thir* thing,
*Th*at my*ch*t *th*ame eiſ, *th*ai had plente.
Swa wroucht he *th*an *th*rou sutelte, 292 Dickson gets together the friends of Douglas.
*Th*at all *th*e leill men of *th*e land,
*Th*at with his fader wes duelland,
*Th*is gud man gert cum añe & añe,
And mak him manrent [euir]ilkane, 296
And he him-self first homage maid.
Douglas in hert gret blithnes had, Douglas is blithe of heart.
*Th*at *th*e gud men of his cuntre
Wald swa-gat bundin till him be. 300
He sperit *th*e cowyn of *th*e land,
And quha *th*e castell had in hand,
And *th*ai him tald all halely,
And syne emang *th*ame preualy 304

275. *mwbill*] moble E ; money H.
and] and off.
278. *mony thankfull*] mony A thankfull.
289. *of—had*] had off him.
290. [*ſ* EH] C *om.*
292. *than*] E *om.*
293. *the*] *that.*
294. *wes* war.
296. [*euir* E] euer H ; C *om.*
298. *blithnes*] glaidschip E ; gladnesse H.
300. *bundin—him*] till him bundyn.
301. *cowyn*] conwyne E ; conueene H.

His friends tell him to wait till Palm Sunday.

*Th*ai ordanit, *th*at he still suld be
In hyddillis and in preuate,
Till palmesonday *th*at ves neir hand,
*Th*e thrid day eft*ir* followand. 308

For *th*an *th*e folk of *th*e cu*n*tre
Assemblit at *th*e kirk vald be,

The men of the castle would then come to church.

And *th*ai *th*at in *th*e castell were
Vald als be *th*ar [*th*ar] palmys to bere, 312
As folk *th*at had na dreid of Ill,
For *th*ai thoucht all wes at *thar* will.
*Th*an suld he cu*m* with his twa men;
Bot, for *th*at men suld no*ch*t him ken, 316

He is to wear an old mantle.

He suld a mantill haf, ald and bare,
[And] A flaill, as he a taskar ware;
Vndir *th*e mantill, nocht-for-*th*i,

[Fol. 36. C.]

He suld be Armyt preualy; 320
And quhen *th*e men of his cu*n*tre,
*Th*at suld all bown befor him be,

When his men hear his warcry, they are to set upon the English.

His ensenȝhe mycht heir him cry,
*Th*an suld *th*ai, full enforsaly, 324
Richt in myddis *th*e kirk assale
*Th*e ynglis men vith hard battale,
Swa *th*at nane mycht eschap *th*aim fra;
For *th*ar-throu trowit *th*ai to ta 328
*Th*e castell, *th*at besyde wes neir.
And quhen *th*is, *th*at I [tell] ȝow her,
Wes deuisit and vndirtane,

Each man returns home.

Ilkane till his houß is gane; 332
And held *th*e spek in preuate,
Till *th*e day of *th*air assemble.

309. *the* (2)] *that*.
312. [*thar* E] their H; C *om*.
318. [*And* EH] C *om*. *taskar*] Tasker H; thresscher E.
325. *in myddis*] ymyddys.
330. [*tell* EH] tald C.
332. *till*] hame to H. *is*] hame is.
333. *the*] *this*.

[Here Ja: of dowglas slayis thaim in the kyrk.]

THe folk apon the Sononday
Held to Sanct brydis kirk *th*ar way; 336 All repair on the Sunday to St Bride's church,
And *th*ai *th*at in *th*e castell were
Yschit out, bath leß and mare,
And went *th*air palmys for to bere;
Outane a cuke and a portere. 340 except a cook and a porter.
Iames of douglas of *th*are cu*mm*yng,
And quhat *th*ai war, had vitt*er*ing;
And sped him to *th*e kirk in hy.
Bot or he com, [to] hastely 344 One man cries "Douglas!" too soon.
Ane of his cryit, "douglaß! douglas!"
Thomas dicsone, *th*at nerest was
Till *th*ame *th*at war of *th*e castel,
*Th*at war all [innouth *th*e chancell], 348
And quhen he "douglas" sa herd cry, Dickson draws his sword,
Drew out his suerd, and [fellely]
Ruschit emang *th*ame to and fra,
And ane o*thir* forouten ma; 352 but is slain.
Bot *th*ai in hy war left lyand.
Vith *th*at douglaß com ry*ch*t at hand, Douglas attacks the English,
*Th*at *th*an enforsit on *th*ame *th*e cry,
Bot *th*air chancer full sturdely 356
*Th*ai held, and [*th*aim] defendit weill,
Till of *th*air men war slane sumdeill.
Bot *th*e douglas so weill him bare,

RUBRIC. *From* E. H *has*—How Dowglas in Sanct Brydes Kirke, With the Englishmen can wirke.

335. C *has* Y *for initial* TH. *Sononday*] Palmesonday H.

342. *vittering*] witting E; good witting H.

344. [*to* E] till C; sa H.

345. *his*] his men CH; *but* E *omits* men.

346. *dicsone*] dikson.

348. [*innouth the chancell* E] Inwith the Chancell H; enow *the* chanser C.

349. *And*] E *om.* *sa*] swa hey.

350. [*fellely* E] fellounly H; folely C.

352. *And ane othir*] *so in* H; Bot ane or twa E.

353. *Bot thai*] *Th*an E; Bot they H.

354. *Vith that*] Quhill.

355. *That*] And.

356. *thair—full*] *th*ai *th*e chansell.

357. *Thai*] E *om.* [*thaim* E] them H; C *om.*

*Th*at all *th*e men *th*at with hym ware 360

and fights manfully.

Had confort of his weill-doing,
And he him sparit na kyn thing,

[Fol. 36 b. C.]

Bot prufit swa his fors in ficht,
*Th*at throu his vorschip & his my*ch*t 364

His men win the chancel.

His men sa kenly helpit he *th*an,
*Th*at *th*ai *th*e chanser on *th*ame van.
*Th*an dang *th*ai on *th*ame sa hardely,
*Th*at in schort tym men my*ch*t se ly 368

Thirty Englishmen are slain or taken.

*Th*e twapart ded, or *th*an deand.
*Th*e laiff war sesit soyn in hand;
Swa [*th*at] of xxx wes levit nane,
Na *th*ai war slane ilkane, or tane. 372

[Heire makis he the dowglas lardnar.]

Iames of douglas, quhen *th*is ves done,
*Th*e presoners has tane alsone;

Douglas goes to the castle,

And, vith *th*ame of his cu*m*pany,
Towart *th*e castell went in hy, 376
Or ony noyß or cry suld riß.
And for he vald *th*ame soyn supprißß,

[Fol. 17 b. E.]

*Th*at levit in *th*e castell were,
*Th*at war bot twa forouten mare, 380
Fiffe men or sex befor send he,
[*Th*at] fand all oppyn *th*e entre;

and seizes the porter and cook.

And ente*r*it, and *th*e portar tuk
Rycht at *th*e ȝat, and syne *th*e cuk. 384
Vith *th*at douglas com to *th*e ȝet,
And ente*r*it in forout debat,

He finds the meat all ready.

And fand *th*e met all reddy grathit,
Vith burdis set and clathis laid. 388

363. *prufit*] prowyt.
365. *he*] E *om.*
366. *chanser*] chansell.
367. *thame*] E *om.*
371. [*that* EH] C *om.* *wxx*] xxxti E; threttie H. *wes*] EH *om.*
372. *Na thai*] *That thai* ne.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
374. *has*] has he.
377. *ony*] E *om.*
382. [*That* EH] And C. *oppyn*] opyn.
386. *forout*] for-owtyn.
388. *laid*] layit.

The ȝettis *th*an he gert *th*ame spare,
And sat and ete at all lasare.
Syne all *the* gudis tursit *th*ai,
*Th*ai thoucht *th*at *th*ai my*ch*t haf avay, 392
And namly vapnys and armyng,
Silu*er*, tresour, and ek clething.
Vittalis, *th*at my*ch*t nocht tursit be,
On *th*is man*er* distroit he. 396
All *the* vittale, outakin salt,
As quhet, flour, meill, & malt,
In *the* vyne-sellar gert he bryng,
And sa*m*myn on *the* flure all flyng, 400
And *the* presoners *th*at he had tane,
Richt *th*arin gert he hed ilkane.
Syne of [*the*] tu*n*nys *the* hedis out-strak,
A foull melle *th*air can he mak; 404
For meill, malt, blude, and vyñe
Ran all to-gidder in a mellyñe,
*Th*at wes [wnsemly] for to se;
*Th*arfor *the* men of *th*at cuntre, 408
For sic thingis *th*ar mellit were,
Callit it "*th*e douglas lardenere."
Syne tuk he salt, as I herd tell,
And ded horß, and fordid *th*e well, 412
And syne brynt all, outakyn stane;
And is furth with his menȝhe gañe
Till his reset, for him tho*ch*t weill,
Gif he had haldin *th*e casteill, 416

His men pack up the valuables.

He puts wheat, flour, meal, and malt in the cellar,

slays the prisoners, and broaches the wine.

[Fol. 39. C.]

This men called "the Douglas' larder."

He spoils the well with salt and dead horses.

He then retreats.

389. *thame*] E *om.*
390. *and ete*] at meat H. *at all*] *so in* H; all at E.
392. *Thai—that*] *That thaim* thocht.
394. E *inserts* and *before* tresour, *and omits* ek.
397. *vittale outakin*] wictalis owtane.
398. *flour*] & flour. *meill*] & meill.
402. *hed*] heid.
403. *the tunnys*] tunnys C; *the* townnys E.
405. *malt*] & malt. *blude*] & blud.
407. [*wnsemly* E] vnsymle C.
409. *sic thingis*] swa fele. H *omits* l. 409, *and after* l. 410 *inserts*—And will be called this many yeere.
411. *I*] Ic.
412. *fordid*] *so in* CEI; forded H; sorded P; sordid J.
413. *syne*] E *om.*

It suld haue beyn assegit rath,
And *th*at him thoucht to mekill vath;
For he na hop had of reskewing,
And it is to perelouſ thing 420
In castell till assegit be,

No one can abide a siege without victuals, men, or hope of relief.

Quhar *th*at ane vantis of *th*ir thre,
Vittale, or men with *th*air armyng,
Or *th*an gud hop of reskewing. 424
And for he dred *th*ir thing*is* suld fale,
He chesit forthward to travale,
Quhar he my*ch*t at his largeſ be,
And sua driff furth his destane. 428

Thus was the castle taken.

On *th*is viſ wes *th*e castell tane,
And slane *th*at var *th*arin ilkañe.
*Th*e douglas syne [all] his menȝe
Gert in seir placis departit be. 432
For men suld leſ wit quhar *th*ai var,

The Douglas' men disperse themselves.

*Th*ai ȝeid departit here and *th*ar.
*Th*ame *th*at war voundit gert he ly
In-till hyddillis all preuely, 436
And gert gud lechis to *th*ame bryng,
Quhill *th*at *th*ai war in-to helyng.
And him-self with a few menȝhe,

He wanders about secretly,

Quhile ane, quhill twa, & quhil*e* thre, 440
And vmquhile all hym allane,
In hyddillis throu *th*e land is gañe.

not wishing to be seen.

Sa dred he ynglis me*n*nys my*ch*t,
*Th*at he durst no*ch*t weill cum in sicht; 444
For *th*ai *th*at tyme war all weldand,
As mast lordis our all *th*e land.

417. *suld haue*] had.
418. *vath*] waith E; skaith H.
419. *na hop had*] ne had hop.
421. *till assegit*] assegyt to.
422. E *has*—Quhar want is off *th*ir thing*is* thre.
431. [*all* EH] and C.
433. *less*] E *om.*
434. *Thai*] *That.*
435. *gert he*] *so in* E; gart he H; he gert C.
443. *mennys*] men his.
445. E *places* war *before* that.

[Here clyffurd byggis the castel agayn.]

Bot *th*e tithandis var scalit soñe, [Fol. 39 b. C.]
Of *th*e deid douglaß had doñe, 448
Com to *th*e cliffurdis ere in hy, Clifford hears what Douglas has done.
*Th*at for his tynsale wes sary,
And menit his men *th*at he had slañe,
And syne has till his purpoß tane, 452
To byg *th*e castell vp agane.
*Th*arfor, as man of mekill mane,
He assemblit gret cumpany,
And till douglas he vent in hy, 456
And biggit vp *th*e castell swith, He rebuilds the castle,
And maid it rycht stalward & stith,
And put *th*ar-in vittale and men.
Ane of *th*e thrill-wallis *th*en 460 and leaves Thirlwall there as captain.
He left behynd hym capitañe,
And syne [till] yngland went agañe.

[How one man and his sonnes twa Vndertooke King Robert to sla.]

In-to carrik ȝeit wes *th*e king, The king dwells in Carrick,
With a full sympill gad*er*yng. 464
He passit nocht twa hundreth men.
Bot s*chir* eduard his bro*thir* then and his brother in Galloway.
Wes in [galloway], weill neir *th*arby;
With hym ane o*thir* cu*m*pany. 468
*Th*ai held *th*e strynthis of *th*e land;
For *th*ai durst no*ch*t ȝeit tak on hand
Till our-ride *th*e land planly.
For of vallanch s*chir* amery 472 [Fol. 18. E.]
Wes in-till Edinburgh lyand,

RUBRIC. *From* E.
447. *the*] E *om.* *var scalit*] *that* scal*is*.
448. *the*] *this*. *deid*] deid *that*. *had*] has.
449. *cliffurdis*] cliffurd his.
451. *he*] *th*ai.
452. *till his*] to.
459. *vittale*] wictalis.
460. *thrill-wallis*] thyrwallys.
462. [*till* E] to H; In C.
RUBRIC. *From* H.
463. *ȝeit wes*] lyis.
467. [*galloway* EH] carrik C. H *has*—In Galloway was neere him by. *tharby*] him by.
469. *Thai*] *That*.

Sir Aymer de Valence is in Edinburgh.

*Th*at wes vardane of *th*e land
Vnder-neth *th*e ynglis kyng.
And quhen he herd of *th*e cu*m*myng 476
Of king robert and his menȝe
In-to carrik, and how *th*a*t* he
Had slane of *th*e persyis men,
His consell he assemblit *th*en, 480

Sir Aymer sends Sir Ingrahame Bell to Ayr.

And vith assent of his consale
He send till are, hym till assale,
Schir yngerame bell, *th*at ves hardy,
And vith hym a gret cu*m*pany. 484

[Heire the Inglis Knycht feys a tratour.]

And quhen yngerame cu*m*in ves *th*air,
Him thoucht no*ch*t speidfull for to fair
Till assale hym in-to *th*e hicht.

[Fol. 49. C.]

*Th*arfor he thoucht to virk with slicht, 488
And lay still in *th*e castell *th*an,

Sir Ingrahame hears of a Carrick man

Till he gat spering at a man
Of carrik, *th*at ves sle and vicht,
And als a man of mekill mycht, 492
As of *th*e men of *th*at cu*n*tre,
And to king robert wes prewe,
As he *th*at wes his sib-man neir,

who is a favourite with the Bruce,

And quhen he vald, for-out danger, 496
Micht to *th*e kyng*is* presens ga;
*Th*e quhe*thir* he and his so*n*nis twa
War vonand still in *th*e cu*n*tre,
For *th*ai vald nocht persauit be, 500

as are also his two sons.

*Th*at *th*ai war speciall to *th*e king;
[*Th*ai] maid him mony tyme varnyng,
Quhen *th*at *th*ai his tynsale my*ch*t se;

474. *That*] *Th*at ȝeyt E; And als H.
482. *are*] ar E; Aire H.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
485. *yngerame*] *schir* Ingrame.
490. *at*] *that* E; of H.
492. *als a man*] A man als.
494. Wes to *th*e king Robert mast p*r*eue.
496. *for-out*] for-owtyn.
502. [*Thai* E] They H; *Th*at C.

For-*thi* in *th*ame affyit he. 504
His name I can no*cht* tell, perfay;
Bot I herd synd*ir* men oft say
*Forsuth *th*at his ane E ves out;
*Bot he sa sturdy wes and stout,
*Th*at he wes *th*e mast vorthy man
*Th*at in-to carrik liffit *th*an. 508
And quhen s*chir* yngerame gat vitt*er*ing,
Forsuth *th*at [*th*is] wes no gabbing,
Eft*ir* hym in hy he sent,
And he com at his *com*mandment. 512
Schir yng*er*ame, *th*at wes sle and viß,
Tretit vith hym [*th*an] on sic viß,
*Th*at he maid sekir vnd*ir*taking
In tresoñe for to slay *th*e king; 516
And he suld haue for his seruice,
Gif he fulfillit *th*air deuiß,
Weill fourte pund*is* vorth of land,
Till hym and his ayr*is* lestand. 520

I know not his name, but have heard that he had but one eye.

Sir Ingrahame sends for him.

He undertakes to slay the king

for forty pounds' worth of land.

How the man & his twa sonnis ves set to slay the gud king robert bruce at the preve.

THE tresone *th*us is vndirtane;
And he hame till his houß is gane,
And vatit oportunite
For to fulfill his mawite. 524
In gret perell *th*an wes *th*e king,
*Th*at of his tresone wist na thing,

The man watches for an opportunity.

505. *I can*] can I.
506. *I*] Ik haiff. *oft*] E *om.*
507*, 508*. E *omits;* H *retains.* *E*] eye H.
507. *vorthy*] dowtit.
508. *in-to*] in.
510. *that this*] EH *omit* that, *and* C *omits* this; *but both are needed.* *gabbing*] leesing H.
514. [*than* E] *th*at C. H *has*—on sik a wise.
520. *and*] & till. *lestand*] ay lestand.
RUBRIC. *From* C (fol. 41); E *has* —heir*e* kynge robert is *in* greit peral.
521. C *has* Y *for* TH.
524. *For*] H *om.* *mawite*] iniquitie H.
526. *his*] *th*is. *tresone*] tresoun E; *printed* tresoune P; tresonnd J.

[Fol. 40 b. C.] For [he], *th*at he trowit mast of ane,
His dede falsly had vndirtane; 528
And nane may tresen do titar *than* he
*Th*at man in trowis l[e]awte.

The king trusted him, but had warning of his treachery.

*Th*e king in hym trastit; for-*th*i
He had fulfillit his felony, 532
Na war *th*e king, throu godd*is* grace,
Gat hale vitt*er*ing of his purchaſ,
And how, & for how mekill land,
He tuk his slaucht*ir* vpon hand. 536
I vat no*ch*t quha *th*e varnyng maid,
Bot in all tym he sic hap had,
*Th*at quhen men schupe hym to betraiſ,
He gat vitting *thar*of alwayis. 540

Bruce was often warned by women.

And mony tyme, as I herd say,
Throu vomen *th*at he vald with play,
*Th*at vald tell all *th*at *th*ai mycht here;
And sua mycht happyn *th*at it fell here. 544
Bot how *th*at eu*ir* it fell, perde,
I trow he sall *th*e varrar be.

The traitor seeks to fulfil his purpose.

Nocht-for-*th*i *th*is tratour ay
Had in his thocht bath ny*ch*t & day, 548
How he my*ch*t best bring till ending
*Th*is tresonabill vndirtaking.
Till he vmbethocht him at *th*e last,
And in his hert can vmbecast, 552
*Th*at *th*e king had in custum ay

527. [*he* EH] him C. *trowit*] traistit.
528. *falsly*] fully H. *had*] has E; hes H.
529. *And*] H *om.* *treson do*] betreyss E; betraise H.
530. *leawte*] *so in* E; lawtie C; into lawtie H.
533. *Na war*] Ne war E; Were not H.
534. *vitterinq*] witting. H *has*—Gate warning how his purpose was.
538. *in*] on. *he sic hap*] sic hap he.
539. *hym*] *th*aim.
542. *vald with*] wyth wald. *he—play*] him loued ay H.
544. *mycht happyn*] may fall H. *fell*] did H.
546. *varrar*] warrer.
547. *this*] *th*e.
550. *This*] His.
551. *vmbethocht*] wmbethinkand E; bethought H.
552. *And in*] In-till. *hert*] mind H.

For to riß airly eu*ir*ilk day,
And pas weill fer fra his menȝe,
Quhen he vald pas to *th*e preue, 556
And seik a cowert him alane,
Or at *th*e mast haf vith him añe.
*Th*air thoucht he, vith his sonnys twa,
For to suppriß *th*e king and slay; 560
And syne vend to *th*e vod avay;
Bot ȝeit of purpoß falȝeit *th*ai.
And no*ch*t-for-*th*i *th*ai com all thre
In a cowert *th*at wes prewe, 564
Quhar *th*e king wes oft vount to ga
His preue nedis for to ma.
*Th*air hid *th*ai *th*ame till his cu*m*myng.
And *th*e king in *th*e mornyng 568
Raiß, quhen *th*at his liking wes,
And richt towart *th*air cowert gais,
Quhar liand war *th*e tratour*is* thre,
For till do *th*ar his preuate. 572
To treson tuk he *th*an na heid:
Bot he ves vount, quhar-eu*ir* he ȝeid,
His suerd about his hals to bere;
And *th*at avalit hym gretly *th*ar. 576
For had no*ch*t god all-veldand
Set help in-till his awne hand,
He had beñ ded vithouten dreid.
A chalm*ir* page *th*ar vith him ȝeid; 580
And sua, forouten followis ma,
Towart *th*e cowert can he ga.

He remembers a custom of the king's.

He hopes to surprise the king.

[Fol. 18 *b*. E.]

He and his two sons lie in wait.

The king draws near.
[Fol. 41. C.]

He has his sword with him.

Only a page is with him.

[Heire the nobill kynge slays 3 tratowris hym allane.]

554. *euirilk*] Ilk.
558. *haf*] E *om*.
561. *avay*] *thar* way.
565. *wes oft*] oft wes.
568. *in*] in-to.
570. *thair*] *that*.
577. *all*] all thing E; all things H.
578. *Set—in-till*] Sik helpe set in H.
580. *chalmir*] chamber.
581. *followis*] falowis E; fellowes H.
RUBRIC. *From* E.

God help the king!

Now, bot god help *the* nobill king,
He is neir hand till his ending! 584
For *th*at covert *th*at he ȝeid till,
Wes on *the* to*thir* syde of a hill,
*Th*at nane of his men my*ch*t it se.
*Th*iddirward vent his page & he; 588
And quhen he cu*m*in wes in *the* schaw,

Bruce and his page meet the three traitors.

He saw *th*ai thre cum all on raw
Aganis him full sturdely,
*Th*an till his boy he said in hy, 592
"ȝhone men will slay vs & *th*ai may!
Quhat vappyn has *th*ou?" "a! *schir!* perfay,

Bruce borrows the page's bow and bolt,

I haf a bow, bot and a vyre."
"Gif me *th*ame smertly [bai*th*]." "a! syre, 596
How-gat will ȝhe *th*an *th*at I do?"

telling him to stand aside.

"Stand [on] fer and behald vs to.
Gif *th*ou seis me abovin be,
*Th*ou sall haf vapnys in gret plente: 600
Ande gif I de, vithdraw *th*e soyñe."
With *th*ai wordis, forouten hoyn,
He tit *the* bow out of his hand,
For *the* tra*t*our[*is*] ves neir cu*m*and. 604

The father has a sword, one son has a sword and axe, the other a sword and spear.

*Th*e fader had a suerd but mair,
*Th*e to*thir* bath suerd and hand-ax bai:,
*Th*e thrid a suerd had and a speir.
*Th*e king persauit be *th*air effeir, 608
*Th*at all wes suth men till hym tald.
"Tratour," he said, "*th*ou has me sald.
Cum na for*thir*, bot hald *the* *th*air,
I will *th*ou cum na forthir mair." 612

586. *of*] E *omits*; H *retains*.
587. *it*] him H.
588. *his*] *th*is.
589. *quhen*] E *om*.
595. *I*] Ik. *a—bot*] bot a bow. H *has*—I haue a bow, bot and a wyre.
596. [*baith* E] he said H; C *om*.
597. *than*] E *om*.
598. [*on* EH] of C. *See* l. 618.
600. *in*] EH *om*.
602. *hoyn*] hone.
603. *tit*] tite E; tooke H.
604. *tratouris* E] *tra*tour C; Traitours H. *ves*] war.
609. *suth—till*] as men had.

"A! schir, vmbethink[is] ȝow," said he, [Fol. 41 b. C.]
"How neir to ȝow *th*at I suld be;
Q ıha suld cu*m* neir to ȝow bot I?"
*Th*e king said, "I will sekirly 616 Bruce tells them all to stand off,
*Th*at *th*ou at *th*is tym cu*m* no*ch*t ner,
*Th*ou may say quhat *th*ou vill on fer."
Bot he, vith fals vordis flechand,
Ves vith his sonnys ay cu*m*and. 620 but they come on.
Quhen *th*e king saw he vald no*ch*t let,
Bot ay cu*m* on, fenȝeand falset,
He tasit *th*e vyre and leit it fle, Bruce kills the father,
And hit *th*e fader in the E, 624
Till it ry*ch*t in *th*e harnys ran;
And he bakward fell doun ry*ch*t *th*an.
*Th*e bro*thir* *th*at *th*e hand-ax bar, next the brother with the axe,
*Th*at saw his fader lyand *th*ar, 628
A gyrd rycht to *th*e king can mak,
And vith *th*e ax he him ourstrak;
Bot he, *th*at had his suerd on hicht,
Raucht him sic rout in randoun richt, 632
Richt he *th*e hed to harniſ clafe,
And him doun ded to *th*e erd drafe.
*Th*e to*thir* bro*thir* *th*at bare *th*e spere, and lastly meets the brother with the spear,
Saw his bro*thir* sa fallin *th*er, 636
With his speir, as angry man,
In a raiſ to *th*e king he ran;
Bot *th*e king, *th*at him dred su*m*-thing,
Vatit *th*e sper in *th*e cu*m*myng, 640

613. *vmbethinkis*] wmbethink*is* E; vmbethink C; bethink H.
614. *to—suld*] *that* I suld to ȝow.
615. *to*] E *om.*
620. *sonnys ay*] twa Sonnys.
622. *fenȝeand*] with fleeching H.
623. *tasit*] taisyt E; takes H.
628. *That*] Swa. *lyand*] felled H.
629. *can*] he couth.
630. *he*] E *om.*; can H. *ourstrak*] ouertake H.
633. *Richt*] *That*. *to*] till *the* E; to H.
634. And dede doune till *the* erd him draiff.
636. *sa*] E *om.*; was H.
637. *With his*] And with *the*.
638. *In*] *With*. *to*] till.
640. *Vatit*] Waytyt.

And with a wysk *the* hed of-strak.
And or *the* to*thir* had toym to tak
His suerde, *the* king sic [swak] him gaiff,
and slays him. *Th*at he *th*e hede till harnys claif, 644
[He] Ruschit doune of blude all rede.
And quhen *the* king saw *th*ai war ded,
All thre lyand, he wyppit his brand :
With *th*at his boy com fast rynand, 648
The page gives thanks to God for Bruce's safety. And said, "our lord mot lovit be,
*Th*at grantit ȝow mycht and powste,
To fell *the* felony and pride
Of *th*ir thre in sa litill tyde!" 652
*Th*e king said, "sa our lord me se!
*Th*ai had beyn worthy men all thre,
Had *th*ai nocht beyn full of tresouñe;
[Fol. 19. E.] Bot *th*at maid *th*air confusiouñe." 656

642. *toym*] comming (*corruptly*) H.
643. [*swak* EH] strak C.
644. *till*] till *the*.
645. [*He* EH] C *om.*
649. *lovit*] lowyt.
651. *and*] and *the*.

[BOOK VI.]

[Fol. 42. C.]

Sir Ingram de Umfraville finds his plot has failed,

THE king is went till his luging,
And of his dede soyn com tithing
To schir yngerame de vmphrewell,
*Th*at thoucht [his] sutelte and gyle 4
Had all falȝeit in-to *th*at place;
*Th*arfor anoyit sair he wes,
*Th*at he agane to lowdiañe
To s*chir* Amer his gate has tañe, 8
And till him tald all haill *th*e caß,
*Th*at *th*arof all forvounder*it* waß,
How ony man sa suddandly
Micht do sa gret a cheuelry, 12
As did *th*e king, [*tha*t], him alane,
Vengeans of *th*e thre tratour*is* has tañe.
He said, "certis, I may weill se
*Th*at it is all gret certante, 16
*Th*at vre helpis ay hardy men,
As by *th*is deid ȝe may weill ken.
Var he no*ch*t outrageouß hardy,
He had nocht swa vnabasitly 20

and tells Sir Aymer of it.

Sir Aymer praises the Bruce's prowess.

1. C *has* Y *for initial* TH.
2. *his*] *th*is.
3. *yngerame de vmphrewell*] Ingrame *th*e wmf*ra*will.
4. [*his* EH] with C.
5. *in-to*] in.
6. *sair*] swa.
7. *lowdiane*] lothyane E; Lochmabane H.
12. *a*] E *om.*
13. [*that* EH] all C.
14. *the thre*] iij.
15. *He*] And.
16. *gret*] E *om.*
17. *vre*] Ure ay H; . . . eu*ir* . . (*with erasures*) E.
18. ȝe] we. *weill*] E *om.*
20. *swa*] E *om.*

Sa smertly seyn his avantage.
I dreid *that* his gret wassalage
And his trawell will bring til end
It *th*at men quhile full litill vend." 24

Heire gallowayis sekis hym.]

The king wanders about in Carrick.

Sic speking maid he of *th*e king,
*Th*at ay, forouten sudiornyng,
Travalit in carrik heir and *th*air.
His men fra him sua scalit war, 28
Till purcheß *th*ame necessite,
And als *th*e cuntre for to se,
*Th*at *th*air left nocht vith him sexty.

The men of Galloway assemble 200 men, and take a sleuth-hound with them.

And quhen *th*e gallowais vist suthly, 32
*Th*at he wes with a few menȝhe,
*Th*ai maid a preue assemble
Of weill twa hundreth men & ma.
Ane sluth-hwnd vith *thaim* can *th*ai ta; 36
For *th*ai thoucht him for to suppriß;
And gif he fled on ony viß,
To follow him vith *th*e hund*e* swa,
*Th*at he suld no*ch*t eschape *thaim* fra. 40

They attempt to surprise the king.

*Th*ai schupe *th*ame, in ane evy*n*nyng,
Suddandly to suppriß *th*e king,
And till him held *th*ai straucht *th*are way;
Bot he, *th*at had his vachis ay 44

[Fol. 42 b. C.]

On ilk syde, of *th*ar cu*m*myng,

Bruce is aware of it.

Lang or *th*ai com, had vitt*er*ing;
Quhat and how feill at *th*ai my*ch*t be.
*Th*arfor he thoucht, with his menȝhe, 48
To vithdraw him out of *th*e place,

21. *seyn*] *resembles* soyn *in* C; sene E; done H.
23. *will*] may.
24. *It that*] *Th*at at E; The thing that H. *vend*] wend.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
26. *sudiornyng*] soiournyng.
29. *thame*] *thar*.
31. *thair*] *th*ai.
33. *a*] sa.
36. *Ane sluth-hwnd*] & slewthhund*is* E; And a slooth-Hound H. *can thai*] gan.
42. To suppriss sodanly *th*e king.
47. *Quhat*] E *om*. H *has*—And how feill folke that, &c.

For *the* nycht neir fallyn was.
And for nycht wes, he thoucht *that thai*
Suld nocht haue sicht to hald *the* vay, 52
Quhill he war passit with his menȝe.
And, as he thoucht, richt sua did he;
And vent hym doune till a marraß,
On a vattir *that* rynand was; 56
And in a bog he fand a place
Veill strate, *that* weill twa bowdraucht was,
Fra *thai the* vattir passit had:
He said, "heir may ȝhe mak abade, 60
And rest ȝow all a quhile and ly.
I will ga vach ȝow preuely,
Giff I heir oucht of *thar* cu*m*myng;
And gif I may heir ony thyng, 64
I sall ger varn ȝow, sua *that* we
Sall ay at our avantage be."

He plans a retreat.

He goes to a morass beside a stream,

and selects a place near the spot where his men had crossed over.

He watches.

How kyng robert the bruce ves socht vyth the sleuth-hunde.

[Heire he fechtis allan agan ij hundir.]

THE king tak*is* his gat to ga,
And vith him tuk he se*r*ua*ndis* twa. 68
And s*chir* gilbert de [la] hay left he
*Th*ar, for to rest with his menȝhe.
To *the* vattir he com in hy,
And lisnyt full entently 72
Gif he oucht herd of *th*are cu*m*myng;
Bot ȝeit *th*an mycht he heir na thing.

He takes two men with him.

He listens attentively.

50. *neir*] weill E; neere hand H.
51. *nycht wes*] *the* nycht E; the night H.
53. *Quhill*] *That*.
56. *On*] Our.
57. *a*] *the*.
59. *thai*] that H; E *puts thai after* passit.
62. *ȝow*] all.
63. *I*] Ik.
65. *we*] ye H.
66. *our*] your H.
RUBRIC. *From* C; *the second rubric from* E. H *has*—How he discomfist him allane, Twa hunder, and slew fifteene certaine.
67. C *has* Y *for* TH. *takis*] now takys.
68. *seruandis*] *ser*geand*is*.
69. [*la* E] le C.
74. *than*] *th*en E (*which* PJ *omit*).

Endlang *the* vatt*ir* *th*an ȝeid he
On a*thir* syde gret quantite; 76
He saw *the* brayis hye standand,
*Th*e vattir holl throu slike rynand,
He can find no other ford but the one where he had crossed.
And fand na furd *that* men my*ch*t pas
Bot quhar hymself [our] passit was. 80
And sua strate wes *the* vp-cu*m*myng,
*Th*at twa men mycht nocht sa*m*my*n* thryng,
Na on na maner preſ *th*ame sua,
*Th*at *th*ai sa*m*my*n* *th*e land mycht ta. 84
He dismisses his two men.
His twa men bad he *th*an in hy
Ga to *th*air feris to rest and ly;
For he vald vach *th*ar com to se.
"Schir," said *th*ai, "quha sall vith ȝow be?" 88*
"God," he said, "forouten ma;
[Fol. 43. C.] Pas on, for I will it be swa."
*Th*ai did as he *th*ame biddin had,
He watches alone.
And he *th*ar all allane abaid. 92*
Quhen he a quhile had biddin *th*are,
And herbryit, he herd as it war
He hears a hound's baying.
A hund*is* quhistlyng apon fer,
*Th*at ay com till him ner & ner. 88
He stude still for till herkyn mair,
And ay *th*e langer quhill he wes *th*air,
[Fol. 19b. E.] He herd it ner and ner cu*m*and;
He still stays there.
Bot he *th*air still thoucht he vald stand, 92
Till *th*at he herd mair taknyng;
For, for a hundis quhestlyng,

76. *gret*] a gret.
77. *He*] And.
80. *hymself*] him selwyn. [*our passit*] ouerpassed H; passit CE.
83. *press*] might guide H.
84. *sammyn—ta*] to-gidd*er* mycht lang ga (*where* ga *is altered from* ta) E; together lang might ga H.
85*—92*. *Not in* E *or* H.
85. & quhen he A lang quhile had bene *thar*.
86. *And—he*] He herknyt &. *as it*] as horsemen H.
87. *A*] And H. *quhistlyng*] whissilling H; questionyng (*in darker ink*) E. *apon*] on.
90. *quhill*] E *om*.
92. *thair—he*] thoc*h*t he *th*ar still.
93. *taknyng*] takynnyng.
94. *For*] *Th*an. *quhestlyng*] whissilling H; questionyng (*in darker ink*) E.

He wald nocht walkyn his menȝhe.
*Th*arfor he walde abyde and se — 96 He waits to spy the foe.
Quhat folk *th*ai war, & que*thir th*ai
Held toward him *th*e richt vay,
Or pas[syt] ane o*thir* way fer by.
*Th*e moyn wes schynand rycht cleirly, — 100 The moon shines bright.
[Sa lang he stude *that* he my*ch*t her
*Th*e noyis of *th*aim *that* cu*m*mand wer;
*Th*an his twa men in hy send he — He sends his two men for help.
To warne & walky*n* his menȝe; — 104
And *th*ai ar furth *thar* wayis gane,
And he left *thar* all hym allane.]
And sua lang stude he herkynand,
Till *th*at he saw cu*m* at his hand — 108 He sees the foe coming in full force.
*Th*e haill rowt, in full gret hy;
*Th*an he vmbethoucht him hastely,
Gif he ȝeid to feche his menȝhe,
*Th*at, or he mycht reparit be, — 112
*Th*ai suld be passit *th*e furde ilkañe.
And *th*an behufit, he chesit him añe
Of *th*ir twa, ou*thir* to fle or de. — He must now fly or die.
Bot his hert, *th*at wes stout and he, — 116
Consalit hym allane to byde,
And kep *th*ame at *th*e furdis syde, — He determines to make a stand.
And defend weill *th*e vp-cu*m*myng,
Sen he wes varnysit of Armyng — 120
*Th*at he *th*air Arravis [thurt] nocht dreid.
For gif he war of gret manheid,

95. *walkyn*] wakyn.
99. *passyt*] *so in* E; past H; pas C. *way*] gnite H.
100. *rycht*] E *om.*
101—106. *From* E; *also in* H; C *omits.*
103. *send*] sent H.
104. *warne & walkyn*] waken and warne H.
106. *thar all*] still there H.
107. *lang*] E *om.* *he*] he *th*air C; *but* EH *omit* thair.
109. *in*] in-till.
111. *ȝeid to feche*] held towart EH.
114. *he—him*] hi*m* chess.
117. *hym*] hym hy*m*.
120. *varnysit*] warnyst.
121. [*thurt*] thurth (*an obvious error for* thurt) E; *printed* hurt P; thurch J. C *has* sulde, *and* H sould.
122. *For*] And.

He mycht stonay *th*aṁe [eu*ir*]ilkane,

They could only attack him one at a time.

Sen *th*ai mycht cu*m* bot añe and añe. 124

He did ry*ch*t as his hert hym bad;

Stark outrageous curage he had,

Quhen he sa stoutly hym allane,

For litill strynth of erd, has tañe 128

To ficht with twa hundreth & ma.

[Fol. 43 *b*. C.]

*Th*ar-vith he to *th*e furd can ga;

And *th*ai, apon *th*e to*thir* party,

*Th*at saw him stand *th*air anerly, 132

They rush into the water.

Thryngand in-[till] the vatt*ir* raid;

For of him litill dout *th*ai had,

And raid till him i*n* full gret hy.

He smites down the first one,

He smat *th*e first sa rygorusly 136

Vith his spere, *th*at richt scharply schare,

Till he doun to *th*e erd hym bare.

*Th*e laif com *th*an in a randouñe,

whose horse encumbers the pass.

Bot his hors, *th*at wes born douñe, 140

Cu*mmer*it *th*ai*m* *th*e vpgang to ta.

And quhen *th*e kyng saw it wes sua,

Bruce kills the horse.

He stekit *th*e hors, and he can flyng,

And syne fell at *th*e vpcu*m*myng. 144

*Th*e laif with *th*at com [w*ith*] a schowt,

And he *th*at stalward wes and stout,

Met *th*ame richt stoutly at *th*e bra,

And sa gud payment can *th*ai*m* ma, 148

He slays five in the ford.

*Th*at fiff sum in *th*e furd he slew.

They draw back.

*Th*e laif *th*an sumdeill *th*ai*m* vith-drew,

*Th*at dred his strak*is* vound*ir* sare;

For he in na thing *th*ame forbare. 152

One of them exhorts the rest.

*Th*an añe said, "certis, we ar to blame;

Quhat sall we say quhen we cu*m* hame,

123. *stonay*] astoney H. [*euir* E] *raid*] rad.
CH *om*.
124. *mycht*] ne mycht.
126. *Stark*] Strang.
133. *in-till*] *so in* E; in CH.
137. *spere*] sper E; sword H.
139. *in*] in-till.
145. [*with* EH] in C.
153. *ane said*] said ane.

Quhen a man fecht*is* agains vs all?
Quha vist eu*ir* men sa fouly fall 156
As vs, gif *th*at we *th*usgat leif?"
With *th*at all haill a schout *th*ai [geve,]
And cryit, 'on hym! he may no*cht* [last.']
Vith *th*at *th*ai presit hym so fast, 160 They all come on fast.
*Th*at, had he no*cht* *th*e bettir beyn,
He had beyn ded forouten veyn.
Bot he sa gret defens can mak,
*Th*at, quhar he hit with evin strak, 164
*Th*ar mycht no thing agane it stand.
In litill space he left lyand He fills the pass with the slain.
Sa feill, *th*at *th*e vpcom wes *th*en
Dittit with slayn hors and men; 168
Swa *th*at his fayis, for *th*at stopping,
Micht nocht cum to *th*e vp-cu*m*myng.
A! deir god! quha had beyn by, Who had been there would
And seyn how he sa hardely 172 have said he was
Adressit hym agane *th*ame all, [Fol. 44. C.]
I wat weill *th*at *th*ai suld him call the best man alive.
*Th*e best *th*at liffit in-till his day;
And gif *th*at I *th*e suth sall say, 176
I herd neu*ir* in na tyme gane
Ane stynt sa mony hym allane.

[Example: how Tydeus slew forty nine men, And the Lieutenant tholde shame & paine.] The story of Tydeus.

Swth is, quhen till ethiocles
Fra his bro*thir* polynices 180

156. *sa fouly*] sik folly H.
158. [*geve* E] gaf C.
159. [*last* E] lest C.
162. *forouten*] with*o*wtyn.
164. *with—strak*] ewyn A strak.
165. *it*] E *om.*; him H.
167. *vpcom*] wpcu*m*myng.
168. *Dittit*] Ditted H.
171. *had*] had *th*en.
175. *in-till*] In.
176. *that*] E *om.*
RUBRIC. *From* H.
179. *till*] E *omits, and reverses the sense of the passage.* H *has*—Euen like when that Achilles; *but* A *rightly alters* Achilles *to* Eteocles.
180. *polynices*] Polynices H; polymices C; polnices E.

Tydeus was sent from Polynices to Eteocles, to demand the kingdom of Thebes.

Wes send tedeus in-to message,
Till ask haly *the* heritage
Of thebes till hald for a ȝeir,
For *th*ai cu*m*myn of a byrth weir; 184
*Th*ai straif, for a*thir* kyng vald be,
Bot *the* barnage of *th*ar cu*n*tre
Gert *th*ame assent on *th*is maner,
*Th*at *the* tañe suld be kyng a ȝere, 188

[Fol. 20. E.]

And *th*an *the* to*th*ir, na his menȝhe,
Suld nocht be fundin in *the* cu*n*tre,

The brothers were to reign by turns, a year each.

Quhill *the* first bro*thir* ryngand were;
Syne suld *the* to*thir* ryng a ȝere, 192
Ande syne *the* first suld leif *the* land,
Quhill *th*at *the* to*thir* war ryngand.
*Th*us ay a ȝeir suld ryng *the* tañe,
The to*th*ir a ȝeir fra *th*at war gañe. 196
To ask halding of *th*is assent,
Thedeus wes to thebes went;
And sua spak for polynices,

Eteocles bids his constable to way-lay Tydeus with fifty men.

*Th*at of thebes Ethiocles 200
Bad his constabill vith hym ta
Fifty weill Armyt, and forouth ga
To meit thedeus in *the* way,
And slay hym but langar delay. 204
The constabill his vay is gañe,

The constable takes forty-nine men with him, and waylays Tydeus.

And nyne and fourty vith him has tane,
Swa *th*at he vith *th*ame maid fifty.
In-till *the* evynnyng, preuely, 208
*Th*ai set enbuschement in *the* vay,
Quhar thedeus behufit avay,

181. *tedeus*] to Thedeus E; to Thebes H (*both wrong*). *in-to*] in.
184. *cummyn*] twynnys. H *has*—Twa twynnes of ane baith they were.
189. *na*] &.
191. *ryngand*] regnand. *And so in* l. 194.
193. *syne*] *th*en.
198. *Thedeus wes*] Wes Thedeus.
199. *polynices*] *see note to* l. 180.
202. Men armyt weill & furth ga.
206. *has*] E *om.*
210. *avay*] away E; to ga H.

Betuix [ane] hye crag and *th*e se.
And he, *th*at of *th*air mavite 212 Tydeus rides homewards.
Wist na thing, his vay has tañe,
And toward grece agane is gañe.
And as he raid in-to *th*e nycht,
Sa saw he with *th*e monys licht 216 He sees shields in the moonlight.
Schynyng of scheldis gret plente;
He had vound*ir* quhat it my*ch*t be. [Fol. 44 b. C.]
Vith *th*at all haill *th*ai gaf a cry, They all rush upon him.
And he, *th*at herd sa suddanly 220
Sic noyis, su*m*deill affrayit wes;
Bot in schort tym he till him tais
His spiritis richt full hardely;
For his gentill hert and vorthy 224
Assurit him in-till *th*at neide.
*Th*an vith *th*e spuris he strak his steide,
And ruschit in amang thame all. He encounters them all.
*Th*e first he met, he gert [him] fall, 228
And syne his suerd he swappit out,
And raucht about him mony a rout,
And [slew] sex su*m* weill soyn and ma, He slays six.
*Th*an vnd*ir* him his hors *th*ai sla, 232
And he fell; bot he smertly raiß, He falls, but recovers.
And, strikand, rowm about him mais,
And slew of *th*ame a quantite,
Bot voundit vound*ir* sair ves he. 236
With *th*at a litill rod he fand He finds a narrow pass up the cliff,
Vp toward *th*e crag strikand.
*Th*iddir went he in full gret hy, and climbs up.
Defendand him full douchtely, 240
Till in *th*e crag he clam sum deill,

211. [*ane* E] an H; *the* C.
213. *his*] he his C; *but* EH *omit* he.
214. *grece agane*] *so also in* H; gret bargane (!) E.
218. *He*] And.
223. *richt*] E *om.*
226. *his*] *the.*
228. [*him* EH] *th*aim C.
230. *a*] E *om.*
231. [*slew* EH] C *om.*

And fand a place enclosit weill,
Quhar nane but añe mych*t* him assale.
*Th*air stude he and gaf *th*ame battale; 244
And *th*ai assalit eu*i*rilkane,

One slain foe often bore down four others.

And oft fell, quhen *th*at he slew añe,
As he doun to *th*e erd vald driff,
He vald beir doun weill four or fiff. 248
*Th*air stude he and defendit swa,
Till he had slañe *th*ame half & ma.
A gret stane *th*an by him saw he,
*Th*at throu *th*e gret anciente 252
Was [lowsyt], reddy for to fall;

He throws down a large stone, and kills eight men.

And quhen he saw *th*aim cu*m*and all,
He tu*m*lit doun on *th*aim *th*e stane,
And viij men *thar*with has he slañe, 256
And sua stonait *th*e remanand,
*Th*at *th*ai war weill neir recryand.
*Th*an wald he preson hald no mare,

He sallies out, and slays all but the constable,

Bot on *th*ame ran with suerd al bare, 260
And hewit & slew with all h*is* mayn,
[Fol. 45. C.]
Till he had nyne and fourty slane.
*Th*e constabill syne can he ta,

whom he sends back to Thebes.

And gert him suere, *th*at he suld ga 264
To king ethiocles, and tell
*Th*e auenture *th*at *th*ame befell.
Thedeus bare him douchtely,
*Th*at our-com [him] allane fifty. 268

Which was the better man?

ȝhe *th*at [*th*is] redis, Iug*is* ȝhe
Quhe*thir* *th*at mair suld p*re*sit be:

The king, who alone fought two hundred advisedly,

*Th*e king, *th*at with avisment
Vndirtuk sic hardyment, 272
As for to stynt, him ane, but fer,

252. *the—anciente*] gret a mawyte (!) E; the great mauitie (!) H.
253. [*lowsyt* E] lowsed H; lochit C.
256. *tharwith—he*] *th*ar with It has.
262. *had*] has.
268. [*him* EH] C *om.* *Cf.* l. 378.
269. [*this* EH] C *om.* *Iugis*] cheyss (= cheys*is*) E; judge H.
273. *fer*] feare H.

*Th*ai folk *th*at weill twa hundreth wer,
Or thedeus, [*that*] suddanly,
Fra *th*ai had rasit on him *th*e cry,
Throu hardyment *th*at he had tane,
[Wan] fifty men, all him allane.
*Th*ai did *th*air dede bath in *th*e ny*ch*t,
And faucht bath with *th*e monys licht;
Bot *th*e king discu*m*fit ma,
And thedeus [the] ma can sla.
Now demys, quhe*thir* mair lovyng
Suld tedeus haf, or *th*e king!

or Tydeus, who fought fifty who surprised him?

Which was better?

In *th*is maner *th*at I haf tald,
*Th*e king *th*at stout ves, stark & bald,
Wes fechtand on *th*e furd*is* syde,
Gyffand and takand vound*is* vyde,
Till he sic martirdome *th*air maid,
*Th*at he *th*e furde all stoppit had,
*Th*at nane of *th*ame mycht till him ryde.
*Th*an thoucht *th*ame foly for to byde,
And halely *th*e flicht can ta,
And went hamvard quhar *th*ai com fra.
For *th*e king*is* men with *th*at cry
Valknyt, and full affraitly
Com for to seik *th*air lord *th*e king.
*Th*e galloway men herd *th*air cu*m*myng,
And fled, *th*at durst no*ch*t byde no mair.
*Th*e king*is* men, *th*at dredand wair
For *th*air lord, full spedaly

[Fol. 20 *b*. E.]

The king fights on.

They flee,

for the king's men come to the rescue.

274. *Thai*] *The*. *weill*] E *om*.
275. [*that* EH] sa C.
276. *Fra*] For E; *but* H *has* Fra.
278. [*Wan* H] Wane E; On C.
280. *monys*] mone.
282. [*the* H] *th*en E; C *om*.
283. *lovyng*] lowing.
285. *In*] On (*with large initial*) E. *I*] Ik.
286. *stark*] E *om*.
287. *furdis*] furd *or* furd*is* E.
288. *voundis vyde*] rowt*is* roid E; routes red H.
289. *thair*] *th*ar has.
292. *Than*] *Th*aim. *thame*] *th*an.
294. *hamvard*] hamwart*is*.
295. *that*] *th*e.
296. *and*] E *om*.
297. *Com for*] And com.
299. *that*] and.

Com to *the* furde, and soyn in hy
They find him alone. *Th*ai fand *the* kyng sytand alane,
*Th*at of his basnet *th*an had tañe 304
To tak *the* air, for he wes hate;
[Fol. 45 b. C.] *Th*an sperit *th*ai at him of his stat;
And he tald *th*aim all haill *the* caß,
Howgat *th*at he assalȝeit was, 308
And how *th*at god hym helpit sua,
*Th*at he eschapit haill *th*ame fra.
They count the slain, and find fourteen. *Th*an lukit *th*ai how feill war ded,
And *th*ai fand liand in *th*at sted 312
Fourteyn, *th*at slayn war vith h*is* hand.
*Th*an lovit *th*ai god fast, all-veldand,
*Th*at *th*ai *th*ar lord fand haill and feir;
And said, "*th*ai[*m*] byrd on na maner 316
They are of good courage. Dreid *th*air fais, sen *th*air chiftane
Wes of sic hert and of sic mane,
*Th*at he for *th*ame had vndirtane
With sa feill folk to ficht him añe." 320

Syk vordis spak *th*ai of *the* kyng,
And, for his hye vndirtaking,
[Farlyit, and ȝarnyt hym] to se,
*Th*at vith hym ay wes vount to be. 324
Valour is to be prized. A! quhat vorschip is prisit thing,
For it mak*is* men to haf loving,
Gif it be followit ythandly;
Bot priß of vorschip, nocht-for*th*i, 328

304. *than had*] has.
305. *tak the air*] *so in* H; awent hym E.
313. *Fourteyn*] Fifteene H. *slayn war*] war slayne.
316. *thaim*] *so in* E; *th*ai C; they H. *byrd*] *so in* E; wald H.
320. *folk*] for. *him*] E *om*. *him ane*] allane H.
323. *So in* E (*but with* for *inserted before* to); H *has*—They ferlied and yarned him to see; C *has*—Sic ȝarnit in hym ferly to se (*which seems corrupt*).
325. *quhat*] how H. *prisit*] perfyt E; a perfite H.
326. *makis*] mayss.
327. *ythandly*] ythenly E; worthely H.
328. *Bot*] For.

Is [hard] to vyn but gret travale;
Oft till defende and oft assale,
And till be in *th*air dedis wiß,
Gerris men of vorschip vyn *the* priß. 332

Continually to fight gains men the prize of valour.

*Th*ar may no man haf worthyhede,
Bot he haf wit to steir his stede,
And se quhat is to leif or ta.
Vorschip Extremyteis has twa; 336
Fule-hardyment *th*e formast is,
And *th*e to*th*ir is cowardiß,
And *th*ai ar bath for to forsak.
Fule-hardyment will all vnd*ir*tak, 340
Als weill thing*is* to leiff as ta;
Bot cowardiß dois na thing sua,
Bot vterly forsak*is* all;
And *th*at war vound*ir* for to fall, 344
Na war falt of discrecione.

Valour has two extremities; the one foolhardiness, the other faintheartedness.

For-*th*i has vorschip sic renouñe,
*Th*at it is [mene] betuix *th*ai twa,
And tak*is* *th*at is till vndirta, 348
And levis *th*at is to leif; for it
Has so gret varnasyng of vit,
*Th*at it all peralis weill can se,
And all avantag*is* *th*at may be. 352

Valour is the mean between them. [Fol. 46. C.]

It is prudent.

It [wald] till hardyment [hald] haly,
With-*th*i away war *the* foly.
For hardyment vith foly is viß;
Bot hardyment, *th*at mellit is 356
Vith vit, [Is] vorschip ay, per-de;
For, but vit, vorschip may nocht be.

Hardiness, mingled with wit, becomes valour.

329. [*hard* EH] herd C. *but*] for E; but H.
333. *Thar*] And.
334. *stede*] deid E; deed H.
340. *will all*] all will.
344. *And*] Bot. *voundir*] wonder H; der (*sic*) E (*added afterwards*).
345. *falt*] faute.
347. [*mene* E] mid H; mellit C.
350. *varnasyng*] warnysing.
353. *It wald*] *so in* H; It will C; I wald E. [*hald* H] heyld E; helll C.
354. *the*] E *om.*
355. *viss*] wice E; H *om.*
357. [*Is* EH] and C.

This king combined manhood with wit.

*Th*is nobill kyng *th*at we of reid,
Mengit all tyme vith vit manheid; 360
*Th*at men may be *th*is melle se.
His vit hym schawit *th*e strat entre
Of *th*e furd*e*, and *th*e ysche alsua;
He thoucht *th*at *th*ai mycht neu*ir* our-ga 364
Apon a man *th*at wes worthy.
*Th*arfor his hardyment hastely
Thoucht weill it mycht be vndirtañe,
Sen *th*at anis mycht assale bot añe. 368
*Th*us hardyment, gou*e*rnit vith vit,
*Th*at he all tym vald sa*m*my*n* knyt,
Gert him of vorschipe haf *th*e priſ,
And oft our-cum his enymyſ. 372

He knew the deed could be done.

How douglas slew thrillvall.

[Here the Inglis captan & othir ar slayn.]

The king still dwells in Carrick.

THE king in carrik duelt all still;
His men assemblit fast him till,
That in *th*e land war traualande,
Quhen *th*ai of *th*is deid herd tithand. 376
For *th*ai *th*ar vre with him vald ta,
Gif he war eft assalȝheit swa.
Bot ȝeit *th*an Iames of douglas
[Fol. 21. E.] In douglasdaill traualand was, 380
Douglas is near Douglasdale.
Or ellis weill neirhand *th*ar-by,
In hiddillis sum-deill preuely.
For he valde se his gou*e*rnyng,

360. *Mengit*] Mellyt E; Melled H.
361. *men may*] may men.
362. *hym schawit*] schawyt hym.
363. *ysche*] wschyng E; ishing H.
364. *That*, as him tho*ch*t, war hard to ta E; That him thought was hard to ta H.
365. *wes*] war.
367. *weill*] well H; E *places it after* be.
369. *gouernit*] gou*e*rnit he C; *but* EH *omit* he.
371. *haf*] winne H.
RUBRIC. *From* C; *second rubric from* E; H *has*—How Iames of Dowglas with a traine, Slew Thriswaile, and his men of maine.
373. C *has* Y *for* TH. *all*] ay E; then H.
377. *with him vald*] wald with hym.
378. *he war eft*] *that* he eft war.

*Th*at hade *the* castell in keping; 384
And gert mak mony a Iuperdy,
To se quhe*thir* he wald ysche blithly.
Quhen he persauit weill *th*at he
Vald blithly ysche with his menȝhe, 388
He maid a gaddering preuely
Of *th*ame *th*at war of his party,
*Th*at wes so feill *th*at *th*ai durst ficht
With thrill-wall and all *the* my*ch*t 392
Of *th*ame *th*at in *the* castell were.
He schup him in *the* nycht to fare
To sandylandis; and neir *th*ar-by
He him enbuschit preuely, 396
And fand a few a trayn to ma;
*Th*at soñe in *the* mornyng can ta
Cattale, *th*at wes *the* castell by,
And syne vith-drew *th*ame halely 400
Toward *th*ame *th*at enbuschit ware.
*Th*an thrill-wall, forouten mare,
Gert arm̃e his men forouten baid,
And yschit with all *the* men he had, 404
And followit fast eft*ir th*e ky.
He wes arayit at poynt clenly,
Outakyn *th*at his hede wes bair.
*Th*an vith *the* men *th*at vith him war 408
*Th*e cattale followit he gude speid,
Richt as a man *th*at had no dreid,
Till *th*at he of *th*ame gat a sicht,

Douglas plots against Thirlwall.

[Fol. 46 *b*. C.]

He sets an ambush near Sandylands.

Thirlwall sallies out,

after some cattle.

385. *a*] E *om*.
387. *Quhen*] And quhen E. *weill*] E *om*.
390. *of*] on.
391. *wes*] war.
392. *thrill-wall*] thyrwall E; Thriswaile H.
395. *neir thar*] ner *thar* E (*where it is written* "*thar* ner," *with marks to shew that the words should be transposed; hence misprinted* thar ner *in* J; *but* P *has it right*).
397. *fand*] send E; sent H.
398. *ta*] ga.
399. *Cattale*] & tuk cateli.
400. *halely*] hastily.
405. *ky*] *so in* H; cry PJ (*but I read* ky *in* E).
406. *arayit*] armyt E; armed H.
407. *that*] E *om*.
411. *of thame gat*] gat off *thaim*.

*Th*an prikit *th*ai with all *th*air mycht, 412
Followand *th*ame out of aray,
And *th*ai sped *th*ame fleand, quhill *th*ai
Fer by *th*ar buschement war all past;
And thrill-wall eu*ir* chasit on fast. 416

The men in ambush start out,

And *th*an *th*ai *th*at enbuschit war
Yschit till him, bath les and mar,
And rasit suddandly *th*e cry;
And *th*ai *th*at saw sa suddandly 420
*Th*at folk sa egirly cum prikand
Betuix *th*ame and *th*air varrand,
*Th*ai war in-to full gret affray;
And for *th*ai war out of Aray, 424

and Thirlwall's men flee.

Sum of *th*aim fled, and su*m* abaid;
And douglas, *th*at *th*ar with him had
A gret menȝe, full egirly
Assalit, and scalit *th*ame hastely, 428
And in schort tym cu*mm*e*r*it *th*aim sua,
*Th*at weill nañe eschapit *th*aim fra.

Thirlwall is slain.

Thrillwall, *th*at wes *th*air capitane,
Wes *th*air in-to *th*e bargane slane, 432
And of his men *th*e mast party;
[Fol. 47. C.] *Th*e laif fled full affrayitly.
Douglaſ his menȝe fast can chaſ,
And *th*e flearis *th*air wais tais 436
To *th*e castell in full gret hy;
*Th*e formast ente*r*it spedely,

Douglas's men overtake the fugitives.

Bot *th*e chassaris sped *th*ame so fast,
*Th*at *th*ai ourtuk sum at *th*e last, 440
And *th*ame forout mercy can sla.
And quhen *th*ai of *th*e castell swa

415. *all*] E *om*.
416. *euir*] ay. *on*] E *om*.
421. *sa—cum*] come egyrly.
422. *Betuix*] Ry*cht* betuix E; H *omits* Rycht.
429. *cummerit*] *written* cumnerit C; cumbred H; ourraid E.
430. *That*] C *has* *That* *th*air; *but* EH *omit* thair.
432. *in-to*] in.
440. *at*] off.
441. *forout*] forowtyn.

Saw [*th*aim] slay of *th*air men *th*aim by,
*Th*ai sparit *th*e ȝettis hastely, 444
And in hy to *th*e vallis ran.
Iames of douglas [h*is*] menȝhe *th*an
Sesit weill hastely in hand
At *th*ai about *th*e castell fand ; 448
Till *th*ar reset syne went *th*air vay.
*Th*usgat yschit thrillvall *th*at day.

Douglas seizes booty, and retreats.

Q when thrilwall on *th*is maner
Had yschit, as I tell ȝow heir, 452
Iames of douglas and his men
Buskit *th*ame all sa*m*my*n* *th*en,
And went *th*air vay toward *th*e kyng,
In gret hy ; for *th*ai herd tithyng, 456
*Th*at of vallanch s*chir* Amery,
With a full gret cheuelry
Bath of ynglis and scottis men,
With gret felony war reddy *th*en 460
Assemblit [for] to seik *th*e kyng,
*Th*at wes *th*at tym with his gad*er*yng
In [cu*m*nok], quhar it stratest was.
*Th*idd*ir* went Iames of douglas, 464
*Th*at wes richt welcum to *th*e kyng ;
And quhen he tald had *th*at tithing,
How *th*at s*chir* amer wes cu*m*and
For to hunt hym out of *th*e land, 468
With hund and horn, ry*ch*t as he were
A volf, [a] theif, or thefis fer*e*,
*Th*an said *th*e king, "it may weill fall,
*Th*ouch he cum and his power all, 472

Douglas joins the king.

Sir Aymer de Valence seeks the king in Cumnock.

Douglas tells Bruce of it.

443. [*thaim* E] them H ; C *om.*
446. [*his* E] *the* C ; H *om.* *Cf.* l. 435.
448. *At*] *That.*
450. Thus Thriswaile ished to that essay H.
457. *vallanch*] Walence.
459. *ynglis and scottis*] Scott*is* & Ingliss.
461. [*for* EH] *th*ame C.
463. [*cumnok* EH] carrik C ; *see* l. 511.
465. *That*] &.
466. *tald had*] had tauld.
470. [*a* E] C *om.* *a—or*] or els a H.

We sall abyde in *this* cuntre,
[Fol. 47 b. C.; Fol. 21 b. E.] And gif he cu*m*is, we sall him se."

[Heire folows the king R. schir emery & Iohn of lorn with a slewthhound.]

The king spak apon *th*is maner;
Sir Aymer gathers a company, And of vallanch s*chir* amer 476
Assemblit a gret cu*m*pany
Of nobill men and of vorthy,
Of yngland and of lowdiane,
And he has alsua vith him tane 480
and John of Lorn collects 800 men, Iohñe of lorn, and all his mycht,
*Th*at had of vorthy men and vicht
With him viij hundreth men & ma.
They take a sleuth-hound with them. A sleuthhund had he *thar* alsua 484
Sa gude, *th*at change vald for na thing;
And su*m* men sais ȝeit *th*at *th*e kyng
As a strecour hym nwrist had,
And ay sa mekill of hym maid, 488
*Th*at with h*is* hand he vald hym feyd,
The hound knew the king well, He followit hym quhar eu*ir* he ȝeid;
Swa *th*at *th*e hwnd hym lufit swa,
*Th*at he vald part na viß hym fra. 492
Bot how *th*at Iohn of lorn him had,
I herd neu*ir* mencione be made;
Bot men sais it wes certane thing
*Th*at he had him in his sesing, 496
And throu hym thoucht *th*e kyng to ta.
For he wist he hym luffit swa,
*Th*at fra he mycht anys feill
*Th*e kyngis sent, he wist ry*ch*t weill 500
*Th*at he vald change it for na thyng.

RUBRIC. *From* E.
476. *vallanch*] Walence.
479. *lowdiane*] lowthiane.
485. *change vald*] wald chang.
487. *strecour*] traytour E; Traittour H.
488. *ay*] E *om.* *maid*] he maid.
489. *with—he*] hys awyn hand*is*.
491. *lufit*] folowyt E; loued H.
Here H *wrongly inserts* ll. 497, 498.
496. *sesing*] leading H.

*Th*is Iohn of lorñ hatit *th*e kyng — John of Lorn hated the king.
For *schir* Iohñ cwmyn his emys sak;
Micht he hym ou*thir* sla or tak, 504
He wald no*ch*t priß his liff a stra,
With-*th*i he vengeans on hym my*ch*t ta.

[How Sir Aymer and Iohn of Lorne Chased the King with Hound and horne.]

*Th*e vardane *th*an, *schir* Amery,
With Iohñe of lorñe in cu*m*pany, 508
And o*thir* of gud renoune alsua;
Thomas randale wes añe of *th*ai
*Th*at cum in cu*m*nok to seik *th*e kyng,
*Th*at wes weill war of *th*ar cu*m*myng, 512 The king has 300 men in Cumnock.
And wes vp in *th*e strenthis *th*en
And with hym weill thre hundreth men.
His bro*thir th*at tyme with hym was,
And alsua Iames of douglas. 516
Schir Ameryis rout he saw, [Fol. 48. C.]
*Th*at held *th*e playn ay & *th*e law,
And in haill battale alwayis raid.
*Th*e kyng, *th*at na supposing had 520 The king only regards Sir Aymer de Valence;
[*Th*at] *th*ai war mair *th*an he saw *th*air,
Till *th*ame, and nou*thir* ellis-quhar,
Had [ey, &] vroucht vnvittandly.
For Iohñe of lorn full sutelly 524 for John of Lorn keeps behind a hill.
Behynd thoucht to suppriß *th*e kyng.
*Th*arfor with all his gade*r*yng
About añe hill he held his way,
And held hym in-to cowert ay, 528
Till he so neir com to *th*e kyng
Or he persauit his cu*m*myng,

503. *schir*] E *om.*
506. *With-thi*] Sa *that* E; Bot gif H.
RUBRIC. *From* H.
508. *Iohne of lorne*] *th*is Ihone.
511. *That—in*] Come in-till E; Came in H.
514. *thre*] three H; iiij E.
521. [*That* EH] C *om.* *mair*] *so in* EH; no mair C.
523. [*ey* E] eye H; he C. [*&* EH] C *om.* *vroucht*] vroucht *th*ar C; *but* EH *omit* thar.
527. *he*] E *omits;* H *retains.* *his*] *the.*

*Th*at he wes cu*m*myn on hym weill neir.
*Th*e to*thir* host [&] schir amer 532
Presit on *th*e to*th*ir party.

The king is in great jeopardy.

*Th*e kyng wes in gret Iuperdy,
*Th*at wes on a*th*ir syde vmbeset
With fayis *th*at to slay hym thret; 536
And *th*e lest party of *th*ame twa
Wes starkar fer na he and ma.
And quhen he saw *th*ame preß him to,
He thoucht in hy quhat wes to do, 540

He divides his men into three companies.

And said, "lord*is*, we haf no mycht
At *th*is tyme, for to stand and ficht.
*Th*ar-for departis vs in thre,
All sall no*ch*t swa assalȝeit be; 544
And in thre parteis hald our vay."
Syne till his consall can he say
Betuix *th*ame, in-to preuate,
In quhat stede *th*ar repair suld be. 548
With *th*at *th*air gat all ar *th*ai gañe,
Ande in thre partis *th*air vay has tañe.

John of Lorn sets the hound on the king's trace.

*Th*an Iohn of lorn com to *th*e plaß
Quhar-fra *th*e kyng departit was, 552
And in his traiß *th*e hund he set,
*Th*at *th*an, forouten langar let,
Held evyn *th*e vay eft*ir* *th*e kyng,
Richt as he had of hym knawyng, 556
And left *th*e to*thir* parteis twa,
As he na kepe to *th*ame vald ta.
And quhen *th*e kyng saw [his] cu*m*myng,
[Fol. 42 b. C.] Eft*ir* his rout in-till A lyng, 560
He thoucht he knew *th*at it wes he.

532. [& E] and H; *th*an C.
533. *on*] apon.
537. *thame*] *th*e.
538. *fer na*] *th*an.
542. *At*] As at. *for*] E *om*.
546. *consall*] priwe folk E; Menyie H.
551. *Than*] E *om*.
553. *traiss*] trace.
559. [*his* EH] *th*air C; *but cf.* l. 561.
561. *he*] *th*ai E; they H.

*Th*arfor he bad till his men*ȝ*he
*ȝ*eit *th*an in thre depart *th*ame soñe,
And *th*ai did sua forouten hoyn, 564
And held *th*air way in thre parteis.
*Th*e hund did *th*an sa gret mastris,
*Th*at he held ay, forout changing,
Eft*ir* *th*e rout quhar wes *th*e kyng. 568
And quhen *th*e kyng has seyn *th*aim sua
All in a rout eft*ir* hym ta
*Th*e way, and follow nocht h*is* men,
He had a gret persavyng *th*en 572
*Th*at *th*ai knew [him]; for-*th*i in hy
He bad his men richt hastely
Scale, and ilk man hald h*is* way
All be hym-self, and sua did *th*ai. 576
Ilk man a syndr*i* gat is gañe,
And *th*e kyng has vith him tañe
His forstir bro*thir*, forouten ma,
And sa*m*my*n* held *th*air gat *th*ai twa. 580
*Th*e hund alwais followit *th*e kyng,
And changit nocht for na parting,
Bot ay followit *th*e kyng*is* traſ,
But vau*er*yng, as he passit was. 584
And quhen *th*at Iohñe of lorñ saw
*Th*e [hund] so hard eft*ir* hym draw,
And followit straucht eft*ir* *th*ai twa,
He knew *th*e kyng wes añe of *th*ai. 588
He bad v of his cu*m*pany

The king again divides the men with him into three bands.

[Fol. 22. E.]

The pursuers still follow him.

He disperses all his men.

Only his foster-brother is with him.

The hound still follows his trace.

564. *hoyn*] hone.
566. *than*] *thar*.
567. *he*] E *om*. *forout*] for-owtyn.
570. *ta*] to ta C (*but* to *is not wanted*); ga EH.
573. [*him* EH] C *om*.
575. *ilk man*] Ilkan.
576. *be*] by H; E *om*.
580. *gat*] E *om*.
581. *alwais followit*] folowyt alwayis.
582. *nocht*] E *om*. *parting*] departing.
583. *trass*] trace.
584. *vaueryng*] waweryng.
585. *that*] E *om*.
586. [*hund* E] Hound H; hundis C. *so hard*] sa fast H; E *om*.
587. *straucht*] strak E; fast H.
589. *He*] And. *v*] *so in* E; fiuo H.

John of Lorn sends five men to take him.

*Th*at war richt wicht men and hardy,
And als on fute spediast ware
Of all *th*at in *th*at rout war *th*ar, 592
Ryn eftir hym, and him our-ta—
"And let hym na-viß paß ȝow fra."

[Heire v chosyn men ar send to tak the kyng.]

And fra *th*ai herd had *th*e biddyng,
*Th*ai held *th*e vay eft*ir th*e kyng, 596
And followit hym so spedely,
*Th*at *th*ai him weill soyn ca*n* our-hy.

The five men overtake him.

*Th*e king *th*an saw *th*ame cu*m*and ner,
And wes anoyit in gret maner, 600
For he thoucht, gif *th*ai war vorthy,
*Th*ai mycht hym trawale and tary,

[Fol. 49. C.]

And hald hym suagat taryand,
Till *th*e remanand suld cu*m* at hand. 604
Bot had he dred bot ane*r*ly
*Th*ame v., I trow all sekirly
He suld no*ch*t haf full mekill dreid.
And till his fallow, as he ȝeid, 608

He agrees with his foster-brother to withstand the five.

He said, "ȝon v ar fast cu*m*and,
*Th*ai ar weill neir now at our hand.
Swa is *th*air ony help with *th*e?
For we sall soyn assalit be." 612
"ȝha, s*chir*," he said, "all *th*at I may."
"*Th*ou sais weill," said *th*e kyng, "perfay,
I se *th*ame cu*m*and till vs neir.
I will na for*thir*, bot richt heir 616

591. *on*] off.
592. *that* (2)] *th*air. *thar*] E *om.* H *has*—That they might finde amang them there.
594. *ȝow*] *th*aim E; *but* H *has* you.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
595. *herd had*] had herd.
596. *the* (1)] *th*air.
598. *Here* H *has the rubric*—How the King slew the fiue men, That Iohn of Lorne sent to him then.
599. *than*] *that*.
600. *And*] E *om.*
602. *Catchword*—And hald him suagat taryand.
604. *suld cum*] com.
607. *nocht—full*] have had na.
609. *ȝon*] *th*ir.
611. *with*] at E; in H.

Byde, quhill *th*at I am in aynd,
And se quhat fors *th*at *th*ai can faynd."
*Th*e kyng *th*an stude full sturdely,
And *th*e v soyn, in full gret hy, 620
Com vith gret schoyr and mannasyng.
Thre of *th*ame went on-to *th*e kyng;
And till his man *th*e to*thir* twa
Vith sverd in hand can stoutly ga. 624

Three attack the king, and two his man.

*Th*e kyng met *th*ame *th*at till hym socht,
And till *th*e first sic rowt he rocht,
*Th*at ere and cheik doun in *th*e half
He schare, and of *th*e schuld*ir* als. 628
He [ruschyt] doun all desaly;
The twa *th*at saw sa suddanly
*Th*air fallow fall, effrayit var,
And stert a litill ou*ir*mair. 632

Bruce kills the foremost.

*Th*e kyng vith *th*at blenkyt hym by,
And saw *th*e twa full sturdely
Agane his man gret melle ma.
Vith *th*at he left his awn twa, 636
And till *th*ame *th*at faucht vith his man
A lowp richt lychtly maid he *th*an,
And smat *th*e hed of of *th*e tane.
To mete his awn syne is he gane, 640
*Th*at com on hym Rycht hardely.
He met *th*e first sa egyrly,
*Th*at vith his sverd, *th*at scharply schare,
*Th*e arm he fra *th*e body bare. 644
Quhat strak*is* *th*ai gaf I ca*n* no*ch*t tell,
Bot to *th*e kyng so fair befell,

He next kills one of the two who attack his man.

[Fol. 49 *b*. C.]

He soon after kills two more of them.

617. *Byde—I*] I will byd quhill Ic E; Abide while I H. *in*] into H.
620. *soyn*] sum E; men H.
621. *schoyr*] schor E; shore H.
622. *Thre*] *Th*en iij E; And three H. *on-to*] to EH.
629. [*ruschyt* E] rushed H; duschit C. *desaly*] disyly.
634. *full*] some E; men H.
636. *awn*] awin.
639. *of of*] quite off H; off E.
641. *That*] *Th*ai. *Rycht hardely*] full sturdely.
643. *his*] *th*e.
644. E *places* he *before* bare.

*Th*at, *th*ouch he trauale had & payn,
He of his famen four has slayn. 648

His man kills the fifth.

His fost*ir* bro*thir* eft*ir* soyn
*Th*e fift has out of dawis doyn.
And quhen *th*e kyng saw *th*at all fiff
[Fol. 22 *b*. E.] War on *th*at viß broucht out of lif, 652
Till his fallow *th*an can he say,
"*Th*ou has helpit richt weill, perfay."
"It lik*is* ȝow to say sua," said he,
"Bot till gret part to ȝow tuk ȝe, 656
*Th*at slew four or I slew añe!"

The king praises his man's prowess.

*Th*e kyng said, "as *th*e glew is gane,
Bettir *th*an *th*ou I mycht It do,
For I had mair lasair *th*ar-to. 660
*Th*e twa fallowis *th*at delt vyt*h* *th*e,
Quhen *th*ai me saw assalȝeit vith thre,
Of me richt na kyn dout *th*ai had;
For *th*ai wend I wes stratly stad. 664
And for-*th*i *th*at *th*ai dred me no*ch*t,
Noy *th*ame fer out *th*e mair I moucht."
Vith *th*at *th*e kyng lukyt hym by,
And saw of lorn *th*e Cu*m*pany 668
Neir vith *th*air sleuthhund fast cu*m*and.

He retreats to a wood.

*Th*an till a vod, *th*at wes neir hand,
He went with his fallow in hy;
God sauf *th*ame for his gret mercy! 672

649. *eftir*] *th*ar-eftir.
650. E *puts* has *before* done (= doyn).
654. *richt*] E *om*.
656. *till*] *th*e E; ouer H.
657. *Th*at slew iiij off *th*e fyve ȝow ane E; Ye slew foure of the fiue alane H.
660. *I*] Ik.
661. *The*] For *th*e.
662. *me saw*] saw me.
664. *wes stratly*] sa straytly war.
666. *Noy*] *so in* EH; *so also in* P; *but* J *actually prints* Nothir (!).
669. *Neir*] Weill ner. *fast*] E *om*.

[BOOK VII.]

How Iohn of lorne soucht the gud kyng robert bruce vyth the sleuth-hund.

THE kyng toward *th*e vod is gañe,
Wery for-swat and vill of vayn;
In-till *th*e wod soyn ent*er*it he,
And held doun toward a vale, 4 Bruce finds a stream in a vale.
Quhar throu *th*e vod a vatt*ir* ran.
*Th*idd*ir* in gret hy went he *th*an,
And begouth to rest hym *th*air,
And said he my*ch*t no for*thir*mar. 8 [Fol. 50. C.]
His man said, "s*chir*, *that* may no*ch*t be; He says he can go no further.
Abyde ȝhe heir, ȝe sal soyn se
V hundreth ȝarnand ȝou to sla,
And *th*ai ar fele aganis twa; 12
And sen we may no*ch*t deill wyt*h* my*ch*t, His man cheers him on.
Help vs all *th*at we may vyt*h* slycht."
*Th*e kyng said, "sen *th*at *th*ou will swa,
Ga furth, and I sall vith *th*e ga. 16
Bot I haf herd oftsiß say,
*Th*at quha endlang a vatt*ir* ay

RUBRIC. *From* C. H *has*—How the King scaped fra his faes, And how the sloothhound slaine was.
1. C *has* Y *for* TH.
2. *for-swat*] for-swayt E; for sweit H. *vayn*] wane.
6. *went*] wend.
7. *to*] for to.
8. *forthirmar*] farther fare H.
9. *that*] It.
12. *twa*] ws twa.
14. *Help—all*] We mon helpe H.
17. *oftsiss*] oftymys.

Wald vayd a bow-draucht, he suld ger

He wishes to make the hound lose the scent.

Bath *the* sleuthhund & *the* ledar 20
Tyne *the* sleuth men gert him ta;
Pruf we gif it will now do swa.
For war ȝon deuill*is* hund a-vay,
I roucht no*ch*t of *the* layff, perfay." 24

[Here the slowth-hund tynt his sent.]

He wades down the stream for some distance.

As he deuisit, *th*ai haf doñe,
And ent*er*it in *the* watt*ir* soñe,
And held on endlang it *thar* way,
And syne to *the* land ȝeid *th*ai, 28
And held *th*air way as *th*ai did er*e*.

John of Lorn finds his five men dead.

And Iohñ of lorn, with gret effer*e*,
Com vith his rout richt to *the* place
Quhar *th*at his v men slañ was. 32
He menyt *th*ame quhen he *th*aim saw,
And said eft*ir* a litill thraw,
*Th*at he suld wenge in hy *th*ar blude;
Bot o*thir* wayis *the* ga*m*myn ȝude. 36
*Th*air vald he mak no mair duelling,
Bot furth in hy followit *the* king.
Richt to *the* burn [*th*ai] passit ar;

The hound stops short at the stream.

Bot *the* sleuth-hund maid stynting *th*ar, 40
And vau*er*yt lang tyme to and fra,
*Th*at he na certane gat couth ga.
Till at *the* last *th*an Iohne of lorñ
Persauit *the* hund *the* sleuth had lorñ, 44
And said, "we haf tynt *th*is trauell;

John of Lorn retreats.
[Fol. 50 b. C.]

To pas for*th*ir may nocht avale;
For *the* wode is bath braid and vyde,
And he is weill fer be *th*is tyde. 48

20. *the* (2)] his.
21. *sleuth*] Sent that H.
22. *now do*] *so in* EH; do now C.
24. *roucht*] rek H.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
27. *on*] doun E; downe H. *it*] in H; E *om.*
35. *in hy*] E *om.* *blude*] dead H.
36. *ȝude*] yeed H.
39. [*thai* E] they H; *th*ame C.
41. *vauseryt*] waweryt.
43. *than*] *that.*
47. *braid*] lang H.

*Th*arfor I rede we turn agane,
And vast no mair travale in vayn."
Vith *th*at releyt he his menȝhe,
And his way to *th*e host tuk he. 52

[Or ellis he wes slane with an arrow.]

THus eschapit *th*e nobill kyng;
Bot su*m* men sais, *th*is [eschaping]
Apon añe o*thir* maner fell
*Th*an throu *th*e vading; for *th*ai tell, 56
*Th*at *th*e kyng a gud archer had,
And quhen he saw his lord swa stad,
*Th*at he wes left swa anerly,
He ran on fut alwayis hym by, 60
Till he in-till *th*e wod wes gañe.
*Th*an said he till hym-self allane,
*Th*at he arest rycht *th*air vald ma,
And luk gif he *th*e hund my*ch*t sla. 64
For gif *th*e hund mycht lest on lif,
He vist full weill *th*at *th*ai vald [d]rif
*Th*e kyng*is* traß till *th*ai hym ta;
*Th*an wist he weill *th*ai vald him sla. 68
And for he wald his lord succour,
He put his lif in auentur,
And stud in-till a busk lurkand
Quhill *th*at *th*e hund com at his hand, 72
And vith añe arrow soyn hym slew,
And throu *th*e vod syne hym vithdrew.

Some say that Bruce was saved by an archer,

who lurked in the wood,

and shot the hound with an arrow.

49. *I rede*] is gud E; is good H.
51. *releyt*] relyit.
RUBRIC. *From* E; *the* MS. *has* . . . ell*is*, *which* J. *prints* tells, *but marks it as doubtful.*
53. C *has* Y *for* TH.
54. [*eschaping* E] escaping H; enchaping C; *but cf. last line.*
55. *fell*] C *has* it fell; *but* EH *omit* it.
60. *fut*] sid E; side H.
61. *he*] E *om.* *in-till*] in-to.
64. *And*] To.
65. *on lif*] in lyue.
66. *He—full*] He wyst ry*ch*t wello.
drif] dryve EH; rif C.
67. *till*] till E (*misprinted* that J).
72. *at*] to H; *a word erased here in* E.

At any rate, the king escaped at [Fol. 23. E.] that stream.

Bot quhe*thir* his [eschaping] fell
As I tald first, or now I tell, 76
I wat it weill, without lesyng,
At *th*at burn eschapit *th*e king.

How the thre men that bare the veddir schep thoucht to haf slayn kyng robert bruce.

John of Lorn joins Sir Aymer.

THE king has furth his vayis tañe,
And Iohne of lorne agane is gañe 80
To s*chir* Amer, *th*at fra *th*e chaß
With his men *th*an reparit waß,
*Th*at litill sped in *th*air chassing;
For [t]how *th*at *th*ai maid following 84
Full egirly, *th*ai wan bot small;
*Th*air fayis neir eschapit all.

Sir Thomas Randolph wins [Fol. 51. C.] Bruce's banner.

Men sais, s*chir* thomas ra*n*dale *th*an,
Chassand, *th*e kyng*is* baner van, 88
Quhar-throu in yngland vyt*h* *th*e kyng
He had ry*ch*t gret price and lovyng.
Quhe*n* *th*e chaseris roleit war,
And Iohñe of lorñ had met *th*aim *th*ar, 92
[He] tald s*chir* Amer all *th*e caß,
How *th*at *th*e king eschapit was,
And how *th*at he his v men slew,
And syne he to *th*e vod hym drew. 96

Sir Aymer praises Bruce's valour.

Quhen s*chir* Amer herd *th*is, in hy
He sanyt hym for *th*e ferly,
And said, "he is gretly to priß,
For I knaw nane *th*at liffand is 100

75. *his*] *so in* H; *this* E; *thus* his C. [*eschaping* E] escaping H; enchapin C.
77. *it*] E *om.*
78. *At that*] *That* at *the*.
RUBRIC. *From* C. H *has*—What maner that the thieues three, Made to the King slight lawtie.
79. C *has* Y *for* TH. *has furth*] *so in* E; furth has C; is foorth H.
83. *litill—in*] sped lytill.
84. *For thow*] Thou*ch*t E; And thought H; For how C. *following*] gret folowing.
88. *van*] wan.
90. *lovyng*] lowing.
91. *releit*] relyit.
93. [*He* EH] And C.
96. *he*] E *om.* *vod*] wode.
98. *sanyt*] sained H.

*Th*at at myscheif can help hym swa ;
I trow he suld be hard to sla,
And he war bodyn all evynly ;"
On *th*is viſ spak s*chir* Amery. 104

[Here iij tratowris metis the king with a weddir.]

And *the* gud kyng held furth h*is* way,
He and h*is* man, ay quhill *that th*ai
Passit [owt] throu *the* forest war.
Syne in a mwre *th*ai ent*er*it ar, 108
*Th*at wes bath hee [&] lang & braid ;
And or *th*ai half it passit had,
*Th*ai saw on syde thre men cu*m*and,
Lik to licht men and vauerand. 112
Swerd*is th*ai had and axis als,
And ane of *th*ame apon his hals
A mekill bundyn weddir bare.
*Th*ai met *the* kyng and halsit [him] *th*ar ; 116
And *th*e kyng *th*ame *th*ar halsing ȝald,
And askit *th*ame quhe*thir th*ai vald.
*Th*ai said, "robert *the* bruce *th*ai socht,
To meit vith hym gif *that th*ai mocht ; 120
*Th*air duelling with hym wald *th*ai ma."
The kyng said, "gif *that* ȝhe will swa,
Hald*is* furth ȝour vay with me,
And I sall ger ȝow soyn hym se." 124
*Th*ai persauit be his spekyng,
And his effer, he wes *th*e kyng.
*Th*ai changit contenanſ and late,
And held no*cht* in *the* first stat ; 128 [Fol. 51 b. C.]

The king and his man cross a moor.

They meet three men with swords and axes, one of whom carries a wether.

They seek Robert the Bruce.

Bruce says he will show them where he is.

102. *sla*] ta H.
103. *all*] EH *om.*
RUBRIC. *From* E.
106. E *has*—Betuix him & his man quhill *thai*; *so in* H.
107. [*owt* E] out H; C *om.*
108. *a*] *so in* H; *the* E.
109. *That*] E *has* yt (= *that*), *which* PJ *misprint as* It. [& E] C *om.*
112. *vauerand*] wauerand.
116. *halsit*] halist E; hailsed H. [*him* EH] C *om.* *thar*] faire H.
120. *Th*] *so in* H; For E.
126. *effer*] affeeres H. E *has*—*That* he wes *the* selwyn Robert king.
127. *Thai*] &.
128. *stat*] state E; estate H.

They were foes to Bruce.

For *th*ai var fayis to *th*e kyng,
And thoucht to cu*m* *in*-to scowkyng,
And duell with hym quhill *that* *th*ai saw
*Th*ar tym, and bryng hym *than* of daw. 132
*Th*ai grantit till his spek for-*th*i;
Bot *th*e kyng, *th*at wes vitty,
Persauit weill be *th*air [h]awyng
*Th*at *th*ai lufit hym in na thing. 136

The king makes them walk apart.

He said "fallowis, ȝhe man all thre,
Forth*ir* aquynt quhill *th*at we be,
All be ȝour-self forrouth ga,
And on *th*e sa*m*myn viß we twa 140
Sall fallow ȝow behynd weill neir."
Qu*o*d *th*ai, "schir, it is na mysteir
To trow in-till vs any Ill."
"Nane do I," said he, "bot I will 144
*Th*at ȝhe ga forrow vs, quhill we
Bettir with o*thir* knawyn be."
"We grant," *th*ai said, "sen ȝe will swa;"
And furth apon *th*air gat can ga. 148
*Th*us ȝeid *th*ai till the nycht wes neir,

They come to an empty house, and slay the wether.

And *th*an *th*e formast cu*m*in weir
Till a vast husband*is* houß, & *th*ar
Thai slew the veddir at *th*ai bar, 152
And [strake] fyre for to rost *th*ar met,
And askit *th*e kyng gif he vald et,
And rest hym till *th*e met war dicht?

130. *scowkyng*] sculking E; talking H.
132. *tym*] poynt EH.
135. *kawyng*] hawing E; hauing H; awyng C.
136. *in*] well H; E *om.*
137. *man*] mon E; must H.
139. *self*] selwyn. *forrouth*] furth E; before vs H.
141. *ȝow*] you H; E *om.*
143. *in-till*] into H; in E.
145. *forrow vs*] fourth *th*us. H *has*—Ye ga before vs a litle wie.
149. *Here* H *has the* RUBRIC—The slaying of the thieues three, And how the King his death was nie.
151. *vast*] waist E; waste H. *husbandis*] housband*is* E (*printed* housband PJ); husband H.
152. *veddir*] wethir E; wedder H.
153. [*strake* H] slew CE (*evidently copied from* l. 152). *rost*] make H.

*Th*e kyng, *th*at hu*n*gry wes, I hicht, 156 They offer the king some meat.
Assentit to *th*air speke in hy,
Bot he said, 'he vald anerly
Betuyx hym & his fallow be He has two fires made.
At a fyre, and *th*ai all thre 160
In *th*e End of *th*e houſ, suld ma
Ane o*thir* fyre;' and *th*ai did swa.
*Th*ai drew *th*ame in *th*e houſ end, The three men sit near one fire, and Bruce and his man at the other.
And half *th*e veddir till hym send; 164
And *th*ai rostit in hy *th*air met,
And fell ry*ch*t frakly for till et. [Fol. 52. C.]
*Th*e kyng weill lang he [fastyt] had, [Fol. 23 b. E.]
And had ry*ch*t mekill travale made; 168
*Th*arfor he ete richt egyrly.
And quhen he etyn had hastely, Bruce eats, and feels sleepy.
He had to slepe sa mekill vill,
*Th*at he my*ch*t set na let *th*ar-till. 172
For quhen *th*e vanys fillit ar,
*Th*e body vorthis hevy eu*ir*mar;
And to slepe drawis hevynes.
*Th*e kyng *th*at all for-travalit [wes], 176
Saw *th*at hym vorthit slep neidwais;
Till his fost*ir* bro*thir* he sais,
"May I trast *th*e me to valk, He asks his man to watch.
Till I a litill slepyng tak?" 180
"ȝha, s*chir*," he said, "till I may dre."
*Th*e kyng *th*an vynkit a litill we,

156. *I*] Ik.
159, 160. E *has*—At A fyr & *th*ai all thre On na wyss wit*h* *th*aim till-gyddre be (*which are wrongly transposed*). H *agrees with* C.
161. *suld*] *th*ai suld.
166. *frakly*] freschly.
167. *The*] For *the* EH. *he*] EH *om.* [*fastyt* E] fasted H; fastyn C.
169. *richt*] full.
170. *etyn had*] had etyn.
174. *The body*] *so in* H; Men E.
174. *vorthis*] worthys E; is H.
175. *hevynes*] hewynes E; hevynas C.
176. [*wes* E] was C.
177, 178. *Transposed in* H.
177. Certes, me behooues to sleepe needwayes H.
179. *May*] Say, may H. *the*] in *the* E. *valk*] waik E; wake H.
180. *I*] Ik.
181. *dre*] drey.
182. *we*] wey E; wie H.

He sleeps very lightly.

And slepit no*ch*t [full] ynkurly,
[Bot gliffnyt vp oft] suddandly; 184
For he had drede of *th*ai thre men,
*Th*at at *th*e to*th*ir fyre war *th*en.
*Th*at *th*ai his fayis war he wyst,
*Th*arfor he slepit as foul on twist. 188

[Heire he slew the iij. tratowris.]

*Th*e kyng slepit bot litill *th*an,

His man falls asleep heavily.

Quhen sic a slepe fell on h*is* man,
*Th*at he my*ch*t not hald vp his E,
Bot fell on slepe and routit he. 192
Now is *th*e kyng in gret perell,
For slepe he swa a litill quhile,
He sall be ded forouten dred.

The three traitors attack the king.

For *th*e thre tratour*is* tuk gud hede, 196
*Th*at he on slep wes and his man.
In full gret hy *th*ai raiſ vp *th*an,
And drew *th*air swerd*is* hastely,
And went toward *th*e kyng in hy, 200
Quhen *th*at *th*ai saw he slepit swa,
And slepand thoucht *th*ai vald hym sla.
*Till hym *th*ai ȝeid a full gret paſ,
[Fol. 52 b. C.] *Bot in *th*at tym, throu goddis grace,

The king jumps up, and finds his man asleep.

The kyng blenkit vp hastely,
And saw his man slepand him by, 204
And saw cu*m*and *th*e tratour*is* thre.
Delyu*er*ly on fut gat he,
And drew his suerd out and *th*ame met,

183. [*full* E] right H; bot C (*which reverses the sense*).
184. [*Bot* E] And CH. [*gliffnyt* E] glifned H; gluffnyt C. [*vp oft*] wp oft E; vp oft H; oft vp C.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
189. *bot*] bot a.
190. *a*] E *om.*
192. *on*] in. *routit*] snored H. *he*] hey E; hie H.
201. *he slepit*] him sleip.
201, 202. And sleeping thought him for to sla, And his Foster brother alswa H.
203*, 204*. *Also in* H; *but not in* E.
203. *blenkit vp*] wp blenkit EH. *hastely*] suddenly H.
205. *tratouris*] Traitours H; *tothir* E.
206. *gat*] start H.

And as he ȝeid, his fut he set — 208 *He stirs him up,*
Apon his man weill hevaly;
He valknyt, and raiß all desaly;
For *the* sleip mast*er*it hym swa,
*Th*at, or he gat vp, ane of *th*ai — 212 *but one of the three cuts the man down.*
*Th*at com for to sla *th*e kyng,
Gaf hym a strake in his rysyng,
Swa *th*at he mycht help hym no mair.
*Th*e kyng so stratly stad wes *th*air, — 216
*Th*at he wes neu*er* ȝeit swa stad;
Na war *th*e Armyng *th*at he had,
He had beyn ded foroutyn weyr. — *Bruce fights against all three,*
Bot nocht-for-*th*i on sic maneir — 220
He helpit hym swa i*n* *th*at bargañe,
*Th*at *th*ai thre tratour*is* he has slañe, — *and slays them all.*
Throu goddis grace and his manheid.
His fost*ir* bro*thir* *th*air wes ded. — 224
*Th*an wes he vounder will of vayn,
Quhen he saw he wes left allañe.
His fost*ir* bro*thir* menyt he, — *He bemoans his foster-brother.*
And varyit all *th*e to*thir* thre, — 228
And syne his vay tuk hym allañe,
And richt toward his trist is gañe.

[Here gais the kyng til his triste.]

THE kyng went furth vrath & angry, — *The king repairs to his place of tryst.*
Menand his man full tendirly, — 232
And held his vay all hym allane,
And richt toward *th*e houß is gañe
Quhar he set trist to mete his men.
It wes weill lat of ny*ch*t be *th*en, — 236

210. *valknyt*] waknyt. *all*] E *om.* —He . . . . is *th*e kyng til his *t*riste.
221. *He*] God H. *swa*] E *om.*
225. *vayn*] wayn.
226. *he wes*] him.
228. *varyit*] waryit.
RUBRIC. *From* E. *The* MS. *has*
231. C *has* Y *for* TH. *vrath*] way (*sic*). *vrath & angry*] foorth right wrathfully H.
236. *lat of*] iawyth E; neere the H.

He finds the goodwife.

He com soyn in *the* houß, and fand
The gud vif on *the* bynk sytand.
Scho askit hym soyn quhat he wes,
[Fol. 53, C.] And quhyne he com, and quhar he gais. 240
"A travalland man, dame," said he,
"*Th*at traualys heir throu *the* cuntre."

She says she welcomes all wanderers for the sake of *one*,

Scho said, "all *th*at traualand ere,
For saik of aňe, ar velcom here." 244
The kyng said, "gud dame, quhat is he
*Th*at garris ȝow haue sic specialte
Till men *th*at traualis?" "*schir*, perfay,"
Quod *the* gud wif, "I sall ȝow say; 248

viz. good king Robert,

Gud kyng robert *the* bruce is he,
*Th*at is rycht lord of *th*is cuntre.
His fayis hym hald*is* now in thrang,
Bot I thynk to se or oucht lang 252

who will be king of all the country.

Hym lord and kyng our all *the* land,
*Th*at na fayis sall hym vithstand."
"Dame, luf*is* *th*ou hym sa weill?" said he.
[Fol. 24, E.] "ȝha, *schir*," scho said, "sa god me se." 256
"Dame," said he, "lo! hym here *the* by,

He reveals himself.

For I am he;"—"sa ȝhe suthly?"
"ȝha, certis, dame;"—"and quhar ar gane
ȝour men, quhen ȝe ar *th*us allane?" 260
"At *th*is tyme, dame, I haue no ma."
Scho said, "it may no viß be swa;

She makes her two sons become his liegemen.

I haue twa sonnys wicht and hardy,
*Th*ai sall becum ȝour men in hy." 264
As scho deuisit, *th*ai haue done,
His sworn men becom *th*ai soňe.
The wif gart soyn hym [syt] and et;

238. *bynk*] benk.
239. *Scho*] *That*. *soyn*] E *om*.
240. *quhyne*] quhen E; whence H.
244. *saik of ane*] ane his sak E; anes sake H.
251. *hym*] now. *now*] him.
257. *lo*] E *om*.
258. *sa ȝhe*] I say *the*.
261. *I*] Ik.
263. *I*] Ik.
267. *gart—hym*] syn gert him. [*syt* E] sit H; set C.

Bot he had schort quhil at *the* met 268
Sittyn, quhen he herd gret stampyng
About *the* hous; *th*an, but lettyng,
*Th*ai stert vp, *th*e hous to defend;
Bot soyn eft*ir*, *th*e kyng has kend 272
Iames of douglas; *th*an wes he blith,
And bad oppyn *th*e dures swith;
And *th*ai com in, all at *th*ai ware.
Schir Eduard *th*e bruce wes *th*are, 276
And Iames als of douglas,
*Th*at wes eschapit fra *the* chas,
And vith *th*e kyngis bro*thir* met.
Syne to *th*e trist *that* *th*ame ves set 280 [Fol. 53 b. C.]
*Th*ai sped *th*ame vith *th*air Cu*m*pany,
*Th*at war aňe hundreth and fifty.

They hear a noise of feet.

It is James of Douglas;

also Sir Edward Bruce.

They have 150 men.

[Heire metis he with his menȝe.]

And quhen at *th*ai has seyn *th*e kyng,
*Th*ai war Ioyfull of *th*air metyng, 284
And askit how he eschapit was,
And he [*th*aim] tald all haill *th*e caſ,
How *th*e v men hym presit fast,
And how [he] throu *th*e vattir past, 288
And how he met *th*e thevis thre,
And [how] he slepand slayn suld be,
Quhen he valknyt throu goddis grace;
And how his fostyr bro*thir* [was] 292
[Slayne], he tald *th*ame halely.
*Th*an lovyt *th*ai god all comonly,
*Th*at *th*air lord wes eschapit swa.

He tells them how he escaped,

and how his foster-brother was slain.

268. *had*] has.
271. *to*] for to.
272. *Bot*] *Th*at.
275. *thai* (2)] they H; *th*ar E.
276. *the bruce*] his brother H.
277. *als*] alsua.
282. *fifty*] weile fyfty.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
285. *he*] *that* he.
286. [*thaim* E] them H; hym C.
288. [*he* EH] ye C.
290. [*how* EH] C *om.*
291. *valknyt*] waknyt.
292. [*was* EH] ded wes C.
293. [*Slayne* E] Slaine H; *Th*us all C. *halely*] all haly.
294. *lovyt*] lowyt. *all*] E *om.* *all comonly*] almightie H.

*Th*an spak *th*ai vordis to and fra, 296
Till at *th*e last *th*e kyng can say,
The king harangues them, "Fortoun has traualit [vs] *th*is day,
*Th*at scalit vs so suddandly.
Our fayis *th*is ny*ch*t sall trastly ly; 300
*For *th*ai trow we so scalit ar,
*And fled to-vauerand her and *th*ar,
**Th*at we sall nocht *th*ir dayis thre
*All to-gidd*ir* assemblit be. 304*
**Th*arfor *th*is ny*ch*t *th*ai sall trastly,
But vachis, tak *th*air eiß and ly.
and proposes to surprise the enemy. Quharfor, quha knew *th*air herbery,
And vald cum on *th*ame suddanly,
Vith few [menȝe] my*ch*t soyn *th*ame scath, 304
And ȝhet eschape vithouten vath."
"Perfay," q*uod* Iames of douglas,
"As I com hiddirward, per-caß
James of Douglas knows where to find them. I com so neir *th*air herbery, 308
*Th*at I can bryng ȝow quhar *th*ai ly.
And vald ȝhe speid ȝow, ȝeit or day
It may sa happyn *th*at ȝhe may
Do *th*ame a gretar scath weill soyñ, 312
[Fol. 54. C.] *Th*an *th*ai vs all *th*e day has doñe;
For *th*ai ly scalit as *th*ame lest."
*Th*an *th*ocht *th*ai all it ves *th*e best
To speid *th*ame to *th*aim hastely; 316
They force a march, and surprise the foe And *th*ai did swa in full gret hy,
And com on *th*ame in *th*e dawyng,

298. *has*] hes H; ws E. [*vs*] vs fast H; *th*us C; fast E (*but note that* E *already has* ws *for* has).
300. *this*] to. *trastly ly*] ly traistly.
301*—305*. *Also in* H; *but not in* E. *scalit*] skailled H.
302*. *to-vauerand*] to warrand H.
304. [*menȝe*] Menyie men H; mengȝe men (*where* men *is wrongly added*) E; men C. *soyn*] EH *om.*
305. *ȝhet*] E *om.* *vath*] waith EH.
306. RUBRIC *in* H—Here tranoynted the Noble King, And to his faes made an affraying.
307. C *wrongly has* yiddirward.
311. *sa*] well H. *ȝhe*] we EH.
313. *the*] E *om.*
315. *thai*] *th*aim.

Richt as *th*e day begouth to spryng. — at daybreak.

[Heyre the kyng with his menȝe cumis hastely apon thar enimyis & slew mony.]

So fell it *th*at A cumpany 320
Had in a touñe tañé *th*air herbry,
Weill fra *th*e host A myle or mair; — Two thousand of them were apart from the rest.
Men said *th*at *th*ai twa thousand war.
*Th*ar assemblit *th*e nobill kyng, 324
And soyn eftir *th*air assemblyng,
*Th*ai *th*at slepand assalȝeit war
Rycht hydvisly can cry and rar.
And o*thir* sum, *th*at herd *th*e cry, 328 — They are surprised and put to the sword.
Ran furth rycht swa effraytly,
*Th*at sum of *th*ame all nakyt war,
Fleand to-vau*er*and heir and *th*air;
And sum [*th*air] armys [with *th*aim] drew: 332
And *th*ai vithout mercy *th*ame slew,
And swa cruell vengeans can ta,
*Th*at *th*e twa part of *th*ame and ma
War slayn rycht in *th*at ilk sted; 336
Till *th*ar host *th*e remanand fled. — A few escape, and join the main army.
*Th*e host, *th*at herd *th*e noyis and cry,
And saw *th*air men sa vrechidly
Cum nakit fleand heir and *th*air, 340
Sum haill, and sum voundit sair,
In-to full gret affray *th*ai raiß,
And ilk man to his baner gais,

RUBRIC. *From* E.

323. *twa thousand*] twa hunder H; ij .C. E. *But see* ll. 282, 304.

329. *Ran furth*] Rass sa. *swa*] E *om.* H *has*—Ran foorth sa right effrayedly.

330. *all*] E *om.*

331. *to-vauerand*] to warand E; to warrand H. *See* l. 302*.

332. [*thair*] their H; his CE. *armys*] harnesse H. [*with thairn*] with him E; to them H; hym vith (*altered to* vith hym) C. Mr Innes *reads*—thar armis till tham.

333. *vithout*] for-owtyn.

334. *cruell*] ewyll.

335. *part*] *partis.*

336. *rycht—ilk*] into that samine H.

337. *host*] oist.

338. *host*] oyst.

340. *Cum*] Sum E; Come H.

341. *haill*] all hale. *and*] E *om.*

Swa *th*at *th*e host wes all on steir. 344

Bruce and his men retreat.

*Th*e kyng and *th*ai *th*at vith hym veir,
Quhen *th*ai on steir *th*e host saw swa,
Toward *th*air varrand can *th*ai ga,
And *th*arin swith cu*m*myn ar *th*ai. 348

[Fol. 54 b. E.] And quhen s*chir* amery herd say,
How *th*at *th*e kyng *th*ar men had slayn,

[Fol. 54 b. C.] And how *th*ai turnit var agañe,

Sir Aymer praises the Bruce's hardihood.

He said, "now may we cleirly se, 352
*Th*at nobill hert, quhar-eu*ir* it be,
Is hard till ourcu*m* throu mastry;
For quhar a hert is rycht vorthy,
Agane stoutnes [It] is ay stout; 356
And, as I trow, *th*air may na dowt
Ger it all out discumfit be,
Quhill body liffand is all fre;
[As] be *th*is melle may be seyñ. 360

"We thought Bruce was beaten,

We vend robert *th*e bruce had beyñ
Swa discu*m*fit *th*at, be gud skill,
He suld nou*thir* haff hert no will
Swilk Iuperdy till vnd*ir*ta; 364
For he ves put at vnd*ir* swa,
*Th*at he ves left all hym allañe,
And all his folk var fra hym gañe.
And he ves sa fortravalit 368
To put of *th*ame *th*at hym assalit,

and wanted rest more than fighting."

*Th*at he suld haf ȝharnit restyng
Mair *th*an fechtyng or travalyng.

345. *veir*] wer.
346. *thai*] E *om.*
347. *varrand*] warand.
348. And *thar* in sawete com *th*ai E; And there in sauitie came thay H.
349. *amery*] Aymer EH.
354. *Is*] It is.
355. *a*] ane.
356. [*It* E] it H; C *om.*
357. *And*] Na.
359. *liffand*] lewand. *all*] and. *all fre*] in poustie H.
360. [*As* EH] And C.
361. *vend*] wend.
363. *no*] ne.
365. *ves put*] put was.
368. *ves sa*] sagat E; was sa H. *fortravalit*] saire trauelled H.
369. *of thame*] *th*aim off EH.
371. *So in* H. *Th*is nycht atour all o*thir* thing E.

Bot his hert fillit [Is] of bownte, 372
Swa *th*at it vencust may nocht be."

[Heire schir emery passis til carlile.]

On *th*is viß spak schir Amery,
And quhen *th*ai of h*is* cu*m*pany
Saw how *th*ai traualit had in vane, 376 **Sir Aymer's men advise retreat.**
And how *th*e kyng *th*ar men had slañe,
*Th*at at his largeß wes all fre,
*Th*ame thoucht it ves a nyßte
For to mak *th*air lang[er] duellyng, 380
Sen *th*ai my*ch*t no*ch*t anoy *th*e kyng,
And said *th*at to *schir* Amery;
*Th*at vmbethoucht hym hastely
*Th*at he to carleill *th*an vald ga, 384 **He retreats to Carlisle.**
And a quhill *th*ar-in soiorn ma,
And haf his spyis on *th*e kyng,
[To] knaw alwais his contenyng.
For quhen *th*at he his poynt my*ch*t se, 388
He thoucht *th*at vith a gret menȝhe
He suld schute on hym sodanly;
*Th*arfor with all his Cu*m*pany **[Fol. 55. C.]**
Till yngland he *th*e vay has tañe, 392
And ilk ma*n* till h*is* houß is gañe.
In hy to carleill went is he,
And *th*ar-in thynk*is* for to be
Till he his poynt saw of *th*e kyng, 396 **He determines to watch Bruce's movements.**
*Th*at *th*an with all his gade*r*yng
Wes in carrik, quhar vmbestount
He vald vend vith h*is* men till hount.

372. [*Is* E] is H; ves C.
373. *vencust*] wencusyt.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
378. And *th*at his wes gane al fre E.
379. *nysste*] nycete.
380. *langer* E] lang C.
384. *than*] E *om.*
387. [*To* EH] And C.
388. *For*] And.
390. *on*] apon.
394, 395. *to*] till.
398. *vmbestount*] he wes wont EH.
399. *He*] *so in* E; J *misprints* And. *vald vend*] wald went. *hount*] hunt EH.

[Here the kyng metis iij. tratowris.]

Swa hapnyt it *th*at on a day, 400
He vent till hwnt, for till assay
Quhat ga*m*myn wes in *th*at cuntre;

The king goes alone to hunt, with two hounds.

And sa hapnyt [*tha*t] day *th*at he
By a vode-syde to sett is gañe, 404
Vith his twa hund*is* hym allañe;
Bot he his sverd ay vith hym bare.
He had bot schort quhill syttyn *th*are,
Quhen he saw fra *th*e vode cu*m*and 408

He sees three men with bows.

Thre men vith bowis in *th*ar hand,
*Th*at toward hym com spedely,
And he persauit *th*at in hy,
Be *th*air effeir and *th*air havyng, 412
*Th*at *th*ai lufit hym na kyn thyng.
He raiß & his leysch*e* till him drew he,
And leit his hound*is* gang all fre.
God help *th*e kyng now for his my*ch*t! 416
For, bot he now be viß and vicht,
He sall be set in mekill preß.
For *th*ai thre men, vithouten leß,

They are his deadly foes,

War his fayis all vtrely, 420
And had vachit so besaly,

and had watched him.

To se quhen thai vengeans my*ch*t tak
Of the kyng for Iohñe cwmynys sak,
*Th*at *th*ai thoucht *th*an *th*ai laser had; 424
And sen he hym allane wes stad,
In hy *th*ai thoucht *th*ai suld him sla,

RUBRIC. *From* E. H *has*—How the King and his Hounds twa, Three men in the Wood can sla.

400. *hapnyt it*] hapynnyt. *that on*] vpon H.

403. [*that* EH] a C.

404. *sett*] a seate H; hunt (*added in a left space*) E.

411. *persauit that*] perceiued them H; *that* persaywyt E.

414. *leysche*] leysch*e* *or* leysch*is* C: leysche E; Leesh H.

419. *vithouten*] for-owtyn. *less*] *so in* E; lies H.

421. *had vachit*] wachyt him E; waited him H. *so*] ay H.

423. *cwmynys*] comy*n* his.

424. *thai* (1)] *so in* E; they H; C *seems to have thaim*; *cf.* l. 430. *laser*] layser E; leasure H.

And gif *th*at *th*ai mycht chevi*ß* swa,
Fra *th*at *th*ai *th*e kyng had slayn, 428 They hoped to kill him and then flee.
*Th*at *th*ai my*ch*t vyn *th*e vode agayn,
His men, *th*ai thoucht, *th*ai suld no*ch*t dreid.
In hy towart *th*e kyng *th*ai ȝeid,
And bend *th*air bowis quhen *th*ai var neir; 432 [Fol. 55 b. C.]
And he, *th*at dred in gret maneir
*Th*air arowis, for he nakit was,
In hy añe spekyng to *th*ame mais,
And said, "ȝhe aucht to shame, perde, 436 He tells them they ought to be ashamed of using bows.
Syn I am añe and ȝhe ar thre,
For to schut at me on Fer!
Bot haf ȝhe hardyment, cum ner
Vith ȝour swerd*is*, me till assay; 440
Wyn me on sic vi*ß*, gif ȝhe may;
ȝhe sall weill mair all prisit be."
"Perfay," q*uod* añe *th*an of *th*e thre, [Fol. 26. E.]
"Sall no man say we drede *th*e swa, 444
*Th*at we vith Arrowis sall *th*e sla."
With *th*at *th*air bowis avay *th*ai kest, They attack him with swords.
And com on [fast] but langar frest.
*Th*e kyng *th*ame met full hardely, 448
And smat *th*e first so Rigorusly,
*Th*at he fell ded doun on *th*e greyñ.
And quhen *th*e kyng*is* hound*e* has seyñ One of the hounds helps the king.
*Th*ai men assale his mastir swa, 452
He lap till añe and can hym ta

427. *chevis*] chewyss.
428, 429. *Transposed in* H.
430. *thai*] *th*aim.
432. *bend*] bent.
433. *in*] on.
435. *ane*] A. *mais*] mas.
436. *ȝhe*] ȝow.
437. *I*] Ik.
438. *on*] apon.
439. *haf*] had. *cum*] to cu*m*.
440. *Vith*] And *with*. *me*] E *om*.
441. *on*] apon.
442. *mair all*] owte mar.
447. [*fast* EH] *th*an C. *frest*] lest (*with* frest *in margin*) C; frest E; frist H. *Cf.* l. 547.
449. *Rigorusly*] rigorously H; wygorusly E.
451. *hounde*] hound*e or* hound*is* C; hund E; Hounds H.
452. *his*] their H. *Throughout this passage* H *has the plural, with reference to* both hounds, *but* CE *have the singular, and tell the story of* only one of the hounds.

Richt be *the* nek full felonly,
Till top our taill he gert hym ly.

The king and the hound slay two of them.

And *the* kyng, *that* h*is* sverd vp had, 456
Saw he so fair succour hym maid,
Or he *that* [fallyn] wes mycht ryß,
Had hym assalȝeit on sic wiß
That he *the* bak strak evyn in twa. 460

The third flees.

The thrid *that* saw his fallowis swa
Forouten recou*er*yng be slayñe,
Tuk till *the* vod his vay agañe.
Bot *the* kyng followit spedely; 464
And als *the* hound *that* wes hym by,

The hound catches him,

Quhen he *the* man saw gang hym fra,
Schot till hym soyn, & can hym ta
Richt be *the* nek, and till hym dreuch; 468

and the king kills him.

And *the* kyng *that* ves neir eneuch,
In his risyng sic rowt hym gaf,
That stane-ded till *the* erd he draf.

[Fol. 56. C.]

The kyng*is* menȝe *that* war neir, 472
Quhen at *that* saw on sic maneir
The kyng assalit sa suddandly,
That sped *that*ame toward hym in hy,
And askit how *that* caß befell. 476

The king tells his men all about it.

And he all haly can *thaim* tell,
How *that* assalȝeit hym all thre.
"Perfay," q*uod that*, "we may weill se
That it is hard till vnd*ir*tak 480
Sic mellyng vith ȝow for to mak,
That so smertly has slayn *th*ir thre
Forouten hurt:"—"perfay," said he,

454. *felonly*] sturdyly.
456. *vp*] out.
457. *he—hym*] the Hounds sik succours H.
458. [*fallyn* E] fallen H; fallit C. *wes*] had H.
459. *Had*] He H; *That* E (*printed* He PJ).
466. *gang*] fle.
471. *stane*] starke H. *erd*] eird H; E *actually has* end, *which is printed* erd P; eird J. *he*] *so in* E; him H.
472. *menȝe—war*] men war than.
481. *for*] E *om.*

" I slew bot añe forouten ma, 484 "God and my hound killed two of them."
God and my hound has slañe *th*e twa.
*Th*air tresoune cu*m*rit *th*a*m*̃e perfay,
For richt vicht men all thre var *th*ai."

[Heire schir emery settis the kyng in gret Iuperty.]

Q when [*that*] *th*e kyng throu godd*is* grace 488
On *th*is maner eschapit was,
He blew his horne, and *th*an in hy
His gud men till hym can rely ;
*Th*an hamvard*is* buskit he to fair, 492
For *th*at day vald he hunt no mair. The king hunts no more that day.
In glentrwell all a quhile he lay, He abides in Glentruel.
And went weill oft to hunt & play,
For to purchase *th*ame venysouñ, 496
For *th*an *th*e deir war in sesouñ.
In all *th*at tyme schir Amery, Sir Aymer, at Carlisle, hears
With nobill men In Cumpany, that Bruce is in Glentruel.
In carleill lay, his poynt to se ; 500
And quhen he herd *th*e certante
*Th*at in glentrwell wes *th*e king,
And went to hunt and to playing,
He thoucht *th*an with his cheuelry 504
To cum apon hym suddanly,
Fra carleill all on nycht*is* ryde,
And in covert on dayis byde,
And swagat vith sic tranonting 508 He hopes to surprise him.
He thoucht he suld supprij *th*e kyng.
*Th*an he assemblit a gret menȝhe

484, 485. God and my hund has slayn *the* twa, *The* thrid eschapyt nocht alsua E. H *like* C, *but with* Hounds *for* hound.

RUBRIC. *From* E ; *written*—heire *schir* emery settis *the* kyng in *gret* Iuperty.

488. [*that* EH] C *om.*

494. *glentrwell all*] glentruell all *or* glentruewall E ; Glentrolle H.

497. *the*] E *om.*

500. *In—lay*] Lay in carlele.

502. *glentrwell*] gentrewle E ; Glentrolle H.

503. *to*] till (*twice*).

504. *than*] E *om.*

506. *Fra*] And fra. *all*] E *om.*

510. *Than*] E *om.*

Of folk of full gret renowne,
[Fol. 56 b. C.] Bath of scottis and ynglißˇ men. 512
*Th*air vay all sa*m*myn held *th*ai *th*en,
And raid on nychtis so preualy,
The English come to Glentruel. Till *th*ai com to *th*e wode neir by
Glentrwell, quhar lugit wes the kyng, 516
*Th*at vist richt nocht of *th*air cu*m*myng.
In-to gret perell now is he,
For, bot god throu his gret powste
Saif hym, he sall be tañe or slañe ; 520
For *th*ai war sex quhar he wes ane.

How schir amer valla[n]ce [sent] the voman to spy king robert in glentrwell.

Sir Aymer arrives within a mile of Bruce. Q when *schir* Amer, as I herd tald,
With his men *th*at ves stout & bald,
Wes cum so neir *th*e king *th*at *th*ai 524
Var bot A myle fra hym avay,
He tuk avisment vith his men,
On quhat maner *th*ai suld do *th*en.
For he said *th*ame, *th*at *th*e king wes 528
Lugit in-to so strate a place,
*Th*at horßˇ-men my*ch*t hym nocht assale ;
[And] gif fut-men gaf hym battale,
He suld be hard to vyn, gif he 532
Of *th*air cu*m*myng ma varnit be :
Sir Aymer sends a woman to spy Bruce's position. " *Th*arfor I rede, all preualy
We send a voman hym to spy,
*Th*at pou*er*ly arayit be ; 536

511. *gret*] gud. *renowne*] Renounie H ; renomme E.
514. *nychtis*] nycht.
515. *to the*] in A.
516. *Glentrwell*] Glentruele E ; Glentrolle H.
519. *god*] E *om*.
520. *tane or slane*] slayn or tane.
RUBRIC. *From* C. H *has*—How the King with a few Menyie, Discomfite Sir Aymer in Glentrolle.
522. *Amer*] Amery. *I*] Ik.
523. *ves*] war.
524. *cum*] cummyn.
530. *hym nocht*] nocht him.
531. [*And* EH] Bot C.
533. *varnit*] wytteryt.
535. *In margin of* E—mulier.

Scho may ask met per cherite ; [Fol. 25 b. E.]
And se *th*air cowyne halely,
And on quhat maner at *th*ai ly,
*Th*e quhilis we and our me*n*ȝhe 540 Sir Aymer proposes to follow her on foot with his men.
Cu*m*and throu-out *th*e vod may be
On fut, arayit as we ar.
May we do swa, *th*at we cum *th*ar
On *th*aim or *th*ai vit our cu*m*myng, 544
We sall fynd in *th*ame no stynting."
*Th*is consall thoucht *th*aim wes *th*e best,
*Th*an send *th*ai furth, but langar frest,
*Th*e voma*n* *th*at suld be *th*ar spy, 548
And scho hir way can hald in hy
Richt to *th*e [log*is*], quhar *th*e kyng, The spy comes to Bruce.
*Th*at had no droid of supp*r*ising,
ȝeid vnarmyt, mery and blith. 552
*Th*e voma*n* has he seyn alswith, [Fol. 87. C.]
He saw hir vncouth, and for-*th*i
He beheld hir mayr ynkirly,
And by hir counte*n*ans hym thoucht, 556
*Th*at for gud cu*m*my*n* wes scho nocht. Bruce suspects her.
*Th*an gert he men in hy hir ta ;
And scho, *th*at dred men suld hir sla,
Tald *th*ame how *th*at schir Amery, 560 He makes her confess the truth.
Vith *th*e cliffurd in Cumpany,
And *th*e flour of northu*m*birland,
War [cu*m*mand] on *th*ame at *th*ar hand.

538. *cowyne*] conwyn.
539. *on*] apon. *at*] E *om.*
540. *quhilis*] quhil*is* E ; *printed* quhil J ; quhill P.
541. *throu-out*] owt throw.
542. *arayit*] all armyt.
544. *vit*] wyt.
545. *stynting*] *so in* H ; stinting *or* sturting *in* E ; *I read it* stinting ; PJ *have* sturting.
546. *the*] to.
550. [*logis* E] luge C ; Ludging H.
551. H *adds*—For in Glentrolle was the King That was neere brought to supprising.
552. *vnarmyt*] *miswritten* vnharmyt C ; wnarmyt E ; vnarmed H.
555. *ynkirly*] encrely E ; tentiuely H.
560. *thame*] E *om.*
562. *And*] With.
563. [*cummand* E] comming H ; cu*m*myn C.

Quhen at *the* king herd *that* tithing, 564
He Armyt hym but mair duelling;
Sa did *thai* all *that* eu*ir* *thar* war,
Syne in a sop assemblit ar,
I trow *thai* war thre hundreth ner. 568
And quhen *thai* all assemblit wer,
The king his baner gert display,
And set his men in gude aray.
Thai had nocht stand[yn] bot a thraw, 572
Richt at *thair* hand quhen at *thai* saw
Thair fayis throu *the* wod cu*m*and,
Armyt on fut, vith sper i*n* hand,
That sped *thame* full enforsaly. 576
The noyis begouth soyne and *the* cry;
For *the* gud king, *that* formast was,
Stoutly towart his fayis gais,
And hint out of a ma*n*is hand, 580
That neir besyde him wes gangand,
A bow and a braid arrow als,
And hyt *the* formast in *the* hals,
Till throppill and vassand ȝeid i*n* twa; 584
And he douñe to *the* erd can ga.

The king collects 300 men.

They see the English approaching.

The king slays the foremost man with an arrow.

[**Heir wes xv hundir discumfet with few scottis.**]

The laiff with *that* maid a stopping;
Than, but mair baid, *the* nobill king
Hynt fra his baneour *the* banar, 588
And said, "apon *thame*! for *thai* ar
Discomfit all!" and vith *that* vord
He swappit swiftly out his sword,
And on *thame* ran so hardely, 592

The king heads a charge.

566. *thar war*] wes *thar*. H *has*—Sa did they all that with him were.
572. *Thai—standyn*] Bot *thai* had standyn E; Bot they standen had H.
579. *Stoutly*] Sutelly.
581. *him wes*] *so in* E; him was H; wes him C.
582. *a—arrow*] ane arow braid.
584. *vassand*] wesand E; wessand H.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
588. *the*] his.
590. *and*] E *om.*

*Th*at all *th*ai of his Cu*m*pany
Tuk hardyme*n*t of his gude dede. [Fol. 57 b. C.]
For sum, *th*at first *th*ar wayis ȝede,
Agai*n* com to *th*e ficht in hy, 596 His men follow boldly.
And met *th*air fayis so rygorusly,
*Th*at all *th*e formast ruschit war.
And quhe*n* *th*ai *th*at war [hend*ir*mar]
Saw *th*at *th*e formast left *th*e stede, 600
*Th*ai turnit soyn *th*e bak and fled, The English flee in haste.
And of *th*e wod *th*ai *th*ame vith-drew,
*Th*e king a few men of *th*ame slew,
For *th*ai richt soyn *th*air gat can ga; 604
It discumfit *th*ame all swa
*Th*at *th*e king with his menȝe was
All armyt to defend *th*at plaß,
*Th*at *th*ai wend throu *th*ar tranonting 608
Till haue wo*n*nyn for-out fichting,
*Th*at *th*ai effrayit war suddanly;
And he *th*ame soucht so angyrly,
*Th*at *th*ai in full gret hy agane 612
Out of *th*e woud ran to *th*e plane.
For *th*ai falȝeit of *th*air entent,
*Th*ai war *th*at tym sa fowly schent,
*Th*at xv hundreth men & ma 616 Thus 1500 men were beaten by 300.
Wyt*h* fewar war rebutit swa,
*Th*at *th*ai vith-drew *th*aim schamfully.
*Th*arfor emang *th*ame sudanly
*Th*air raiß debate and gret distans 620
Ilkane vith o*thir* of *th*ar myschans;
Clyffurd and wauß maid a melle, Clifford and Vaux quarrel.

595. *first*] fryst.
597. *so*] H *om.* *rygorusly*] wigorusly E; vigorously H.
599. [*hendirmar* E] ennyrmar C; backermaire H.
602. *of*] owt of. *thai*] E *om.*
605. *discumfit*] discomfortyt.
609. *for-out*] for-owty*n*.
614. *thai*] *th*aim.
617. *fewar*] a few mengne.
621. *vith*] wytt E; with H.
622. *wauss*] Vanis H.

Clifford strikes Vaux.

Quhar cliffurd raucht him a cole,
And a*thir* syne drew to p*ar*tis. 624

Sir Aymer parts them,

Bot *schir* Amer, *th*at wes viß,
Departit *th*ame with mekill pañe,
And went [till] yngland hame agane.
He wist, fra stryff raiß *th*ame amang, 628
He suld *th*ame no*ch*t hald sa*m*myn lang
For-outen debat or melle;

and returns to England.

*Th*arfor till Ingland turnit he
With mair schaym tha*n* he com of touñe; 632
Quhen sa mony of sic renoun
[Saw] sa few [men bid] *th*ai*m* battale,
[Fol. 26. E.] Quhar *th*ai ne var hardy to assale.

623. *raucht—cole*] roucht no*ch*t hi*m* to lee E; raught him routes three H.

627. [*till* E] to H; in C. *Cf.* l. 631.

632. *com*] went EH.

634. [*Saw* EH] Quhen C. [*men* EH] C *om.* [*bid* E] byde H; baid C.

635. *ne—hardy*] right hardy were H. *to*] till E.

[BOOK VIII.]

[Book VI. Jam.]

[Fol. 56. C.]

Bruce descends from the hills.

THE king, fra *schir* Amer wes gane,
Gad*e*rit h*is* men3e eu*i*rilkane,
And left bath wodd*is* and mo*n*tanis,
And held his vay straucht to *th*e planys ; 4
For he vald fayn *th*at end var maid
Of *th*at at he begonny*n* had,
And he wist weill he my*ch*t no*ch*t bring
It to gud end but traualyng. 8

He first goes to Kyle;

To kyle first went he, & *th*at land
He maid till him all obeysand ;
*Th*e men mast fors com till his peſ.
Syne eft*ir*ward, or he wald ceſ, 12

next he gains over the men of Cunningham.

Of cwny*n*game *th*e mast party
He gert held*e* till his sen3ory.
In bothwell *th*an schir Amer was,

Sir Aymer is angry.

*Th*at in his hert gret angyr has. 16
For *th*ai of cwny*n*game and kyle,
*Th*at war obeysand till hym quhile,
Left *th*e ynglis menis fewte.
Tharof fayn wengit vald he be ; 20

1. H *has the* RUBRIC—How Iames of Dowglas discomfite than, At Ederfoord Philip Mowbray with mony man. C *has* Y *for initial* TH.
4. *straucht to*] strak till. *his—to*] the straight way to H.
6. *at*] *that*.
9. *first—he*] went he fryst.
10. *till—all*] all till him.
11, 12. H *omits*. *mast*] maist.
13. *cwnyngame*] conyngayme E ; Cuninghame H.
17. *thai*] *th*aim. *cwnyngame*] Cuny*n*game.
19. *Left the*] And had left H. *the*] E *om*.

Sir Aymer sends Philip de Mowbray to Kyle.

And send *schir* philip *the* mowbray,
With A thousand, as I herd say,
Of men *th*at war *in* his leding,
To kyle, to varray *the* nobill kyng. 24

James of Douglas is aware of it.

Bot Iames of douglas, *th*at al tyde
Had spyis out on Ilka syde,
Wist of *th*ar cu*m*my*n*g, & *th*at *th*ai
Vald hald doune [makyrnok*is*] vay. 28

He tuk with hym all preuely
*Th*ame *th*at war of his cu*m*pany,

With 60 men he goes to Ederford, beside Makyrnok water (near Kilmarnock).

*Th*at war sexty vithouten ma;
Syne till a strate place ca*n* he ga, 32
*Th*at is in [makyrnok*is*] vay,
*Th*e edry-furd it hat perfay;
It lyis betuix marraß twa,
Quhar *th*at na hors on lif ma ga. 36

There is a pass on the north, and a bad place on the south.

On *th*e south half, quhar Iames was,
[Is] añe vpgang, añe narrow plas,
And on *th*e north half is *th*e vay
Sa Ill, as it apperis to-day. 40

[Fol. 58 b. C.]

Douglaß, vith *th*amē he vith hym had,
Enbuschit hym, and *th*ame abaid.
He my*ch*t weill fer se *th*air cu*m*myng;
Bot *th*ai mycht se of hym na thing. 44

Douglas sets an ambush.

*Th*ai maid enbuschem*e*nt all *th*e ny*ch*t,
And, quhen *th*e sone wes schynand bry*ch*t,
*Th*ai saw in battale cum Arayit

21. *schir*] E *om.*
22. *I*] Ik.
23. *Of—that*] That armed H.
24. *to*] for to. *varray*] werray. *nobill*] E *om.*
28. [*makyrnokis* E] Makyrnoks H; machyrn-noxis C.
31. *sexty*] sixtie H; xlti E.
32. *ga*] *so in* EH; *miswritten* gay *in* C.
33. [*makyrnokis* E] Makyrnoks H; marchyrn-noxis C.
34. *edry-furd*] Nether foord H (*but see rubric above*); net*h*ir-ford E.
35. *marrass*] marraiss E; Marraises H; (marrass = marrasis).
38. [*Is* EH] In C. *plas*] pass E; place H.
45. *maid enbuschement*] baid inbuschement (*sic*) E; bade in bushment H.
47. *battale*] battaillyng.

*Th*e vaward with baner displayit,
And syne soyn *th*e remanand
*Th*ai saw weill neir behynd cu*m*and.
*Th*an held *th*ai *th*aim still and prewe,
Till *th*e formast of *th*air men*z*he
War ente*r*it in *th*e furde *th*ame by;
*Th*an schot *th*ai on *th*ame vy*th* a cry,
And vith vapnys *th*at scharply schare
Sum in *th*e furde *th*ai bakward bare,
And sum vith arrowes barblyt braid
Sa gret m*ar*tirdome on *th*ame maid,
*Th*at *th*ai [gan draw to woyd *th*e place];
Bot behinde *th*ame so stoppit vas
*Th*e vay, *th*at *th*ai fast my*ch*t no*ch*t fle,
And *th*at gert of *th*aim mony de.
For *th*ai on na syde my*ch*t avay
Bot as *th*ai com, Bot gif at *th*ai
Vald throu *th*air fayis hald *th*ar gat;
Bot *th*at vay thoucht *th*ame all to hat.
*Th*air fayis met *th*ame so sturdely,
And *co*ntinit *th*e ficht [so] hardely,
*Th*at *th*ai so dredand war at *th*ai,
Quha first my*ch*t fle, first fled avay.
And quhen *th*e reirward saw *th*aim swa
Discumfit, and *th*air vayis ga,
*Th*ai fled on fer, and held *th*air vay.
Bot schir philip the mowbray,
*Th*at vith the formast rydand ves,

Douglas suddenly attacks the English.

The English retreat,

but can hardly accomplish it.

The rout is total.

Sir Philip de Mowbray

48. *vaward*] waward E; Vangard H. *with*] with *the* C; *but* E *omits* the.
52. *thair*] *that* E; their H.
57. *arrowes*] *so in* H; armys E. *barblyt*] were bleeded H.
58. *maid*] has maid. H *has*—Sik martyrdome on them they made.
59. [*gan—place* E] can thraw to voyde the place H; thoucht throu *the* vode to pass C.
62. *of—mony*] mony off *th*aim.
63. *on*] H *om.* *syde*] wyss. *avay*] get away H.
65. *thar*] *the*.
68. *continit*] *con*tenyt E; continued H. [*so*] sa E; CH *om.*
70. *Quha*] *Th*at EH.
71. *quhen*] when H; E *om.* *reirward*] Reeregard H.

*Th*at enter*i*t war in-to *th*e plaß, 76
Quhan *tha*t he saw how he ves stad,
Throu *th*e gret vorschip *th*at he had,
With spurys he strak *th*e steid of priß,

charges through the Scotch, [Fol. 59. C.]

And, magre all his enymyß, 80
Throu *th*e thikkest of *th*ame he raid,
And but challanß eschapit had,
Ne war añe hynt hym by *th*e brand;
Bot *th*e gud steid, *th*at vald no*ch*t stand, 84
He lansit furth deliu*er*ly;

loses his sword and belt,

Bot *th*e to*thir* sa stalwardly
Held, *th*at *th*e belt brist of *th*e brand,
*Th*at swerd and belt left in h*is* hand; 88
And he, but swerd, his vayis raid
Weill otow *th*ame, and *th*air abaid,
Behaldand how his menȝe fled,
And how his fais clengit *th*e sted 92
*Th*at war betuix him & h*is* men;

but gets away, past Kilmarnock, Kilwinning, Ardrossan, and [Fol. 26 b. E.] Largs, to Innerkip castle.

*Th*arfor *th*e vayis tuk he *th*en
Till kylmerno[k] and killwy*n*nyn,
And till ardrossan eft*ir* syne, 96
Syne throu *th*e largyß him allañe
Till Enn*ir*kyp *th*e vay has tañe,
Richt till *th*e castell *th*at ves *th*en

The English receive him,

Stuffit all with ynglißmen, 100
*Th*at hym resauit in gret dante;
And, fra *th*ai wist how-gat *th*at he
So fer had ryddyn hym allañe
Throu *th*ame *th*at war his fais ilkañe, 104

76. *war*] wes E; was H. *in-to*] in.
82. *challanss*] challance E; taking H.
83. *ane hynt*] *so in* H; a kny*ch*t (*corruptly*) E.
85. *He*] *so in* H; E *om*.
88. *That*] And.
90. *otow*] otowth E; outwith H.
91. *Behaldand how*] & beheld how *that*.
92. *clengit*] *so in* E; obteende H.
94. *the*] furth *the*. *the—he*] he tooke his wayes H.
95. *kylmernok*] kylmerno C; kylmernok E; Kilmarnok H.
97. *largyss*] larg*is* E; Larges H.
98. *Ennirkyp*] Enderkip H.
101. *gret dante*] daynte E; great daintie H.

*Th*ai prisit hym so gretumly, — and praise him.
And alsua lovit his cheuelry.

Schir philip *th*us eschapit was,
And douglas, *th*at wes in *th*e plas, 108
Quhar he sexty has slane & ma; — The rest of the English flee to Bothwell.
*Th*e laiff fouly *th*ar gat can ga,
And fled to bothwell hame agane;
Quhar schir amer wes na thing fañe, 112
Quhen he herd tell on quhat maner
*Th*at his menȝe discumfit wer.
Bot quhen to king robert ves tald, — Bruce is pleased with Douglas' exploit.
How *th*e gud douglaß, *th*at wes bald, 116
Wencust sa feyll with few menȝe,
Ry*ch*t Ioyfull in his hert wes he.
And all his men confortit war:
For *th*ame thoucht weill, bath leß & mair, 120
*Th*at *th*ai suld leß *th*air fayis drede, — [Fol. 59 b. O.]
Sen *th*air purpos sa wyth *th*aim ȝeide.

[Heire schir emery eggis bargan in the plane.]

*Th*e kyng lay in-to gawlistouñ — Bruce is at Galston.
*Th*at is rycht evyn anent lowdouñ; 124
And till his peß tuk *th*e cuntre.
Quhen *schir* amer and his menȝe
Herd how he rewlit all *th*e land,
And how *th*at nane durst him vithstand, 128
He wes in-till his hert angry; — Sir Aymer is very angry.
And vith ane of his cu*m*pany
He send him vord, ande said, 'gif he

105. *so*] full EH.
106. *alsua lovit*] lovyt fast E; loued meekle H.
113. *quhat*] *that*.
RUBRIC in H, *after l.* 114—How the King vnder Lowdon hill, Discomfist Sir Aymer his power still.
116. *the gud*] *that the*. *bald*] sa bauld H.
117. *Wencust*] Wencussyt E; Vanquisht H.
118. *Ioyfull in*] glad into H.
119. *men*] menȝe E; men H.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
123. *in-to gawlistoun*] in galstoun E; into Gastoun H.
127. *rewlit all*] ryotyt E; rioted all H.
129. *angry*] sory H.

Sir Aymer challenges Bruce to fight in the plain.

Durst hym in[to] *th*e planys se, 132
He suld *th*e x day of may
Cu*m* vnd*ir* lowdoun hill avay :
And gif *th*at he vald met him *th*air,'
He said, 'his vorschip sulde be mair, 136
And mair be turnit to nobillay,
To vyn hym in *th*e playn avay
Vith hard dynt*is*, in evyn fichting,
*Th*an till do fer mair in scowking.' 140
*Th*e king *th*at herd his messinger,
Had despit apon gret maner,
*Th*at s*chir* amer spak sa hely,
*Th*ar-for he ansuerd ernystfully, 144
And till *th*e messynger said he,

The king promises to meet him on the tenth of May.

"Sa to *th*i lord *th*at, gif I be
In lif, he sall me se *th*at day
Weill neir, gif he dar hald *th*e vay 148
*Th*at he has said ; for sekirly
By lowdouñ hill mete hym sall I."

[Heire king R. providis for wantag in the place quhar thai suld fecht.]

*Th*e messinger, but mair abade,
Till h*is* mast*ir* h*is* vais raide, 152
And his ansuer he tald alswith ;

Sir Aymer is glad at this.

*Th*an wes na neid to mak him blith*e*,
For he thoucht, throu h*is* mekill my*ch*t,
Gif *th*e king durst apeir to ficht, 156
*Th*at, throu *th*e gret cheuelry

132. [*into* EH] in C.
133. *the a*] *the* x E (*printed* the tent J) ; on the tent H.
137. *to*] in. *nobillay*] Noblenesse H.
138. *the*] *that*. H *has*—To meete him in the Plaine hard wayes.
140. *in scowking*] *with* skulking E ; into stalking H.
143. *hely*] proudly H.
144. *ernystfully*] irusly E ; angerly H.
146. *that gif*] giff *that* EH.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
152. *his* (2)] *the*.
153. *he*] him.
154. That was no neede to make him blyth H ; Quhar-of he was bat*h* glaid & blyth E.
156. *apeir*] cum E ; appeare H.

*Th*at suld be in his cu*m*pany,
He suld swa ourcum *th*e kyng, [Fol. 60. C.]
*Th*at *th*ar suld be na recou*e*ryng. 160
And *th*e kyng, on *th*e to*thir* party, Bruce goes to inspect the field.
*Th*at wes ay wiſ and a-verty,
Raid for to se and cheſ *th*e plaſ;
And saw *th*e hye-gat lyand waſ 164
Apon a fair feld evin and dry;
But apon a*thir*-syde [*thar*-by] The highroad lay between two mosses.
Wes a gret moſ, mekill & braid,
*Th*at fra *th*e vay wes, quhar men raid, 168
A bowdraucht neir on athir syde:
And *th*at place tho*ch*t hym all to vyde
Till abyde men *th*at horsit war.
*Th*arfor thre dyk*is* ourthwort he schar, 172 He cuts three dikes across the firm land.
Fra bath *th*e mosſ to *th*e vay:
That war sa fer fra o*thir*, *th*at *th*ai
War in-twyn a bow-draucht & mar.
Sa holl & hye *th*e dyk*is* war, 176
*Th*at men my*ch*t no*ch*t, but mekill pañe,
Paſ *th*ai*m*, thouch nane var *th*ai*m* agane.
Bot sloppis in *th*e vay left he, He leaves gaps in the dikes.
So large, and of sic qua*n*tite, 180
*Th*at fyffe hu*n*d*ir* my*ch*t sa*m*my*n* ryde
In at *th*e sloppis, syde for syde.
*Th*ar tho*ch*t he battale for to beid,
And bargane *th*ai*m*; for he na drede 184
Had at *th*ai suld on syde assale;

158. *suld be*] he sould lead H.
162. *ay*] all. *a-verty*] a verty C; auerty E; right witty H.
165. *Apon*] Neere H.
166. [*thar-by*] *thar*by E; there-by H; *th*ame by C.
168. *That*] Bot E; And H. *quhar*] that H.
169. *neir*] weile E; well H.
170. *And*] Bot H.
172. *ourthwort*] our-thuort.
173. *mosss*] = mossis; *so also in* E; H *has* Mosses.
175. *in-twyn*] ytwyn E; euen H. *&*] or EH.
182. *for*] *so in* H; be E.
183. *he*] C *has* he but; EH *omit* but. *beid*] bid E; bide H.
184. *drede*] dryd E; dread H.
185. *at*] *that*. *on*] ony.

Na ȝeit behynd gif him battale.
[Fol. 87. E.] And befor hym thocht veill *that* he
Suld fra *th*ar mycht defendit be. 188

There are three deep dikes.

Thre deip dyk*is* he gert *th*ar ma;
For gif he mycht nocht weill our-ta
To met *th*ame at *th*e first, *that* he
Suld haf *th*e to*thir* at h*is* pouste; 192
Or *th*an *th*e thrid, gif it war swa
At *th*ai had passit *th*e to*thir* twa.
On this wiß him ordanit he,
[Fol. 60 b. C.] And syne Assemblit his men*ȝ*e, 196

He collects 600 fighting men.

*Th*at war sex hundreth fechtand me*n*,
But rangald, *th*at wes vith him *th*en,
*Th*at war als feill as *th*ai, or ma.
With all *th*at men*ȝ*he can he ga, 200
*Th*e evy*n* befor *th*e battale suld be,

He goes to Little Loudoun.

To litill lowdouñ, quhar *th*at he
Wald abide to se *th*air cu*m*myng.
[Syne] with the men of his leding 204
He thoucht to speid hym, swa *th*at he
Suld at *th*e dik befor *th*ame be.

[Heire schir emery cumis with his host in sycht.]

Sir Aymer comes there with 3000 men.

Schir Amer, on *th*e to*th*ir party,
Gade*r*it so gret cheuelry, 208
*Th*at he mycht be thre thousand neir,
Armyt and dicht in gud maner;
And *th*an, as man of gret [noblay.]

186. *him*] *thaim*.
191. *thame*, *at*] *that* E (*corruptly*).
192. *at*] on.
193. *Or*] Be. *war*] fell H.
194. *At*] *That*.
195. *him*] *than* him C; E *omits* than; H *omits both* than *and* him. *ordanit*] ordanys.
198. *rangald*] rangale.
201. *evyn*] *miswritten* evynnyng C; ewyn E; Euen H. *befor*] or *that* E; forow H. *battale*] field H.
202. *litill lowdoun*] Lowdon Bog H.
204. [*Syne* EH] Evin C.
206. *dik*] dykes H.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
209. *mycht be*] was well H.
210. *in*] on.
211. *And—as*] *That* as a E. [*noblay* EH] nobillay C.

He held toward *th*e trist his vay. 212
And quhen *th*e set day cu*m*in was,
He sped him fast toward *th*e place
*Th*at he had ne*m*myt for to ficht.
*Th*e sone wes rysyn schynand bricht, 216
*Th*at blenknyt on *th*e schelds*is* braid.
In twa [eschel*is*] ordanit he had
*Th*e folk *th*at he had in leding.
*Th*e kyng, weill soyn in *th*e mornyng, 220
Saw first cu*m*and *th*air first [eschele]
Arrait sarraly and weill,
And at *th*air bak, sum-deill neirhand,
He saw *th*e to*thir* followand. 224
*Th*air basnetis burnyst var all bry*ch*t,
Agane *th*e sone [glemand] of licht;
*Th*air speris, *th*air pennownys, & *th*ar schelds*is*
Of licht Illumynit all *th*e felds*is*. 228
*Th*air best [&] browdyn bricht baner*is*,
And hors hewit on seir maner*is*,
And cot-armour*is* off seir colour,
And hawbrek*is*, *th*at war quhit as flour, 232
Maid *th*ame glitt*er*and, as *th*ai war lik
Till angell*is* he, of [hewinis] rik!

On the day appointed, he advances.

His men are in two squadrons.

Their basnets gleam in the sun.

They glitter like angels of heaven.

[Heire king robert metis hym with few.]

212. *the*] his.
213. *And*] E *om.*
215. *had*] E *om.*
217. *blenknyt*] blenked H; schawyt (*added afterwards*) E.
218. [*eschelis* E] battalis C; battels H. *See* l. 221.
219. *in*] *so in* E; in-to C; in his H.
221. [*eschele* E] battale C; battell H. *Observe the rime.*
222. Arrayed seemely, and wonder well H.
223. *sum-deill neirhand*] they saw cummand H.
224. *He—tothir*] The other battell H.
225. *basnetis*] bassynettis E. *var*] E *om.* *brycht*] E *om.* H *has*—Their Basnets burnisht all were bright.
226. [*glemand* E] lemand H; glemyt C. *licht*] ly*ch*t all E (*see note in* J).
227. *thair* (2)] EH *om.*
229. [*&* EH] C *om.* *browdyn*] browdred H; browdyn wes E.
231. *colour*] colowr*is* EH.
232. *flour*] flour*is* EH.
234. [*hewinis*] hewin so (*wrongly*) C; hewynnys E; heauen H. *rik*] Kinrike H.
RUBRIC. *From* E.

The king exhorts his men.
[Fol. 61. C.]

*Th*e king said, "lording*is*, now ȝhe se
How ȝou men, throu *th*ar gret pouste, 236
Wald, and *th*ai mycht fulfill *th*ar will,
Slay vs, and mak sembland *th*ar-till.
And sen we knaw *th*air felony,
Ga we and meit *th*ame hardely, 240
That *th*e stoutest of *th*air menȝhe
Of our metyng abaysit be.

"Meet the foremost boldly, and the hindmost will be terrified.

For gif *th*e formast egirly
Be met, ȝhe sall se suddanly 244
The henmast sall abasit be;
And *th*ouch *th*at *th*ai be [ma] *th*an we,
That suld abaiß ws litill thing;
For quhen we cum to the fichting, 248
*Th*ar may met vs no ma *th*an we.
*Th*arfor, lording*is*, ilkañe suld be
Of vorschip and of gret valour,
For till mayntem̃e heir our honour. 252

Think what happiness attends victory!"

Think*is* quhat gladschip vs abyd*is*,
Gif *th*at we may, as vs betyd*is*,
Haf victour of our fayis heir!
For *th*ar is nane her, fer no neir, 256
In all *th*is land *th*at vs thar dout."
Than said *th*ai all that stude about,

His men are emboldened.

"Schir, gif god will, we sall sa do
*Th*at no repruf sall ly *th*ar-to." 260
"Than ga we furth now," said *th*e king,
"And he, *th*at maid of nocht all thing,
Leyd vs and sauf vs for his mycht,
And help vs for till hald our richt!" 264

235. *lordingis*] lord*is*.
240. *and*] E *om.* *hardely*] sa hardily.
246. [*ma* E] may C; far ma H.
251. *vorschip and*] ws worthi.
252. *till*] to.
253. *gladschip*] worship H.
254. *vs*] weile.
256. *her*] *th*an.
257. *that vs*] C *repeats.* *thar*] *so in* E; *but misprinted* char PJ. *vs thar*] we then H.
260. *ly*] *so in* H; fall E. *thar-to*] vs to H.
261. *Than*] Now. *now*] *th*an.
262. *And*] Quhar.

With *th*at *th*ai held *th*ar vay in hy,
Veill sex hundreth in Cumpany,
Stalward and stout, vorthy and vicht.
Bot *th*ai war all to few, I hicht, 268
Agane so feill to stand in stour,
Ne war *th*air outrageouſ valour.

Bruce's 600 men advance.

Now gais the nobill kyng his way,
Richt stoutly and in gude aray, 272
And to *th*e formast dyk is gañe,
And in *th*e slop *th*e feld has tañe.
The cariage-men and *th*e pou*e*rale,
*Th*at wes nocht vorth in *th*e battale, 276
Behynd [him] levit he al still,
Standand all sa*m*myn on *th*e hill.
Schir amery the kyng haſ seyn,
Vith his men *th*at [war cant] and keyn, 280
Cum to the playn doune fra *th*e hill,
As him thoucht in-to full gud will
For to defend or till assaill,
Gif ony wald hym byde battale. 284
*Th*arfor his men confortit he,
And bad *th*ame wicht and worthy be,
For gif at *th*ai mycht vyn *th*e kyng,
And victor haf of *th*e fechting, 288
*Th*ai suld richt weill revardit be,
And gretly ek *th*air renownee.
With [*that*] *th*ai war weill neir *th*e kyng,
And he left his amonystyng, 292

Bruce awaits the foe in one of the gaps.

[Fol. 27 *b*. E.]

[Fol. 61 *b*. C.]

Sir Aymer sees the Scotch in the plain,

and encourages his men.

268. *I*] Ik.
269. *in*] a.
275. *men*] E *om.*; H *retains* men.
276. *wes*] war.
277. [*him* EH] C *om.* *he*] he *th*ame C; EH *omit th*ame.
278. *Standand*] Syttand EH.
279. *amery*] Aymer EH.
280. [*war cant* E] were cant H; stout var C. *Observe the alliteration.* *keyn*] kene.
282. *in-to*] in.
283. *till*] to.
287. *at*] *that*.
288. *victor haf*] haiff wictour. *the*] his E; that H.
290. *gretly ek*] ek gretly.
291. [*that* EH] C *om.*
292. *amonystyng*] amonesting. And heard well oft his manassing H.

Trumpets sound.

And gert trumpe to *th*e assemble ;
And *th*e formast of his menȝe
Enbrasit vith *th*at *th*ar scheld*is* braid,
And richt sarray to-gidd*er* raid. 296

The English charge the Scotch.

With hedis stowpand and sper*is* straucht
Richt to *th*e kyng *th*ar vay *th*ai raucht,
That met *th*ame vith sa gret vigour,
*Th*at *th*e best and of mast valour 300
Var laid at erd at *th*air metyng ;

Great breaking of spears, and loud cries of the wounded.

Quhar men mycht [her] sic a brekyng
Of speris *th*at [to-fruschyt] war,
And [*th*e] voundit so cry and rar, 304
*Th*at it [anoyus] wes till her.
For *th*ai, *th*at first assemblit wer,
Fwnȝeit and fawcht all sturdely ;
The noyis begouth *th*an and *th*e cry. 308

[Heir kyng R. wynnis in plane battale.]

A ! mychty god ! quha *th*air had beyn,

Any one who could have seen Bruce and his brother would have praised them.

And had *th*e kyng*is* vorschip seyn,
And his bro*thir* *th*at wes hym by,
*Th*at contenit *th*ame so hardely, 312
*Th*at *th*air gud deid and *th*ar bounte
[Gaiff gret *con*fort to] *th*air menȝhe,

[Fol. 62. C.]

And how dowglas so manfully
Confortit *th*ame *th*at war hym by, 316
He suld weill say, *th*at [*th*ai] had will
To vyn honor and cu*m* *th*air-till !

293. *trumpe*] trumpe vp H.
294. *And*] With H.
295. *that thar*] *the* E. They embraced to them shields brade H.
296. *sarray*] sarraly E ; syne H.
298. *ray thai*] wayis.
300. *mast*] *the* maist.
302. [*her* E] heare H ; se C. *Cf.* l. 305.
303. [*to-fruschyt* E] too frushed H ; toufruschit C.
304. [*the* EH] of C.
305. [*anoyus* E] annoyous H ; gret noyis C.
307. *Fwnȝeit*] Fwyngyt E ; Fonyed H. *all*] full.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
311. *wes*] was H ; waine E.
312. *contenit*] conteened H ; stonayit E. *hardely*] manfully H.
314. [*Gaiff—to*] Gaue great comfort to H ; Confort monyfald C.
315. *manfully*] manlily.
317. [*thai* E] they H ; he C.

*Th*e king*is* men, *th*at worthy war,
With *th*air speris *th*at scharply schar, 320 — Bruce's men pierce the foes and their steeds.
Stekit men and stedis bath,
Till red blude ran of vound*is* rath.
*Th*e hors *th*at [woundyt] war can fling,
And ruschit *th*e folk in *th*air flynging, 324
Swa *th*at *th*ai *th*at *th*an formast war
War stekit in soppis heir and *th*ar.
*Th*e king *th*at saw *th*ame ruschit swa,
And saw *th*ame reland to and fra, 328 — Bruce charges them repeatedly.
Ran apon *th*ai*m* so egirly,
And dang on *th*ame so hardely,
He gert feill of his fayis fall.
*Th*e feld wes weill neir cou*e*rit all 332
Bath with slayn hors and vith men;
For *th*e gud king *th*ame followit *th*en
Vith weill v hundreth *th*at vapnys bar, — 500 men follow him closely.
*Th*at vald *th*air fayis no thing spar. 336
[*Th*ai] dang on *th*ame so hardely
*Th*at in schort tyme men my*ch*t se ly
At erd ane hundreth weill, and mar;
*Th*e remanand *th*e vaykar war. 340
*Th*an *th*ai begouth *th*ame to vithdraw; — The English begin to retreat.
And quhen *th*ai of *th*e reirward saw
*Th*air vawarde be [sa] discomfit,
*Th*ai flede vithouten mair respit. 344

319. *that*] sa E; so H.
320. *With thair*] *That with* E; That with their H.
321. *Stekit*] *Th*ai stekyt E; They stikked H.
323. [*woundyt* E] stikked H; *th*ar C. *war*] war *th*an C; EH *omit th*an.
324. *the*] *th*ar.
325. *than*] *the*.
326. *stekit*] stikked H; skalyt E. *soppis*] sloppes H.
327. *that*] E *om*.
331. *He—feill*] *That* fele gart.
332. *weill*] E *om*.
334. *thame*] *th*ar.
335. *weill*] EH *om*. *v hundreth*] v C *in* E. *that*] with H.
337. [*Thai* E] They H; That C.
339. *weill and*] and wele.
340. *the vaykar*] well the weaker H; sa fleyit E.
343. *vawarde*] avawarde C; waward E; Vangard H. [*sa* EH] C *om*.
344. *vithouten*] for-owtyn.

Sir Aymer is grieved,

And quhen schir amer [hes] seyn
His men fleand haly bedeyn,
Wit ȝe weill, he wes full way;
Bot he mycht nocht amonist swa 348
*Th*at ony for him vald turne agane.
And quhen he saw he tynt his pane,

but is forced to flee.

He turnit his bridill, and to ga:
For *the* gud king *th*ame presit swa 352
*Th*at sum war ded, and sum war tañe;
*Th*e remanand *th*ar gat ar gane.

[Heire schir emery passis in Ingland.]

Sir Aymer rides back to Bothwell,

THE folk fled apon *th*is maner
For-outen arest, and schir amer 356
Agane to bothwell is he gañe,
Menand *the* scath *th*at he had tañe;

[Fol. 62 b. C.]

So schamfull *th*at he vencust wes,

and next goes back to England, and resigns his command.

*Th*at till ynglande in hy he gais 360
Richt till *the* king, and schamfully
He gaf vp *th*ar his vardanry;
Na neu*er* syne, for na kyne thing,
Bot gif he com richt vith *the* king, 364
Com he to varra Scotland.

So grieved was he at his defeat.

So heuely he tuk on hand
*Th*at *th*e king, in set battalȝe,
With a quheyn lik pou*er*alȝe, 368
Vencust him vith a gret menȝe,

[Fol. 28. E.]

*Th*at ves renownit of gret bounte.

345. [*hes* H] has E; wes C.
347. *he*] *so in* H; him E. *way*] *so in* E; wa H.
348. *mycht*] moucht E; could H. *amonist*] ammonyss E; admonish H. *But see* l. 292.
354. *The remanand*] And *the* laiff E; And all the laue H. *ar*] were H.
RUBRIC. *From* E. C *has* Y *for* TH.
356. *For-outen*] For-owt.
357. *bothwell*] Boithweill. *he*] E *om.*
358. *had*] has.
359. *schamfull*] shamefully H.
362. *vardanry*] wardanry EH.
365. *varra*] werray E; weere into H.
367. *in*] in-to EH.
368. *a quheyn*] a quhone E; few folke H. *pouer alȝe*] to pouerall EH.
370. *ves renownit*] war renonyt.

Sic anoy had schir Amery.
And king robert, *th*at ves hardy, 372
Abaid all still in-to *th*e plaß,
Till *th*at his men left all *th*e chaß;
Syne vith presoners *th*at he had taňe
*Th*ai ar towart *th*air Innys gaňe, 376
Fast lovand god of *th*air veillfair.
Men mycht haf seyn, quha had beyn *th*air,
A folk *th*at mery war and glad
For *th*air victour; and als *th*ai had 380
A lord so swet and debonar,
So curtaß and of [sa] fair effer,
So blith als and so veill bowrdand,
And in battale so stith to stand, 384
So viß, and richt sua avise,
*Th*at [*th*ai] had gret cauß blith to be.
So war *th*ai blith forouten dout;
For feill *th*at wonnyt *th*aim about, 388
[Fra] *th*ai *th*e king saw help him swa,
Till him *th*ar homage can *th*ai ma.
*Th*an vox his power mair and mair;
And he thoucht weill *th*at he vald fair 392
Outour *th*e month vith his menȝe,
To luk quha *th*at his frend vald be.
In-to schir alexand*ir th*e freser
He trastit, for *th*ai [cosyng*is*] wer, 396
And in his bro*thir* Symon, *th*ai twa.

The Scotch retire with their prisoners.

They had so fair a leader

that they had good cause to be blithe.

Bruce thinks of crossing the Month.

373. *all*] ryght.
374. *left all*] had left.
375. *he*] *th*ai.
377. *lovand*] lowand. *veillfair*] weilfar.
378. *Men*] He. *quha*] *th*at.
379. *mery war*] war mery C; mery wes E.
381. *so swet*] *that* sa swete wes.
382. *curtass*] wise H; *cf.* l. 385. [*sa* EH] C *om.*
383. *als and*] and als EH.
385. *avise*] awise.
386. [*thai* E] they H; he C. *See next line.*
387. *forouten*] with-owtyn.
388. *wonnyt*] wynnyt E; winned H.
389. [*Fra* EH] For C.
391. *vox*] woux E; waxt H.
393. *month*] mounth.
395. *the*] EH *om.* *freser*] fraser.
396. *trastit*] traistyt EH. [*cosyng-is* E] Cousings H; frend*is* C.
397. *in*] E *om.* *thai twa*] alswa H.

He had myster weill of ma,
For he hade fais mony añe;

Sir John Comyn and others were the Bruce's foes.

Schir Iohñe cwmyne Erll of bouchañe, 400
And *schir* Iohñe *the* mowbray syne,

[Fol. 63. C.]

And gud *schir* dauid of brechyñe,
Vith all *the* folk in *th*air leding,
War fayis to *the* nobill king. 404
And, for he vist *th*ai war his fayis,

Bruce marches northwards.

His [wiage] northward*is* he tais;
For he wald se quhat-kyn ending
*Th*ai walde mak of *th*air manasing. 408

How the gud king robert the bruce passit north be-ȝounde the month.

THE king buskit and maid him ȝar,
Northward*is* vith his men to fair.

He takes with him his brother, Lennox, Boyd, and others.

His bro*thir* can he with hym ta,
And [*schir*] gilbert de le hay alsua; 412
*Th*e Erll of lennax als wes *th*ar,
*Th*at with *the* king wes our all quhar;
Schir robert boyd and o*thir* ma.
*Th*e king can furth his vais ta, 416

He leaves Douglas behind.

And left Iames of douglaß,
Vith all *the* folk *th*at vith him vaß,
Behynd hym, for till luk gif he
Micht recou*er* his cuntre. 420
He left him in-to gret perill;
Bot eft*ir*, in añe litill quhill,

Douglas soon subdues

Throu his gret vorschip [sa] he vrocht,
*Th*at to *the* king*is* peß he brocht 424

400. *cwmyne*] Cumy*n*. *bouchane*] bouchquhane.
403. *in*] off.
406. [*wiage* E] voyage H; wayis *th*an C. *northwardis*] *th*idd*ir*wart E; hitherward H.
408. *mak of*] set on.

RUBRIC. *From* C. E *has*—heire kyng R. pass*is* our *the* month.
410. *men*] folk.
412. [*schir* E] Sir H; C *om*.
421. *left—in-to*] left in-to full E; put himselfe in full H.
423. [*sa* EH] C *om*.

*Th*e forest of selcryk all hale,
And alsũa did he douglasdale,
And gedword forest alsua.
And quha sa veill on hand [couth] ta 428
To tell [his worschippis] ane and añe,
He suld fynd of *th*aim mony añe.
For in his tym, as men said me,
xiij tymes vencust wes he, 432
And victory van sevin & fifty.
He semyt no*ch*t lang ydill to ly,
Be his trauale he had na vill;
Me think men suld him luf of skill. 436

the forest of Selkirk and Douglasdale.

Douglas was beaten 13 times, and victor 57 times.

[Heire schir Iames he vynnis mony men, & makys fyrst a trane on the castal.]

This Iames, quhen *th*e king ves gañe,
All preuely his men has tañe,
And went to douglasdaill agañe,
And maid all preuely a trañe 440
Till *th*aim *th*at in the castell war.
A buschement [slely] maid he *th*air;
And of his men fourteyn and ma
He gert, as *th*ai war, sekk*is* ta 444
Fillit vith gyrß, and syne *th*aẽe lay
Apon *th*air horß, and hald *th*air vay
Richt as *th*ai wald to lanrik fair,
Otow quhar the enbuschement var. 448
And quhen *th*ai of the castell saw
So feill ladis gang on raw,

Douglas lays a train against the garrison of the castle.

He sends 14 men with sacks full of grass laid on [Fol. 63 *b*. C.] horses' backs.

425. *selcryk*] Ettrik H.
426. *alsua*] euen sa H.
427. *gedword*] Iedworthis E; Iedburgh H.
428. [*couth* E] wald H; can C.
429. [*his worschippis* EH] *th*e vorschip C.
433. *victory van*] had wictour*is* E; had victorie times H.
436. *of*] wit*h*.
437. RUBRIC. *From* E; H *has*—
How Iames of Dowglas slew Webtoun
And wan his Castell, and kest it downe.
442. [*slely* EH] suddanly C.
443. *and*] or.
445. *gyrss*] gress.
447. *lanrik*] Lanerik H; lanark E.
448. Owtouth quhar *th*ai enbuschyt war.

Of *th*at sicht war *th*ai vond*ir* fayñ,

The garrison tell their captain,

And tald it to *th*air capitañe, 452

That hicht s*chir* Iohñe of webitoune.

He wes bath ȝoung, stout, and fellouñ,

Richt Ioly als, and volageouß;

And for *th*at he wes amourouß, 456

He vald ysche fer *th*e blithlyer;

who bids them make a sally.

[He] gert his men all tak *th*ar ger,

And yschit to get *th*at vittale,

For *th*ar vittale all [fast] couth fale. 460

*Th*ai yschit all abaundanly,

And prikit furth sa vilfully

To vyn *th*e ladis at *th*ai saw paß,

[Fol. 28b. E.]

Quhill *th*at douglaß vith h*is* men was 464

All betuix *th*ame and *th*e castell.

The men with the sacks cast them down,

The layd-men *th*at persauit weill,

*Th*ai kest *th*air ladis doun in hy,

And *th*air gownys deliu*er*ly, 468

*Th*at helit *th*ame, *th*ai kest avay,

jump on the horses, and attack the garrison-men,

And in gret hy *th*air hors hint *th*ai,

And stert apon thame sturdely,

And met *th*air fais vith A cry; 472

*Th*at had gret vound*ir*, quhen *th*ai saw

*Th*aim *th*at war ere lurkand full law

Com apon *th*amē so hardely;

*Th*ai wox abasyd suddandly, 476

And at *th*e castell vald haf beyn;

who, seeing Douglas break ambush,

Quhen *th*ai, on *th*e o*thir* half, has seyn

Douglas brek his enbuschement,

453. *webitoune*] Webetoun.
455. *Richt—als*] Ioly alsua. *volageouss*] walageouss E; couragious H.
457. *blithlyer*] lightlier H.
458. [*He* EH] And C. *all tak*] all take H; tak all E.
459. *yschit*] Isch. *that*] *th*aim.
460. *all—couth*] all couth C; gan fast *th*aim E; fast did H.
461. *abaundanly*] abandounly.
462. *prikit*] prykkyt.
464. *men*] E *om.*
465. *All*] H *om.*
474. *full*] sa.
476. *wox*] woux.
478. *the*] E *om.* When on the other side they haue seene H.

*Th*at agañe *th*ame [ry*ch*t] stoutly went. 480
*Th*ai wist no*ch*t quhat till do no say,
*Th*air fayis at *th*air hand saw *th*ai,
That strak on *th*ame forout sparing,
And *th*ai mycht help *th*aim-self no thing, 484
Bot fled to varrand quhar *th*ai mocht;
And *th*ai so angirly on *th*ame socht,
That of *th*ame all eschapit nane.
Schir Iohñe of webitoun *th*ar ves slañe; 488
And quhen he ded wes, as ȝhe her,
*Th*ai fand in-till his awmener
A lett*er*, *th*at him send añe lady
*Th*at he lufit per drowry. 492
*The letter spak on this maner,
*Th*at said, 'quhen he had ȝemyt a ȝer
In wer, as añe gude bachiller,
*And gou*er*nit weill, in all maner,
*Th*e [auenturus] castell [off] douglas,
That to kepe so perelous was, 496
*Th*an mycht he weill ask añe lady
Hir amouris and hir drowry;'
The lett*er* spak on this maner.
And quhen *th*ai slayn on *th*is viß wer, 500
Douglas richt to *th*e castell raid,
And *th*air so gret debate he maid,
*Th*at in *th*e castell ent*er*it he.

are seized with panic, and flee.

None escape.

Sir John of Webtoun had a [Fol. 64. C.] letter in his pouch from a lady,

who said he must keep Douglas castle a year, to gain her love.

480. [*rycht* E] sa H; C *om.*
481. *no*] na E; or H.
482. *at—hand*] on a*th*ir sid.
483. *forout*] for-owtyn.
484. *self*] selwy*n*.
486. *on*] EH *om.*
488. *of*] *so in* H; E *om.* *webitoun*] Webetoun.
490. *awmener*] Awmanneere H; coffeir (*added afterwards, and indistinct*) E.
491. *ane*] A.
492. *drowry*] drowry H; drouery E.
493*. EH *omit.*
494. *ane*] A.
495*. EH *omit.* C *wrongly inserts* him *before* weill.
495. *The* auenturiss of *the* castell douglas C; *The* awenturu*s* [*or* awenturi*s*] castell off douglas E; The auentrous Castell of Dowglas H.
497. *ane*] A.
498. *amouris*] *apparently miswritten* amourus C; amowris E; Amours H. *drowry*] drowry H; drouery E.

I wat nocht all *th*e certante, 504
Quhe*thir* it wes throu strinth or slicht,
Douglas sends the prisoners home to Clifford.
Bot he vrocht swa, throu his gret my*ch*t,
*Th*at *th*e constabill and all *th*e lafe
*Th*at war *th*air-in, bath man and knaf, 508
He tuk, and gaf *th*ame dispending,
And send *th*ame hame, but mair greving,
Till *th*e cliffurde in *th*air cuntre.
Ande syne so besely wrocht he, 512
He destroys the castle and the houses.
That he all tu*m*lit douñe *th*e vall,
And distroit *th*e houſ all :
Syne till *th*e forest held his vay,
Quhar he had mony harde assay, 516
And mony fair poynt of wer befell ;
Quha couth *th*ame all reherſ and tell,
He suld say *th*at his name suld be
Lestande in full gret ranowne. 520

506. *vrocht*] wro*ch*t. *throu—gret*] wit*h* mekill E ; with his great H.
508. *knaf*] knaw.
510. *send*] sent.
513. *all—doune*] tumblyt doun all.
514. *houss*] howsss (= howsis) E; houses H. *The plural is meant.*
516. *mony*] mony ane.
520. *ranowne*] renoune E ; Renounie H.

[BOOK IX.]

How gud king robert lay seik in Enuerrowry.

Now leif we in-to *the* forest
Douglaß, *th*at sall haf litill rest,
Till *the* cuntre deliu*er*it be
Of yngliß men and *th*air pouste: 4
And turne we to *the* nobill kyng;
*Th*at, vith *the* folk of his leding,
Toward *the* month has tane *the* vay
Richt stoutly, in-to gud aray, 8
Quhar alexand*ir* freser [him] met,
And als his bro*thir*, symon [het],
With all *the* folk *th*ai vith *th*ai*m* hade.
*Th*e kyng gud count*er*nans *th*ai*m* maid, 12
That ves richt blith of *th*air cu*m*myng.
*Th*ai tald *the* king all *the* covyng
Of Iohñ cwmyne *the* Erll of bouchañe,
*Th*at till help him had vith him tane 16
Schir Iohñ mowbra, and o*thir* ma,
S*chir* dauid *the* brechyne alsua,

We now turn to the King.

Bruce meets the Frasers,

[Fol. 64 *b*. C.]

who warn him against Comyn and others,

RUBRIC. E *has*—heir*e* king R. fel seyk at Inu*e*rowry. H *has*—How ouer the Month past the King, And there fell sicke in his passing.

2. *haf*] haue H; bot E.
4. *men*] folk.
7. *the*] his.
8. *in-to*] and in-till E; into full H.
9. *Quhar*] Quhar s*chir* C; *but* EH *omit* schir. *freser*] frayser. [*him* EH] C *om.*
10. [*het* H] hat C; E *has* Symonet (!). *See* Havelok, l. 2348.
12—16. H *somewhat varies.*
14. *all*] off. *covyng*] conwyne.
15. *the*] EH *om.*
18. *Schir*] And s*chir* CH; *but* E *omits* And. *the*] off E; H *om.*

Vith all *the* folk of *th*air leding,
"And ȝarnis mair *th*an ony thing 20

who wish to avenge Comyn's death at Dumfries.

Vengeans on ȝow, s*chir* kyng, to tak,
For Schir Iohñ *the* cwmy*n*is sak,
That quhilom in Drumfreiß ves slayñ."
*Th*e king said, "sa our lord me sayn, 24
I had gret cauß hym for to slay;
And syn *that* *th*ai on hand vill ta
Becauß of hym to varra me,

The king says he will watch.

I sall thoill all a quhile, and se 28
On quhat viß *th*at *th*ai preif *th*ar my*ch*t;
And gif it fall at *th*ai vill ficht,
Gif *th*ai assalȝe, we mon defend;
Syne fall quhat eu*ir* *that* god vill send." 32
Eft*ir* this spek the kyng in hy
Held straucht the vay till Enu*er*rowry;

At Inverury, Bruce falls sick,

And *th*air him tuk sic añe seiknes,
That put him till full hard distreß, 36
[*Th*at] he forbare bath drink and met.
His men no medicine couth get
That eu*ir* my*ch*t to *the* king availȝe;

[Fol. 29. E.] and his strength wholly fails.

His strinth so haly can him falȝe, 40
That he mycht nou*thir* ryde no ga.
Than, vit ȝe weill, his men wes wa!
For nane wes in that Cumpany,
That vald haf beyn half so sary 44
For till haf seyn his bro*thir* ded,
Lyand befor hym in that sted,

20. *than*] na.
21. *on*] off.
22. *the cwmynis*] *the* cumyn his E; Cumyng his Emes H.
25. *I*] Ik.
26. *syn*] sen.
27. *varra*] werray.
28. *thoill all*] thole E; abide H.
29. *preif*] pruwe.
30. *at*] *that*.
31. *assalȝe*] assaile. *mon*] sall.
32. *quhat—that*] eftre quhat.
34. *the*] his. *Enuerrowry*] enrowry EH.
35. *ane*] A.
36. *full*] sa H.
37. [*That* H] CE *om.*
40. *strinth*] force E; heart H. *so—him*] gan him halyly E; all haill begouth to H.
42. *weill*] *that*. *wes*] war.

As *th*ai war [all] for his seknes;
For all *th*air confort in him wes. 48
But gud s*chir* Eduard *the* vorthy,
His bro*thir*, *th*at wes so hardy,
And viß and vicht, set mekill payñ
To confort *th*ame vith all his mayn. 52
And quhen *the* lordis *th*at var *th*air
Saw that *the* Euill ay mair and mair
Traualit *the* king, *th*ai thoucht in hy
It war no*cht* speidfull *th*air to ly. 56
For *th*air all playn wes *the* cu*n*tre,
And *th*ai war bot añe few menȝe
To ly, but strinth, in-to *the* playñ.
For-*th*i, till *th*at *th*air Capitane 60
War cou*er*it of his mekill Ill,
*Th*ai thoucht to vend sum strinth soyn til.
For folk for-outen Capitañe,
Bot *th*ai *the* bettir be a-pane, 64
Sall nocht be all so gud in deid,
As *th*ai añe lorde had *th*ame to leid,
*Th*at dar put him in aventure,
But abasing, to tak *the* vre 68
That god will send; for quhen *th*at he
Is of sic will and sic bounte,
That he dar put him till assay,
His folk sall tak ensampill ay 72
Of his gud deid and his bounte,
That añe of *th*amẽ sall be vorth thre
Of *th*ame *th*at vikkid chiftañe has;
His vrechidnes so in *th*ame gais, 76

Edward Bruce comforts the king's men.

[Fol. 65. C.]

They determine to go to a stronger place.

Men are of little use without a captain.

47. [*all* H] CE *om.*
53. *var thair*] *th*ar war.
54. *Euill*] *so in* H; ill E.
55. *thai*] *th*aim.
58. *ane*] A.
62. *strinth soyn*] strenthis.
64. *a-pane*] apayn E; in paine H.
65. *Sall*] Sa sall.
66. *ane*] A.
70. *Is—will*] Of sic will is.
74. *That*] And.
75. *vikkid*] wilkyt (= wikkyt).
76. *vrechidnes*] wrechitness.

*Th*at *th*ai *th*air manlynes sall tyne
Throu vrechidnes of his covyne.

When the captain is ill, the men's hearts fail.

For quhen *th*e lord at *th*ame suld leid,
May do no*ch*t bot as he var ded, 80
Or fra his folk hald*is* his vay
Fleand, trow ȝe no*ch*t *th*an *th*at *th*ai
Sall vencust in *th*air hert*is* be?
ȝhus, sall *th*ai, as I trow, per de, 84
Bot gif *th*air hertis be so hye
*Th*ai will no*ch*t for *th*air vorschip fle;
And *th*ouch sum be of sic bounte,

If the captain flees, the men will flee.

Quhen *th*ai *th*e lord and his menȝe 88
Seis fle, ȝit sall *th*ai fle a-payn;
For all men fleis *th*e ded richt fayn.
Se quhat he dois, *th*at swa fowly
Fleis *th*us for his cowardy! 92
Bath him and his, vencust is he,
And gerris his fayis abovin be.

If the captain is bold, the men are bold too.

Bot he *th*at, throu his gret nobillay,
To perellis him abaw[n]donys ay 96
For to reconfort his menȝe,
Gerris *th*ame be of so gret bounte,
That mony tym vnlikly thing
*Th*ai bring richt weill to gud ending. 100
So did *th*is king *th*at I of reid,
[Fol. 65 b. C.] And, for his outrageouſ manheid,
Confortit his men on sic maneir,
*Th*at nane had radnes quhar he wer. 104

78. *vrechidnes*] wrechitness E; wickednesse H. *covyne*] conwyn E; conuyne H.
79. *at*] *th*at.
83. *vencust*] wencusyt.
84. *ȝhus*] ȝis E; Yes H.
86. *Thai—nocht*] *That th*ai na will E; They will not H.
87. *thouch*] tho*ch*t.
89. *a-payn*] apayn E; a paine H.
90. *richt*] full H.
93. *vencust is*] wencusyt E; vanquishes H.
94. *abovin*] abowne.
97. *For*] *retained in* H; E *om.*
98. *thame*] *th*at he.
101. *I*] Ik.
103. *men*] H *retains;* E *om.*

*Thai vald nocht ficht quhill *th*at he ves
Liand in-till sic seiknes;
*Th*arfor in littar *th*ai [him] lay,
And till *th*e slevach held *th*air vay,
And thoucht *th*air in *th*at strinth to ly, 108
Till passit war his malady.

Bruce's men will not fight whilst he is ill.

[Heir the erl of buchquhan gaderis agan the king.]

Bot fra *th*e Erll of bouchañe
Wist *th*at *th*ai war *th*idd*ir* gañe,
And vist *th*at swa seik wes *th*e king 112
*Th*at men doutit of his cou*er*yng,
He send eftir his men in hy,
And assemblit gret Cumpany.
For all his awne men war *th*ar, 116
And als his frendis vith him war;
That wes s*chir* Iohñe *th*e mowbray,
And his bro*thir*, as I herd say,
And als s*chir* dauid of brechyne, 120
Vith fele folk in *th*air leding.
And quha[*n*] *th*ai all assemblit war,
In hy *th*ai tuk *th*air vay till fair
To *th*e slevach, vith all *th*ar men, 124
For till assaill *th*e king, *th*at *th*en
Wes liand in-till his seiknes.
This wes eftir the martymes,
Quhen snaw had helit all *th*e land. 128
Till *th*e slevach *th*ai com neirhand,

The earl of Buchan gathers a host,

with Sir John Mowbray and Sir David Brechin.

They advance to "the Slevach."

105*. *In* E, *but omitted in* P. *quhill*] till.
105. *sic*] his E; sik great H.
106. [*him* EH] in C.
107. *slevach*] sleuauch *or* slenauch (*as in* J) E; Slenath H.
108. *thair in*] into H.
RUBRIC. *From* E. H *has*—How the Kings men with feghting, Defended the King in his lying.
110. *bouchane*] buchane.
112. *vist*] wyst E; knew H. *that swa*] sa *that* E; that sa H.
115. *gret*] A gret.
116. *awne*] awine.
117. *als*] *so in* H; all E.
118. *That*] *so in* E; There H.
119. *I*] Ik.
120. *als*] E *om.* *brechyne*] brechynge.
124. *slevach*. *See note to* l. 107.
125. *that*] H *retains;* E *om.*

Arayit on *th*air best maneir.
And *th*an *th*e king*is* men *th*at wer
The king's men prepare for defence, War of *th*air com, *th*ame apparalit 132
Till defend, gif *th*ai *th*ame assalit;
[Fol. 29 b. E.] And, no*ch*t-for-*th*i, *th*air fayis war
Ay twa for añe *th*at *th*ai war *th*air.
The Erlis men neir cu*m*ande war, 136
Trumpand, and makand mekill fair,
And maid knycht*is* quhen *th*ai var neir.
And *th*ai *th*at in *th*e wodsyde weir,
Stude in aray richt sarraly, 140
and await their foes. And thoucht to byde *th*air hardely
*Th*e cu*m*myng of *th*air Enymys.
Bot *th*ai vald apon nakyn viß
Ysche till assale *th*ame in fichting, 144
Till cou*e*rit war *th*e nobill kyng.
Bot gif o*thir* wald *th*ame assalȝe,
*Th*ai wald defend, avalȝe q*ue* valȝe.
And quhen *th*e Erlis Cumpany 148
[Fol. 66. C.] Saw *th*at *th*ai vroucht so besaly,
That *th*ai *th*at strinth schup to defend,
The earl sends out his archers, *Th*air archaris furth to *th*ame *th*ai send
To bykkir *th*ame, as men of mayn. 152
who are met by Bruce's archers. And *th*ai send archaris *th*ame agayn,
*Th*at bykkirrit *th*ame so sturdely,
Till *th*ai of *th*e Erlis party
In-to *th*air battale vithdrawin war. 156
Thre dayis on this viß lay *th*ai *th*ar,
And bikkirrit *th*ame eu*i*rilke day;
Bot *th*ar bowmen *th*e wer had [ay].

132. *com*] come E; com and C; comming H.
135. *that—thair*] or els maire H.
139. *wodsyde*] woddis sid.
146. *gif*] and. *assalȝe*] assailȝe.
147. *avalȝe—valȝe*] wailȝe q*ue* (*printed* quod J) wailȝe E; vailyie quoth (!) vailyie H.
149. *besaly*] wisely EH.
150. *that*] *th*ar.
152. *as*] *so in* H; and E.
153. *thai*] they H; E *om.*
156. *In-to*] Intill E; Right to H. *vithdrawin*] drywyn E; driuen H.
157. *Thre*] Foure H.
159. [*ay* EH] *th*ai C.

And quhen *the* kingis cumpany 160
Saw *th*air fayis befor *th*ame ly,
*Th*at ilka day wox ma and ma,
And *th*ai war quhoyn, [and] stad war swa
*Th*at *th*ai had no-thing for to et, 164 **The king's men are afraid of waiting longer,**
Bot gif *th*ai traualit it to get,
*Th*arfor *th*ai tuk consale in hy,
*Th*at *th*ai wald *th*ar no langer ly,
Bot hald *th*air way quhar *th*ai mycht get 168
Till *th*ame and *th*air*is* vittale and met.
In a littar *th*e kyng *th*ai lay, **so they lay the king in a litter, and prepare to remove him.**
And redyit *th*ame and held *thar* way,
That all *th*air fayis mycht *th*ame se, 172
Ilk man buskit in his degre
To ficht, gif *th*ai assalȝeit war.
In myddis *th*ame *th*e king *th*ai bair,
And ȝeid about hym sarraly, 176
And nocht full gretly can *th*ame hy.
The Erll, and *th*ai *th*at vith him var,
Saw *th*at *th*ai buskit *th*ame to fair,
And saw how [with] so litill affray 180 **The Earl dares not attack them.**
*Th*ai held furth with *th*e king *th*ar vay,
Reddy to ficht quha walde assale,
*Th*air hertis all begouth to fale,
And in peſ lete *th*ame paſ *thar* vay, 184
And till *th*air houſ hame vent *th*ai.

162. *ilka*] ilk EH.
163. *quhoyn*] quhone E ; wheene H. [*and* EH] *th*at C.
164. *to*] till.
166. *in*] in-to.
167. *thai—thar*] *th*ar wald *th*ai.
169. *vittale*] wictaillis.
171. *redyit—held*] graithed them vpon H.
172. *thame*] it H.
173. *buskit*] buskyt him E ; *but* H *omits* him.
177. *can thame*] *th*aim gan.
180. *saw*] H *om.* [*with* EH] *th*at C.
181. *furth*] *wrongly placed after* king *in* C.
183. *all begouth*] begouth all.
185. *houſ*] *put for* housis ; houses H.

[Heir the king wox hale throw bost.]

Bruce lies in Strath Bogie,

THE Erll his way tuk to bouchañe,
And *schir* Eduard *the* broyß is gañe
Richt to strabogy with the kyng, 188
And swa lang *th*air maid soiornyng
Till he begouth to cou*er* and ga,
And syne *th*air wayis can *th*ai ta

but goes to Inverury in the winter.

Till Enu*er*rowry straucht agañe ; 192
For *th*ai vald ly in-till *the* plañe
The vynt*ir* sesoune, for vittale

[Fol. 66 *b*. C.]

In-to *the* playn my*ch*t no*ch*t *th*ame fale.
The Erll wist *th*at *th*ai war *th*ar, 196
And gaderit his men3he heir and *th*ar ;

The Earl of Buchan prepares to attack Bruce, and comes to Old Meldrum.

Brechyne, mowbra, and *th*air men
All to *the* Erll assemblit *th*en,
And [war] a full gret Cumpany 200
Of men arayit Iolely.
Till ald meldrom *th*ai held *the* vay,
And *th*ar with *th*ai[r] men lugit *th*ai
Befor 3oill-evyn añe nycht [bot] mair ; 204
Ane thousand, trow I weill, *th*ai war.
*Th*ai lugit *th*ame all *th*air *th*at nycht,
And on *the* morn, quhen day ves licht,

Sir David Brechin advances to Inverury,

The lord of brechine *schir* davy 208
[Is went towart Inu*er*rowry,
To luk gyff he, on ony wyß,

RUBRIC. *From* E. H *has*—How the King disconfist at Enrowry, The Erle of Buchane shamefully.

188. *strabogy*] strabolghy E ; Strabogie H.

192. *Enuerrowry*] Innerrowry E ; Enrowry H.

195. *nocht thame*] *th*aim no*ch*t.

197. *his*] A E ; H *om*.

198. *mowbra*] and mowbray E ; H *omits* and.

199. *to*] till.

200. *And*] They H. [*war* E] were H ; C *om*.

202. *held*] *so in* H ; 3eid E.

203. *thair*] *th*ai C ; *th*air E ; their H.

204. *3oill*] 3hule E ; Yule H. [*bot* E] but H ; & C.

209—211. *From* E ; *also in* H. C *has only one line*—Till he is vent till Enu*er*rowry—*which is placed after* l. 213.

Mycht do skaith till his ennemys.]
In-to *the* End of Enu*er*rowry 212
He com ridand so suddandly,
[*Th*at] of *the* king*is* men he slew — and slays some of Bruce's men.
A part, and o*thir* sum *th*ai*m* vithdrew,
And fled *th*air vay toward *th*e king, 216
[That with] *the* mast of his gad*er*yng,
On ȝond half, doun wes *th*an lyand.
And quhen men tald him *the* tithand,
How *schir* dauid had slayn his men, 220
His horß in hy he askit *th*en, — Bruce asks for his horse,
And bad his men all mak *th*ame ȝare
In-to gret hy, for he wald fare
To Bargane with his Enymyß. 224
With *th*at he buskit for to riß, — essays to rise,
*Th*at wes nocht all weill cou*er*it *th*en. — [F. l. 30. E.]
[Then] said sum of his preue men,
"Quhat? think ȝe, *schir*, *th*usgat to fair 228
To ficht, and ȝeit no*ch*t cou*er*it ar?"
"ȝhis," said *the* kyng, "forouten wer; — declares he is now well,
*Th*air bost has maid me haill & fer.
For suld no medicine so soyne 232
Haff cou*er*it me, as *th*ai haf doñe!
*Th*arfor, sa god him-self me se!
I sall ou*thir* haf *th*ai*m*, or *th*ai me."
And quhen his men has herd *the* king 236 and insists on fighting.
Set him so haill for *the* fechting,

211. *till*] to H.
212. *In-to*] And till E; And to H.
213. *He*] *so in* H; E *om*.
214. [*That* EH] Quhar C.
215. *A*] Ane H. *sum thaim*] them H.
216. *And*] That H.
217. [*That with*] *so in* EH; *misarranged* With that *in* C.
218. *On*] On *the*. *doun—than*] of the towne were H.
219. *the*] H *retains*; E *om*.
223. *In-to*] In full H.
225. *for*] him H.
227. [*Then* EH] That C.
228. *schir*] Sir H; E *om*.
229. *ȝeit nocht*] no*ch*t ȝeit.
230. *ȝhis*] Yes H. *forouten*] withowtyn.
232. *For*] There H.
233. *couerit*] cured H.
235. I sall haue them, or then they me H.
237. *haill*] well H.

Of his cou*e*ring all blith *th*ai war,
And maid *th*ame for *th*e battale ȝar.

[Heire the erl of bowchquhane fleys, & schir dauid brechen ȝeldis hym to the king.]

Bruce with 700 men comes to Old Meldrum.

THE nobill king ande his menȝe, 240
That mycht weill neir vij hundreth be,
Toward ald meldrome tuk *th*e way,
Quhar *th*e erll and his menȝe lay.
*Th*e discurrour*is* saw *th*ame cu*m*ande 244

[Fol. 67. C.]

With baneris to *th*e vynd vafand,
And tald it to *th*ar lord in hy,

The Earl prepares to fight.

*Th*at gert arm his men hastely,
And *th*ame arayit for battale. 248
Behynd *th*ame set *th*ai *th*ar merdale,
And maid gude sembland for *th*e ficht.
The king com on with mekill my*ch*t;
And [*th*ai] abaid, makand gret fair, 252
Till *th*ai neir at assemble war.
Bot quhen *th*ai saw *th*e nobill king
Cum stoutly on vithout stinting,

The Earl's men retreat

A litill on bridill *th*ai *th*ai*m* vith-drew; 256
And *th*e king, *th*at [ry*ch*t] weill knew
*Th*at *th*ai war all discumfit neir,
Pressit on *th*ame with his baneir;
And *th*ai vith-drew *th*ai*m* mair & mair. 260
And quhen *th*e small folk *th*ai had *th*ar
Saw *th*ar lord*is* vith-draw *th*ame swa,

and at length flee.

*Th*ai turnit *th*ar bak all, and to-ga,
And fled, all scalit heir and *th*air. 264

238. *couering*] recouering H.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
242. *tuk*] held H.
245. *vafand*] wawand E; waiuand H.
246. *tald it*] tauld it H; ȝeid E.
249. *merdale*] pouerail H; *blank space in* E.
250. *the*] to EH.
252. [*thai* E] they H; ay C.
253. *at assemble*] at assembling E; assembled H.
255. *vithout stinting*] for-owtyn fenȝeing. H *like* C.
257. [*rycht* E] right H; *th*ame C.
260. *thaim*] them H; E *om.*
263. *thar*] their H; *the* E. *all and*] and haill H.

The lord*is*, *th*at ȝeit to-gidd*ir* war,
Saw *th*at *th*air small folk war fleand,
And saw *th*e kyng stoutly cu*m*and,
*Th*ai war ilkane abasit swa 268
*Th*at *th*ai the bakk*is* gaf, & to-ga.
A litill stound sa*m*myn held *th*ai,
And syne ilk man has tane h*is* way.
Fell neu*ir* [men] so foull myschans 272
Eft*ir* so sturdy cuntyrnans.
For quhen *th*e kyng*is* cumpany
Saw at *th*ai fled so fowlely,
*Th*ai chassit *th*ame vith all *thar* mayn, 276
[And] sum *th*ai tuk, and sum var slayn.
The remanand war fleand ay,
Quha had gud horſ, gat best avay!
Till yngland fled *th*e erll of bouchane, 280
Schir Iohne mowbray is vith him gane,
And war resettit with *th*e king.
[Bot] *th*ai had bath bot schort lesting,
For *th*ai deit soyn eft*ir* syñe. 284
And schir dauid of brechyne
Fled to brechine, his awn castele,
And varnyst it bath fair and wele.
Bot the Erll of adell, davy, 288
His sone *th*at wes in kyndromy,
Com syne, and him assegit *th*ar.
And he, *th*at wald hald veyr no mair,
Nor bargañe vith the nobill kyng, 292
[Com syne] his man vith gude treting.

Their leaders also are afraid, and flee.

The king's men give chase.

The Earl and Mowbray flee to England.

Sir David flees to Brechin,

but is besieged by the Earl of Atholl.

[Fol. 67 b. C]

269. *bakkis*] bak E; backe H.
271. *has—his*] tooke sundrie H.
272. [*men* E] man CH.
273. C *has* sturdy ane, *but* EH *omit* ane.
277. [*And* EH] For C. *var*] has.
279. *gud*] best H.
280. *bouchane*] bowchquhane.
282. *resettit*] resett E; resset H.
283. [*Bot* EH] For C.
286. *to*] till. *awn*] awine.
288. *adell*] Atholl. *dary*] Sir Dauy H.
289. *kyndromy*] kyldromy EH.
291. *veyr*] wer.
293. [*Com syne*] Come syne EH; Bot com C. *treting*] liking H.

[Heire the king byrnys al bowchquhane, & gettis the castell of forfaire & distrois It.

Bruce advances to Buchan, and wastes it.

Now ga we to *the* king agane,
*Th*at of his victor wes richt fane,
And gert his men burn all bouchane 296
Fra end till end, and sparit nane;
And heryit *th*ame on sic maneir,
*Th*at eftir *th*at, neir fifty ȝheir,
Men menyt *the* heirschip of bouchañe. 300
*Th*e king *th*an till his peß has tane

He makes all the country north of the Month his own.

The north cuntre, that hwmylly
Obeysit till his senȝory,
Swa *th*at be north *the* month var nañe, 304
*Th*at *th*ai ne war his men ilkane.
His lordschip wox ay mair and mair.
Toward anguß *th*an couth he fair,
[And] thoucht soyn to mak [all] fre 308
[Apon] north half *the* scottis se.

Forfar castle is taken by Philip the forester, of Platter.

*Th*e castell of forfer wes *th*en
Stuffit all vith ynglißmen.
Bot philip [*the* forster], of platan, 312
Has of his frendis vith him tañe,
And vith ledde*r*is all preuely
To *th*e castell he can hym hy,
And clam out-our *th*e vall of stañe, 316
And swagat has *th*e castell tan,

294. RUBRIC *from* E. H *has*—Of the heirship of Buchane, And how the Castell of Forfare was tane.
295. *victor*] wictory.
296. *burn*] bryn.
299. *neir*] weile.
302. *cuntre*] cuntreys. *that hwmylly*] *th*at humbly E; all hailelie H.
305. *Th*en *th*ai his men war eu*ir*ilkane E; Bot they his men were commen ilkane H.
307. *than couth*] syne gan.
308. [*And* EH] *That* C. *soyn*] sone. [*all* E] his all H; his awn C. *See* l. 328.
309. [*Apon*] All on C; *That* wes on *the* E; That were on H. *But see* ll. 329 and 460.
312. [*the forster*] *This is what is meant;* C *has*—a froster; *the* forestar E; the Fraser H. *platan*] platane.
315. *Th*] Till. *can*] gan.
316. *clam*] clambe H; E *om.* *out-our*] wp our E; vp ouer H.
317, 318. H *omits.*

Throu falt of vach, vith litill payn.
And syn all *th*at he fand has slayn,
Syne ȝald *th*e castell to *th*e king, 320 He yields the castle to Bruce.
*Th*at maid hym richt gud revarding;
And syne gert brek douñe *th*e vall, [Fol. 30 *b*. E.]
And fordid [well and] castell all.

How gud king robert the bruce segit the toun of perth.

Qwhen *th*at *th*e castell of forfar 324
And all *th*e towris tu*m*lit var
Doun to *th*e erd, as I haf tald,
*Th*e viß king, *th*at ves vicht and bald,
That thoucht *th*at he vald mak all fre 328
Apon north half *th*e scottis Se,
Till perth is went vith all his rout Bruce goes to besiege Perth.
And vmbeset *th*e touñe about,
And till it has añe sege soyn set. 332
Bot quhill it my*ch*t haf men & met,
It my*ch*t no*ch*t, but gret payn, be tañe.
For *th*e wallis war all of stañe, The walls are strong and well defended.
Vith thik towris and hye standand. 336
And *th*at tym war *th*ar-in duelland
[Moffat] and als olifert;

318. *falt*] faute.
322. *gert*] he gart H; *but* CE *omit* he.
323. [*well and* EH] *th*e C. *Cf.* Bk. v. l. 412.
RUBRIC. *From* C. E *has*—Heir*e* *th*e king seg*is* sanc*t* Ionstou*n*. H *has*—How the King wan Sainct Iohnstoun, And tumbled all the Towres down.
325. *tumlit*] tumblyt E; down tumbled H.
326. *I*] Ik.
327. *Th*e king *th*at wy*ch*t wes, wyss, & bauld E; The king that stout was, starke and bauld H.
329. *Apon*] Apon *th*e E; Upon H.
330. *is*] he H.
332. *has—soyn*] A sege has E; hes a Siege H.
333. *it*] they H.
335. *th*e—*all*] all *th*e wall wes *th*en E; all the walles were then H.
336. *Vith thik*] And wycht E; And thicke H.
337. *war—duelland*] were there in winning H.
338. [*Moffat* E] Mufhet C; The Methwenes H. *olifert*] olyfard E. *als olifert*] the Olyphands H.

*Th*ai twa *the* toun had all in vard.

The Earl of Strath Earn was [Fol. 68. C.] there.

Of strathern als *the* Erll wes *th*ar; 340
Bot his soñe and of his men var
Vithout, in-to *the* king*is* rout.
*Th*ar wes oft bikkyrring stith & stout,
And men slayn apon ilk party. 344
Bot *the* gud king, *th*at all vitty
Wes in his dedis eu*ir*ilkañe,
Saw *the* vall so stith of stañe,
And saw defens at *th*ai can ma, 348

Bruce sees Perth cannot be taken by open assault.

And how *the* toun wes hard to ta
Vith oppyn assale, be strinth or my*ch*t,
*Th*arfor he thoucht to virk vith slicht.
And all *the* tym *th*at he *th*air lay 352
He spyit, and slely gert assay
Quhar of *the* dik *the* schawdest was;

He finds a place where the dike is fordable,

Till at *the* last he fand a place,
*Th*at men mycht to *th*air schulder*is* vaid. 356
And quhen he *th*at place fundyn had,
He gert his menȝe busk ilkane,
Quhen sex owk*is* of *the* sege ves gañe.
*Th*ai tursit *th*air harnaſ halely, 360
And left *the* sege all oppinly,

and then goes away.

And furth with all his folk can fair,
As he wald do *th*ar-to no mair.

[Heire he gettis it with Iuperty.]

And *th*ai *th*at war within *the* touñe, 364
Quhen *th*ai to fair so saw hym bouñe,
*Th*ai schowtit hym and scornyng maid;

339. *all—vard*] in their hands H.
340. *Of*] And off. *strathern*] straitherne.
347. *vall*] wallis EH.
348. *defens*] the fence H.
350. *assale*] sawt E; assault H. *be*] E *om.*
352. *all the*] in all EH.
354. *of*] at H; E *om.* *dik*] dykes H. *the* (2)] it H; E *om.* *schawdest*] shaldest EH.
356. *men*] they H.
358. *menȝe*] men.
359. *owkis*] Oulkes H; woukis E.
360. *Thai*] And EH.
RUBRIC. *From* E.

And he furth on his vayis raid,
As he na will had agane to turñe, 368
Na besyde *th*ame to mak soiorñe.
Bot in aucht dais, nocht-for-*th*i,
He gert mak ledd*er*is preuely,
That mycht suffice till his entent, 372
And in a myrk ny*ch*t syne is went
*Toward *th*e touñ with his menȝe.
*Bot hors and knafis all left he
*Fer fra *th*e touñ, and syne has tañe
**Th*air ledd*er*is; and on fut ar gañe
Toward *th*e toune all preuely;
*Th*ai herd no vachis spek no cry.
For *th*ai *th*at war vithin, ma fall, 376
As men *th*at drede no*ch*t, slepit all.
*Th*ai had no dreid *th*an of *th*e king,
For *th*ai of hym herd no tithing
All *th*ai thre dais befor and mair, 380
*Th*arfor sekir and trast *th*ai war.
And quhen *th*e king herd thame no*ch*t steir,
He wes blith apon gret maneir,
And his leddir in hand can ta, 384 [Fol. 66 b. C.]
Ensampill till his men till ma,
Arayit weill in all his geir,
Schot in *th*e dik, and vith his speir
Tastit, quhill he weill our woude, 388
Bot till his throt *th*e vattir stude.
That tym wes in his cumpany
A knycht of france, wicht and hardy,
And quhen he in *th*e vattir swa 392

Eight days afterwards, he returns with ladders, in the dark.

The men within feel quite secure.

Bruce fords the dike, but the water is up to his neck.

368. *na—had*] ne had will.
369. *to mak*] mak mar.
374*—377*. E *omits*. H *retains*.
375*. *Bot*] And H. *all left*] leaved H.
377*. *Thair ledderis*] His ladders H.
376. *that*] E *om*.
377. *slepit*] slepand E; but slept H.
379. *no tithing*] nathing.
380. *and*] or.
383. *apon*] on.
387. *in*] on.
388. *quhill*] till E; till that H. *weill*] it EH. *woude*] woud E; wade H.

A French knight is smitten with wonder,

Saw *th*e king pas, and vith him ta
His leddir vnabasitly,
He sanyt hym for the ferly,
And said, "A lord! quhat sall we say 396
Of our lordis of france, ȝhat ay
With gud morsellis farsis *th*air panch,
And will bot et [and] drynk and dance,
Quhen sic a knycht, sa richt vorthy, 400
As this is throu his cheuelry,
In-to sic perill has hym set
To vyn añe vrechit hamlet!"

and follows Bruce's example.

With *th*at vord to *th*e dik he ran, 404
And our eft*ir th*e kyng he wan.
And quhen *th*e kyng*is* menȝe saw
*Th*ar lord pas our, in-till a thraw

The men all cross the dike,

*Th*ai passit *th*e dik, and but mar let 408
*Th*air ledder*is* to *th*e wall *th*ai set;
And to clym vp fast pressit *th*ai;
And *th*e gud kyng, as I herd say,

and climb the wall.

Wes *th*e to*thir* man *th*at tuk *th*e vall, 412
And baid *th*air till his menȝe all
War cu*m*my*n* our in full gret hy;
ȝeit raiß *thar* nou*thir* noiß nor cry.
Bot soyn eft*ir th*ai noyis maid, 416
*Th*at of *th*ame first pe*r*saving had,

At last, they are discovered.

So *th*at *th*e cry raiß throu *th*e touñe;
Bot he, that vith his men wes bouñe
[Fol. 31. E.] Till assale, [to] *th*e toune is went, 420

397. *ay*] *th*ai.
398. *panch*] pawnchis.
399. [*and* EH] C *om.* *dance*] dawnsis.
400. *knycht*] King H. *sa richt*] and sa EH.
401. *is*] E *om.*
403. *ane*] A. *hamlet*] hamillet E; Hamelet H.
407. *pas*] owt. *pas our*] the King H.
408. *Thai passit*] Past to H.
411. *And*] Bot.
412. *tothir*] secund E; second H. *man—tuk*] man tuk E; yeed ouer H.
414. *our*] wp E; vp H.
415. *raiss thar*] *th*an raiss E; then raise H. *nor*] na.
420. [*to* EH] C *om.*

And *th*e mast of his menȝe sent
All scalit throu *th*e toun, bot he — Bruce makes a stand with some men,
Held with him-self a gret me*n*ȝe,
Swa *th*at he mycht be appurvait — 424
To defend, gif he war assayit.
Bot *th*ai, *th*at he send throu *th*e touñe, — whilst others disperse through the town.
Put soyn to gret confusiouñe
*Th*air fayis, *th*at in beddis war, — 428
Or scalit, fleand heir and *th*air,
*Th*at, or *th*e sone raiß, *th*ai had tañe
*Th*air fayis, and discumfit ilkañe.
*Th*e vardanis bath *th*arin war tañe, — 432 [Fol. 69. C.]
And maliß of strathern is gane — The wardens are taken, and also the Earl of Strath Earn.
Till his fader, *th*e Erll maliß,
And with strinth tuk him & all his ;
Syne, for his sake, *th*e nobill king — 436
Gaf hym his land in gou*er*nyng.
*Th*e laif, *th*at ran out throu *th*e touñe,
Sesit to *th*añe in gret fusiouñe
Men, armyng, and marchandiß, — 440 Bruce's men gain much booty,
And o*th*ir gudis on syndr*i* viß,
Quhill *th*ai, *th*at war eir pou*er* and bare,
Of *th*at gude rich and mychty war.
Bot *th*air wes few slayn ; for *th*e king — 444 but slay very few.
Had gevin *th*ame in *com*mandyng,
On gret payn, *th*ai suld slay nañe,
*Th*at, but gret bargane, mycht be tañe ;
For *th*ai war kynde to *th*e cuntre, — 448

424. *appurvait*] ay purwayit E ; ay puruayde H.
427. *soyn to*] to sa EH.
429. *fleand*] fleeing H ; fled E.
431. *and*] *so in* H ; or E.
433. *maliss*] malice E ; Malise H. *strathern*] straithern E.
435. *all*] H *retains ;* E *om.*
437. *land*] H *retains ;* E *om.*
438. *out throu*] with-out.
439. *in*] in-to. *fusiouns*] fusoun.
440. *Men*] Men and E ; *but* H *omits* and.
441. *gudis*] gud E ; good H.
442. *war eir*] er war E ; were baith H.
445. *Had — thame*] *Th*at *th*aim had.
446. *On*] *so in* E ; Upon H. *thai*] *that thai.*
448. *For*] *so in* H ; *Th*at E.

He wist, and had of *th*ame pite.

Bruce dismantles Perth.

On this maner *th*e toun wes tañe,
And syne *th*e towris eu*er*ilkañe
And vallis gert he tu*m*myll douñe; 452
He levit nocht about *th*at touñe
Tour standand, stane no wall,
*Th*at he na haly gert [stroy] all.
And presoneris *th*at *th*air tuk he, 456
He send quhar *th*ai my*ch*t haldin be,
And till his peß tuk all *th*e land;
Wes nane *th*at durst him *th*an vithstand.

[Heire all scottis obeys the king excep lorne.]

All are subject to Bruce except the men of Lorn and Argyle.

Apon north half *th*e scottis Se 460
Obeysit all till his maieste,
Outane *th*e lord of lorñe, and *th*ai
Of argile, *th*at vald vith him ga.
He held eu*ir* agañe *th*e king, 464
And hatit hym̃e atour all thing.
Bot ȝeit, or all *th*e ga*m*myn ga,
I trow weill *th*at *th*e king sall ta
Vengeans of his gret cruelte, 468
And *th*at him sair repent sall he,
*Th*at he *th*e king contraryit ay,
May fall, quhen he no mend it may.

[Heire is mekyl commendyt schir edward bruss.]

*Th*e king*is* bro*thir*, quhen *th*e towñe 472
Wes takyn *th*us and doungyn douñe,

Edward Bruce goes to Galloway.

Schir Eduard, *th*at wes so vorthy,
Tuk vith him a gret Cumpany,

449. *had—thame*] off *th*aim had.
450. *On*] In.
451. *the*] E *om.*
454. *stane*] na stane E.
455. *na*] ne. [*stroy*] stroy *th*aim E; distroy C; destroy them H.
457. *haldin*] keeped H.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
461. *Obeysit all*] All obeysyt E; All obeyed H.
462. *lord of*] *so in* H; E *om.*
463. *vald*] wald not H.
464. *euir*] him ay.
471. *no—it*] it mend na E; it mend not H.
RUBRIC. *From* E.

And tuk his gat toward gallovay. 476
For vith his men he valde assay
Gif he recou*er* mycht *th*at land,
And vyn fra ynglis men*n*ys hande. [Fol. 69 *b*. C.]
This Schir Eduard forsuth, I hicht, 480 Sir Edward was rash and head-strong, but very bold.
Wes of his handis a nobill kny*cht*,
And in blithnes swet and Ioly;
Bot he wes outrageous hardy,
And of so hye vndirtaking, 484
*Th*at he neu*ir* had none abasing
Of multitude of men; for-*th*i
He discumfit co*m*monly
Mony vith quheyn; *th*arfor had he 488
Outour his peris renowne.
For quha rehers wald all h*is* deid,
Of [his] hye vorschipe and manheid
Men mycht mony romanys mak; 492
And, no*cht*-for-*th*i, I think till tak
On hand, off hym to say sum thing, I must say something about him.
Bot nocht *th*e tend part his travaling.
This gud knycht *th*at I spek of heir, 496
With all *th*e folk *th*at vyth hym weir, Edward Bruce goes to Galloway, as I said.
Veill soyn to galloway cu*m*myn is,
All *th*at he fand he maid it [h]is;
And ryotit gretly the land*e*. 500
Bot *th*an in gallovay war vonnand

476. *toward*] till E; in H.
478. *recouer mycht*] my*cht* recou*er*.
479. *vyn*] wyn it EH.
480. *forsuth*] the Bruce H. *I*] Ik.
481. *handis*] hand EH.
485. *neuir had none*] haid neu*ir* ȝeit EH.
488. *quheyn*] quhone E; wheene H.
489. *Outour*] Owt ou*er* E; Attour H. *renowne*] renomme.
490. *Fvr*] And. *rehers wald*] wald reherss. *his*] *the*.
491. [*his* E] CH *om*. *and*] and his H.
492. *mony*] a mekill EH. *romanys*] Romanes H; *blank space in* E.
493. *till*] to.
494. *off hym*] *wrongly put at the end of the line in* E.
495. *the*] EH *om*. *tend part*] tendpart C; tende part E; teind part H.
496. RUBRIC *in* H—How Sir Edward discomfist at Cree, Sir Ingrame Vmfrauile, and Aymerie.
499. *maid it*] makyt E; makes all H. [*his* E] is C.
500. *ryotit*] ryotyt E; aryotit C; heryed H.

Sir Ingram de Umfraville

Schir yngerame vmphrevell, *th*at ves
Renownit of so hye prowes,
*Th*at he of vorschip passit *th*e rout. 504

used to bear about a red bonnet on a spear.

*Th*arfor he gert ay ber about
Apon a sper añe red bonat,
In-to *th*e takyn *th*at he wes set
In[to] *th*e hicht of cheuelry; 508

Sir Amery Saint John and he go against Sir Edward.

Of Sanct Iohñe als am[*er*]y.
*Th*ai twa *th*e land had in stering,
And quhen *th*ai herd of *th*e cu*m*myng
Of s*chir* Eduard, *th*at so planly 512
Our-raid *th*e land, *th*an in gret hy
*Th*ai assemblit all *th*air menȝe,
[Fol. 81 *b*. E.] I trow twelf hundreth *th*ai my*ch*t be.

[Heire schir edward bruss discumfis the inglis men at cre.]

Sir Edward defeats them at Cree,

Bot he vith fewar folk *th*ai*m* met 516
Besyde Cre, and so hard *th*ame set
With hard battale in stalwarde ficht,
*Th*at he *th*ame all put to *th*e flicht,
And slew twa hundreth wele & ma, 520

and they flee to Bothwell Castle.

Ande *th*e chiftanis in hy can ta
Thair way to [Bothwell], for till be
Resauit in-to gude savite.
And schir Eduard *th*amẽ chasit fast; 524
[Fol. 70. C.] Bot [till] *th*e castell at *th*e last
[Gat] s*chir* yngerame and s*chir* am[*er*]y;
Bot *th*e best of *th*air cu*m*pany

502. *yngerame*] ingrahame. *vmphrevell*] *the* umphrawill.
503. *Renownit*] Renommyt. *hye*] great H.
506. *ane*] A.
507. *the takyn*] takyn E; takinning H.
508. *In-to* EH] In C. *of*] of all C; *but* EH *omit* all.
509. *Of*] And of C; *but* EH *omit* And. *amery*] Aymery H; Aymry E; amy C.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
518. *in*] and EH.
522. [*Bothwell* EH] buttill C. *till*] to.
523. *Thar* resawyt to sawfte E; Receiued there into sauitie H.
525. [*till* E] to H; in C.
526. [*Gat* E] Gate H; Gaf C. *yngerame*] Ingrahame E; Ingrame H. *amery* E] Aymery H; amy C.

Left ded behynd *th*ame in *th*e plaſ. 528
And quhen *sch*ir Eduard saw *th*e chaſ
Wes falit, he gert [seyſ] *th*e pray,
And swa gret cattell had avay,
*Th*at it war voundir for till se. 532
Of [bothwell] tour, *th*ai saw how he
Gert his men drif vith him *thar* pray;
Bot no let set *thar*in mycht *th*ai.
Throu [his] cheuelrous cheuelry 536
Gallovay wes stonayit gretumly,
And doutit hym for his bounte.
Sum of *th*e men of *th*e Cuntre
Com till his peſ, and maid him ath. 540
Bot *sch*ir am[*er*]y, *th*at had *th*e scath
Of *th*e Bargane I tald of er,
Raid till yngland, and purchast *th*er
Of armyt men gret cumpany, 544
To venge hym of *th*e velany,
[*Th*at] *sch*ir Eduarde *th*e nobill kny*ch*t
Hym did by cre in-till *th*e ficht.
Of gude men he assemblit *th*air 548
Weill xv hundreth men and mar,
*Th*at war of richt gude renowne;
His way vith all that folk tuk he,
And in *th*e land all preuely 552
He ente*r*it vith [*th*at] cheuelry,
Thinkand *sch*ir Eduard to suppriſ,
Gif *th*at he my*ch*t on ony viſ.

Sir Edward wins much cattle.

All Galloway is afraid of him.

Sir Aymer goes to England,

and gets 1500 men, and hopes to surprise Sir Edward.

530. [*seyss* E] sese H; cesa C.
531. *gret*] feill H.
532. *till*] to.
533. *Of—tour*] Of buttil tour C; Of Bothwell Towre H; Out of bothwell E.
534. *drif*] dryue. *thar*] *the* EH.
535. *set tharin*] *so in* E; there till set H.
536. [*his* EH] *th*is C. *cheuelrous*] chewalrouss E; couragious H.
538. *doutit hym*] hym doutit C; *but* H *has* doubted him; he dowtyt E.
541. *amery* E] Aymer H; amy C.
543. *and purchast*] till purches E; to purchase H.
546. [*That* EH] *Th*an C. *the*] *th*at.
547. *by*] at H.
550. *renowne*] renowme.
553. *He*] EH *om.* [*that* EH] *th*air C.

For he thoucht he vald hym assale, 556
Or *th*at he left, in playn battale.
Now may ȝe heir of gret ferly,
And of richt hye cheuelry.

Sir Edward comes to hear of it.

For s*chir* Eduard in-to *th*e land 560
Wes with his menȝe neir at hand;
And in *th*e mornyng ri*ch*t airly
He herd *th*e cu*n*tre men mak cry,
*Th*at had vitt*er*ing of *th*air cu*m*myng. 564
*Th*an buskit he him but delaying,
And lap on hors deliu*er*ly.

He has 50 men with him.

He had *th*an in his rowt fifty,
Apon gude hors armyt richt veill. 568
His small folk gert he ilk deill
Vith-draw *th*ame till a strate neir by,
And he raid furth vith his fifty.

[Heire he discumfis fer ma manfully, that is to say XV.C. with L.]

[Fol. 70 *b*. C.]

A certain knight, Sir Allan of Cathcart, told me all about it.

A kny*ch*t *th*at *th*an wes in his rout, 572
Vorthy [and] vicht, stalward and stout,
Curtaß [and] fair, and of gude fame,
Schir alane of [catcart] be name,
Tald me this taill as I sall tell. 576
Gret myst in-to *th*e mornyng fell,
Swa *th*at men my*ch*t no*ch*t se thaim by,

It was a misty morning.

For myst, aňe bow-draucht fullely.
So hapnyt *th*at *th*ai fand *th*e traiß 580
Quhar at *th*e rout furth passit waß
Of *th*air fais, *th*at forouth raid.

558. RUBRIC *in* H—How Sir Edward with fifty, Wan fifteene hundreth, and Sir Aymery.
561. *neir at*] ry*ch*t neir.
563. *He*] E *om*.
564. *That*] And EH. *vittering*] wyttryng E; a witting H.
567. *his*] E *om*.
568. *Apon*] All apon E; All lap on H. *armyt*] arrayed H. *richt*] EH *om*.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
573. [*and* EH] C *om*.
574. [*and* EH] C *om*.
575. [*catcart*] carcat (*evidently miswritten for* catcart) C; Catkert E; Cathkart H.
576. *as—sall*] I to you H.
578. *that men*] *th*ai.
579. *ane*] A.

Schir Eduard, *th*at gret ȝarnyng had
All tyme for till do cheuelry, 584
Vith all his rout in full gret hy
Followit *th*e traß quhar gane var *th*ai.
And befor myd-morne of *th*e day,
*Th*e myst wox cleir [all] suddanly ; 588
*Th*an he and all his cumpany
War nocht añe bow-draucht fra *th*e rout.
*Th*an schot *th*ai on *th*ame vith a schout ;
For gif *th*ai fled, *th*ai vist *th*at *th*ai 592
Suld no*ch*t weill ferd p*ar*t get away,
*Th*arfor In auenture till de
He vald him put, or he vald fle.
And quhen *th*e ynglißˇ cumpany 596
Saw on *th*ame cum so suddanly
Sic folk, forouten abasing,
*Th*ai war stonayit for affraying.
And *th*e t*ohir*, but ſhair abaid, 600
So hardely emang *th*ame raid,
*Th*at fele of *th*ame to erde *th*ai bare.
Richt gretly *th*us stonayit *th*ai vare
Throu [*th*e] fors of that first assay, 604
*Th*at *th*ai war in-to gret affray,
And vend be fer *th*ai had beyn ma,
For *th*at *th*ai war assalȝit swa.
And syne s*chir* Eduard*is* cumpany, 608
Quhen *th*ai had thrillit *th*ame hastely,
Set stoutly in *th*e hedis agane,
Ande at *th*at cours borne doun & slañe

Sir Edward follows the enemy's trail.

The mist clears off, and Sir Edward at once charges the 1500.

The English are astonished,

and think Sir Edward's company must be a large one.

584. *tyme—till*] tymys to.
588. [*all* EH] and C.
589. *Than*] And *th*an EH. *all*] EH *om*.
590. *ane*] A.
593. *ferd*] feyrd E; fourt H.
599. *stonayit for*] put into great H.
601. *emang*] amang.
603. Stonayit sa gretly *than* *th*ai war E; Astoneyed sa greatly they were H.
604. [*the* EH] C *om*.
606. *be fer*] by far H; befor E. *ma*] *so in* EH; may C.
608, 609. *So in* H, *but omitting* syne. Quhen *th*ai had thyrlyt *th*aim hastily *Than* s*chir* Eduuard*is* cumpany E.
610. *hedis*] heid E; head H.

The English are frightened.

War of *th*air fais a gret party, 612
[Fol. 33. E.] *Th*at *th*an affrait war so gretly,
*Th*at *th*ai var scalit gretly *th*en.
And quhen s*chir* Eduard and his men
Saw *th*ame in-to so Ill aray, 616

At the third charge, the English flee.

*Th*e thrid tyme on *th*ame prikid *th*ai.
And *th*ai *th*at saw *th*ame so stoutly
[Fol. 71. C.] Cum on *th*ame, dred *th*ame gretumly,
*Th*at all *th*air rout, bath les and mair, 620
Fled, ilkane scalit heir and *th*air.
Wes nane emang *th*ame so hardy
To byde, bot all comonly
Fled to varrand; and he can chaß, 624
*Th*at vilfull till distroy *th*ame vaß.
For sum he tuk, and sum war slayn;

Sir Aymery escapes to England.

[Bot] schir Am[*er*]y with mekill payn
Eschapit, and his gat is gane. 628
His men discumfit war ilkane;
Sum tane, sum slayn, sum gat avay;
This wes a richt fair poynt, p*er*fay!

[Schir edward bruss in a ȝere wan xiij castellis.]

Rash boldness is often successful.

Lo! how hardyment tane suddanly, 632
And drivin syne till end scharply,
May ger oft-siß vnlikly thyng*is*
Cum to richt fair and gud ending*is*!
Richt as it fell in this case heir; 636
For hardyment withouten weir
Wan xv hundreth with fifty,

613. *than affrait*] *th*ai effrayit.
617. *on—prikid*] on *th*aim prekyt E; on them preiked H; prikid on *th*ame C.
619. *thame* (1)] E *om.* *thame* (2)] *th*aim sa. *dred—gretumly*] and sa hardely H.
621. *ilkane*] prekand E; ilkane H.
622. *emang*] amang.
623. *comonly*] comonaly.
624. *varrand*] warand.
626. *For*] And EH. *war*] hes H.
627. [*Bot* E] But H; And C. *Amery*] *so in* E; Aymery H; Amy C.
631. *This*] It.
632. *tane*] tane sa.
633. *syne till*] syne to the H; to *the* E.
636. As It fell in to *th*is cass her.

Quhar ay for ane *th*ai var thretty.
And twa men ar a ma*n*is her; 640
Bot vre *th*ame led on sic maner,
*Th*at *th*ai discumfit war Ilkañe.
Schir Am[*er*]y hame his gat is gañe,
Richt blith *th*at he so gat avay, 644
I trow he sall nocht mony a day
Haue will to warra *th*at cuntre,
With-*th*i Schir Eduard *thar*in be!
Ande he duelt furth in-to *th*e land, 648
*Th*ame *th*at rebelland war warrand,
And in a ȝeir so warrait he,
*Th*at he wan quytly *th*at cuntre
Till his bro*thir*is peß *th*e kyng; 652
Bot *th*at wes nocht but hard fichting.
For in *th*at tyme *th*air him befell
Mony fair poynt, as I herd tell,
*Th*e quhilk *th*at ar nocht vritin heir. 656
Bot weill I wat *th*at, in *th*at ȝeir,
xiii Castellis with strynth he wan,
And ourcom mony A mody man,
Quha-sa *th*e suth of hym vald reid. 660
Had he had mesur in his deid,
I trow *th*at worthyar *th*an he
Micht nocht in his tyme fundyn be,
Outakyn his bro*th*ir anyrly, 664
To quhom, in-to gude cheuelry,
I dar peir nane, wes in his day.

The English were 30 to 1.

Sir Edward wins all Galloway.

He won 13 castles in all.

Only his brother was his peer.

639. *var*] wes. *thretty*] threttie H; twenty (!) E.
640. *So in* E, *with* mannys *for* mania. H *has*—And twa men is ouer mony heere.
641. *vre thame*] *so in* E; they were H. *sic*] swilk.
643. *Amery* E] Amy C; Aymer H.
645. *a*] E *om.*
646. *Haue*] Haiff. *warra*] werray.
648. *he*] *so in* H; E *om.*
649. *rebelland—warrand*] rebell war werrayand.
650. *warrait*] werrayit.
651. *quytly*] qwyt E; quyte all H.
655. *I*] Ik.
657. *weill—wat*] I wate weile.
660. *the—hym*] off him *the* south. *vald*] wald H; will E.
665. *gude*] good H; E *om.*
666. *I—wes*] Lyk wes nane E; I dare compare nane, was H.

Bruce himself was prudent as well as bold. [Fol. 71 b. C.]

For he led hym with mesure ay,
And vith gret vit his cheuelry 668
He gou*er*nit ay so worthely
*Th*at he oft full vnlikly thing
Brocht [rycht] weill to full gud ending.

[Heire schir Iames dowglas metis with schir alexander stewart lord bonkle.]

Douglas withstands his enemies in Selkirk.

In all this tym Iames of douglas 672
In *th*e forest travaland was,
[And] it throu hardyment and slicht
Occupyit, magre all *th*e mycht
Of his feill fayis, *th*e quhe*thir th*ai 676
Set him full oft in hard assay.
Bot oft throu wit and throu bounte
His purpoſ to gud end brocht he.
In-till *th*at tym him fell, throu caſ, 680
A ny*ch*t, as he traualand was,

Douglas comes to a house near the water of Lyne,

And thoucht for till haue tan restyñe
In a houſ on *th*e watt*ir* of lyne ;
And as he com with his menȝe 684
Neirhand *th*e houſ, swa lisnyt he,

and overhears talking.

And herd *th*air sawis ilke deill.
And by that he persauit weill
At *th*ai war strange men at *th*air 688
*Th*at ny*ch*t *th*air-in herberyit wair.
And as he thoucht, it fell, per cas ;

668. *gret vit*] wyt E ; wit all H.
669. *ay*] *so in* H ; E *om.*
671. [*rycht* E] right H; C *om.* *full*] a H ; E *om.*
RUBRIC. *From* E. H *has*—How Iames Dowglas tooke Thomas Randel, And Alexander Stewart, as I heard tell.
673. *travaland*] trawaland E ; he travaland C ; ay trauelling H.
674. [*And* EH] *Th*at C.
675. *magre all*] all magre EH.
676. *feill*] fell.
677. *full—in*] oft in full E ; oft syes in H.
681. *A*] On ane E ; Ane H.
682. *for*] E *om.* *tan*] E *om.* *for—tan*] to haue had his H.
683. *a*] ane. *on*] by H.
686. *thair—deill*] their Sawes euerilke deill H ; ane say *th*arin, *th*e dewill (!) E.
688. *At*] *Th*at. *at*] *th*at.
689. *herberyit*] herbryd.

For of bonkill the Lord *th*ar was,
Alexander steward hat he, 692
And o*th*ir ma of gret bounte,
Thomas randole of gret renowñ,
And Adame alsua of gordouñ,
*Th*at com *th*air with gret cumpany, 696
Aṅd thoucht in *the* forest to ly,
And occupy it throu *th*ar gret my*ch*t,
Bath with travale and stallwart ficht,
To chaß Douglas of *th*at cuntre. 700
Bot o*th*ir wayis all ȝeid *the* gle;
For quhen Iames had witte*r*yng
*Th*at strange men had tane herbreyng
In *the* place quhar he schupe to ly, 704
He till *the* hous went hastely,
And vmbeset it all about.
Quhen *th*ai within herd sic a rout
About *the* houß, *th*ai raiß in hy, 708
And tuk *th*air geir rycht hastely,
And schot furth, fra *th*ai harnast war.
*Th*air fayis *th*aim met vith vapnys bar,
And assalȝeit richt hardely. 712
And *th*ai defendit douch[t]ely
With all *th*air my*ch*t, till at *the* last
*Th*air fais pressit *th*ame so fast,

The lord of Bonkill, Thomas Randolph, and Adam of Gordon were there.

Douglas surrounds the house.

[Fol. 33 b. E.]

[Fol. 72. C.]

There is a hot fight.

691. *bonkill*] bonkle.
692. *steward*] Stewart EH. *hat*] heght H.
693. *And—ma*] With o*thir* twa EH.
694. *randole*] randell EH.
696. *com thair*] *th*ar come.
697. *in*] in-to.
698. *it*] E *om.* *After* it C *has th*air, *which* EH *omit.* *gret*] EH *om.*
699. *Bath*] And. *and*] *repeated in* C.
700. *To*] *so in* H; E *om.* *of*] out of E; fra H.
701. *all*] *th*an.
702—705. H *has*—
When Iames of Dowglas had witting,
And als to him there came tyding,
That strange men had tane harbery,
Into the place where he shupe to ly,
He to that place past hastely,
Baith he and all his company.
704. *quhar*] *th*at. *schupe*] schup hi*m*.
706. *vmbeset*] wmbeset. *it all*] the house H.
707. *sic*] swilk.
710. *schot*] came H. *harnast*] harnasyt.
712. *And*] And them H.
713. *douchtely*] *so in* E; douchely C.

*Th*at *th*air folk falȝeit *th*ame ilkañe. 716

Thomas Randolph is taken.

Thomas randoll *th*air haf *th*ai tañe,
And alexand*er* stewarde alsua
Wes voundit in a place or twa.

Adam of Gordon escapes.

Adam̃e of gordoun fra *th*e ficht, 720
Quhat throu slicht & quhat throu my*ch*t,
Eschapit, and feill of his men;
Bot *th*ai *th*at war arestit *th*en
War of *th*air taking vound*ir* wa; 724
Bot nedlyng*is* *th*ame behufit be swa.

[Heire schir Iames dowglas cumis to the king with schir alexander stewart and thomas randale.]

Douglas is very kind to Stewart and Randolph,

*Th*at ny*ch*t *th*e gud lord of Douglas
Maid to s*chir* alexander, *th*at was
His Emys son, richt gladsum cheir; 728
Sa did he als forouten weir
Till thomas randole, for *th*at he
Wes till *th*e king in neir degre
Of blude, for his sist*er* him bare. 732
And on *th*e morn, forouten mare,

whom he presents to the king.

Toward *th*e nobill king he raid,
And with him bat*h* *th*ai twa he had.
*Th*e king of his cu*m*myng wes blith, 736
And thankit him *th*arof feill sith.
And till his nevo can he say,
"*Th*ou has a quhill renyit *th*i fay;
Bot thou reconsalit now mon be." 740
*Th*an to *th*e king soyn ansuerd he,

The king talks with Randolph.

And saide, "ȝe chasty me, bot ȝhe
Aw bett*ir* chastyit for till be.

717. *haf thai*] wes E; was H.
719. *Wes*] EH *om*.
721. *slicht*] strength H; his strenth E. *&—throu*] and his E; and what through H. *mycht*] slight H.
722. *feill*] ser E; als seire H.
725. *thame—be*] them behooude be H; behowit It be E.
RUBRIC. *From* E.
730. *randole*] Randell.
736. *cummyng*] present EH.
737. *tharof*] thereof H; weill E.
739. *a*] ane.
741. *soyn*] EH *om*.
743. *Aw*] Aucht E; Aught H.

For sen *th*at ȝhe warrait *th*e king 744
Of yngland In-to playn fichting,
ȝhe suld preß till derenȝe ȝ*our* richt,
And noc*h*t with weidr*e* na with slicht."
The king said, "ȝeit, may fall, it may 748 Bruce reproves Randolph,
Cu*m*, or oucht lang, to sic assay.
Bot sen *th*ou spek*is* so ryaly,
It is gret skill at men chasty
*Th*i prowd vourd*is*, till at *th*ou knaw 752 [Fol. 73 b. C.]
*Th*e richt, and bow it as *th*ou aw."
*Th*e king for-out mair delaying
Send hym to be in ferm keping, and keeps him prisoner.
Quhar *th*at he all a quhill suld be 756
Nocht all apon his awn pouste.

744. *that*] EH *om.* *warrait*] werrayit.
745. *In-to*] *so in* H; in E.
746. *ȝour*] you H; E *om.*
747. *weidre*] cowardy. H *has*—With might, and not yet with slight.
748. *may* (1)] EH *om.*
750. *ryaly*] rudly E; rudely H.
751. *skill*] reason H. *at*] that H; E *om.*
752. *Thi*] *Th*al.
753. *bow—as*] duetie that H.
754. *for-out*] for-owtyn.
756. *all—quhill*] a whyle H; allane E.
757. *awn pouste*] awne poustie H; powste fre E.

[BOOK X.]

[Heire the king passis agayn Ion of lorn.]

After Thomas Randolph was put in prison,

Qwhen thomas Randol on *th*is viß
Wes takyn, as I heir deuiß,
And send to duell in gud keping,
For *th*e speke he spak to *th*e king; 4
*Th*e gud king, *th*at thoucht on *th*e scath,
The dispit and *th*e felony bath,
*Th*at Iohñ of lorn had till him doñe,

the king went against Lorn.

His host assemblit he *th*an soyn, 8
And toward lorn he tuk *th*e vay,
With his men in-to gude aray.
Bot Iohñe of lorn of his cu*m*myng
Lang or he com, had vitte*r*yng; 12

John of Lorn gathers 2000 men,

And men on Ilk syde gaderit he,
I trow twa thousand *th*ai mycht be,
And send *th*añe for to stop *th*e vay
Quhar *th*e king behufit to ga. 16
And *th*at wes in añe euill place,

whom he stations in a pass.

*Th*at so strat and so narrow was,
That twa men sa*m*my*n* my*ch*t no*ch*t ryde

RUBRIC. *From* E. H *has*—How the King at Gleclaben, Discomfist Iohn of Lornes men.
2. *I*] Ik.
3. *gud*] firme H.
4. *the* (1)] his H; E *om*. *he*] *th*at he.
6. *the* (2)] E *om*. *felony*] felny E; velany H.
10. *his*] all his H.
12. *vitteryng*] wit*t*e*r*ing E; good witting H.
16. *king*] gud king. *to ga*] *so in* H; *spelt* to gay *in* C; away E.
17—26. H *and* A *omit*.
19. *twa men*] twasu*m*.

In sum place of *the* hyllis syde. 20
*Th*e ne*th*ir half wes perelouſ;
For a schoir crag, hye ande hydvouſ,
Raucht till *the* se doun fra *the* [paſ].
On *the* ow*thir* half añe montañe was 24
So cu*m*rouſ, and ek so stay,
*Th*at it wes hard to pas *that* way.
Crechanben hecht *th*at montañe,
I trow *th*at nocht in all bretañe 28
Añe hyer hill may fundyn be.
*Th*ar Iohñe of lorñe gert his menȝhe
Enbuschit be abovyn *the* vay;
For gif *the* gud king held *th*at way, 32
He thoucht he suld soyn vencust be;
And hym-self held hym on *the* se,
Weill neir *the* [paſ], vith his galays.
Bot *the* king, *th*at in all assays 36
Wes fundyn wiſ and [a]werte,
Persauit *th*air subtilite,
And *th*at he neid *th*at gat suld ga.
His men departit he in twa; 40
And to *the* gud lorde of Douglas,
Quham In all vit and vorschip was,
He taucht *the* archaris eu*ir*ilkañe;
And *th*is gud lord has with him tañe 44
Schir alexander freser *the* vicht,
And villiam̃e viſman, A gud kny*ch*t,

The lower side of the mountain goes steep down into the lake.

The other side is steep too.

It is called Ben Cruachan.

John of Lorn sets some men in ambush there,

and himself watches in a boat.

Bruce perceives his plan,

[Fol. 73. C.]

and sends on Douglas with the [Fol. 33. E.] archers.

22. *schoir*] schor.
23. [*pass* E] place C.
24. *the owthir*] athyr. *ane*] *the*.
25. *cumrouss*] combrowss. *and ek so*] hey and.
27. *Crechanben*] Crechinben E; Clochmabanie H.
31. *vay*] way.
32. *gud*] E *om.* *that way*] *th*ar away. H *has*—Gif the King held that gaite perfay.
34. *on*] apon.
35. [*pass*] paiss E; *but cf.* l. 23; place CH.
37. *awerte*] ry*ch*t werte (*miswritten for* awerty) C; awise E; right wittie H.
38. *thair subtilite*] ry*ch*t weill *thar* sutelte.
39. And at him houed that gaite to ga H.
42. *Quham In*] In whome H. *all—vorschip*] herbryd all worschip E; all vertue winning H.
46. *villiame vissman*] Wil*ȝ*am Wysman.

Douglas and the others climb the hill above Lorn's men.

And with *th*ame gud *schir* androu gray.
Thir with *th*air menȝe held *thar* vay, 48
Ande clam *the* hill delyu*er*ly.
And or *th*ai of *the* to*th*ir p*ar*ty
Persauit *th*ame, *th*ai had ilkane
The hicht [abovyn] *th*air fayis tane. 52

[**Heir the king metis with Ion of lorn menȝe.**]

The king, with his own men, enters the pass, and is attacked,

The king and his men held *thar* way,
And quhen in-to *the* [paß] war *th*ai
Ent*er*it, *the* folk off lorne in hy
Apon *the* king rasit ane cry, 56
And schot, and tu*m*lit on hym stanys,
Richt gret and hevy for *the* nanys.
Bot *th*ai scathit nocht [gretly] *the* king;
For he had *th*air in his leding 60
Men *th*at licht and delyu*er* war,

but his men soon climb up to their assailants.

And licht armyng had on *th*ai*m* *th*ar,
Swa *th*at *th*ai stoutly clam *th*e hill,
And lettit *th*air fayis to fullfill 64
The mast part off *th*ar felony.
And als apon *the* to*th*ir p*ar*ty

Douglas rushes on them, from above, with a shout.

Com Iames of douglas and h*is* rout,
And schot apon *th*ame vith a schout, 68
And voundit *th*ame with arrowis fast.
Syne vith *th*air swerd*is* at *the* last
*Th*ai ruschit emang *th*ame hardely.
For *th*ai of lorn full manfully 72
Grete and [apert] defens can ma.

47. *gud*] syne E; then H.
48. *After this line* C *wrongly inserts*—And quhen in to *the* place war *th*ai *The* king and his menȝe held *th*ar vay.
52. [*abovyn*] abowyne E; abone H; apon C; *cf.* l. 31. RUBRIC *from* E.
54. [*pass* E] place CH.
56. *ane*] the.
57. *hym*] them H.
59. *scathit*] scaith E; skaithed H. [*gretly* E] greatly H; C *om.*
62. *armyng*] armouris E; armours H. *had—thar*] vpon them bare H.
64. *lettit*] stopped H.
70. *Syne*] And.
72. *Fvr*] But H. *manfully*] manlely.
73. [*apert* E] a peart H; pert C. *can*] gan. *ma*] *so in* EH; may C.

Bot quhen *th*ai saw at *th*ai war swa
Assaȝeit apon twa parteis,
And saw weill *th*at *th*air enymyis 76
Had all *th*e farer off *th*e ficht,
In full gret hy *th*ai tuk *th*e flicht;
And *th*ai a fellouñ chaß can ma,
And slew all at *th*ai my*ch*t ourta. 80
And *th*ai *th*at my*ch*t eschap, perfay,
Richt till añe vattir held *th*air vay,
*Th*at ran doun by *th*e hillis syde,
And wes ry*ch*t styth, bat*h* deip & wyde, 84
*Th*at men in na place mycht it paß
Bot at añe Brig beneth *th*ai*m* was.
To *th*at brig held *th*ai fast *th*air way,
And till brek it can fast assay; 88
Bot *th*ai *th*at chassit, quhen *th*ai *th*ai*m* saw
Mak *th*air arest, but dreid or aw
*Th*ai ruschit apon *th*ame hardely,
And discumfit *th*ame vtrely, 92
And held *th*e brig haill, quhill *th*e king,
With all *th*e folk of his leding,
Passit *th*e bryg all at *th*air ese.
Till Iohñe of lorñe it suld displese, 96
I trow, quhen he his men my*ch*t se,
Out of his schippis fra *th*e se,
Be slayn, and chassit fra *th*e hill,
And he my*ch*t set no help *th*ar-till. 100
For it ange*r*is als gretumly
To gud hertis *th*at ar worthy,

Lorn's men, finding themselves attacked on both sides,

flee, and many are slain.

[Fol. 73 *b*. C.]

Others run down beside a stream, to find the bridge below,

which they try to break down.

Bruce's men prevent them.

John of Lorn helplessly beholds his men perish.

77. *farer*] fayrer.
81. *perfay*] *so in* H; but delay E.
84. *And*] It E; That H. *rycht styth*] sa strait H. *bath*] and E; sa H.
86. *beneth*] *th*at beneuth. *beneth thaim*] that narrow H.
87. *held thai*] *so* EH; *th*ai held C. *fast*] straucht.
88. *it*] it doun C; *but* EH *omit* doun. *can fast*] fast gan.
89. *thaim*] them H; E *om*.
91. *hardely*] hastely H.
92. *thame*] *th*ame all C; *but* EH *omit* all.
98. *fra*] into H.
99. *fra*] in.
100. *And*] *Th*at. *help*] let H.
101. *Fvr*] Bot.

Till se *th*air fais fulfill *th*air will,
As to *th*ame-self to thole *th*e Ill. 104

[Heire the king segis & wynnis dunstaffinch castell.]

At sic myscheiff war *th*ai of Lorñe;
For feill *th*e lyff*is* *th*air has lorñe,
And o*th*ir sum *th*ai flede avay.

The king spoils Lorn.

*Th*e kyng in hy gert seſ *th*e pray 108
Of all *th*e land; quhar men my*ch*t se
So gret aboundans cum off fe,
*Th*at it war voundir till behald.
The king *th*at stout wes, stark and bald, 112

He goes to Dunstaffinch,

Till Dunstaffynch richt suddanely
He past, and segit it sturdely,
And assalȝeit, *th*e castell to get.
And in schort tym̃e he has tham̃e set 116
In sic thrang, *that* *thar*in war *th*an,

and takes the castle.

*Th*at, magre *thair*is, he it van;
And a gud vardane *th*air-in set,
And betaucht hym bath men & met, 120
Swa *th*at he *th*air lang tym my*ch*t be,
Magre *thaim* all of *th*at cu*n*tre.

Sir Alexander of Argyle makes peace with Bruce.

Schir alexander of Argill, *th*at saw
The king distroy vp, cleyn and law, 124
His land, send tretis to *th*e king,
And com his man [but] tarying.

[Fol. 74. C.] And he resauit him till his peſ.

RUBRIC. *From* E; *but* castell *is supplied from conjecture.* H *has*—How Linlithgow-Peill winnen was Through William Binnie, & his purchase.

106. *lorne*] forlorne H.

107. *thai*] war E; had H. *avay*] away H; *thar* way E.

108. *hy*] haste H.

113. *Dunstaffynch*] Dunstaffage H. *suddanely*] sturdely.

114. A sege set and besyly E; A Siege set, and busily H.

115. *And*] EH *om.* *the*] that H. *to*] it to E; for to H.

117. *sic*] swilk. *that*] *that* *thai* C; *but* EH *omit* thai.

119. *a*] ane.

121. *thair—tym*] lang tyme *th*ar.

124. *cleyn*] cleane H; *printed* clene P; cleue J; clef (!) I.

125. *tretis*] treyteris E; treitise H.

126. [*but* EH] vithout C. *tarying*] mar duelling.

Bot Iohñe of lorn his soñe ȝeit wes 128 John of Lorn escapes.
Rebell, as he wes wont to be,
And fled vith schippes to *the* see.
Bot *th*ai *th*at left apon *th*e land
Var to *th*e king all obeysand; 132
And he *th*ar homage all haß tañe;
Syne toward pert[h] is passit agañe, Bruce goes to Perth.
To play hym *th*air in-to *th*e playn:
ȝeit lowdyan wes him agayn. 136
And at lythkow ves *th*an a peill, [Fol. 33 *b*. E.] The castle of Linlithgow is held by English.
Mekill and stark, and stuffit weill
Vith ynglis men, *th*at ves reset
Till *th*aim *th*at vith armour*is* [or] met 140
Fra edinburgh vald to strevilling ga,
And fra strevilling agai*n* alsua;
And till *th*e cu*n*tre did gret Ill.
Now may ȝe heir, gif *th*at ȝe vill, 144
Interludys and Iuperdyß,
*Th*at men assayit on mony viß,
Castellis and pelis for till ta.
And *th*is lythkow wes añe of *th*ai; 148 I will tell you how it was taken.
[And] I sall tell how it wes tane.
In *th*e cuntre *th*ar vonnyt añe
*Th*at husband ves, and vith h*is* fee
Oftsiß hay to *th*e peill led he; 152
Vilȝañe [bunnok] to nayme he hicht, A farmer, named William Bunnock,

128. *ȝeit*] *th*at.
129. *Rebell*] Rebelland E; Sittell H.
130. *And*] He. *to*] on.
133. *homage*] hostage E; pledges H.
134. *Syne*] And. *perth*] *so* E; pert C. *is—agane*] agayne is gane.
136. *lowdyan*] lothyane.
137. *lythkow*] Linlithgow H. *peill*] pele.
139. *that*] and.
140. [*or* E] ar C; and H.
141. *strevilling*] strewelyn.
142. *strevilling*] strewelyng.
143. *And*] *That*.
145. *Interludys*] Of interludes H; Entremellys E.
146. *on*] EH *om*.
148. *lythkow*] lythquhow E; Linlithgow H.
149. [*And* EH] As C. *how*] ȝow how.
153. *Vilȝame*] Wilȝame E; William H. [*bunnok*] bunnock E; bowne C; Binny H. *But see* l. 194. *nayme*] name. *hicht*] heght H; had E (*to rime with* stad).

*That stalward man ves in-to ficht.
He saw so hard *the* cuntre stad,
*That he gret noy and pite had,
Throu fortrassis *th*at war *th*en
Gou*e*rnit and led vith ynglis men, 156
*Th*at travalit men outour mesur.

who was a strongly-made man,

He wes a stout carle and a stu*re*,
And of him-self dour and hardy,
And had frend*is* vonnand hym by, 160
And schew till sum his preuate;
*Th*at apon his cowyn gat he

advised his friends to set an ambush,

Men *th*at mycht [ane] enbuschement ma,
Quhill *th*at he vith his vayn suld ga 164
Till lede *th*aim hay in-to *th*e peill.
Bot his vayn suld be stuffit weill;
For viij men armyt in *th*e body

[Fol. 74 b. C.]

Of his vayn suld syt preualy, 168

whilst he took a wain of hay, with eight men hid in it, into the castle.

And vith hay helyt be about.
And hym-self, *th*at wes dour & stout,
Suld by *th*e vayn gang ydilly,
And a ȝheman wicht and hardy 172
Befor suld dryf *th*e vayn, and ber
Ane hachit, *th*at war scharp to scher,
Vndir his belt; and quhen *th*e ȝet
Wes opnyt, and *th*ai war *th*ar-at, 176
Quhen he herd hym cry sturdely,

At a given signal,

["Call all! call all!" *th*an hastyly

154*. E *omits*. H *has*—A stalward man he was in feght.
155*. E *omits*. H *has*—That he great noy and pitie had.
155. *So in* H; E *has*—Throw *the* gret force *th*at It wes *th*en.
157. *That*] *Th*ai E; Then H.
159. *dour*] richt dour C; *but* EH *omit* richt. *Cf.* l. 170.
161. *schew*] schawyt E; shawed H.
162. *That*] And. *cowyn*] conwyne.
163. [*ane* E] CH *om*.
164, 166. *vayn*] wayn.
167. *armyt*] armed H; E *om*.
169. *be*] all H.
172. *a ȝheman*] ane ȝuman E; a Yeoman H.
173. *ber*] weare H.
174. *war—to*] wald sharply H.
175. *ȝet*] *so in* H; ȝat E.
176. *Wes opnyt*] War opynnyt.
177. *Quhen*] And.
178, 179. [*Call—suld* E] Call all, call all, then in great hy, He sould H; He suld be reddy soyn in hy For to C (*which is certainly wrong; see* l. 231).

He suld] stryk with *the* ax in twa
The hede-soyme; *th*an in hy suld *th*ai, 180
*Th*at var vithin *th*e vayn, cum out,
And mak debat, quhill at *th*ar rout,
*Th*at suld neir by enbuschit be,
Cu*m* for to maynteme *th*e melle. 184
This ves in-till *th*e harvist tyde,
Quhen feld*is*, *th*at var fair and vyde,
Chargit with corñe assouerit var;
For syndr*i* cornys *th*at *th*ai bair 188
Woxe rype to wyn to ma*n*nys fude,
And *th*e treis all sa*m*myn stude
Chargit vith froytis on syndr*i* viß.
*Th*at sa*m*myn tym, as I deuiß, 192
*Th*ai of *th*e peill had vonnyn hay,
And vith *th*is bu*n*nok spokin had *th*ai
To leid *th*air hay, for he wes neir;
And he consentit but dangeir, 196
And said, *th*at in-to *th*e mornyng
Veill soyn añe fudyr he suld bring
Farer [and] greter and weill mor
Than eny he broucht *th*at ȝer befor. 200
And held *th*aim cu*n*nand sekirly;
For *th*at nycht [warnyt] he preualy
*Th*aim *th*at in *th*e vayn suld ga,
And bad *th*e buschement be alsua, 204

the men in the wain were to come out.

This was at harvest-time.

The men of the castle had asked Bunnock to carry some hay for them.

He makes all ready.

180. *hede-soyme than*] soyme and *th*an E; chenyies; and then H. *In* C soyme *is miswritten* soyñe, *but see* l. 233.
182. *at*] *th*at.
184. *maynteme*] manteyme.
186. *var*] were H; ar E.
187. *assouerit*] all fully E; and furnisht H.
188. *syndri*] sindry.
190. *sammyn*] chargyt E; charged H.
191. *Chargit vith*] With ser E; With seire H. *froytis*] frutis.
192. *That sammyn*] In *th*is suete EH. *as*] *so in* H; *th*at E.
193. *vonnyn*] wonnyn.
194. *bunnok*] Binny H.
196. *consentit*] assentyt.
197. *in-to*] he in.
198. *ane—he*] a fothyr in.
199. [*and* EH] C *om.*
200. *eny—broucht*] he bro*ch*t ony E; he did ony H.
202. [*warnyt* E] warned H; gat C.
203. *vayn*] wayne.
204. *bad—buschement*] *th*at in *th*e buschement suld E; them that bushed sould H.

And *th*ai so grathly sped *th*aim *th*ar,
Some lie in ambush. *Th*at or day *th*ai enbuschit war
Veill neir *th*e peill, quhar *th*ai my*ch*t heir
*Th*e cry alsoyne as ony weir, 208
And held *th*aim swa still but stering,
*Th*at nane of *th*aim had persavyng.
Bunnock puts eight men in the wain. And *th*is bu*n*nok fast can him payn
Till [dreſ] his menȝe [in] his vayn, 212
And al a quhile befor *th*e day,
He had *th*aim helit vith *th*e hay;
*Th*an maid he him to ȝok his fee,
[Fol. 75. C.] Till men *th*e soñe schynande my*ch*t se. 216
And sum *th*at war vithin *th*e peill
War yschit on *th*air awn vnseill,
To vyn *th*air harvist neir *th*ar-by.
*Th*an bwnnok, with *th*e cu*m*pany 220
*Th*at in his wayn closit he had,
Went on his way but mair abaid,
And callit his wayn toward *th*e peill.
The porter opens the gate, And *th*e portar, *th*at saw hym weill 224
Cu*m* neir *th*e ȝat, It opnyt soyn.
And *th*an bwnnok, forouten hoyn,
Gert call *th*e wayn deliuerly;
And quhen it [wes] set evinly 228
and when the wain is halfway through, the signal is given. Betuix *th*e chekys of *th*e ȝet,
[Swa *th*at men my*ch*t It spar na gat,
He] cryit, "theif! call all! call all!"
And [*th*an] he leyt *th*e gadwand fall, 232

208. *weir*] wer E; weere H.
211. *bunnok*] Bonnok E; Binny H. *can*] gan.
212. [*dress* EH] driff C. [*in* EH] and C.
214. *vith the*] weile with.
215. *Than—he*] And made.
218. *vnseill*] wnsele E; Seele H.
220, 226. *bwnnok*] bonnok E; Binny H.
222. *abaid*] debaid.
223. *wayn*] men E; Wane H. *See* l. 227.
228. [*wes* E] was H; war C. *set*] set full C; *but* EH *omit* full.
230. *From* E; H *has*—Sa that he might it close na gaite; C *has*—And he *that* vald no longer let.
231. [*He* EH] Bot lowd C. *theif*] loude H.
232. *than he*] *miswritten that* he C; he *th*an E; he then H.

And hewit in twa *th*e soym in hy.
Bu*n*nok with *th*at deliuerly
[Raucht till] *th*e portar sic añe rout,
*Th*at blude and harnys bath com out. 236
And *th*ai *th*at war within *th*e wayn
Lap out belif, and soyn has slayn
Men of *th*e castell *th*at war by.
*Th*an in a quhill begouth [*th*e] cry, 240
And *th*ai *th*at neir enbuschit war
Lap out, and com with swerd*is* bar,
And tuk *th*e castell all but payn,
And *th*ame *th*at *th*arin wes has slayn. 244
And *th*ai *th*at war went furth beforn,
Quhen *th*ai *th*e castell saw forlorn,
*Th*ai fled to warrand to and fra;
And sum till Edinburgh can ga; 248
And till strevilling ar o*th*ir gane,
And sum in-to *th*e way war slayn.

Bunnock slays the porter.

[Fol. 34. E.]

The men in ambush seize the castle.

Some of the garrison escape.

How Erll thomas the randale com man to the gud king robert the bruce.

Bwnnok on *th*is wiß, wy*th* h*is* wayn,
*Th*e peill tuk, and *th*e men has slayn; 252
Syne taucht it to *th*e kyng in hy,
*Th*at hym rewardit worthely,
And gert doun driff it to *th*e ground;
And syne our all *th*e land can found, 256
Settand in peß all *th*e cu*n*tre,

Bruce rewards Bunnock.

233. *soym*] chenyie H.
235. [*Raucht till*] Rou*c*ht till E; Raught to H; He gaf C. *ane*] A.
239. *that—by*] haillely H.
240. [*the* EH] to C.
244. *has*] *precedes th*ame *in* E.
247. *to—fra*] here and there H.
248. *can*] gan. *ga*] fare H.
249. *strevilling*] strewilline. *othir*] *so arranged in* EH; o*th*ir ar C.
250. *way*] gat E; gaite H.
RUBRIC. *From* C. E *has*—Heire is mekyl *com*mendit tho*mas* ra*n*dale; H *has*—How Thomas Ra*n*del came to the Kings peace And was made Erle withoutten lies.
252. *The—tuk*] Wan the Peill H.
253. *taucht*] gave.
255. *doun—it*] downe driue it H; dryue It doun E.
256. *can*] gan. *found*] send H

*Th*at till hym obeisand wald be.
[Fol. 75 b. C.] And quhen a litill tym wes went
Eft*ir* thomas randale he sent, 260
Randolph is well treated by Bruce, And vith hym so weill tretit he,
*Th*at he his man hecht for till be;
And *th*e king hym soyn forgaf,
Ande for till hye his stat, hym gaf 264
and made Earl of Moray. Murref, and *th*arof Erll hym maid,
And o*th*ir syndr*i* landis braid
He gaf him in-till heritage.
He knew his worthy wassalage, 268
And his gret wit and his aviß,
His trast hert and his leill se*r*uiß.
*Th*arfor in hym affyit he,
And maid him rych of land and fee, 272
As it wes certis richt worthy.
*For, and men spek of him trewly,
He was a courageous knight, *He was so curageous a kny*ch*t,
*So wiß, so worthy, and so wycht,
And of so sou*e*rane gret bounte,
*Th*at mekill of hym may spokin be.
Therfor I think of hym to reid, 276
And till schaw part of his gud deid,
And till discryve ȝow his fassouñ
With part of his Condiciouñ.
of good stature, He wes of mesurabill stature, 280
And portrait weill at all mesure,

258. *till—obeisand*] vnto him obeyand H; at his obeysance E.
259. *went*] spent H.
261. *vith—weill*] sa weile with him.
263. *hym soyn*] his Ire him E; his anger there him H.
264. *for till hye*] for to hey E; to maintaine H.
265. *Murref*] Murreff E; Murray H. *tharof Erll*] erle *th*aroff.
266. *syndri*] syndry E; *printed* sundry J.
270. *trast*] traist E; traistie H.
272. *maid — rych*] ryche maid him.
273. *it*] he H.
274*—276*. *These three lines are in* E *and* J, *but are omitted by* P (*whose numbering I follow*).
275*. *a*] ane.
276. *Therfor*] And for.
278. *And till*] I will. *ȝow*] now.
279. *With*] And.
281. *portrait—all*] weile porturat at E; all well portrayed at H.

With braid visage, plesand and fair,
Curtas at poynt, and debonar,
And of richt sekir contenyng. 284
Laute he lufit atour all thing; very loyal and honourable;
Falsade, tresouñe, and felony
He stude agane ay ythandly;
He hyet honor and largeß, 288
And ay mantemyt Richtwisnes;
In cumpany solacius pleasant in company,
He wes, and *th*ar-with amorus,
And gud knycht*is* he lufit ay. 292
For gif *th*at I *th*e suth sall say,
He wes fullfillit of all bwnte, and made of all virtues.
And off all vertwis maid wes he.
I will *com*mend him heir no mar, 296
Bot ȝe sall weill heir for*thir*mar
*Th*at he, for his dedis worthy,
Suld weill be prisit sou*er*anly.

Qwhen *th*e king ves *th*us vith him saucht, 300 Randolph, thus enriched,
And gret lordschippis had him betaucht,
He wex so wiß and avise,
*Th*at his land first [weill] stablist he. [Fol. 76. C.]
And syne he sped him to *th*e were, 304
Till help his Eym and his effere,
Vith *th*e consent of *th*e gud kyng, with Bruce's consent,

285. *lufit*] lowyt.
286. *Falsade*] Falset. C *has* Falsade and, *but* EH *omit* and.
287. *ythandly*] encrely. H *has*—He gainestood euer all utterly.
288. *He hyet*] And loued H. *and*] ay and.
289. *mantemyt*] *so in* E; mantained H.
290. *solacius*] he was solacious H.
291. And with that, blyth, and amorous H.
293. *For*] And. *that*] E *om.*
294. *all*] E *om.*
295. *And*] Als E; As H.
297. *weill heir*] her weile.
299. *be prisit*] be prysyt E; be praised H; prisit be C.
300. RUBRIC *in* H—How Thomas Randell that was worthy, Sieged Edinburgh Castell stoutly. *ves thus*] *th*us was E; was H.
302. *wex*] wox. *and*] and sa.
303. [*weill* E] C *om.*
305. *and—effere*] in his myster E; at his power H.
306. *Vith*] And with EH. *gud*] EH *om.*

Bot with A sympill apparalyng.

goes to besiege Edinburgh castle.

Till Edinburgh he went in hy, 308
With gud men in-till cu*m*pany,
And set a sege to *the* castele,
*Th*at *th*an wes varnyst vond*ir* wele
With men and wittale at all Richt, 312
So *th*at it dred no ma*n*nis mycht.
Bot *th*is gud Erll nocht-for-*th*i
*Th*e Sege tuk full apertly,

He keeps a close guard upon it.

And presyt *th*e folk *th*at *th*ar-in ves, 316
Swa *th*at no*ch*t añe *th*e ȝet durst pas.
*Th*ai may abyde *th*ar-in and et
[*Th*air wictaill, quhill *th*ai oucht] my*ch*t get;
Bot I trow *th*ai sall lettit be 320
To purchas mair in *th*e cu*n*tre.

Edward II. had made Sir Piers Lumbard governor of the castle;

THat tym Eduard, of Ingland kyng,
Had gevin *th*e castell in keping
Till s*chir* periß lumbard, a gascouñ 324
And quhen *th*ai of his varnysouñ
Saw *th*e sege set *th*air stithly,
*Th*ai mystrowit hym of tratory,
For *th*at he spokin had vith *th*e king. 328
And, for *th*at ilk mystrowing,
*Th*ai tuk him and put *in* presouñ;

but the garrison imprison him.

And of *th*air awne nacioun
*Th*ai maid a constabill *th*aim to leid, 332
Richt war and viß, and vicht of deid.

307. *Bot*] And H.
311. *varnyst*] warnyst E; garnisht H.
313. *it*] they H. *mycht*] might H; fycht E.
315. *So* E. Set a Siege to it full peartly H.
319. [*Thair—oucht* E] Their vittaile, while they ought H; Vittale, till *th*ai ony C.
323. *the*] *th*at.
324. *lumbard*] lombert E; Libald H. *a*] *so* H; of E.
325. *varnysoun*] Warnisoun H; *blank in* E.
326. *stithly*] sa stythly.
327. *mystrowit*] mystrow E; mistraisted H.
330. *in*] *so in* EH; *in* to C.
332. *a*] ane.
333. *Richt war*] Bath wyss E; Baith wittie H. *viss*] war E; ware H.

And he set vit [and] strinth and slicht
To kepe *the* castell at his mycht.
Bot now of *th*ame I will be still, 336
And spek a litill quhill I will [Fol. 34 *b*. E.]
Of *the* douchty lord dowglaſ, I now speak of Douglas,
At *th*at tym in *the* forest was,
Quhar he full mony a Iuperdye, 340
And fair poynt*is* off cheuelry
Preuit, als weill be nycht as day, who displayed his valour at Roxburgh and Jedworth.
Till *th*ame *th*at in *the* castell[is] lay
Off roxburgh and Iedwo[r]th; bot I 344
Will let fele of *th*ame pas [forby].
For I can no*ch*t rehers *th*ame all, [Fol. 76 *b*. C.]
And *th*ouch I couth, trow weill ȝe sall
*Th*at I mycht nocht suffice *th*ar-to, 348
Sa mekill suld be *th*air ado.
Bot *th*ai *th*at I wat vittirly
Eft*ir* my wit rehers sall I.

The vynnyng of the castell of Roxburgh be the dowglas throu the slicht of Iohn ledowss.

THis tym *th*at *th*e gud Erll thomas 352
Assegit, as *th*e lettir sais,
Edinburgh, Iames of douglas James of Douglas tries to win Roxburgh castle.
Set all his vit for till purchas
How roxburgh throu subtilite, 356
Or ony craft, mycht wonnyn be;

334. [*and* EH] C *om.*
338. *lord*] lord off EH.
339. *At—in*] That left into H.
340. *full*] EH *om.*
342. *Preuit*] Serwyt.
343. *the*] *so in* H; his E. *castellis* E] castell CH.
344. *Off*] Till. *Iedworth*] Iedwoth C; Iedwort E; Iedburgh H.
345. [*forby* E] fer by C. *pas forby*] now passe by H.
347. *trow weill*] weill trow.
349. *Thar* suld sa mekill be ado E; There sould sa meekle be for to do H.
351. *sall*] will.
RUBRIC. *From* C. E *has*—Heire *schir* Iames dowglas seg*is* roxburg wit*h* Iuper*ty*; H *has*—How Iames Dowglas gart ladders make, Of Hemp, the Castel of Roxburgh to take.
356. *subtilite*] sutelte.

Sym "of the Ledows" makes rope-ladders,

Till he gert sym of *the* ledowſ,
[A crafty man and A curiouſ],
Of hempyn rapis ledd*er*is ma, 360
With treyn steppis bundin swa,
*Th*at vald brek apon na kyn wiſ.
A cruk *th*ai maid, at *th*air deuiſ,

with iron hooks.

Of Irn, *th*at wes styth and square ; 364
*Th*at, fra it in añe kyrnaill ware,
And *the* leddir *th*ar-fra stratly
Strekit, it suld stand sekirly.
This lord of douglas *th*an, alsoyñ 368
As *th*is deuisit wes and done,
Gad*er*it gud men in preuate ;

Douglas and 60 men approach the castle on all fours,

Thre score I trow at *th*ai my*ch*t be.
And on *the* faster*y*n evyn rycht, 372
In *the* begy*n*nyng of *the* nycht,
Till *the* castell *th*ai tuk *the* vay.
With blak froggis all helit *th*ai
The Armour*is* at *th*ai on *th*aṁe had. 376
*Th*ai com ner by *th*ar but abaid,
And send haly *th*air hors *th*aṁe fra,
And on range in añe rod can ga

as if they had been cows or oxen.

On handis and feit, quhen *th*ai war neir, 380
Richt as *th*ai ky and oxin weir,
*Th*at war [vnbondyn] left *th*erout.

358. *ledowss*] leidhous E; Ledhouse H.
359. *From* E; *so in* H. C *has*—*Th*at wes a man rycht craftyus.
360. *ma*] to ma C; *but* EH *omit* to.
361. *treyn*] treene H; Irne C.
362. *vald—apon*] brek wald no*ch*t on E; they wald breake on H.
364. *Irn*] Irne E; Yrne H.
366. *thar-fra*] *th*ai *th*ar-fra C; *but* EH *omit th*ai.
366, 367. Festened, it sould hing thereby, And the ladder therefra straightly H.
368. *lord*] gud lord. *than*] EH *om*.
371. *at*] that H; E *om*.
372. *fasteryn*] faster*y*ng*is* E; Fastings H. *rycht*] full rycht C; *but* EH *omit* full.
374. *thai*] H *om*. *the*] *thar*.
376. *at*] *th*at.
377. *but*] and H.
379. *on range*] *th*ai on rawnge E; in a raying H. *rod*] route.
381. *and*] or.
382. [*vnbondyn*] vnbounden H; vnbawndonit C; *but the right reading is evidently as given;* E *has*—*Th*at war wont to be bondyn, *which spoils the metre.*

It wes richt merk, forouten dout;
*Th*e quhe*thir* añe, on *th*e wall *th*at lay, 384
Besyde him till his feir can say,
"This man think*is* to mak gude chere"—
And ne*m*myt añe husband *th*ar-by neir—
"*Th*at has left all his oxyne out." 388
The to*th*ir said, "[It] is na dout;
He sall mak merye *th*is nycht, *th*ouch *th*ai
Be with *th*e douglas led avay."
*Th*ai wende *th*e douglaß and his men 392
Had beyn oxyñe, for *th*ai ȝeid *th*en
On handis and feit, ay añe & añe.
*Th*e dowglas ry*ch*t gud tent has tañe
Till all *th*ar speke, bot als-soyn *th*ai 396
Held carpand Inward on *th*ar way.
*Th*e douglaß men *th*ar-of wes blith,
And till *th*e wall *th*ai sped *th*amẽ swith,
And soyn has vp *th*air ledde*r*is set, 400
*Th*at maid a clap, quhen *th*e cleket
Wes festnyt fast in *th*e kyrnell.
*Th*at herd añe of *th*e vachis wele,
And buskit *th*idd*ir*ward but baid; 404
Bot Ledouß, *th*at *th*e leddyr maid,
Sped hym to clym first to *th*e wall;
Bot, or he wes vp gottin all,
He at *th*at vard had in keping, 408
Met him rycht at *th*e vp-cu*m*myng;
And for he thoucht to dyng hym douñe,
He maid na noys, [na] cry na sowñe,

They hear some of the garrison talking.

[Fol. 77. C.]

They hook their ladders on to the walls.

Sym struggles with one of the watchmen.

383. *forouten*] with-owtyn.
389. [*It* E] *th*at CH.
390. *merye*] good cheare H. *this*] to.
391. *douglas*] blacke Dowglas H.
396. *all*] E *om.* *als-soyn*] all sone E; right soone H.
397. *on*] baith H; E *om.*
398. *The*] EH *om.*
400. *ledderis*] leddre.
401. *a*] ane. *cleket*] cruchet E; crooke knet H.
402. *Wes*] And H. *festnyt*] fixit.
405. *Ledouss*] ledehouse E; Ledhouse H.
407. *gottin*] commen vp H.
411. [*na* E] C *om.*

Bot schot till him deliu*er*ly. 412
And he *th*at wes in Iuperdy
Till de, a lanſ till him he maid,
Sym stabs his opponent, And gat him be *th*e nek but baid,
And stekit him vpward vith añe knyff, 416
Quhill in his hand he left *th*e liff.
And quhen he ded sa saw him ly,
Vpon *th*e wall he went in hy,
and casts down the body. And douñe *th*e body kest *th*aḿe till, 420
And said, "all gang*is* as we will;
Speid ȝow vpward deliu*er*ly."
And *th*ai did swa in full gret hy.
Bot, or *th*ai wan vp, *th*ar com añe, 424
And saw ledowſ stand him allañe,
And knew he wes no*ch*t of *th*ar meñ.
In hy he ruschit till hym *th*en,
And hym assalȝeit sturdely; 428
Sym is again attacked. Bot he hym slew deliuerly;
For he wes armyt and wes vy*ch*t,
*Th*e to*th*ir nakyt wes, I hicht,
And had no*ch*t for till stynt no strak. 432
Sic melle *th*arup can he mak,
Quhill douglas and his me*n*ȝhe all
[Fol. 35. E.] War wonnyn vp apon *th*e wall.
[Fol. 77 b. C.] *Th*an in *th*e tour *th*ai vent in hy. 436
*Th*e folk *th*at tym wes halely
The garrison were making merry. In-to *th*e hall at *th*air dansyng,
Synging, and o*thir* wayis playing,
As apon fastryn evyn is 440
*Th*e custom, to mak Ioy and blis,
To folk *th*at ar in-to savite;

414. *lanss*] launce E; loup H. *till—he*] he till him.
424. *wan*] gate H.
425. *ledowss*] ledhouss.
429. *hym slew*] slew him.
431. *I*] Ik.
432. *no*] *the* E; a H.
435. *wonnyn*] cummyn.
437. *that—wes*] wes *th*at tyme.
440. *is*] it is C; *but* EH *have no* it. E *has*—And apon fast*er*yng*is* ewyn *th*is.
441. *The custom*] As custume Is.
442. *savite*] sauitie H; pouste E.

Swa trowit *th*ai *th*at tym to be.
[Bot], or *th*ai wist, rycht in *th*e hall 444
Douglas and his men cu*m*m*y*n var all,
And cryit on hicht, "douglas! douglas!"
And *th*ai, *th*at ma war *th*an he was,
Herd "dowglas!" cryit rycht hydwisly, 448
*Th*ai war abasit for *th*e cry,
And schupe richt na defens to ma.
And *th*ai but pite can *th*amẽ sla,
Till *th*ai had gottyn *th*e ovir hand. 452
*Th*e to*th*ir fled to seyk varrand,
*Th*at out-our mesure dede can dreid.
*Th*e vardane saw how *th*at it ȝeid,
*Th*at callit wes gylmyne de feniß, 456
In *th*e gret toure he gotten Is,
And o*th*ir of his Cumpany,
And sparit *th*e entre hastely.
*Th*e layff *th*at levit war vithout 460
War tane or slaẽe, forouten dout,
Bot giff *th*at ony lap *th*e wall.
*Th*e douglas held *th*at nycht *th*e hall,
All-*th*ouch his fais *th*ar-of wes wa. 464
His men war gangand to and fra
Throu-out *th*e castell all *th*at nycht,
Till on *th*e morn *th*at day wes lycht.
*Th*e wardane *th*at wes [in] *th*e tour, 468
That wes a man of gret valour,
Gylmyne de fyniß, quhen he saw

The cry of "Douglas" is raised.

The warden, Gylmyne de Fiennes, retreats to the tower.

Douglas wins the castle.

The warden, who is still in the tower,

444. [*Bot* EH] For C.
445. *men*] rout EH. *cummyn var*] var cu*m*m*y*n C; cu*m*myn war E; came H.
447. *ma*] *so in* EH; *spelt* may C.
448. *cryit rycht*] criyt E; cry sa H.
452. *ovir*] our E; vpper H.
453. *varrand*] warand.
454. *out-our*] owt off.
455. *vardane*] wardane.
456. *gylmyne—feniss*] Gilmyn de Fynys E; Gilmyn de Fyrmes H.
459. *sparit*] sparryt E; closed H. *entre*] ȝets H.
461. *forouten*] this is na.
463. *held—nycht*] *th*at nycht held.
464. *wes*] war.
465. *war*] wàs.
468. [*in* EH] within C.
470. *de fyniss*] *th*e fynys.

*Th*e castell tynt, bath hye and law,
He set his mycht for till defende 472

tries to hold it.

*Th*e tour; bot *th*ai vithout him send
Arrowes In so gret quantite,
*Th*at anoyit *th*arof wes he.
Bot to *th*e to*th*ir day nocht-for-*th*i 476
He held *th*e tour full sturdely,

He is wounded in the face, and comes to terms.

And *th*an, at añe assalt, he wes
Woundit so felly in *th*e face,
*Th*at he wes dredand of his lif, 480
*Th*arfor he tretit *th*ame belif,
And ȝald *th*e tour on sic maner,

[Fol. 78. C.]

*Th*at he and all *th*at vith hym weir
Suld saufly paſ in-to Ingland. 484
Douglas held *th*ame gud cu*n*nand,
And convoyit *th*ame to *th*air cuntre,
Bot *th*ar full schort tym liffit he;
For throu [*th*e] vound in-till his face 488

The warden dies soon after.

He deit soyn, and beryit was.
Douglaſ *th*e castell sesit all,
At *th*an wes closit vith stalward vall,
And send *th*is ledouſ to *th*e kyng, 492
*Th*at maid hym full gret revarding.
And his bro*th*ir in full gret hy,
Schir Eduard, *th*at wes sa douchty,

Edward Bruce destroys the castle,

He send *th*idd*ir* to twmmyll douñe 496
Bath tour, castell, and dungeouñe.
And he com vith gret Cumpany,

471. *bath hye*] baith hie H; be clene E (*not* cleue, *as in* PJ; *cf.* l. 124).
474. *Arrowes*] Of arrowes C; *but* EH *omit* Of.
475. *anoyit*] saire annoyed H.
476. *to*] till E; while H.
481. *thame*] them H; *th*an E. *belif*] but strife H.
484. *in-to*] in.
485. *held*] *th*at held C; *but* EH *omit* that. *gud*] full good H.
486. *convoyit*] conwoid. *thame*] him H. *thair*] his H.
488. [*the* EH] ane C. *his*] the EH.
490. *the*] in *the* C; *but* EH *omit* in.
491. *At*] *Th*at. *vall*] wall.
492. *ledouss*] leidhouss.
496. *twmmyll*] tumbill It.
497. *castell*] and castell.

And gert travale so besaly,
*Th*at tour and wall rycht to *th*e ground 500
War tumlyt in añe litill stound :
And duelt still *th*ar, quhill tevydale
Com to *th*e kyngis peſ all haill,
Outane Iedworth and o*thir th*at neir 504
*Th*e ynglis me*n*nis bowndis weir.

and secures Teviotdale.

[**Heire schir thomas randale segis edynburgh.**]

Q when Roxborgh voñ ves oñ *th*is viſ,
*Th*e Erll thomas, *th*at hye Enpriſ
Set ay apon Souerañe bounte, 508
At Edinburgh with his menȝe
War lyand at *th*e Sege, as I
Tald ȝow befor all oppynly.
Bot fra he herd how roxburgh was 512
Tane with a trane, all his purchas,
With wit and besynes, I hicht,
He set to purches [him sum] slicht,
How he my*ch*t help hym throu victory, 516
Mellit with full hye cheuelry,
To wyn *th*e wall of *th*e castell
Throu sumkyn slicht ; for he vist veill
*Th*at no strinth my*ch*t it planly get, 520
Quhill *th*ai within had men and met.
*Th*arfor preuely sperit he
Gif ony man mycht fundin be,
*Th*at couth ony gude Iupardye 524

Sir Thomas Randolph besieges Edinburgh.

He hopes to take it by stratagem.

501. *tumlyt*] tumblit. *War—ane*] He gart cast downe in H.
502. *still*] EH *om.* *quhill*] quhill all E ; while that H.
504. *Iedworth*] Iedburgh H.
RUBRIC. *From* E ; H *has*—How William Frances led Thomas Randell, Vp to the Craig of Edinburgh Castell.
506. *von ves*] wonnyn was.
507. *Enpriss*] empriss.
508. *apon*] on. *bounte*] he bounte E ; hie bountie H.
510. *the*] A.
514. *With*] And. *I*] Ik.
515. *to*] for to. [*him sum*] him some H ; sum E ; *th*an vith C.
516. *victory*] *so in* H ; body E. *The true reading is probably lost.*
517. *full*] EH *om.*
524. *ony gude*] fynd ony.

To clym *th*e wallis preuelye;
And he suld haf his varisouñe.
For it wes his entenciouñe
[Fol. 78 b. C.] Till put him in-to aue*n*ture, 528
Or at *th*at sege [on] him forfure.

One William Francois

*Th*an wes *th*air añe william francaß,
Wicht and pert, viß and curtaß,
[Fol. 35 b. E.] *Th*at in-till his ȝouthede had beyn 532
In *th*e castell; quhen he has seyn
*Th*e Erll sa ynkirly hym set
Sum sutelte or [wile] to get,
Quhar-throu *th*e castell haf my*ch*t he, 536
He com till hym in preuate,

tells Sir Thomas how the wall may be scaled.

And said, "me think, ȝe vald blithly
*Th*at men fand ȝow sum Iuperdy,
How ȝe my*ch*t our *th*e wallis vyn; 540
And certis, gif ȝhe will begyn
For till assay on sic a viß,
I vndirtak for my seruice,
For to ken ȝow to clym *th*e wall, 544
And I sall formast be off all;
Quhar with a schort ledd*ir* may we,
I trow of tuelf fut it may be,
Clym to *th*e wall vp all quytly. 548
And gif *th*at ȝe will wit how I
Wat *th*is, I sall ȝow lichtly say.

He says his father was once keeper

Quhen I wes ȝoung *th*is hend*ir* day,
My fader wes kepar of ȝon houß, 552

526. *varisoune*] warysoun.
528. *in-to*] till all E; selfe in H.
529. [*on* EH] C *om.* *forfure*] misfure EH.
530. *francass*] Francuss E; Frances H. Cf. l. 601.
531. *pert*] apert E; expert H. *viss*] wyss E; wise H. *curtass*] courtes H; curyuss E.
534. *ynkirly*] enkerly E; ernestly H.
535. [*wile* E] wyle H; will C.
542. *a viss*] awyss E; a wise H.
543. *I*] Ik.
544. *So in* H. *For*] E *om.* *the*] to *the*.
548. *quytly*] quytly *or* quycly C; quietly H.
550. *lichtly*] blythly.
552. *wes kepar*] *so arranged in* EH; kepar wes C.

And I wes sum dele volageouſ, — of the castle,
And lufit añe vench her in *the* touñe;
And, for I but suspicioun
Micht repair till hir preuely, 556
Of Rapis añe ledd*ir* to me maid I, — and he himself used to go up and down the rock,
And [*th*arwith] our *the* wall I slaid;
Añe strate rod *th*at I spyit had
[In-till] *the* crag syne douñe I went, 560
And oftsiſ com to myne entent;
And quhen it neir drew to *the* day,
I held agane *th*at ilke way,
And ay com In but *per*saving. 564
I oysit lang *th*at travalling,
So *th*at I can *th*at rod ga richt,
*Th*ouch men se neu*ir* so myrk *the* nycht. — and knew his way in the dark.
And gif ȝow think*is* ȝe will assay 568
To paſ [wp] eft*ir* me *th*at way,
Vp to *the* wall I sall ȝow bring,
Gif god vs kepis fra persaving
Of *th*aṁe *th*at wachis on *the* wall. 572
And gif *th*at vs so fair may fall,
*Th*at we our ledd*ir* wp may set,
Giff a man on *the* vall may get,
He sall defend, gif it beis neid, 576 [Fol. 79. C.]
Quhill *the* Remanand vp *th*aim speid."
The Erll wes blith of his carping, — The earl is blithe,
And hecht him full fair revardyng;
And vnd*ir*tuk *th*at gat to ga, 580

553. *volageouss*] walageouss E; lecherous H.
554. *vench*] wench.
558. [*tharwith* E] therewith H; with *that* C.
559. *Ane*] A. *rod*] *so in* H; roid E. *I spyit*] I spyed H; spyit I C; I sperit E.
560. [*In-till* E] Into H; Till C.
563. *I*] Ik. *ilke*] ilk E; samine H.
565. *I oysit*] Ik wsyt E; I vsed sa H.
566. *rod*] roid.
567. *the*] a H.
568. *ȝow thinkis*] ȝe think.
569. [*wp* E] vp H; C *om.*
571. *kepis*] sawys E; saue H.
574. *leddir*] leddris; *but see* l. 581.
576. *gif—beis*] and it be E; gif there be H.
579. *him full*] him E; to him H.
580. *And*] And he C; *but* EH *omit* he.

and bids him make a ladder.

And bad him soyn his leddir ma,
And hald him preve, quhill thai mycht
Set for thair purpoſ on añe nycht.

The vynnyng of the castell of Edinburgh be gud erll thomas Randall.

Soyne eftir wes the leddir maid, 584
And than the Erll, but mair abaid,

The earl takes 30 men, on a dark night.

Purvait hym on a nycht preualy,
With thritty men, wicht and hardy,
And in añe myrk nycht held thar vay. 588
Thai put thame in full hard assay,
And to gret perell sekyrly.
I trow, mycht thai haf seyñe cleirly,
That gat had nocht beyn vndirtañe, 592
Thouch thai to let thame had nocht añe.
For the crag wes hye and [hydwouſ],

The ascent was very dangerous.

And the clymbyng rycht pereluſ.
For hapnyt ony to slyde or fall, 596
He suld be soyne to-fruschit all.
The nycht wes myrk, as I herd say,
And till the fut soyñe cummyn ar thai
Of the crag, that wes hye and schore, 600

William Francois is guide.

Than williamẽ francouſ thamẽ befor
Clam in the crykis forouth thaim ay,
And at the bak him followit thai,
With mekill payne, quhill to, quhill fra; 604
Thai clam in-to the crykis swa,

RUBRIC. *From* C. E *has*—Heire is the castel of edynburgh won.
586. *on*] EH *om.*
588. *ane*] A.
589. *Thai*] That. *in*] till.
590. *to*] in to C; *but* EH *omit* in.
593. *Thouch*] *Thocht.*
594. *hyc*] hey. [*hydwouss* E] hiddeous H; hydwiss C.
595. *rycht*] wes rycht C; *but* EH *omit* wes.
596. *or*] and.
597. *be soyne*] sone be.
598. *I*] Ik.
601. *francouss*] Fransoys E; Frances H.
602. *the*] *so in* H; E *om.* *crykis*] Crookes H. *forouth*] before H. *thaim*] them H; E *om.*
605. *the*] *so in* H; *th*ai E. *crykis*] Crookes H.

Quhill half *the* crag*gis* *th*ai clu*m*myn had ; — When half way up, they sit down and rest.
And *th*air añe place *th*ai fand so braid,
*Th*at *th*ai my*ch*t syt on anerly. 608
[And] *th*ai war ayndleß and wery,
And *th*air abaid *th*air aynd to ta.
And Richt as thai war syttand swa,
Abovyn *tha*ñe, apon *the* wall, 612
*Th*e chak-wachis assemblit all.
Now help *th*ame god *th*at all thing may,
For in full gret perell ar *th*ai ; — The watchmen do not see them.
For, my*ch*t *th*ai se *tha*ñe, *th*air suld añe 616
Eschap out of *th*at place vnslañe ;
Till ded with stanys *th*ai suld *th*aim dyng,
*Th*at *th*ai mycht help *tha*ñe-self no thing. [Fol. 79 *b*. C.]
Bot wondir myrk wes all *the* ny*ch*t, 620
Swa *th*at *th*ai had of *tha*ñe na sycht ;
And nocht-for-*th*i ȝeit ves *th*ar añe
Of *tha*ñe *th*at swappit doun a stañe, — A stone, flung down, passes
And said, "avay, I se ȝow weill !" 624 near them.
*Th*e quhe*thir* he saw *tha*ñe nocht a deill.
Out-our *th*air hedis flaw *the* stañe,
And *th*ai sat still, lurkande ilkañe.
*Th*e vachis, quhen *th*ai herd nocht stere, 628 The watchmen go away.
Fra *th*at [ward] passit all sa*m*myn were,
And carpand held fer by *th*air vay.
Erll thomas *th*an alsoyne, and *th*ai
[*Th*at] on *the* crag *th*ar satt hym by, 632

606. *craggis*] crag. *thai clummyn*] clu*m*myn *th*ai C ; *th*ai clumbyn E.
608. *anerly*] alanerly H.
609. [*And* EH] Quhen C. *ayndless*] handles (!)
612. *Abovyn thame*] Ry*ch*t aboune *th*aim wp E ; Right abone them H.
618. *Till*] To EH.
619. *That*] For H (*which seems better*). *self*] selwyn E ; selues H.
620. *wes all*] there was H ; wes E.
623. *swappit*] swakked H.
624. *avay*] away E ; away Traitour H.
625. Howbeit he saw of them na deill H.
629. [*ward* E] place H ; vord (*for* vard) C. *passit—were*] samyn all passit er E ; passed all in feare H.
630. *fer by*] they foorth H.
631. *Erll—than*] *The* erle thomas.
632. [*That* EH] *Th*an C.

Toward *the* wall clam hastely,
And *th*iddir com vith mekill mayñe,
[Fol. 38. E] And nocht but gret perell and payñe.
[For] fra-*thi*ne vp wes grevousar 636
The way becomes still steeper. To clym vp, na be-neth be fer.
Bot quhatkyn payn at eu*ir* *th*ai had,
Richt to *the* wall *th*ai com but baid,
*Th*at had weill neir tuelf fut on hicht. 640
And [for-owt] persaving or sicht,
*Th*ai set *th*air ledd*er* to *the* wall,
Francois, Sir Andrew Gray, and the Earl climb over the wall. And syne francouß befor *th*aṁe all
Clam vp, and syne s*chir* androu gray, 644
And syne *the* Erll him-self perfay
Wes *the* thrid man *the* wall can ta.
Quhen *th*ai *th*air doun *th*air lord swa
Saw clym*en* vp [apon] *the* wall, 648
As wood me*n* *th*ai claṁe eft*ir* all.
Bot or vp cu*m*myn all wer *th*ai,
*Th*ai *th*at war vachis till assay
The rest follow. Herd bath stering and ek speking, 652
And [alswa fraying] of Armyng,
And on *th*ame schot full sturdely.
And *th*ai met *th*aṁe richt hardely,
And slaw of *th*aṁe dispitwisly. 656
*Th*an throu *the* castell raß *the* cry,
A cry of "treason!" is raised. "Tresoune! tresouñe!" *th*ai cryit fast.
*Th*an sum of *th*aṁe war sa agast,
That *th*ai fled and lap our *the* wall. 660

633. *wall*] Craig H.
634. *com*] E *om*.
636. [*For* EH] Bot C.
638. *at*] sua E; sa H.
640. *had*] was H. *on*] *so* H; of E.
641. [*for-owt* E] forouten C; withoutten H.
642. *ledder*] *so* EH; ledd*eris* C.
643. *francouss*] Fransoys.
646. *man*] *th*at.
648. *clymen*] clymbyne. [*apon* E] vpon H; agane C.
649. *clame*] clamb.
650. *vp—all*] all wp clumbene.
652. *bath—ek*] steryng and priue.
653. [*alswa fraying* E] als effraying C; also framing H.
654. *schot*] set H.
657. *rass*] raiss.

Bot to say suth, *th*ai fled nocht all;
For *th*e constabill, *th*at wes hardy,
All Armyt, schot furth to *th*e cry, [Fol. 80. C.]
And with him feill hardy & stout. 664
ȝeit wes the Erll with all h*is* rout — The earl's men come up.
Fechtand with *th*amẽ apon *th*e wall;
Bot soyn he *th*amẽ discomfit all.
Be *th*at his men war cu*m*myñ Ilkañe 668
Vp at *th*e wall, and he [has] tañe
His way douñe to *th*e castell soyñe. — He hurries to the castle.
In gret perell he has hym doñe;
For *th*air wes fer ma men *th*arin, 672
And *th*ai had beyn of gude cowyn,
*Th*an he; bot *th*ai effrayȝit war.
And nocht-for-*th*i with vapnys bar — The constable meets him.
*Th*e constabill and his cumpany 676
Met hym and his richt hardely,
*Th*at men mycht se gret bargane ryß.
For with wapnys, on mony wiß,
*Th*ai dang on o*th*ir [at] *th*ar mycht, 680 — A severe struggle takes place.
Quhill swerdis, *th*at war fair and brycht,
War till *th*e hyltis all bludy.
*Th*an hydwisly begouth *th*e cry;
For *th*ai *th*at fellit or stekit war 684
With gret noyis can cry and rar.
*Th*e gud Erll and his Cumpany
Faucht in *th*at ficht sa sturdely,
*Th*at all *th*air fayis ruschit war. 688
*Th*e constabill wes slayn richt *th*ar; — The constable is slain.

661. *suth*] swyth.
663. *schot*] ished H.
665. *with all*] with E; hard with H.
667. *he—discomfit*] he discumfit *th*aim E; discomfist he them H.
668. *Be*] By H.
669. *at*] to EH. [*has* E] hes H; had C.
671. *done*] doyn.
672. *thair—men*] they were ma than he H.
673. *cowyn*] covyn E; conuine H.
674. *Than—bot*] But some thing H.
678. *That*] *Th*ar.
679. *on*] of.
680. [*at* EH] with all.
685. *With—noyis*] Hidwysly E; Right hiddeously H.

And fra he fell, *the* Remanand
Fled quhar *th*ai best mycht to varrand ;
*Th*ai durst nocht byde na mak debat. 692

The earl had a narrow escape.

*Th*e Erll wes handlyt *th*air so hat,
*Th*at had it nocht hapnyt throw caß
*Th*at *th*e constabill *th*air slayn was,
He had beyn in gret perell *th*ar ; 696
Bot *th*an *th*ai fled, *th*ar was no mar,
Ilke man for to sauf his lif,
And furth his dayis for to drif ;
And sum slaid douñe [out] our *th*e wall. 700

He takes the castle.

*Th*e Erll has tane *th*e castell all,
For *th*an wes nane durst him withstand.
I herd neu*ir* quhar in añe land
Wes castell tañe so hardely, 704

It was as perilous as the siege of Tyre,

Outakyn tyre all anerly ;
Quhen alexander *th*e conquerour,
*Th*at conquerit babilonys tour,
Lap fra [a] berfroiß on *th*e wall ; 708

[Fol. 80 b. C.]

Quhar he emang his fayis al

where Alexander the Great got over the wall,

Defendit him full douchtely,
Quhill *th*at his nobill cheuelry
With ledd*e*ris our *th*e wallis ȝeid, 712
*Th*at nou*thir* left for ded no dreid ;
[For] fra *th*ai wist weill at *th*e king
Wes in *th*e toune, *th*er was no thing
In-till *th*at tyme *th*at stint *th*ame mocht ; 716
For all perell *th*ai set at nocht.
*Th*ai clam *th*e wallis, quhar arestee

691. *varrand*] warrand.
692. *na mak*] *written* no mak C; nor make H ; to ma E.
695. *slayn*] slane *then* ; H *like* C.
697. *than*] then H ; quhen E.
698. *Ilke—for*] Bot ilk man.
699. *And*] Fled EH. (*But* furth *belongs to* drif.)
700. [*out* EH] C *om.*
703. *quhar—ane*] quhar in nakin E ; into na H.
705. *tyre*] Treile (*wrongly*).
708. [*a* H] ; C *om.* *fra—on*] on bar fors fra (!) E ; fra a Bar foorth to (!) H.
711. *that*] E *om.*
712. *wallis*] wall.
714. [*For* EH] Bot C. *at*] *th*at.
718. *wallis*] wall EH. *quhar*] and EH. *arestee*] Ariste EH.

Com first to *th*e gude king, quhar he
Defendit him with all his mycht, 720 *and fought till he was nearly killed,*
*Th*at *th*an wes set so hard, I hicht,
*Th*at he wes fellit on a kne.
He till his bak had set añe tre,
For dreid *th*ai suld behynd assalȝhe. 724
Arestee *th*an to *th*e battalȝhe *but was succoured in time.*
Sped him in all hye sturdely,
And dang on *th*ame so douch[t]ely,
*Th*at *th*e kyng weill reskewit was. 728
For his men, in-to syndry plas,
Clam our *th*e wall, and soucht *th*e kyng,
And him reskewit with hard fichting,
And wan *th*e toune deliuerly. 732
Outakyne *th*is [takyng] all anerly,
I hard neu*ir* in na tyme gañe [Fol. 36 *b*. E.]
[Quhar castell] wes so stoutly tañe;
And of *th*is [takyng] *th*at I meyñe, 736
Sanct mergaret, *th*e gud haly queyñe, *St Margaret the queen foretold this event,*
Vist in hir tyme, throw reveling
Of him *th*at knawis and wat all thing.
*Th*arfor, in stede of prophesye, 740
Scho left añe takyne Richt Ioly;
*Th*at is, *th*at scho in hir chapell
Gert weill be portrait añe castell, *viz. by a picture of a castle and a ladder,*
A ledd*ir* wp to *th*e wall standand 744
And a man *th*ar-on clymande,

721. *I*] Ik. And they sa hard were stad in fight H.
722. *a*] his H.
723. Then to his backe he set a tree H. *ane*] A.
725. *Arestee*] Ariste E; Areste H.
726. *all hye*] hy sa H.
727. *douchtely*] douchtely E; douchely C; doggedly H.
730. *wall*] walles H.
733. [*takyng* EH] takyñe C. *all*] E *om*. *all anerly*] alanerly H.
735. [*Quhar castell* E] Where Castell H; Castell *th*at C.
736. [*takyng* EH] takyñe C.
738. *Vist*] Wyst.
741. *takyne*] taknyng E; taikning H. *Richt*] full H.
742. *that—in*] ȝeit in-till E; there in H.
743. Scho gert weile portray a castell EH.
745. *thar-on*] wp *th*ar-apon.

And wrat owth him, as old men sayis,
In franch : *gardiß wouß de francoiß*. (with the legend—*Gardes vous de Francois.*)
And for *th*is word scho gert vrit swa, 748
Men wend *the* franch-men suld it ta.
Bot, [for] francoiß hattyn wes he,
*Th*at swa clam wp in preuate,
Scho wrat *th*at as in pr*o*phesy ; 752
And it fell eftirward suthly
[Fol. 81. c.] Richt as scho said ; for tañe it wes,
And francoiß led *th*añe vp *th*at place.

Thus was Edinburgh taken.

On *th*is viß Edinburgh wes tañe ; 756
And *th*ai *th*at war *th*arin ilkañe
War tane, [or] slañe, or lap *th*e wall ;
*Th*air gudis haff *th*ai sessit all,
And soucht *th*e housis eu*ir*ilkañe. 760

Sir Piers Lumbard was found in the dungeon.

Schir peris lumbard *th*at ves tañe,
As I said er*e* befor, *th*ai fand
In presouñe, fett*er*it with boyis, sittand.
*Th*ai [broucht] hym to *th*e Erll in hy, 764
And he gert lowß hym hastely ;
*Th*an he becom *th*e king*is* man.
*Th*ai send vord to *th*e king rycht *th*an,

Bruce comes to the castle, and dismantles it.

And tald how *th*e castell wes tañe ; 768
And he in hy is *th*idd*ir* gañe,
With mony men in cumpany,
And gert [myne] douñe all halely

746. *owth*] oucht E; on H.
747. *franch*] Frankis E; French H. *gardiss*] *miswritten* gardriss C; gardys E ; Garde H. *wouss*] wouyss E ; vous H. *francoiss*] Fransais.
749. *franch*] Frankis E; French H.
750. [*for* E] CH *om.* *hattyn*] called H.
755. *place*] *so* H ; pass E.
758. *War*] O*thir* E ; Outher H. [*or* EH] C *om.*
759. *sessit*] lesyt E ; leaued H.
761. *lumbard*] Lubant E; Libald H. Cf. l. 824.
762. *befor*] in Boyes H. Cf. *next line.*
763. In boyis and hard festnyng sittand E ; And into hard festning sittand H.
764. [*broucht* E] brought H ; had C.
768. *tald*] tald him C; *but* EH *omit* him.
770. *men*] aue.
771. [*myne* E] mynde C; cast H.

Bath tour and wall richt to *the* ground; 772
And syne our all *the* land can found,
Sesand *the* cuntre till his peſ.
Of *th*is deid, *th*at so worthy wes,
*Th*e Erll wes prisit gretumly. 776 **Randolph is greatly praised.**
The king, *th*at saw him sa vorthy,
Wes blith and Ioyfull our *the* laif,
And to manteym his stat, him gaff
Rentis and landis fair eneuch; 780
And he to sa gret vorschip dreuch,
*Th*at all spak of his gret bounte. **His fame is well known.**
His fayis gretly stonayit he,
For he fled neu*ir* throu forſ of ficht. 784
Quhat sall I mair say of his mycht?
His gret manheid and his bountee
Gerris him ȝeit oft renownyt be.

In *this* tyme *th*at *th*ir Iuperdyiſ 788
On *th*ir castellis, *th*at I deuiſ,
War eschewit swa hardely,
Schir Eduard *the* broiſ *the* vorthy
Had all galloway and nyddis-daill 792 **Sir Edward wins all Galloway and Nithsdale.**
Wonnyn till his liking all haill;
And doungyn doune *th*e castellis all
Richt in *the* dik, bath tour and wall.
He herd *th*an say, and knew it weill, 796
That in ruglyne wes añe peill. **[Fol. 81 b. C.]**
*Th*iddir he went with his menȝe,
And [wo*n*nyn It] in schort tym has he.
Syne till dunde he tuk *the* way, 800 **He goes to Dundee,**

778. *Ioyfull our*] glad attour H.
781. *And*] *written* Ande C.
783. *gretly*] oft syes H.
784. *throu*] for EH. *of*] in H.
787. *oft*] EH *om.*
788. RUBRIC *in* H—How Sir Edward wan Ruglyn Peill, And Dundie, syne Striuiling sieged well. *Iuperdyiss*] Iupertyss.
789. *On*] Of EH.
791. *broiss*] bruce EH. *vorthy*] hardy.
795. *in—dik*] to the dykes H.
797. *ane*] A.
799. [*wonnyn It* E] winne it H; wonnyt *thar* C.

*Th*at *th*an wes haldin, as I herd say,
Agane *th*e king; *th*arfor in hy
He set añe sege *th*ar-to stoutly,
And lay *th*air quhill it ȝoldyn was. 804

He next attacks Stirling, governed by Sir Philip Mowbray.

Till strevilling syne *th*e vay he tais,
Quhar gud s*chir* philip *th*e mowbra,
*Th*at wes full douchty at assay,
Wes vardane, and had in keping 808
*Th*at castell of *th*e ynglis Kyng.
*Th*ar-till añe sege he set [stythly];
*Th*ai bykkirrit oftsis sturdely;
Bot gret cheuelry doñe wes nañe. 812
Schir Eduard, fra *th*e sege wes tañe,
A weill lang tyme about it lay,

The siege lasts from Lent to Midsummer.

Fra *th*e lent*er*yne, *th*at is to say,
Quhill forrouth *th*e saint Iohn*n*is mes 816
*Th*e ynglis folk *th*at *th*ar-in wes
Begouth to fale *th*e vittale *th*an,
*Th*an s*chir* philip, *th*e douchty man,
Tretit, quhill *th*ai consentit weir, 820

Sir Philip says he will yield it if it is not relieved in a year's time.

*Th*at, gif at mydsu*m*m*er* tyme añe ȝeir
To cum, it war no*ch*t with bata[i]ll
Reskewit, *th*an, withouten faill,
He suld *th*e castell ȝeld quytly; 824
*Th*at cu*n*nand band *th*ai sekirly.

801. *I*] Io.
803. *ane*] A.
807. *full*] sa.
810. *ane*] A. *he*] *th*ai. [*stythly* E] stoutly H; suthly C.
815. *lenteryne*] Lentryne E; Lentrone H.
818. *fale—vittale*] failȝe wictaill be E; failyie vittaile by H.
819. *the*] *that* E; as H.
820. *weir*] war.
821. *tyme ane*] *the* neist E; then a H.
822. *bataill*] bataile E; batall C.
823. *than*] *then* *that* E; that then H. *withouten*] for-owtyn.
824. *ȝeld*] ȝauld.
825. *band*] brake (!) H.

[BOOK XI.]

And quhen this cu*n*nand thus wes maid,
Schir philip in-to Ingland raid,
And tald the king all haill this tale,
How he [a] tuelf moneth all hale
Had, as vritin [wes] in thair tale,
Till reskew strewilling with battale.
And quhen he herd s*chir* philip say,
That scottis men had set añe day
To fecht, and at sic space he had
Till purvay hym, he ves rycht glad,
And said, "it wes gret succuddry
That set thamẽ apon sic folye;
For he thocht to be, or that day,
So purvait and in sic aray,
That thair suld na strinth him vith-stand."
And quhen the lordis of Ingland
Herd at this day wes set planly,
Thai Iugit It to gret foly,
And thoucht till haff all thair liking,

Sir Philip goes to England, and tells the king

he has a whole year allowed for the rescue of Stirling castle. [Fol. 37. E.]

King Edward is very glad, and thinks the Scotch are very proud and foolish.

The English lords rejoice likewise.

[Fol. 38. C.]

H *has the Rubric*—How Sir Edward withoutten sturne, Vndertooke the battell of Bannock-burne.

1. *cunnand*] *con*nand.
2. *in-to*] in-till.
3. *this*] his. *haill this*] the haill H.
4. [*a* E] had C; *but see next line.*
5. *as*] as it. [*wes* E] was H; war C.
6. *Till*] To EH.
8. *ane*] A.
9. *at*] that. *at—he*] he sik leasure H.
10. *Till*] To EH.
11. *succuddry*] sukudry E; sucquidry H.
13. *or*] ere H.
15. *na*] nane.
17. *at*] that.
18. *to gret foly*] all to great foly H; all for to failly E.
19. *till*] to. *all*] them at H.

Giff men abaid thame in fechting. 20
Bot oft falȝeis the fulys thoucht;

Wise men's intentions sometimes fail.

And wiß menis etling cumis nocht
Till sic end as thai weyn alwayis.
A litill stañe oft, as men sayis, 24
May ger weltir añe mekill wañe.

Nothing may resist God, who controls all things.

Na manis mycht may stand agañe
The grace of god, that all thing steris;
He wat quhat-to all thing efferis, 28
And disponis at his liking,
Eftir his ordinanß, all thyng.

The vynnyng of strevilling be schir Eduard the bruce, thow the battale ves set our ȝer and day betuix hym and schir philip the mowbra.

When Sir Edward has made the treaty, he goes to tell his brother the king.

Qwhen schir Eduard, as I ȝow say,
Had gevyn sa outrageouß a day 32
To ȝeld or reskew strewilling,
Richt soyne he went on-to the king,
And tald quhat tretis he had maid,
And quhat day he thame gevyn had. 36

The king says it was a foolish deed;

The king said, quhen he herd the day,
"That wes vnwisly done, perfay,
I herd neuir quhar so lang varnyng
Wes gevin to so mychty añe kyng 40
As is the kyng of England.

for the king of England possesses all England, Ireland, Wales, and Aquitaine,

For he has now in-till his hand
Ingland, Irland, and Walyß alsua,
[And] Akatane ȝet, with all tha 44

21. *falȝeis*] faillys.
22. *wiss—etling*] ȝeit wyssmennys ay E; yet wise men H.
23. *Till*] To EH. *sic*] that H. *as*] that H.
25. *ane*] A.
28. *to*] till. *efferis*] afferis E; affeeres H.
33. *or*] or to CH; *but* E *omits* to. *strewilling*] strewillyne E; Striuiling H.
34. *soyne—king*] to the king he went him syne E; to the King then went he syne H.
39. *I*] Ik.
40. *ane*] A.
42. *his*] E *om.*
44. [*And*] *so in* EH; *but* C *places* and *after* ȝet. *Akatane*] Aquitayngne E; Aquitayne H.

That duellis vnd*ir* his senȝory,
And of Scotland a gret party.
And off tresour so stuffit is he,
That he may vageowr*is* haf plente. 48
And we ar qwheyn agane so fele ;
God may richt weill our werd*is* deill,
Bot we ar set in Iuperdy
To tyne or wyn than hastely." 52
Schir Eduard said, "sa god me reid,
Thouch he and all that he may leid
Cum, we sall fecht, all war thai ma."
Quhen the king herd his brothir swa 56
Spek to the battale so hardely,
He prysit hym in his hert gretly,
And said, "brothir, sen swa is gañe
At this thing thus is vndirtañe, 60
Schap we vs tharfor manfully,
And all that lufis vs tendirly
And the fredoṁe of this cuntre,
Purvay [thaim] at that tym to be 64
Bowne with all mycht that eu*ir* [thai] may ;
Swa that gif our fayis assay
To reskew strewillyng throu battale,
That we of purpoſ ger thame faill." 68

and a part of Scotland.

"We are set," said he, "in great jeopardy."

Edward replies that the Scotch can fight all the English power.

Bruce says they must at any rate try and fight it out.
[Fol. 82 b. C.]

Till this all thai assentit ar,
And bad thair men all mak thai*m* ȝare
For to be boune agane that day

All assent to this, and make all preparations.

45, 46. E *transposes these lines.*
45. *That*] EH *om.*
46. *a gret*] ȝeit a E ; a great H.
48. *vageowris*] wageour*is* E ; wageours H.
49. *qwheyn*] quhoyne E ; few H.
58. *prysit*] praised H. *gretly*] gretumly.
60. *At*] That EH.
61. *manfully*] manlely E ; manly H
64. [*thaim* E] them H ; vs C.
65. *all*] all the. *with—ewir*] on their best wise, that H. [*thai* E] they H ; we C.
66. *that gif*] giff that E ; gif H. *assay*] will assay H.
69. *Rubric in* H—The sembling of the English Oist, That with great power came and boast.
Till] To. *all thai*] thai all. H *has*—On this wise all assentit were.

On the best wiß that eu*ir* thai may. 72
Than all that worthy war to ficht,
Of scotland, set all haill thair my*ch*t
Till purvay thame agane that day;

They provide weapons and armour.

Wapnys and armowr*is* purvayit thai, 76
And all that efferis for fichting.
And of yngland the mychty kyng
Purvait hym on so gret aray,

The English too made greater preparations than ever they had made before.

That certis neu*ir* I herd ȝeit say 80
That ynglis men mair [aparaile]
Maid than thai did than for battale.
And quhen the tym wes cu*m*my*n* ner,
He assemblit all his power; 84
And but his awne cheuelry,
That wes so gret It wes ferly,

The English king had with him many men from France,

He had of mony a fer cuntre
With hym gud men of gret bounte. 88
Of franß añe worthy cheuelry
He had in-till his Cumpany;

the Earl of Hainault, and men of Gascony, Brittany, and others.

The Erll of he*n*naut als wes thar,
And wyth him men that vorthy var 92
Of gascon and of almanȝe;
Of duche als and of bretanȝhe
He had wicht men and weill farrand
Armyt clenly at fut and hand. 96

He gathered the whole chivalry of England;

*Of yngland hale the cheuelry
*He had thair gade*r*it so clenly,

72—75. H *omits these lines.*
75. *Till*] To.
77. *efferis for*] affer*is* to E; affeered to H.
79. *on*] in EH.
80. *neuir—ȝeit*] hard I neu*ir* E; I heard neuer H.
81. [*aparaile* E] apparell H; reparale C.
82. *than for*] for E; for that H.
83. *And*] For EH.
87. *a fer*] a farre H; ser E.
89. *ane*] and H; E *om.*
91. *hennaut*] henaud E; Henault H.
93. *gascon*] gascoyne. *almanȝe*] Almany.
94. *duche—and*] off the worthyast. *bretanȝhe*] bretangny.
96. *at*] bath E; baith H. *fut*] head H.
97*, 98*. *Apparently omitted accidentally in* P; *found in* EJH. *hale*] to E; als H.

That he left nane mycht vapnys velde, 97
Or worthy war to ficht in felde.
Of waliß als wyt*h* hym had he,
And of yrlande añe gret menȝe; 100
Of pouty, aquytañe, and bayoñ
He had full mony of gret renouñ.
And of Scotland he had ȝeit then 103
*A gret menȝe of worthy men.
*Quhen all thir sa*m*myn assemblit war,
*He had of fechtar*is* with hym thar
Añe hundreth thousand men and ma.
And fourty thousand war of tha 104
Armyt on hors, bath hede ande hand;
And ȝeit of thai war thre thousand,
Wyth helit horß in-till playn male,
Till mak the front of the battale. 108
And fifty thousand of archerys
He had, forouten the hoblerys;
With men on fut and small rangale,
That ȝemyt harnaß and vittale. 112
He had so fele It wes ferly.
Of cartis als that ȝeid thaṁe by
So feill, that, but all thai that bar
Harnaß, and als that chargit war 116
Of palȝeonys and veschall vith-all,

also a large host from Wales, [Fol. 37 *b*. E.] Ireland, Poitou, Aquitaine, and Bayonne.

When all were assembled, there were 100,000; [Fol. 83. C.]

besides 40,000 horsemen well armed, amongst whom were 3000 with horses covered with armour;

also 50,000 archers,

and men of foot and army-followers.

There were also many carts, carrying armour, tents,

97. *he—nane*] nane left that E; nane were left H.
98. *worthy*] mychty.
99. *Of*] All.
100. *ane*] A.
101. *pouty*] poittyne E; Poytow H.
102. *full*] EH *om.*
103*—106*. *Not in* E; *but found in* H. *And*] H *om.* *all—sammyn*] altogidder H.
104. *tha*] *so in* EH; *written* thai *in* C.
106. *ȝeit—thai*] off thai ȝeit.
107. *helit*] barded H. *in-till—male*] in plate and mailȝe E; in plait and mailyie H.
108. *Till*] To EH.
110. *the*] EH *om.* *hoblerys*] hobeleris E; hobillers H.
111. *With—on*] And men of. *and—rangale*] *left blank in* E.
112. *ȝemyt*] keeped H.
114. *that*] *so in* H; thar E. *thame*] him H.
115. Sa feill, that by them that chargde were H (*one line for* 115, 116; H *om.* 119.)
117. *Of*] With. H *has*—With Pauilliouns, and that vessell bare.

furniture, wine, wax, food, &c.

And apparall of chalmyr and hall,
And vyne and vax, schot and vittale,
Four scor wes chargit vith fewale. 120

All these took up a great deal of room.

Thai war so fele quhar at thai raid,
And thar battalis war ek so braid,
And so gret rowme held thar charre,
That men that mekill host mycht se 124

There might be seen worthy men, and armed knights, and sturdy steeds,

Our-tak the landis so largely.
Men mycht se than, that had beyn by,
Mony añe vorthy mañ and vycht,
And mony añe gayly armyt knycht, 128
And mony añe sturdy sterand steid
Arayit in-till so ryche weid,

and helmets, and shields, and spears, enough to conquer the world.

And mony helmys and hawbyrschownys,
*Scheldis and speris with pennownys,
And so mony a cumly knycht, 132
At semyt weill that in-to ficht
Thai suld vencuß the warld all hale.
Quhy suld I mak to lang my tale?

They come to Berwick.

Till berwik ar thai cummyn Ilkañe, 136
And sum thar-in thar Innys has tañe,
And sum lugit without the townys

118. *chalmyr*] chambyr E; chamber H.
119. H *omits.*
120. *Four*] viii E; Foure H. *wes*] were H; E *om.* *fewale*] Fewall H; pulaile E.
121. *at*] that E.
122. *ek*] EH *om.*
123. *rowme*] rout H. *thar charre*] thair char E; they there H (*which destroys the rime*).
124. C *has*—That men that mycht that mekill host se; H *has*—That men that meekle Oast might see there; E *as in the text, but with* Than *for* That.
After l. 124 E *wrongly inserts*—Nerby quha sa wald be, *which is* l. 126 *in disguise;* P. *omits it.*
125. *Ourtak*] Ouertooke H. *so*] EH *om.* Cf. l. 146.
127. *ane*] A.
128. *gayly—knycht*] armur gayly dycht EH.
130. *Arayit*] Arrayed ay H. *so*] EH *om.*
131. *And*] EH *om.* *hawbyrschownys*] haberiownys E; Haberiones H.
132*. P. *omits, probably by accident.* *with*] and.
132. *cumly*] cumbly.
133. *At—weill*] That it semyt.
134. *vencuss*] wencuss E; vanquish H.
135. *mak to lang*] *so in* E; make too lang H; *but* C *has*—to long mak.
136. *Till*] To EH. *thai*] E *om.*
137. *thar—has*] has Innys EH.

In tentis and in palȝeownys.

And quhen the kyng his host has seyñe
So gret, so gud men, and so cleyñe,
He wes richt Ioyfull in his thoucht,
And weill presumyt thar wes nocht
In varld a kyng my*ch*t him vithstand;
Hym thoucht all wonnyn till his hand.
And largly emang his men
The landis of scotland delt he then.
Of othir me*n*nis land*is* large wes he;
And thai that war of his menȝe
Mannausit the scottis men halely
With gret vordis; bot, nocht-for-thi,
Or thai cum all to thair entent,
Howis in haill clath sall be rent!
The kyng, throu consall of his meñ,
His folk he delt in battalis ten.
In ilkañe war weill ten thousand,
That thoucht thai stalwardly suld stand
In the battale and stoutly ficht,
And leif nocht for thair fayis my*ch*t.
He set ledaris till Ilk battale,
Knawyn war of gud gou*e*rnale.
And till renownyt Erllis twa,
Of glowcister and [herfurd] var thai,
He gaf the vangard in ledyng,

140 The king of England beholds his army and rejoices.

144

[Fol. 83 *b*. C.]

He distributes the lands of Scotland among his men.

148

152

He divides the army into ten companies, each 10,000 strong.

156

160 Over each division he appoints a leader.

The Earls of Gloucester and Hereford lead the van.

164

140. H *has the Rubric*—How Englishmen manassed at will The Scots, and delt their lands till.

141. *so gud*] and sa gud E; sa good H. *and so*] and sa H; E *om.* so.

143. *presumyt*] supposyt that EH.

146. *emang*] amang.

147. *landis*] land.

148. *landis*] lands H; thing E. *large*] full large C; *but* EH *om.* full.

150. *halely*] hely E; haillely H.

153. *Howis*] Holles H.

154. H *has the Rubric*—In ten battells the Englishmen Were delt, and taught to Chiftanes then.

155. *he*] EH *om.* *in*] into H.

157. *thoucht*] lete.

158. In battell, and sould hald their right H. *stoutly*] stythly.

159. *leif*] let H.

161. *Knawyn*] That knawin E; That knawen H.

163. [*herfurd* E] Herfurde H; heffurd C.

164. *vangard*] *miswritten* vandgard C; wsward E; Vangard H.

With mony men at thar bydding,
Ordanit in-till full gret aray.
Thai war so cheuelruſ, that thai
Trowit, gif thai com to the ficht, 168
Thair suld no strynth with-stand thar my*cht*.

When the king had thus divided his army, he appointed his own division.

And the kyng, quhen his menȝe wer
Deuisit in-to battalis ser,
His awne battale ordanit he, 172
And quha suld at his bridill be.

Sir Giles d'Argentine and Sir Aymer de Valence attend him.

Schir gylys de argente he set
Vpon añe half, his renȝe to get,
And of vallanch s*chir* amery 176
On othir half, that wes vorthy;
For in thair sou*er*añe gret bownte
Atour the layff affyit he.
And quhen the kyng apon this viſ 180
Had ordanit, as I heir deuiſ,
His battalis and his stering,

He departs from Berwick.

Arly he raiſ in añe mornyng,
And fra berwik he tuk the vay. 184
Bath hyllis and valayis helit thai,

His host covers the country.

And the Battalis that war so braid,
Departit, our the feldis raid.
The son*n*e wes brycht and schynand cler, 188
And Armys, that new burnyst wer,

The whole field gleams with armour.

So blenknyt with the sonnys beym̃e,
[Fol. 84. C.] That all the felde ves in añe leym̃e

166. *gret*] gud.
168. *the*] E *om.*; H *retains.*
171. *in-to*] in-till.
174. *gylys de argente*] Geiles the Argentine H.
175. *ane*] A. *renȝe*] reyngȝe.
176. *of*] of the C; *but* EH *om.* the. *vallanch*] walence E; Wallance H.
178. *gret*] EH *om.*
179. *Atour*] Owt our E; Ouer all H.
180. H *has the Rubric*—How all the Noble Cheualry, At Edinbvrgh tooke harbery. *And*] EH *om.* *this*] this kyn E; this H.
181. *I*] Ik.
182. *stering*] renowning H.
183. *Arly—raiss*] He raiss arly. *ane*] A E; the H.
185. *helit*] couered H.
186. *And*] As. *so*] E *om.*
187. *feldis*] hilles H.
189. *Armys*] armouris E; armours H. *new*] bright H; E *om.*
190. *blenknyt*] blenked H; blomyt E.
191. *felde*] land EH. *ves*] wes E; seemed H. *ane leyme*] A leme.

Vith baneris richt freschly flawmand, 192
And pensalis to the vynd vaffand.
So fele thai var of ser qwyntiß,
That it war gret slicht to deuiß. [Fol. 38. E.]
For suld I tell all thar effer, 196 I could not, though I tried, describe them fully.
Thair countynans and thar maner,
Thouch I couth, I suld cu*mmer*ryt be.
The king, with all that gret menȝhe,
Till Edinburgh he raid on ry*ch*t. 200 They come to Edinburgh.
Thai war all out to [fele] to ficht
With few folk of añe sympill land;
[Bot] quhar god helpis, quhat may vithstand?

THE kyng robert, quhen he herd say 204 King Robert summons his men in haste.
That ynglißmen, in sic aray
And in-to sa gret quantite,
Com in his land, in hy gert he
His men be su*m*mond gen*er*aly; 208
And thai com all full villfully They come to the Torwood.
To the torwod, quhar at the kyng
Had ordanit to mak thar meting.
Schir Eduard the bruce, that wes vorthy, 212 Sir Edward comes with a large company.
Com vith a full gret Cumpany
Of gud men armyt weill and dicht,
Hardy and forsy for the ficht.
Valtir, steward of scotland, syñe, 216 Also Walter, steward of Scotland;
That than wes bot añe berdlaß hyñe,

192. *Vith*] EH *om.* *freschly*] freshly H; fayrly E. *flawmand*] *so* E; flambisighand H.
193. *vaffand*] wawand.
194. *qwyntiss*] quentiss E; Countreyes H.
196. *Fbr*] And EH. *effer*] affer.
197. *countynans*] contenance E; countyrnans (*sic*) C.
198. *cummerryt*] combryt.
200. *on*] him. *he—on*] are they commen H.
201. [*fele* E] feill H; fale C.
202. *ane*] A.
203. [*Bot* EH]; For C.
204. *Rubric in* H—How in this time assembled then, To King Robert hes certaine men.
210. *at*] that.
212. *that wes*] the EH.
214. *and dicht*] and dight H; at rycht E.
215. *the*] to EH.

Com vith a rout of nobill men,
That all be contynans mych*t* ken.

and the good lord Douglas,

And the gud lord dowglas alswa 220
Brocht vith him men, I vndir-ta,
That weill war oysit in fichting;
Thai sall the leß haf abasyng,

with men long inured to hard fighting.

Giff men betyd in thrang to be; 224
And avantage sall tytar se
For till stonay thar fayis mycht,
Than men that oysis nocht to ficht.

Also the Earl of Murray,

The Erll of murreff, vith his men 228
Arrayit weill, com alsua then
In-to gud cowyne for to ficht,
In gret will to maynteym̃e thar ry*ch*t;

and many other barons.

Vith othir mony gud barouñe, 232
And knychtis of full gret renouñe,
Com vith thair men full stalwardly.
Quhen thai assemblit worthely,

[Fol. 84 *b*. C.] They were 30,000 fighting men, besides keepers of the baggage.

Of fechtand men I trow thai ware 236
Thretty thousand, and sum deill mare,
Foroutyn cariage ande pou*e*rale,
That ȝemyt harnaß and wittale.

The king reviews them.

Our all the host than ȝeid the kyng, 240
And beheld [to] thair contynyng,
And saw thame of full fair effer;

219. *all—ken*] men my*ch*t be contynence ken E; men be countenance might them ken H. *contynans*] *written* contyrnans C.
220. *And*] E *om*. *lord*] lord of.
221. *I*] Ik.
222. *oysit*] wsit E; vsde H.
225. *And avantage*] And thar avantage C; Awantage thai E; And ane auantage H. *tytar*] sooner H.
226. *till*] to EH, *stonay* E] astoney H; *miswritten* stonayit C.
227. *oysis*] wsis E; vses H.
228. *murreff*] Murray H.
231. *In gret will*] And gret will E; And wilfull H. *to*] for to. *maynteyme*] manteym E; maintaine H. *rycht*] mycht.
232. Owtakyn thair mony barownys E; Outtaken mony other Baroun H.
233. *of full*] that of. *renoune*] renowne is.
235. *thai*] thai war. *worthely*] halely E; were hailly H.
238. *pouerale*] purall H; pettaill E.
241. [*to* EH] be C. *contynyng*] contenyng E; conteening H; contyrnyng C.
242. *effer*] affer.

Of hardy contynans thai wer,
Be liklynes the mast [cowart] 244
Semyt till do richt weill his part.
The kyng has seyn all thair hawyng,
That knew hym weill in-to sic thing,
And saw thame all comonly 248
Of sekyr contynans and hardy,
Forouten effray or abaysyng.
In his hert had he gret liking,
And thoucht that men of sa gret will, 252
Gif thai vald set thair mycht thair-till,
Suld be full hard till vyn, perfay.
Ay as he met thame in the way,
He welcummyt thame vith gladsum fair, 256
Spekand gud vordis heir and thair.
And thai, that thar lord so mekly
[Saw welcum] thame and so myldly,
Ioyfull thai war, and thoucht at thai 260
Micht weill put thame in-till assay
Of hard fechting in stalwart stour,
For till maynteym weill his honour.

He marks their stout appearance,

and thinks his men will be hard to conquer.

He speaks good words to them.

They are of good courage.

THE worthy kyng, quhen he has seyn 264
His host assemblit all bedeyn,
And saw thame wilfull to fulfill
His liking, with gud hert and will;

When he thus sees them all assembled,

248. *contynans*] *miswritten* contyrnans C; *so also in* l. 249.
244. [*cowart* EH] coward C.
245. *till—weill*] full weill to do E; to doe full well H.
248. *comonly*] commounaly E; commonly H.
249. *sekyr*] sic. *and*] and sa.
250. *Forouten*] For owt E; Without H.
253. *mycht*] will.
254. *till*] to EH.
255. *Ay*] And.
258. *mekly*] blythly H.
259. [*Saw welcum* E] So welcummyt C; Sa welcome H. *myldly*] hamly E, hamely H.
260. *at*] that.
261. *Micht—intill*] Aucht weill to put thaim till E; Aught well to put them in H.
262. *in*] or E; and H.
263. *till*] to EH. *weill*] E *om.*
264. H *has the Rubric*—The parting of the Scots men, That in foure battells delt were then.

And to maynteym weill thair franchiß, 268

He rejoices, and says,

He wes reiosit on mony wiß;
And callit all his consell preue,

"Ye see how the English come to rescue yon castle.

And said thame, "lordingis, now ȝe se
That ynglißmen with mekill mycht 272
Haß all disponit thame for the ficht,
For thai ȝoñ castell wald reskew.
Tharfor is gud we ordane now
How we may let thame of purpoß, 276
And swa to thame the wayis cloß,
That thai paß nocht but gret lettyng.

We have here 30,000 men; let us divide them into four companies,

We haf heir with vs at byddyng
Weill thretty thousand men and ma. 280
Mak we four battalis of all thai,
And ordane vs on sic maner,

[Fol. 85. C.]

That, quhen our fayis cummys neir,

and go towards the New Park.

We till the new park hald our vay; 284
For thair behufis thaim [pas, perfay,]
Bot gif that thai beneth vs ga,
And our the marraß pas; and swa
We sall be at avantage thair. 288

I think we shall do well to fight on foot.

For me think that richt speidfull war
To gang on fut to this fechting,
Armyt bot in-to licht armyng.

[Fol. 38 b. E.]

If we fight on horseback, they will beat us.

For schupe we vs on hors to ficht, 292
Syn that our fais ar mar of mycht,
And bettir horsit than ar we,
We suld in-to gret perell be.
And gif we ficht on fut, perfay, 296

268. *franchiss*] franches H; E *om.*
269. *reiosit*] ioyfull H. *on*] *so* CH; E *om.*
271. *lordingis*] lordis E; Lords H. *now*] now may H.
273. *for the*] to H.
276. *of*] of thair.
281. *all*] E *om.*
284. *till*] to EH.
285. [*pas perfay*] passe perfay H; neidwais gay C; nede away E.
286. *beneth*] will be-newth.
287. *pas and*] passe, and H; passand E.
289. *For*] And EH.
291. *in-to licht*] in light H; in litill E.
293. *Syn that*] Sen.

At avantage we sall be ay;
For in the park emang the treis
The hors men alwais cu*mmer*it beis,
And the sykis alswa thair douñe 300
Sall put thame to confusiouñe."

But amongst the trees their horses will be a hindrance."

All thai consentit to that saw,
And than, in-till añe litill thraw,
Thair four battalis ordanit thai; 304

All agree to this, and they form the army in four divisions.

And to the Erll thomas, perfay,
He gaf the vaward in leding;
For in his nobill gou*er*nyng
And in his hye cheuelry 308
Thai had assou*er*ans, trast trewly!

Thomas Randolph leads the van,

And, for to maynteym his baner,
Lordis that of gret vorschip wer
War assignit with thair menȝe, 312
In-till his battale for till be.

with many worthy lords under him.

The tothir battale wes gevin to lede
Till hym that douchty wes of dede,
And prisit of gret cheuelry, 316
That wes s*chir* eduard the worthy;
I trow he sall manteyme him swa,
That [how] sa eu*ir* the ga*m*myn ga,
His fayis to plenȝe sall mat*er* haf. 320

The second division was led by Sir Edward Bruce.

And syne the thrid battale he gaf
To valtir stewart for to leid,
And till dowglaß douchty of deid.
Thai war cosyngis in neir degre, 324
Tharfor till hym betaucht wes he,
For he wes ȝoung; and, nocht-for-thi,

The third by Walter Stewart and lord Douglas,

Walter being under Douglas' protection.

299. *cummerit beis*] E *om.*
300. *sykis*] Syke H. *thair*] there H; that ar thar E.
302. *to*] till.
303. *ane*] A. 305. *to*] till.
306. *He*] Thai.
309. Thai assoweryt ry*ch*t soueranly E; They had affiance souerainely H.
313. *till*] to EH.
316. *gret*] hey.
318. *him*] *so* CH; it E.
319. [*how* EH] C *om.*
321. *he*] thai.
322. *To*] Till.
323. *till*] to EH.
326. *and*] but.

[Fol. 85 b. C.]

I trow he sall sa manfully
Do his dewour, and virk so weill, 328
That hym sall neyd no mair ȝeymseill.

The fourth division the king commands in person,

The ferd battale the nobill kyng
Tuk till hym-self in gouernyng,
And had in-till his Cumpany 332

having the men of Carrick, Argyle, Cantire, and the Isles.

The men of carryk all halely,
And of argile and of kentyre,
And of the ylis, quhar-off wes syre
Anguß of ylis and but, all tha. 336
He of the playne-land had alsua
Of Armyt men añe mekill rout;
His battale stalward wes and stout.

He commands the rearguard, with the vanguard in front of him,

He said, the rerward he vald ma, 340
And evyn forrouth hym suld ga
The vaward, and on athir hand

the other divisions being on either side.

The tothir battalis suld be gangand
Behynd, on syde a litell space; 344
And the kyng, that behynd thaim was,
[Suld] se quhar thair war mast mystir,
And relief thaim vith his baneir.

The battale of bannokburne, strykyne & vonyng be gud kyng robert the bruce.

Thus king Robert

THE king thus, that wes vicht and viß 348
And richt vorthy at all deuiß,

327. *manfully*] manlily.
329. *ȝeymseill*] ȝemseill. H *has*—That men sall of his deedes tell.
331. *hymself in*] his awne.
333. *all*] EH *om.*
336. *ylis*] Ile E; the Iles H. *but*] Boot H. *tha*] *so in* E; *written* thai C. *all tha*] alswa H.
337. And of the plaine lands he had ma H.
338. *ane*] A. *mekill*] Noble H.
341. *forrouth*] for E; before H.
342. *vaward*] waward E; Vangard H; *miswritten* vawand C.
344. *Behynd*] *so* H; Besid E.
346. [*Suld* E] Sould H; To C.
347. *And*] And to C; EH *om.* to. *thaim*] them H; thar E.
Rubric from C; H *has*—How King Robert gart pottes make, And couer them well, I vndertake.
349. *vorthy—all*] awise at E; attentiue at H.

And hardy als atour all thing,
Ordanit his men for the fechting.
And on the morn, on Settirday, 352
The king herd his discurrour*is* say
That ynglis men with mekill mycht
Had lyin at Edinburgh that ny*ch*t.
Tharfor, forouten mair delay, 356
He to the new [park] held his way
With all that in his leding war,
And in the park thame herbryit thar.
And in añe playñe feld, by the way, 360
Quhar he thoucht neid behufit avay.
The ynglis men, gif that thai vald
Throw the park to the castell hald,
He gert men mony pottis ma 364
Of a fut breid round, and all tha
Var deip vp till añe ma*n*is kne,
Swa thik, that thai mycht liknyt be
Till añe vax-cayme that beis mais. 368
All that nycht travaland he vas,
Swa that, or day wes, he had maid
Thai pottis, and thamẽ helit had
Vith stik*is* and vith gyrs al greyñe, 372
Swa that thai mycht nocht veill be seyñe.
On [sonday than] in the mornyng,
Weill soyn eft*ir* the so*n*ne-Rising,
Thai herd the mes full reu*e*rently, 376
And mony shraf thamẽ deuotly,

ordered his battle.

On Saturday morning he hears that the English are at Edinburgh.

He sets off to the New Park.

In the way thither he causes many small pits to be dug, knee-deep,

and as close together as cells in a honeycomb.

These pits were covered over with [Fol. 86. C.] grass.

On Sunday morning the Scotch hear mass and are shriven.

350, 351. *So in* H. E *omits* l. 350, *but after* l. 351 *inserts*—In gud aray in alkin thing.
355. *that*] all.
356. *forouten*] with-owtyn.
357. [*park* E] Parke H; werk C.
361. *avay*] away E; haue way H.
366, 368. *anc*] A; *so also in* l. 360.
369, 370. H *omits, changing* mais (l. 368) *into* maid.
369. *All*] Thus all C; but E *om.* Thus.
370. *wes*] E *om.* *had*] has.
371. And then the Pots they couered had H.
372. *gyrss*] gres E; gerse H.
374. [*sonday than* E] Sunday syne H; settirday C (*by mistake*); *cf.* l. 352.
376. *the—reuerently*] thair mess commounaly.
377. *shraf thame*] thaim schraiff full E; shraue them full H.

That thoucht till de in that melle,
Or than to mak thar cuntre fre.
To god for thair richt prayit thai. 380

Some of them dined not, but fasted on bread and water, as it was St John's Eve (June 23).

Thair dynit nañe of thame that day,
[Bot, for] the vigill of sanct Iohñe,
Thai fastit bred and vattir ilkoñe.
The king, quhen that the meß ves doñe, 384
Went for to se the pottys soyñe,
And at his liking saw thai*m* maid.
On athir syde the vay, weill braid,

The king sees how the ground is all pitted.

It wes pottit, as I haf tald. 388
Gif that thair fais on horß will hald
Furth in that vay, I trow thai sall
[Fol. 39. E.] Nocht weill eschew foroutyn fall.
Throu-out the host syne gert he cry 392
That all suld arme thame hastely,
And busk thame on thar best maner.

When all are assembled, he gives notice

And quhen thai all essemblit wer,
He gert aray thame for the ficht, 396
And syne our all gert cry on hicht,
That quhat sa eu*ir* man that fand
His hert no*ch*t sekir for till stand

that all men whose hearts fail them are to go home.

To wyn all or de vith honour, 400
For to manteyme that stalward stour,
That he be tyme suld tak his way,
And nane suld duell vith him bot thai
That wald stand with him to the end, 404
And tak the vre that god vald send.
Than all ansuerd with a cry,

378. *till de*] to dey.
381. *dynit*] deyit (!) E.
382. [*Bot for* EH] For it C. *Also* C *inserts* wes *before* of.
383. *bred—vattir*] water and breid.
385. *for*] furth.
387. *the vay*] rycht.
388. *pottit*] potted H; pittyt E. *I*] Ik.
389. *will*] wald.
391. *eschew*] eschaip. *fall*] A fall.
392. *syne*] than.
395. *all*] E *om.*
397. *our—cry*] gert cry our all.
398. *quhat—man*] quha sa eu*ir* he war EH.
399. *till*] to.
402. *tak*] hald.
403. *nane*] E *om.*
405. *vre*] grace H.

And vith a voce said gen*er*aly,
That nane for dout of dede suld fale, 408
Quhill discumfit war the battale.

They reply that they will not fail him.

Q when the gud king had herd his men
Sa hardely him ansuer then,
Sayand, that nouth*ir* ded no dreid 412
Till sic discomfort suld thame leid,
That thai suld eschew the fechting,
In hert he had gret reiosyng.
For him thoucht men of sic cowyne, 416
So gude so hardy and so fyne,
Suld weill in battall hald thair richt
Agane men of full mekill mycht.
Syne all the small folk and pou*er*ale 420
He send with harnase and vittale
In-till the park, weill fer him fra,
And fra the battall gert thame ga;
And as he bad, thai went thair way; 424
Twenty thousand weill neir var thai.
Thair vay thai held till ane vale.
The kyng left, with ane clene menȝhe;
The quhethir thai war thretty thowsand. 428
I trow thai stalwardly sall stand,
And do thair deuour as thai aw!
Thai stude than rangit all on raw,
Reddy for till byde Battale, 432
Gif ony folk wald thame assale.

The king rejoices greatly.

[Fol. 86 b. C.]

He thought that such men would hold their own.

He sends the non-combatants to the park.

There were 20,000 of them.

The king had 30,000 with him.

407. *a voce*] a woce E; ane voyce H.
409. *the*] the gret E; the haill H.
410. *Rubric in* H—How the King sent fra him all haill, His small folke, cariage, and vittaill. *had*] has.
411. *him ansuer*] ansuer him.
412. *no*] na E; nor H.
414. *suld*] ne suld C; EH *om*. ne.
416. *cowyne*] covyne E; hauing H.
417. *so hardy*] and hardy E; sa hardy H. *and*] ande C.
420. *pouerale*] puraill H; pitall E.
421. *and*] and with.
423. *battall*] bataillis.
426. *Thair—held*] Thai held thair way EH. *ane vale*] A walo E; a valley H.
427. *ane*] A.
429. *I—sall*] That I trow sall stalwartly.
432. *till byde*] to gyff hard.

The king bids them all be ready, for his foes were at Falkirk.

The king gert thame all buskit be,
For he wist, in-to certante,
That his fayis all nycht lay 436
At the fawkirk, and [syne] at thai
Held toward him the vay all straucht,
With mony men of mekill mawcht.
Tharfor till his nevo said he, 440

He tells the Earl of Murray to guard the way beside the kirk.

The Erll of murreff, with his menȝe
Besyd the kirk till kepe the vay,
That na man past that gat avay,
For-out debat, to the castele. 444
And he said, that him-self suld wele
Kepe the Entre with his battale,
Gif that ony vald thair assale.

His brother, with Walter Stewart and Lord Douglas, is to be ready to help.

And syne his Broth*ir schir* Eduard, 448
And ȝoung valtir, the gud steward,
With the lord dowglaß alsua,
With thair menȝhe, gud tent suld ta,
Quhilk of thame had of help mister, 452
Suld help vith thame that vith him weir.

Douglas and Sir Robert Keith go to reconnoitre.

The king send than Iames of douglas
And schir robert of keth, that wes
Marshall of all the host of fee, 456
The ynglißmen*n*ys com to se.
And thai lap on and furth thai raid;
Weill horsit men vith thame thai had,

434. *Rubric in* H—How the King bade the Erle Mvrray, To keepe beside the Kirke the way.
435. *into*] in.
436—439. That Englishmen with meekle might Had lyen at the Falkirk that night. And syne to him the way all straight Held, with their men of meekle might H.
437. [*syne* E] C *om.*
440. *nevo*] newo E; Nevoy H. *said*] bad E; had H.
441. *murreff*] Murray H.
442. *till*] to EH.
443. *past*] pass E; sould passe H. *avay*] away E; perfay H.
444. *For-out*] Without H; For to E. *to*] E *om.*
445. *that*] E *om.*
449. *the gud*] the good H; alsua E.
450. *With*] And EH. *dowglass*] off douglas.
453. *Suld*] And.
455. *of keth*] of Keith H; the keyth E. *wes*] than was E.
456. *of fee*] of fe E; in fee H.
457. *com*] comming for H.
458. *and—raid*] withoutten bade H.

And soyn the gret host haf thai seyñe 460
Quhar scheldis schynand war so scheyñe, [Fol. 87. C.]
And basnetis weill burnyst bricht,
That gaf agane the sonne gret licht.
Thai saw so [fele] browdyn baneris, 464 They see so many banners, standards, pennons, and richly-dressed knights,
Standart*is*, pennownys apon speris,
And so feill knychtis apon stedis,
All flawamand in-to thair wedis,
And so fele battalis and so braid, 468
That tuk so gret rowñe as thai raid,
That the mast host and the stoutest that the stoutest men might have been afraid.
Of [crystyndome], and ek the best,
Suld be abasit for till Se 472
Thair fais in-to sic quantite,
And swa [arayit] for to ficht.
Quhe*n* the discurrowr*is* has had sicht
Of thair fais, as I herd say, 476
Towart the king thai tuk the vay, They return to King Robert, and tell him of the multitude of his foes.
And tald him, in gret preuate,
The multitude and the bewte
Of thair fais that com*me* so braid, 480
And of the gret mycht at thai had.
And the king bad thame thai suld ma He tells them to report otherwise.
Na contynans that it war swa;
Bot bad thañe in-to co*m*mouñe say, 484

460. *Catchword in* C—Quhar scheld*is* schynand var so scheyne.
462. *basnetis weill*] bassynetis E; Basnets H (*which reads* sa bright).
464. [*fele* E] mony CH; *see* l. 468.
465. *Standartis*] Standaris and E; Standerds and H. *pennownys*] Pensalls H. *apon*] vpon H; and E.
467. *flawamand*] flawmand E; flawming H. *into*] in EH. *wedis*] ioly weedes H.
470. *stoutest* E] *miswritten* stoutast C; best H.
471. [*crystyndome* E] Christendome H; cassidouse (*sic*) C. *ek*—*best*] the grettest E; the lykliest H.
472. *till*] to.
474. [*arayit* E] armyt CH.
475. *the*] thair EH. *has*] H *om.*
476. *herd*] ȝow.
477. *the*] thar.
478. *in gret*] in-till E; into H.
481. *at*] that.
482. *And*] Than. *thai*] *so* E; at thai C; that they H (*which omits* thame). *ma*] *so in* EH; *written* may C.
483. *contynans*] *written* contyrnans C.
484. *bad*] lat.

That thai com in-till euill aray,
And confort his men on that viß.
For often a single word causes discouragement.
For oftsiß of aňe vord may riß
Discomfort and tynsall with-all; 488
And throu a vord, als weill may fall,
Confort may riß and hardiment,
That gerris men cum to thair entent.
And on the sa*m*my*n* wiß it did her; 492
Thair comfort and thair hardy cher
Confortit thame so gretumly,
[Fol. 39 b. E.] That of thar host the lest hardy,
Be countinans, vald formast be 496
For till begin the gret melle.

Thus the king cheered his men.
Apon this viß the nobill king
Gaf all his men reconforting
Throu hardy countynans and cher, 500
That he maid on sa gud maner.
Thame thoucht that na myscheif my*ch*t be
So gret [with-thi] thai my*ch*t hym se
Befor thame, that suld swa engreiff, 504
[Fol. 87 b. C.] That na hys vorschip suld thame releif.
His vorschip thame confortit swa,
And contenans that he can ma,
Even the most cowardly took heart.
That the mast coward wes hardy. 508
On athir half, full stalwardly,

485. *euill*] ill H.
486. *And*] To EH. *men*] E *om.*
487. *oftsiss*] oft times H. *of ane*] throw a.
491. *That—to*] May ger men do E; To gar men come to H.
492. *And*] E *om.* *her*] er.
494. *Confortit*] Comford.
495. *That*] *follows* host *in* E.
496. *countinans*] *written* countirnans C.
497. *till*] to EH.
498. *Rubric in* H—How with a hundreth the Erle Mvrray To aught hundreth battell gaue.
499. *Gaf*] Gaue to H. *reconforting*] recomforting E; great comforting H.
500. *countynans*] *written* countyrnans C. *and*] of.
503. [*with-thi* E] with thy H; vith I that (*sic*) C. *mycht hym*] him my*ch*t.
504. *that—engreiff*] sua that thaim suld greve E; that sould sa engreeue H.
505. *na*] ne. *That na*] Bot H.
506. *thame confortit*] comfort thaim.
509. *stalwardly*] sturdely.

The ynglis men, in sic aray
As ȝe haf herd me forouth say,
Com with thair battalis approchand, 512
The Banerys to the vynd vaffand.
And quhen thai cu*m*my*n* war so neir,
That bot twa myle betuix thai*m* wer,
Thai chesit añe gud cumpany 516
Of men that wicht var and hardy,
On fair courseris armyt at rycht;
Thre banrent*is* of full mekill mycht
War capitanys of all that rout; 520
The lord clyffurd that wes so stout
Wes of thame all sou*e*rane ledeir,
Aucht hundreth Armyt, I trow, thai weir.
Thai war all ȝong men and Ioly, 524
And ȝarnand till do cheuelry.
The best of all the host war thai
[Off] contenans and of Aray.
Thai war the farast cumpany 528
That men mycht fynd of sa mony.
To the castell thai thoucht to fair,
For, gif that thai mycht weill cum thair,
Thai thoucht it suld reskewit be. 532
Furth on thair way held this menȝhe,
And toward strewilling tuk the way.
The new park all eschewit thai,
For thai wist weill the king wes thair; 536
Beneth the park [sa] can thai fair,

The English approach, with waving banners.

They send forward a company of men.

Three bannerets are chosen captains; and Lord Clifford leads them.

They are young men, 800 in number.

They make for Stirling castle.

They avoid the New Park.

513. *vynd vaffand*] wynd wawand.
516. *ane gud*] a Ioly E; a ioly H.
517. Of wight men armed iolely H.
519. *Thre banrentis*] Four lordys E; And great Lords H. *full*] EH *om.*
520. *all*] E *om.*
521. *lord*] syr the. *so*] E *om.*
522. *all* E] all the C. *ledeir*] ledar.
523. *Aucht hundreth*] viii c. *weir*] war.
525. *And*] EH *om.* *till*] to E; for to H.
526. *The*] Off. *all*] ywill (!).
527. [*Off* EH] Be C.
531. *mycht weill*] weill mycht.
534. *tuk the*] held thair.
535. *The new*] Beneath the H. *all*] H *om.*
537. *Beneth*] And beneth C; And newth E; And beneath H. *Yet* And *is not wanted.* *park sa*] Parke sa H; new park E; park C. *can*] gan.

Quhill neuth the kirk, in-till a rout.

Earl Thomas attacks them, with 500 men.

The Erll thomas, that wes so stout,
Quhen he saw thame swa tak the playñe, 540
In gret hye went he thame agañe
With v hundreth, forouten ma,
Anoyit in his hert and wa,
That thai so fer war passit by. 544

For the king had said, that a rose had fallen from his (the earl's) chaplet.

For the king had said hym roydly,
That añe rose of his chaplet
Wes faldyn ; for, quhar he wes set
To kep the way, thai men war past. 548
Tharfor he hastit hym so fast

[Fol. 88. C.]

That cu*m*my*n* in schort tyme wes he
To the playn feld with his menȝhe.
For he thoucht that he suld amend 552
That he trespassit had, or [than end].

The English spur to meet him.

And quhen the ynglis men him saw
Cum on, forouten dreid or aw,
And tak sa hardely the playne, 556
In hy thai sped thame, him agañe,
And strak with spur*is* the sted*is* stith,
That bare thame evyn hard and swith.

The Earl cheers on his men, saying,

And quhen the Erll saw that menȝhe 560
Cum so stoutly, till his said he,
"Beis nocht abasit for thair schor,
Bot settis speris ȝow befor,
And bak to bak set all ȝour rout, 564

"Set all your spear-points outwards."

And all the speris poyntis out ;
Swagat defend vs best may we,
Enveronyt with thame gif we be."

538. *Quhill neuth*] Weill newth E ; Vnder H.
540. *swa tak*] sa ta.
542. *v*] *so* E ; ane H.
545. *roydly*] rudly E ; rudely H.
546. *ane*] A.
547. *faldyn*] fallyn E ; fallen H.
549. *Tharfor*] And tharfor.
553. [*than end* EH] thai wend C.
555. *dreid*] dyn.
559. *hard*] and hard H.
561. *his*] his men H.
562. *Beis*] Be EH. *schor*] *so* E ; shore H.
566. *Swagat*] That gate H. *defend —best*] ws best defend.

And as he bad thame, thai haf done; 568
And the tothir com alsoyne.
Befor thame all thair com prikand
A knycht, hardy of hert and hand; Sir William Dancourt precedes the English host.
He wes a weill gret lord at hame, 572
Schir Wilȝame dencort wes his name.
He prekit on thame so hardely,
And thai him met so sturdely,
That he and horß war born all doune, 576 He is slain at once.
And slayne richt thair for-out ransoune.
With ynglis men gretly wes he
Menyt that day, and his bountee.
The layffe com on thame sturdely; 580
Bot nane of thame so hardely
Ruschit emang thame as did he, The rest come on more slowly.
Bot with fer mair maturite.
Thai assemblit all in ane rout, 584
And Enveronyt thame all about, They surround the band of Scottish knights,
Assalȝeand thame on [ilka] syde;
And thai with speris vound*is* vyde
Gaf to the hors that com thame neir; 588
And thai that rydand on thame weir,
That doune war born, lossit the lyvis.
And mony speris, dart*is*, & knyvis, and throw darts and knives
And vapnys, apon seir maneir, 592 amongst them.
Kest emang thame that fechtand weir,
That thame defendit so vittandly, [Fol. 86 b. C.]

568. *thai haf*] sa haue they H.
569. *com*] come on E; came on H.
570. *thair*] E *om.*
572. *He wes*] And E; And was H.
573. *Wilȝame*] Gilȝame. *dencort*] de Amecout E; the Hawcourt H.
574. *He*] And EH. *on*] at H. *so*] E *om.*
576. *war*] were H; wes E. *all*] E *om.* *born all*] baith borne H.
580. *thame*] rycht E; full H.
582. *emang*] amang EH.
584. *ane*] A.
586. [*ilka* E] ilke C. And to the enemies in that tyde H.
587. *And thai*] Raue H (*for* Gaue; *cf.* l. 588).
588. *Gaf*] H *om.* *to*] till.
590. *lossit*] losyt E; lossed H.
591. *mony*] mony with C; othyr E; als H.
592. *vapnys apon*] wapynnys on.
593. *emang*] amang.
594. *vittandly*] wittily E; worthely H.

That thair fayis had gret ferly.
[Fol. 40. E.] For sum vald schut out of thar rout, 596
And of thame that assalȝeit about
Stryk stedis, and ber douñe men.

The English even throw at them swords and maces.

The ynglis men so roydly then
Kest emang thame swerd*is* and mas, 600
That [inwith] thame añe montañe waß
Of vapnys that war varpit thair.
The Erll and his thus fechtand war
At gret myscheiff, as I ȝow say; 604

The Scottish band is outnumbered and surrounded.

For quhenar be full fer war thai
Than thair fayis, [and all] about
Enveronyt war, [quhar] mony a rout
War roucht, and full dyspitfully 608
Thair fais [demanit] thai*m* ry*ch*t stratly.
On athir half thai war so stad,

Both sides are oppressed with the heat.

For the [rycht] gret heit that thai had,
Of fechting and of sonnys het, 612
That all [thair] flesche of swat wes wete.
And sic añe stew raiß owth thame then

Horses and men raise a reek and a great dust, so

Of aynding, bath of hors and men,
And of powdir, and sic myrknes 616
In-till the ayr abovyn thame wes,

598. *Stryk*] Stekyt E; Sticked H. *ber*] bar E; bare H.
599. *roydly*] rudly EH; *see* l. 545.
600. *emang*] amang EH. *mas*] masis C; mass *or* mas*is* E; speares H. *Perhaps it should be* suerd and mas.
601. [*inwith* H] in myddis of C; ymyd E. *ane montane*] A monteyle.
602. *vapnys*] wapynnys. *varpit*] warpyt.
605. *quhenar*] quhonnar E; fewer H.
606. *Than*] For H. [*and all* E] all wes C; them all H.
607. *Enveronyt war*] War inweround. [*quhar* E] where H; with C. *a*] E *om.*
608. *and*] E *om.*; them H. *dyspitfully*] dispitously E; dispitteously H.
609. [*demanit*] demanyt E; demand C; demained H. *See* l. 624. *rycht stratly*] full starkly E; straitly H.
610. *half*] side H.
611. [*rycht* E] CH *om.* *heit*] bargane H.
612. *Of*] For EH. *of*] for EH.
613. [*thair* E] their H; the C. *of*] with H.
614. *ane*] A. *owth*] out of E; ouer H.
615. *aynding*] aneding E; breathing H.
616. *and* (2)] that EH.

That it wes vound*ir* for till Se; — that they can scarcely see.
Thai war in gret perplexite.
Bot with gret travale, no*ch*t-for-thi, 620
Thai thame defendit manfully,
And set bath will [and strenth] and my*ch*t — The Scotch are determined to conquer.
Till rusche thair fais in that ficht,
That than demanit thame angrely. 624
Bot gif god help thame hastely,
Thai sall thar fill haf of fechtyng!

How gud Iames of douglaß askit at king robert the bruce leiff to gang to supple Erll thomas randall.

Bot quhen the nobill renownyt kyng, — When it is seen that Earl Thomas takes the open field,
With othir lordis that war hym by, 628
Saw how the Erll abaundonly
Tuk the playn feld, Iames of douglas
Com to the kyng richt quhar he was,
And said, "A schir! Sanct mary! 632 — Douglas asks permission to help him.
The Erll of murreff oppynly
Tak*is* playne feld with his menȝhe!
He is in perell bot giff he be
Soyñe helpit, for his fayis ar ma 636 [Fol. 89. C.]
Than he, and horssit weill alsua.
And, vith ȝour leif, I will me speid
To help him, for that he has neid;
All enveronyt vith fayis is he." 640
The king said, "sa our lord me se, — The king forbids Douglas to do so.
A fut till hym thou sall nocht ga.
Giff he weill dois, let hym veill ta.

618. *voundir*] woundre. *till*] to.
621. *manfully*] manlily.
622. [*and strenth* E] strength H; strinth C.
623. *Till*] To EH.
624. *than*] thaim. *thame*] than.
627. *Rubric from* C.
630. *the*] H *om.*
632. *A schir*] Sir, ah H. *Sanct*] Sancta H.
633. *murreff*] Murray H. *After* murreff C *inserts* all, *which* EH *omit.*
634. *Tukis*] Tayss the E; Takes the H.
635. *giff*] EH *om.*
638. *leif*] leue.
639. *that*] EH *om.* *has*] hes great H.
640. *enveronyt*] umbeweround *fayis*] his fayis E; his fees H.
643. *veill*] weill.

Quhethir him happin to vin or loß, 644
I will nocht for him brek purpoß."

But Douglas repeats his request.

"Certis," he said, "I will no viß
Se that his fayis hym suppriß,
Quhen that I may set help thar-till. 648
With ȝour leiff, sekirly I will
Help hym, or de in-to the payñe."

The king gives him leave, and he goes.

"Do than, and speid the soyn agañe,"
The king said: and he held his vay. 652
Gif he may cum in tyme, perfay,
I trow he sall hym help so weill,
That of his fayis sum sall feill! 655

644. *him*] *so* H; him eu*ir* C; eu*ir* him E.
646. *he said*] said Iames E; said he H. *will no*] ma na EH. *viss*] wiss.
649. *leiff*] leve.
650. *de*] die H.
652. *vay*] way.
654. *he—hym*] that he sall H.
655. *of*] all EH. *sum sall*] sall It EH.

[BOOK XII.]

Now douglas furth his way he tais,
And in that self tyme fell, throu caſ,
That the kyng of England, quhen he
Wes cu*m*myn with his gret men*ȝ*he 4
Neir to the place, as I said air,
Quhar scottis men arayit war,
He gert arest all his battale,
At oth*i*r als to tak consale, 8
Quheth*i*r thai vald herbery thame th*a*t ny*ch*t,
Or than, but mair, ga to the ficht.
The vaward, that vist no kyn thing
Of this arest na thair duelling, 12
Raid to the park all straucht thar vay,
Forout styntyng, in gude aray.
And quhen the kyng wist at thai weir
In haill battale cu*m*mand so neir, 16
His battale gert he weill aray.
He raid apon añe g[r]ay palfray
Litill and Ioly, arayande
His battall, with añe ax in hande; 20

Douglas sets forward.

The king of England halts his main army;

but his vanguard rides on.

When king Robert perceives they are so near,

he arrays his men, riding on a gray palfray, axe in hand.

Rubric in H—How the King slew Sir Henrie Bowm, With his handaxe, and strake him down.

1. *way he*] wayis. *he tais*] tane hes H.

5. *air*] ar.

8. *At*] And. *als*] alsua.

9. *herbery thame*] herbry thaim E; harbrie them H; thame herbery C.

11. *vist—kyn*] wist na.

12. *this*] his H. *thair*] his EH.

14. *Fbrout*] For-owtyn E; But H. *in*] into H.

18. *ane gray*] ane gay C; a litill E. H *has*—Himselfe rade on a gray Palfray.

19. *Litill*] Laucht E; Proper H.

He wears a leathern hat, with a crown set on it.

And on his basnet hye he bar
Ane hat off qwyrbolle ay-quhar,
[Fol. 39 b. C.] And thar-vpon, in-to taknyng,
Añe hye croune, that he wes añe kyng. 24
And glowcister and herfurd wer,
With thair battalis, approchand ner;
Befor thame all thar com rydand,
With helme on hed and sper in hand, 28

Sir Henry de Bohun rides in advance of the English army.

Schir henry of bowme the worthy,
That wes añe gud knycht and hardy,
And to the Erll of herfurd cosyñe,
Armyt in armys gude and fyñe; 32
Com on a steid, a merk-schot neir
Befor all othir that thair wer,
And knew the king, for that he saw
Hym swa araynge his men on raw, 36

He knows king Robert by his crown.

And be the croun that wes set
Abovin his hed on the basnet;
And toward him he went *in* hy.
[Fol. 40 b. E.] And quhen the kyng so apertly 40
Saw hym cum forrouth all h*is* feris,
In hy till hym his hors he steris;
And quhen s*chir* henry saw the kyng
Cum on for-outen abaysyng, 44

He rides fiercely at the king,

Till him he raid in full gret hy.
He thoucht that he suld weill lichtly
Vyn hym, and haf hym at his will,
Sen he hym saw horsit so Ill. 48

21. *basnet hye*] bassynet E; Basnet heght H.
22. *off qwyrbolle*] off tyre (*or* cyre) aboune E; with Carbuncle H.
24. *ane*] EH *om.*
25. *And*] And when.
26. *battalis*] bataill.
29. *of bowme*] the boune E; the Bowme H.
30. *ane—knycht*] a wy*ch*t knycht E; a Knight H. *and* H] and ane C; & a E.
32. *and*] ande C.
33. *merk-schot*] bow-schote EH.
36. *araynge*] arraying H; rang E.
37. *that*] also H.
38. Alsua apon his bassynet E.
40. *quhen*] E *om.*
42. *his*] the.
48. *saw horsit*] horsyt saw.

Than sprent thai sa*m*myn in-till a lyng;
Schir henry myssit the nobill kyng; — but misses him.
And he, that in his sterapis stude,
With ax that wes bath hard and gude — 52 King Robert, with one stroke of the axe,
With so gret mayn roucht hym añe dynt,
That nouth*ir* hat no helme mycht stynt
The hevy dusche that he him gaf,
That he the hed till harnyſ claf. — 56 cleaves his head in twain, but breaks the axe.
The hand-ax-schaft ruschit in twa,
And he doune till the erd can ga
All flatlyngis, for hym falȝeit mycht;
This wes the first strak of the ficht, — 60
That wes perfornyst douchtely.
And quhen the kyng*is* men so stoutly
Saw him, richt at the first metyng,
For-outen dout or abaysing, — 64
[Have] slayn añe knycht swa at añe strak, — The Scotch knights take courage at this.
Sic hardyment than can thai tak,
That thai com on richt hardely.
Quhen ynglis men saw thame stoutly — 68
Cum on, thai had gret abaysyng; — [Fol. 90. C.]
And specialy, for that the kyng
So smertly that gud kny*ch*t had slayñe;
Than thai with-drew thai*m* eu*ir*-ilkañe, — 72 The English retreat.
And durst nocht than abyde to ficht,
So dred thai than the kyng*is* mycht.
And quhen the kyng*is* men thame saw
Swa in haill battale thame vithdraw, — 76

49. *Than*] EH *om.* *sammyn*] togidder H.
52. *ax*] the ax. *bath*] baith H; E *om.*
53. *ane*] A.
55. *dusche*] dynt H.
56. That ner the heid till the harnys clave E; The head right to the harnes claue H.
57. *ruschit*] fruschit E; frushed H.
58. *till*] to EH. *can*] gan.
59. *flatlyngis*] flatlynys.
65. [*Have* EH] Has C. *ane*] A (*twice*) EH.
66. *than can*] thar-at gan.
68. *stoutly*] sa stoutly E.
71. *had*] has.
72. *Than*] Then H; That E.
73. *than*] then H; ane E.
74. *than*] for EH.

The Scotch pursue.

A gret schot till thame can thai mak,
And thai in hy tuk all the bak,
And thai, that followit thame, has slayñe
Sum of thame that thai haf our-tane. 80

Most of the English escape.

Bot thai war few, forsuth to say;
Thar hors fete had ner all avay!
But how sa quheyn deit thair,
Reboytit fellely thai war, 84
And raid thair gat with weill mair schaṁe,
Be full fer, than thai com fra haṁe.

When the King returns his lords blame him,

Qwhen at the king reparit wes,
That gert his men leif all the chaß, 88
The lordis of his Cumpany
Blamyt [him], as thai durst, gretly,
That he hym put in auenture
To mete so stith a knycht and sture 92

saying that "it might have been the loss of us al"

In sic poynt as he than wes seyn;
For thai said, "weill it mycht haf beyñe
Cauß of thair tynsale euirilkañe."
The kyng, thame ansuer maid he nañe, 96

But the king only laments his broken battle-axe.

Bot menyt his hand-ax-schaft, that swa
Wes with añe strak brokyn in twa.
The Erll thomas wes ȝeit fechtand
With fayis apon athyr hand, 100
And slew of thame añe quantite,
Bot wery war his men and he;
The quhethir with vapnys sturdely
Thai thame defendit manfully, 104

77. *schot*] schowt E; shout H.
78. *tuk*] gaue H.
82. *ner*] them H; E *om.*
83. *quheyn*] quhoyne. Except some part that died there H.
84. *fellely*] foulily E; filthily H.
85. *gat*] way H.
87. *at*] that EH.
88. *leif all*] all leve.
90. [*him* EH] C *om.*
92. *stith*] starke H.
94. *said*] E *om.* *weill*] H *om.*
96. *thame—he*] ansuer has maid thaim E; answer hes made right H.
97. *that*] E *om.*
98. *ane*] the E; that H.
101. *slew*] E *om.* *ane*] A.
104. *manfully*] manlely.

Quhill that the lord dowglaß com neir,
That sped hyme apon gret maneir.
The ynglis men that war fechtand,
Quhen thai the douglas saw at hand, 108
Thai vayndist and maid añe opnyng.
Schir Iames dowglaß, be thair relyng,
Knew at thai war discumfit neir,
Than bad he thame that vith him weir 112
Stand still, and preß no forthirmar;
"For thai that ȝondir fechtand ar,"
He said, "ar of sa gret bounte,
That thair fayis [weill] soyn [sall] be 116
Discumfit throu thar awn mycht,
Thouch no man help thaim for to ficht.
For cum we now in-to fechting,
Quhen thai ar at discumfyting, 120
Men suld say we thame ruschit had,
And swa suld thai, that cauß [has] mad
With gret travaill and hard fechting,
Leiß añe part of thair lovyng. 124
And it war syn to leiß his priß,
That of sa souerañe bounte is,
That he throu playn & hard fechting
Has heir eschewit unlikly thing; 128
He sall haf that he wonnyn has."
The Erll, with thame that fechtand was,
Quhen he his fayis saw brawll swa,

Douglas comes to help Randolph.

The English knights waver.

Douglas perceives this, and halts his men.

[Fol. 90 b. C.]

He says he will leave Randolph to fight it out, and win all the glory.

"It were a sin for him to lose his well-earned honour."

105. *lord*] E *om.*
106. *apon*] on.
107. *The*] And EH.
108. *at hand*] nerhand E; comming H.
109. *Thai vayndist*] Thai wandyst E; Euanishing H. *and*] H *om.*
110. *Schir Iames*] Iames of. *relyng*] relying E; reeling H.
111. *at*] that.
112. *he*] E *om.*
116. [*weill* E] all H; will C. [*sall* EH] C *om.*
119. *For*] And EH. *in-to*] to the EH.
121. *ruschit*] fruschit E; rescued H.
122. [*has* E] had C.
124. *Leiss*] Loss *or* Less E; Lose H. *ane*] a E; a great H.
125. *his*] thair E; his H.
127. *That*] And.
128. *eschewit*] encheeued H.
130. *thame*] that EH.
131. *brawll*] brawland E; reeling H.

Randolph presses the English hard,

In hy apon thame can he ga, 132
And pressit thame so wound*ir* fast
With sad strak*is*, quhill, at the last,

till at last they flee.

Thai fled and durst no*cht* byde no mar.
Bath men and hors slayn left thai thar, 136
And held thair way in full gret hy,
Nocht all to-gidder bot syndrely;

Many were slain.

And thai that war ourtañe var slayñe.
The layff went to thair host agane, 140
Of thair tynsall sary and wa.

Earl Thomas and his men

The Erll, that had hym helpit swa,
And his men als that war very,
Hynt of thair basnetis in-till hy 144

[Fol. 41. E.] take off their helmets to cool themselves.

Till avent thame, for thai var hat;
Thai war all helit in-to swat.
Thame semyt men forsuth, I hicht,
That had fayndit thair fayis in ficht, 148
And swa thai did full douchtely.

Of all his company he lost but one yeoman.

Thai fand of all thair Cumpany
That thar wes bot añe ȝeman slayñ,
Than lovit thai god and war full fayñ, 152
And blith [that] thai eschapit swa.
Toward the king than can thai ga,
And till him soyne weill cu*m*in ar
He askit thame of thair weill-fair, 156

134. *sad*] hard EH.
135. *and*] that. *nocht byde*] abid E; abide H.
136. *men—hors*] horss and men EH. *slayn*] H *om.*
140. *to*] till.
141. *and*] *so in* E; ande C.
142. *helpit*] helpyn.
143. *men*] E *om.* *very*] wery.
144. *basnetis intill*] bassynettis in.
145. *avent thame*] awent thaim E; draw their breath H. *hat*] haite H; wate E.
146. *all helit*] all helyt E; helit all C.
147. *Thame*] thaim E; They H. *I*] Ik.
148. *fayndit*] fended H; fandit E. *fayis*] faes H; force E.
151. *ane ȝeman*] ane ȝemane C; a ȝuman E; a some few H.
152. *Than*] And. *thai*] E *om.* *war*] wes.
153. [*that* EH] wes C.
154. *can*] gan.
NOTE. *After* l. 153, *lines* 169, 170 *appear in* E, *being misplaced.*
155. *soyne weill*] weill sone.
156. *So in* H; E *has*—He wyttyt at thaim of thair far.

And gladsum cher to thame he maid,
For thai so weill than born thame had.
Than all ran in-to gret dantee
The Erll of murreff for till se; 160
For his hye vorschip and valour
All ȝarnit till do him honour.
So fast thai ran till se hym thair,
That neir all sa*m*myn assemblit war. 164
And quhen the gud king can thai*m* se
Befor him swa assemblit be,
Blith and glad that thair fayis war
Sa reboytit, as said wes ar, 168
A litill quhill he held him still,
[Syne] on this wiſ he said thame till.

The king praises them.

All run to see the Earl of Murray.

[Fol. 91. C.]

King Robert, finding them thus assembled, addresses them as follows:—

"Lordyngis," he said, "we aucht to luf
Almychty god that sittis abuf, 172
That send*is* vs so fair begy*n*nyng.
It is añe gret disconfortyng
Till our fais, that on this viſ
Sa soyn reboytit has beyn twiſ. 176
For quhen thai of thair host sall heir,
And knaw suthly on quhat maneir
Thair avaward, that wes so stout,
And syne ȝon othir Ioly rout— 180
That I trow of the best men war

"We ought to praise God for this fair beginning.

When the main army of the English come to hear of the repulse of their vanguard,

157. *he*] E *om.*
158. *than*] EH *om.* *born thame*] thaim borne EH.
159. *ran*] *so* H; pressyt E. *dantee*] daynte.
160. *murreff*] Murray H. *till*] to.
161, 162. H *omits.* *valour*] gret valour E. *till*] to.
163. *till*] to EH.
164. *all sammyn*] hand all H. *war*] ar.
168. Rabutyt apon sic maner E; Rebuted vpon that maner H.
169. *See note to l.* 154.
170. [*Syne* EH] And C. *thame till*] them till H; his will E.
171. *Rubric in* H—How that the King comforted his men, That twyse their faes rebuted had then. *he—to*] we aucht to love and E; we ought to loife, and H.
174. *ane*] A.
176. *reboytit—beyn*] has bene rabutyt EH.
179. *avaward*] waward E; Vangard H.

That thai my*ch*t get emang thame thar—
War reboytit so suddandly,
I trow, and knawis it all cleirly, 184

they will be much discouraged.

That mony añe hert sall vaverand be
That semyt ere of gret bounte.
And fra the hert be discumfite,
The body is nocht vorth a myt. 188
Thar-for I trow that gud ending
Sall follow till our begy*n*nyng.

I do not ask you to follow my will.

The quhethi*r* I say no*ch*t this ȝow till,
For that ȝe suld follow my will 192
To ficht, for in ȝow sall all be;

If you wish to fight, let us do so; if not, I will do as you do."

For gif ȝe think spedfull that we
Fecht, we sall ficht; and gif ȝe will
We leiff, ȝour liking to fulfill, 196
I sall consent on alkyn wiß
Till do richt as ȝhe will deuiß;
Tharfor sais on ȝour will planly."
Than vith añe voce all can thai cry— 200

They all give their voices for battle on the morrow.

"Gud king, forouten mair delay,
To-morn, als soyn as ȝe se day,
Ordane ȝow haill for the battale,
For dout of ded we sall nocht fale; 204
Na nañe payn sall refusit be
Till we haue maid our cu*n*tre fre."

182. *get*] find H. *emang*] amang.
183. *reboytit*] rabutyt. *suddandly*] sodanly.
184. *all*] *miswritten* sall *in* E.
185. *ane*] A. *vaverand*] wawerand E; wauering H.
190. *follow*] folow E; *miswritten* fallow C.
191. *The*] And.
192. *follow*] folow E; fallow C; fulfill H.
193. *for*] bot. *sall all*] all sall.
194. *ȝe think*] ȝow thinkis.
195. *ficht*] E *om.*
196. *leiff*] leve.
198. *Till*] To EH.
199. *on*] *so* H; off E.
200. *Than*] Then H; And E. *ane voce*] a woce E; a voyce H. *all*] *so* H; than E.
201. *Gud*] And the (*wrongly*) E.
205. *nane*] na.
206. *Till*] Quhill.

Q when the king herd thaim so manly
Spek to the ficht and hardely, 208
*[Saying, that nouther life nor dead
*To sik discomfort sould them lead
*That they sould eschew the feghting,
In heart he had great reioycing;] 212
In hert gret gladschip can he ta,
And said, "lordyngis, sen ȝe will sa,
Schapis tharfor in the mornyng
Swa that we, be the sonne-rysing, 212
Haf herd mes, and be buskit weill,
Ilk man [in-]till his awñe yscheill,
Without the palȝownys arayit,
In battale with baneris displayit. 216
And luk ȝhe na vay brek aray;
And, as ȝe luf me, I ȝow pray,
That ilk man for his awñe honour
Purvay hym a gud baneour. 220
And quhen it cummys to the ficht,
Ilk man set his hert and mycht
To stynt our fais mekill pryd.
On horß thai sall arayit Ryd, 224
And cum on ȝow in weill gret hy;
Meit thame with speris hardely,
And wreik on thame the mekill Ill
That thai and tharis has done vs till, 228

When the king hears their bold speech, [Fol. 91 b. C.]

he rejoices greatly, and says:—

"To-morrow, by sunrise, let mass be over and let every man be armed, each in his own company.

Provide good banner-bearers.

When the English horse attack you,

meet them boldly with your spears, and avenge all your wrongs.

207. *herd thaim*] heard them H; had hard E. *manly*] manlily.
208. Thai spak to fechting, and sa hardely E; Speake to the thing, and sa hastely H.
209*—212*. *From* H; *not in* EC.
209. *So in* E. And to him great gladship can ta H.
211. *Schapis*] Schaip we ws EH.
213. *be*] E *om.*
214. *intill*] *so* E; till C; in H. *yscheill*] eschell E; battell H.
215. *palȝownys*] Pauillions H. *arayit*] weill arayit C; EH *om.* weill.
216. *battale*] bataillis. *baneris*] *so* E; the baneris C; his Baner H.
217. *vay*] wiss E; wise H.
220. *baneour*] gouernour H.
222. *his hert*] hart, will E; will, heart H.
223. *pryd*] of pryd C; EH *om.* of.
224. *sall*] will.
225. *ȝow*] vs H. *weill*] full EH.
227. *wreik—thame*] think than on E; thinke then you on H.

And ar in will ȝeit for till do,
Gif thai haf mycht till cum th*ar*-to.
And, certis, me think weill that we,

We ought to be bold.

For-out abasyng, aucht till be 232
Worthy and of gret wassalage;

We have three advantages.
1. We have the right on our side.

For we haue thre gret avantage.
The first is, that we haf the richt;
And for the richt ilk ma*n* suld ficht. 236

2. They have brought so much wealth with them, that their spoils will enrich us all.

The tothir is, thai ar cu*m*myn heir,
For lypnyng in thair gret power,
To seik vs in our awñe land,
And [has] broucht her, richt till our hand, 240
Richeſ in-to so gret plentee,
That the pou*er*est of ȝow sall be
Bath rych and mychty thar-with-all,
Gif that we wyn, as weill may fall. 244

3. We fight for our wives and [Fol. 38. C.]

The thrid is, [that] we for our lyvis
And for our child*er* and our vifis,

[Fol. 41 b. E.] children, and for freedom.

And for the fredom̃e of our land,
[Ar strenȝeit] in battale for to stand, 248
And thai for thair mycht anerly,
And for thai leit of ws lichtly,
And for thai wald distroy vs all,
Mais thaṁe to ficht; bot ȝet ma fall 252
That thai sall rew thar barganyng.

I warn you that,

And, certis, I warne ȝow of a thing,
To happyn thaṁe (as god forbeid!)

229. *till*] to; *and in ll.* 230, 232.
231. *we*] ȝe.
233. *wassalage*] vassalage H; wasselag*is* E.
234. *avantage*] auantage H; awantag*is* E.
236. *ilk—suld*] ay god will EH.
237. *thai—heir*] that they commen are here H; that thai cummyn ar E.
238. *lypnyng*] lipning H; lyppynnyng E. *in*] off.
240. [*has* E] hes H; haue C.
241. *plentee*] plentie H; quantite E.
245. [*that* EH] for C; *see* l. 235.
246. *our vifis*] for our wywis.
247. *the*] our EH. *of*] and for E; and H.
248. [*Ar strenȝeit* E] Are strenyied H; Stoutly C. *in*] *so* H; in-to E.
250. *leit*] lat E; set H. *lichtly*] heychtly.
255. *To*] Gif H; That E.

Till fynd fantiß in-till our deid, 256 If they find us cowards and defeat us, they will shew us no mercy.
Swa that thai wyn vs oppynly,
Thai sall haf of vs no mercy.
And sen we knaw thar fellouñe will,
Me think it suld accorde till skill 260 We must set our boldness against their cruelty.
To set stoutneß agañe felony,
And mak swagat añe Iuperdy.
Quharfor I ȝow requeir and pray,
That, with all mycht that *euir* ȝe may, 264 Be sure then to meet them boldly *at first*.
ȝhe preß ȝow at the begynnyng,
But cowardiß or abaysyng,
To meit thame that first sall asse*m*myll
So stoutly that the henmast try*m*myll. 268
And menys on ȝour gret manheid, Think of the fame and joy, if we happen to conquer.
ȝour vorschip and ȝour douchty deid,
And of the Ioy that ȝhe abyd,
Gif that vs fallis, as weill may tyd, 272
[Hap] to vencuß the gret battale.
In-till ȝour hand*is*, for-outen faill, You will win honour, riches, freedom, and blitheness.
ȝe ber honour, priß, and richeß,
Fredom̃e, welth, and gret blithneß, 276
Gif ȝe conteyn ȝow manfully;
And the [contrar] all halely
Sall [fall], gif ȝhe let cowardiß
And vikkidneß ȝour hert*is* suppriß. 280

256. That deyt on roid for mankyn heid E; For to preuaile into this steed H.
257. *Swa*] E *om.*
258. *haf—vs*] off vs haf EH.
259. *And* EH] Ande C.
260. *till*] to.
262. *swagat*] sa gat. *ane*] A.
264. *all*] all ȝour. *euir*] E *om.*
265, 266. H *transposes.*
265. *ȝhe*] That ȝe.
267. *that—sall*] that sall first H; at thar fyrst E.
269. *menys on*] menys of E; thinke vpon H.
271. *of*] off E; on H. *ȝhe*] we EH.
272. *fallis*] fall EH.
273. [*Hap* EH] Happin C. *the*] this.
274. *In-till*] In. *ȝour*] our EH. *forouten*] without E; withoutten H.
276. *gret*] all H; E *om.*
277. *manfully*] manlely.
278. *the contrar*] *so* E; in the contrare H; cuntre C.
279. [*fall*] *so* E; faill C; faile H.
280. *ȝour hertis*] your heart H; ȝow E.

You might have continued in thraldom;

[Fol. 92 b. C.] but because you yearned for freedom, you are here with me.

ȝhe mycht haf lifit in-to thrildome;
Bot, for ȝe ȝarnit till haf fredoṁe,
ȝhe ar assemblit heir with me;
Tharfor is neidfull that ȝhe be 284
Worthy and wicht, but abaysyng.
I warne ȝow weill ȝeit of a thing,
That mair myscheif may fall vs naṅe
Than in thair handis to be tane; 288

Remember my brother Nigel's fate.

For thai suld slay vs, I wat weill,
Richt as thai did my brothir Neill.
Bot quhen I meyn of ȝhour stoutnes,
And on the mony gret proweß 292
That ȝhe haue done so worthely,
I trast, and trowis sekirly,
Till haue playne victor in this ficht.

Though our foes have might, yet they are in the wrong.

For thouch our fais haue mekill mycht, 296
Thai haf the vrang and succudry;
And covatiß [of] senȝhory
Amoviß thame for-outen mor.
Na vs thar dreid thaṁe bot befor; 300
For strynth of this place, as ȝhe se,
Sall let vs enveronyt to be.

Let no man seize the spoil till the field is wholly ours.

And I pray ȝhow als specialy,
Both mor and leß, all comonly, 304
That nane of ȝow for gredynes
Haf E till tak of thair Richeß,
Na presoners ȝeit for till ta,
Quhill ȝhe se thame cumrayit swa, 308

286. *I*] And I EH. *ȝeit*] EH *om.*
292. *on*] off.
294. *trowis*] trowes it H.
297. *succudry*] *so* E; succowdry H.
298. [*of* E] and C. *senȝhory*] senȝowry. And couets wrangous Senyeory H.
299, 300. H *omits*. *thar*] *so* EPI; *misprinted* char J.
302. *to*] for to C; *but* E *om.* for.
304. *all*] EH *om.* *comonly*] commonaly E; commonly H.
306. *E*] eye H; ey E. *till*] to EH.
307. *ȝeit*] E *om.*; H *puts* yet *after* Nor (*for* Na). *till*] to EH.
308. *cumrayit*] contraryit E; arrayed H.

That the feld planly ouris be.
And than, at ȝour liking, may ȝe
Tak all the Richeß that thar is.
Gif ȝhe will wirk apon this wiß, 312
ȝhe sall haf victor sekirly.
I wat nocht quhat mar say sall I;
ȝhe wat weill all quhat honour is,
Conteyn ȝow tharfor on sic wiß, 316
That ȝour honour ay savit be.
And I hecht heir, in my lawte,
Gif ony deis in this battaill,
His air, but ward, releif, or taill, 320
On the first day his land sall weild,
All be he neuir so ȝhoung of eild.
Now [makis] ȝow reddy till the ficht,
God help vs, that is mast of mycht! 324
I red armyt all nycht ȝhe be,
Purvait in battale, sa that we
To meit our fais [ay] be bouñe."
Than ansuerd thai all with a sowñe, 328
"As ȝhe deuiß, sa sall be doñe!"
Than till thar Innys went thai soyñe,
And ordanit thaṁe for the fichting;
Syne assemblit in the evynnyng, 332
And swa gat all the nycht baid thai
Till on the morn that it wes day.

Then you may all take what you like best.

You know what *honour* is; then preserve it.

If any die in this battle, his heirs shall have immediate possession without fines.

[Fol. 93. C.]

Remain armed all night."

They all assent.

They retire, and make all preparations.

Qwhen the clyffurd, as I sayd air,
And all his rowt reboytit war, 336

When the Clifford, as I said, and all

309. *That*] And that H. *feld*] *so* E; field H; feldis C. *planly ouris*] ours plainely H; an*er*ly ȝowr*is* E.
315. ȝ*he—all*] Bot all wate ȝe E; But yee wate all H.
316. ȝ*ow*] you H; E *om.* *tharfor*] than E; that H. *wiss*] awiss E; a wise H.
318. *I hecht*] Ik hycht. *my*] *so* H; E *om.*
320. His land freely but Taxe or Tailyie H.
321. *his land*] his aires H; E *om.*
323. [*makis*] makys E; mak C; make H. *till the*] for to E; for the H.
325. ȝ*he*] we H; that we E.
327. *ay be* E] all be H; be reddy C.
329. *sa*] all EH.
336. *reboytit*] rebutyt EH.

his company were repulsed,

And thar gret vaward alsua
Wes distrenȝeit the bak till ta,

and told their fellows how king Robert slew their best knight at a stroke,

And thai haf tald thair reboyting,
Thai of the waward, how the king 340
Slew at a strak sa apertly
The best knycht of thair cheuelry;

and how the king's host and Sir Edward's host pursued them,

And how all haill the kyngis battaill
Schupe thame richt stoutly till assaill, 344
And Schir Eduard the bruß alsua,
Quhen thai all haill the bak can ta;
And how thai lessit off thair men,
And cliffurd had tald alsua then 348

and Thomas Randolph took open field against them,

How thomas randall tuk the playñe
With few folk, and how he has slayñe
Schir vilȝame dancort the worthy;

[Fol. 42. E.]

And how the Erll faucht manfully, 352

and his men's spears stuck out all round like a hedgehog's spines,

That, as añe hyrcheouñe, all his rout
Gert set out speris all about;
And how at thai war put agañe,
And part of thair gud men wes slañe, 356

the English were much disheartened.

The ynglißmen sic abaysing
Tuk, and sic dreid of that tithing,
That in v hundreth placis and ma
Men mycht thame sammyn se rown and ga, 360
Sayand, "our lordis, for thar mycht,
Will all-gat ficht agane the richt;
Bot quha sa varrayis vrangwisly,

338. *Wes*] War E; Were H. *till*] to EH.
339. *haf*] had EH. *reboyting*] rebuting EH.
342. A knycht that wycht wes and hardy EH.
347. *lessit*] left *or* lest E; left had H.
350. *few*] a few EH. *and*] H *om.* *he has*] he hes H; wes E.
351. *vilȝame dancort*] wilȝame damecourt E; William Haward H.
352. *manfully*] manly.
353. *hyrcheoune*] hyrchoune.
355. *at*] that EH.
356. *part*] ane part H. *wes*] EH *om.*
357. *men*] E *om.*
359. *hundreth*] c E.
360. *thame—and*] se samyn rout- and E. H *has*—Together wald they rowning ga.
361. *thar*] thar gret C; *but* EH *om.* gret.
363. *varrayis*] werrayis.

Thai faynd god all too gretumly, 364 [Fol. 96 b. C.]
And thai may happin to mysfall;
And sa may tyd that her we sall."
And quhen thir lordis had persaving
Of the discomford, and the rownyng 368
That thai held sa*m*myn twa and twa,
Throu-out the hoost soyñe [gert] thai ga
Herrodis for till mak añe crye,
That nane discomford suld it be; 372
For in punȝeis is oft hapnyñe
Quhill for to vyne, and quhill to tyñe;
And that, in-to the gret Battale,
That apon na maner may fale; 376
Bot, gif the Scottis flee avay,
Sall all amendit be, perfay.
Tharfor thai monyst thame to be
Of gret vorschip and of Bounte, 380
And stithly in the Battale stand,
And tak a-mendis at thair hand.
Thai may weill [monyss] as thai will,
And thai may als hecht till fulfill 384
With stalwart strak*is* thair bydding*is* all;
Bot nocht-for-thi, I trow thai sall
In-till thair hertis dredande be.
The king, with his consell preve, 388
Has tañe to rede that he vald nocht

When their lords perceived this,

they sent heralds to proclaim that there was no cause for fear;

it would be different in the great battle.

Thus they encouraged them.

Encourage their men as they may, I ween they will still be afraid in their hearts!

364. *faynd*] fend E; offend H.
365. *thai*] thaim.
367. *thir*] thair.
368. *the*] that H; E *om.* (*in both places*).
370. *soyne*] sone E; then H. [*gert* E] can CH.
371. *Herrodis*] Heraldis. *for till*] to. *Herrodis—till*] To gar Heraulds soone H. *ane*] a.
372. *nane*] to nane C; *but* EH *om.* to. *it*] E *om.*
373. *punȝeis*] punȝe E; ieopardies H. *hapnyne*] happyne E; happennyne H.
377. *avay*] thair way EH.
379. *monyst*] monest E; monisht H.
380. *of* (2)] great H.
381. *stithly*] stoutly EH.
382. *hand*] *so* E; awne hand C; owne hand H.
383. [*monyss* E] monish H; monast C.
384. *als hecht*] hecht als EH. *till*] to.
385. *strakis*] hart EH. *bydding*is] bidding EH.

Fecht [or] the morñe, bot he var socht.

The English rest all night down in the Carse of Stirling.

Thair thai herbryit thamẽ that nycht
Douñe in the kerſ, and gert all dicht, 392
And mak reddy ther apparale
Agañe the morñe for the Battale.

Because the Carse was full of pools, they bridged these with boards and pieces of thatch.

For in the kerſ pollis ther war,
Howsis and thak thai brak, and bar 396
To mak bryggis quhar thai mych*t* paſ.
And sum sais ȝeit, the folk that wes
In the castell, quhen nycht can fall,
For at thai knew thair myscheiff all, 400
Thai went furth neir all at thai war,

The people from the castle brought them doors and windows,

And durys and vyndowis with thai*m* bar,
Swa that thai had befor [the] day
Briggit the pollis, swa that thai 404

[Fol. 94. C.] and thus all the pools were bridged over.

War passit our eu*ir*-ilkañe,
*And the [hard] feld on horſ has tañe,
*All reddy for till gif battale,
Arayit in-to thair apparale.

The battale of Bannokburne.

At daybreak, the Scotch hear mass, take a sup, and array themselves.

The scottis men, quhen it wes day,
Thair meſ deuotly herd thai say, 408
Syne tuk a sop, and maid thame ȝar.
And quhen [thai] all assemblit war,
And in thair battalis all purvait,

390. [*or* E] on C; while H. *bot*] but H; that E.
391. *Thair*] Tharfor EH.
392. *kerse*] kers E; Kersse H.
393. *mak*] make H; maid E. *ther*] all ther C; *but* EH *omit* all.
395. *For*] And for. *kerse*] kers E; Kersse H. *pollis*] pulis E; Puilles H. *ther*] EH *om.*
396. H *as* C. *and—and*] thai brak, and thak E.
400. *at*] that EH. *thair*] the E; their H.
401. *furth*] foorth H; full E. *at*] that.
403. [*the* EH] that C.
404. *pollis*] pulis E; Pooles H.
405. Were passed ouer them euerilkane H; War passyt our ilkane all hale E.
406*, 407*. *Not in* E; H *has*—And the hard field on horse hes tane, All readie for to giue battell. [*hard* H] herll C; *but see* l. 447.
406. *in-to*] in-till.
408. *herd*] gert. *herd—say*] heard haue thay H.
410. *thai all* E] that thai H; all C.

Vith thair braid baner*is* all displayit, 412
Thai maid knychtis, as it efferis
To men that oysis thai mysteris.
The kyng maid valter stewart knycht,
And Iames of douglaß, that ves vicht, 416
And othir als of gret Bounte
He maid, ilkane in thair degre.
Quhen this wes doñe, that I ȝou say,
Thai went all furth in gud aray, 420
And tuk the playne full apertly,
Mony wicht man, gud and hardy,
That wer fulfillit of gret bounte.
In-till thair rowtis men mycht se 424
The ynglißmen, in oth*ir* party,
That richt as angelis schane brichtly,
War nocht arayit on sic maner;
For all thair Battalis sa*m*myn wer 428
In a [schiltrum]; bot quhethir It wes
Throu the gret stratnes of the plaß,
That thai war rad till byd fichting,
Or that it wes for abaysing, 432
I wat nocht; bot in a [schiltrum]
It Semyt thai war, all and soñe,
Outane the vaward anerly,
That with añe richt gret cumpany 436
Be thame-selvin arayit war,
And till the battale maid thañe ȝar.
That folk our-tuk añe mekill feld

Knights are made.

The king knights Walter Stewart and James of Douglas.

They set themselves in array.

The Englishmen on the other side though shining like angels, were not so arrayed,

but crowded together in a troop,

all except the vanguard.

They covered a large space,

414. *oysis*] wsys E; vses H.
421. *full*] field H.
422. *wicht—gud*] wight man good H; gud and wicht E.
424. *thair*] thai.
426. *richt*] E *om.*
429. [*schiltrum*] schilthrum E (*but see* l. 433); shiltrum H; childrome C. *wes*] was.
431. *rad till*] in to E; in, to H.
433. [*schiltrum* E] shiltrum H; childrome C.
435. *vaward*] awaward E; Vangard H.
436. *with ane richt*] with a right H; ry*ch*t with a E.
438. Quha had bene by, my*ch*t haue sene thar E; Wha had bene by, might haue seene there H.
439. *our-tuk*] ourtak E; ouertake H. *ane*] a.

where might be seen shining shields and bright banners.

On breid, quhar mony [a schynand] scheld, 440
And mony a burnyst bricht Armour,
And mony man of gret valour,
And mony a baner, bricht & scheyñe,
Micht in that gret [schiltrum] be seyñe. 444

When the king of England sees the Scots take the field on foot, he exclaims,

[Fol. 94 b. C.]

And quhen the kyng of yngland
Saw scottis men sa tak on hand
To tak the hard feild so planly,
And apon fut, he had ferly, 448

"What! will you Scots fight?"

And said, "quhat? will ȝon scottis ficht?"
"ȝaa, sekirly, *schir*," than said a knycht,
Schir Ingerame vmphrevell hat he,
And said, "forsuth, *schir*, now I se 452

[Fol. 42 b. E.]

Sir Ingraham Umphraville replies that it is truly marvellous,

All the mast ferlifull sycht
That eu*ir* I saw, quhen for to ficht
The scottis men has tane on hand
Agane the gret mycht of yngland, 456
In plane hard feild to gif battale.

but he can tell how to defeat them easily.

Bot and ȝhe will [trow] my consale,
ȝhe sall discomfit thame lichtly.
ȝhe sall vithdraw [hyne] suddanly, 460
With battalis, baneris, and pe*n*nownys,

"If we retire behind our tents,

Quhill that we paſ our palȝeownys;
And ȝe sall se als soyñe at thai,
Magre thair lord*is*, sall brek aray, 464
And scale thame, our harneſ to ta.

440. [*a schynand* E] a shining H; schenand C.
442. *man*] *so* H; a man E.
443. *baner bricht*] brycht baner.
444. [*schiltrum* E] shiltrum H; childrome C. E *transposes* ll. 443 *and* 444.
446. *Saw*] *so* H; Swa E. *sa*] saw E.
447. *To tak*] *so* H; Takand E. *hard*] plaine H. *planly*] opynly EH.
450. *schir than*] E *om.*
451. *vmphrevell*] the wmfrawill E; the Vmfrauile H.
452. *schir now*] now schyr.
453. *All*] It is E; Bot dread H. *ferlifull*] marvellous H.
454. *quhen for*] *so* E; wheene for H; for quhen C.
456. *gret*] haill H; E *om.*
458. [*trow* EH] throu C.
460. *ȝhe—vithdraw*] Withdrawys ȝow E; Ye sall withdraw H. [*hyne* EH] C *om.*
461. *baneris and*] Baners and H; and with E.
463. *als—at*] alsone that.

And quhen we se thame scalit swa,
Prik we than on thame hardely,
And we sall haf thame weill lichtly. 468
For than sall nane be knyt to ficht,
That may withstand our mekill mycht."
"I will nocht," said the king, "perfay,
Do sa; for ther sall no man say 472
That I suld eschewe the battale,
Na vithdraw me for sic rangale."
Quhen this wes said that er said I,
The scottis men full deuotly 476
Knelyt [all] douñe, till god to pray,
And a schort prayer thair maid thai
Till god, till help thame in that ficht.
And quhen the ynglis king had sicht 480
Of thame kneland, he said in hy—
"Zon folk knelis till ask mercy."
Schir yngeramē said, "ze say suth now;
Thai ask mercy, bot nocht at zow. 484
For thair trespas to god thai cry.
I tell zow a thing sekirly,
That zon men will wyn all or de,
For dout of ded thar sall nañe fle." 488
"Now be it swa," than said the kyng,
"We sall it se but delaying."
He gert trwmp vp to the assemble;
On athir syd than men mycht se 492

they will break their ranks to seize the spoil."

The king says he will not do so,

nor retire before such a rabble.

The Scots kneel down to pray.

The English king says—"They kneel to ask for mercy."

Sir Ingraham says—"Yes, but not of you.

[Fol. 93. C.]

Yon men will win or die."

"We shall soon see," said the king.

470. *our*] *so* H; zour E.
473. *suld*] sould H; sall E.
475. *Rubric in* H—The meeting of the great battailyie, Where Scots defend, and English failyie.
476. *full deuotly*] comounaly E; right reuerently H; all full deuotly C.
477. *Knelyt all* EH] Thai knelit C. *till*] to EH.
479. *Till*] To EH; *twice*.
482. *knelis till*] kneeles to H; knel to E.
483. *yngerame*] ingrahame E; Ingrame H.
484. *nocht*] not H; nane E.
487. *wyn all*] all wyn.
488. *thar*] thaim E; they H. *nane*] nocht E; not H.
490. *We—se*] And than, but langar EH.
491. *He*] Thaim E; They H. *trwmp*] come H. *vp*] EH *om.* *to*] till.
492. *than—mycht*] men mycht than.

Full mony wicht men and worthy,
All reddy till do cheuelry.

Thus are both sides arrayed.

THus war thai boune on athir syde;
And ynglifß men, with mekill prid, 496
That var in-till thar awaward,

The English vanguard attacks Sir Edward Bruce's company.

Till the battall that schir eduard
Gouernyt and led, held strauchtt thair vay.
The horß with spuris hardnyt thai, 500
And prikit apon thame sturdely;
And thai met thame richt hardely,
Swa [that], at the assemble thair,
Sic a frusching of speris wair 504
That fer avay men mycht it her.

The encounter is fierce, and many are slain.

At thar metyng, for-outen wer,
Wer stedis stekit mony añe,
Mony gud man borñe doune and slañe, 508
And mony ane hardyment douchtely
Wes thair eschewit full hardely.
Thai dang on othir with vapnys ser;

The wounded horses rush and reel.

Sum of the horß, that stekit wer, 512
Ruschit and relit richt [roydly].
Bot the remanant, nocht-for-thi,
That mycht cum to the assembling,
For that lat maid rycht no stynting, 516
But assemblit full hardely.
And thai met thamẽ full sturdely

Spears and axes are plied.

With speris that war scharp to scher,
And axis that weill grundyn wer, 520

493. *Full mony*] Mony A. *men*] man EH.
494. *All*] EH *om.* *till*] to EH. *do*] do great H.
497. *awaward*] *so* CE; Vangard H.
498. *Till*] To EH.
503. [*that* EH] C *om.* *the*] thair EH.
506. *thar*] that EH.
508. *Mony*] And mony EH. *gud man*] Knight H. *doune*] E *om.*
509. *ane hardyment*] hardy men and E; a hardy met H (*where* hardy men *and* hardy met *are both corruptions of* hardiment).
510. *full*] for.
513. [*roydly*] rudlye E; rudely H; sturdely C; *but see* xi. 545.
516. *lat*] let. *rycht*] EH *om.*

Quhar-with wes roucht full mony rout.
The ficht wes thair so fell and stout,
That mony worthy men and wicht,
Throu forß, wes fellit in that ficht, 524
That had no mycht to ryß agañe.
The scottis men fast can thame payñe
Thair fais mekill mycht to ruß.
I trow thai sall no payne refuß, 528
Na perell, quhill thar fais be
Set in-till herd proplexite.

Many brave men are slain.

[Fol. 95 b. C.]

The Scots resist manfully.

And quhen the erll of murref sa
Thair avaward [saw] stoutly ta 532
The vay to schir Eduard [all] straucht,
That met thame with full mekill maucht,
He held his way with his baner
Till the gret rout, quhar sa*m*my*n* wer 536
The nyne battales that wes so braid,
That so feill baneris with thame had,
And of men sa gret quantite,
That it war wonder for to se. 540
The gud erll thidd*ir* tuk the way
With his battale in gud aray,
And assemblit so hardely,
Quhill men mycht her, that had beyn by, 544
A gret frusche of the speres that brast.
For thair fais assalȝeit fast,

The Earl of Murray goes to help Sir Edward Bruce.

The good earl comes to the rescue, and there is a great breaking of spears.

521. *full mony*] mony a EH.
522. *ficht*] fight H; fechting E. *so*] sa EH.
523. *worthy men*] a worthi man EH.
525. *no*] na EH.
527. *russ*] frusch E; frush H.
530. *in-till*] in weill E; well H.
531. *Rubric in* H—The Erle of Mvrray with his battailyie, Came on stoutly but ony failyie. *sa*] saw sa C; *but* EH *om.* saw.
532. *avaward*] waward E; Vangard H. [*saw* H] saw sa E; so C. *ta*] *so* H; ga E.
533. [*all* E] CH *om.*
536. *Till*] To.
537. *wes so*] war sa.
538. *so feill*] sa fele. *had*] haid.
544. *Quhill*] That EH.
545. *frusche*] frusch*e or* frusch*is* C; frusch E; frush H.
546. *assalȝeit*] assailyied H; assemblyt E.

That on stedis, with mekill prid,
Com prikand as thai wald [our] ryd 548

The earl's company is furiously attacked, but resists manfully.

The Erll and all his Cumpany.
Bot thai met thame so sturdely,
That mony of thame till erd thai bar.
And mony a steid wes stekit thar, 552
And mony gud ma*n* fellit vnd*ir* feit,
[Fol. 43. E.] That had no power to riß ȝeit.

Doughty deeds are performed.

Ther men mycht se añe hard battale,
And sum defend and sum assale, 556
And mony a riall ry*m*myll ryde
Be roucht thair [apon] athir syde,
Quhill throu the byrneiß brist the blud,
That till the erd douñe stremand ȝud. 560

The Earl of Murray and his men gain ground, though their foes are ten for one.

The Erll of murreff and his men
So stoutly thame contenit then,
That thai wan plaß ay mair & mair
On thair ſais, the quhethir thai war 564
Ay ten for añe, or ma, perſay;
Swa that it semyt weill that thai
War tynt emang so gret menȝe,
[Fol. 96. C.] As thai war plungit in the se. 568
And quhen the ynglißmen has seyñe
The Erll and all his men be-deyñe
Fecht sa stoutly, but effraying,

The English attack is renewed.

Richt as thai had [nane] abaysing, 572
Thai pressit thame with all thar my*ch*t.
And thai, with speris and suerd*is* bry*ch*t,
[And] axis that ry*ch*t scharply schar,

548. [*our* E] ouer H; on C.
552. *And*] For.
553. *mony*] feill H.
554. *power*] hap. *ȝeit*] wp ȝete.
555. *men mycht*] mycht men. *ane*] A.
557. *riall—ryde*] reale romble rid E; rumble great and red H.
558. [*apon* E] on CH
560. *the*] E *om.* *ȝud*] ȝhude. That on the eird in streames yood H.
564. *the*] E *om.*
565. *ma*] may.
567. *emang*] amang. *gret*] fell H.
571. *Fecht*] Feght H; Faucht E.
572. [*nane* EH] no C.
573. *Thai*] Thaim. *thame*] thai.
575. [*And* EH] With C.

In-myd the visage met thame thar. 576
Thar men mycht se ane stalwart stour,
And mony men of gret valour
With speris, macyß, and with knyvis,
And othir vapnys vissill thair lyvis, 580
Swa that mony fell doune all ded;
The gyrß wox with the blude all red.
The Erll, that wicht wes and worthy,
And his men faucht so manfully, 584
That, quha sa had seyne thaim that day,
I trow forsuth, that thai suld say,
That thai suld do thair devour wele,
Swa that thair fayis suld it feill. 588

Spears, maces, and knives are fast plied;

the grass is red with blood.

The Earl of Murray and his men do their duty well.

576. *In-myd*] Ymyddia.
577. *men mycht*] mycht men. *ane*] A.
579. *with*] E *om.*
580. *vissill*] wysyllyt E; wissell H. *thair*] H *om.*
582. *gyrss wox*] greyss woux.
584. *manfully*] manlyly.
586. *thai*] he H.
587. *suld—devour*] their deuoure did full H.

[BOOK XIII.]

When Walter Stewart and Douglas see the Earl of Murray

Qwhen that thir twa first batell*is* wer
Assemblit, as I said ȝow er,
The steward, valter that than wes,
And the gud lord als of dougleß, 4

attack the enemy so boldly,

In a battale quhen that thai saw
The Erll, forouten dreid or aw,
Assemmyll with his cumpany
On all the folk so sturdely, 8

they go to his aid.

For till help him thai held thar vay
With thar battale in gud aray,
And assemmyllit so hardely
Besyd the erll a litill by, 12

The enemy receive their attack firmly.

Thair fais feld thair cu*m*myng weill;
For with wapnys stalwart of steill
Thai dang on thame with all th*ar* my*ch*t.
Thair fais resauit thame weill, I hycht, 16
With swerd*is*, speris, and vith macyß.

[Fol. 96 *b*. C.]

The battale thair so fellouñe was,
And sua richt gret spilling of blud,

The Scotch behave most gallantly.

That on the erd the fluß it stud. 20
The Scottis men so weill thamẽ bar,

1. *Rubric in* H—How Walter Stewart, & Dowglas, Came with their battell that worthy was. *that*] E *om.* *batellis*] bataillis E; battells H.
2. *er*] *so* E; *miswritten* her C; *se l.* 84.
8. *the*] that E; tha H.
10. E *has*—And thair bataill, in gud aray, *but* J *omits it; it appears, however, in* P; H *follows* C.
13. *Thair*] That thair EH.
15. *on thame*] apon.
16. *thame*] E *om.* *I*] Ik.
17. *macyss*] mase E; Mas H.
20. *fluss it*] floussis E; streames H. *stud*] yoode H.

And sua gret slauchtir maid thai thar,
And fra so feill the livis revit,
That all the feild wes bludy levit. 24

That tym thir thre Battalis wer
All syde be syde fechtand weill neir.
Thar my*ch*t man her richt mony dynt
And vapnys apon armour stynt, 28

The three companies are fighting side by side.

And se tu*m*myll knychtis and stedis,
With mony rich and ryoll wedis
Defoulit roydly vnder feit.
Sum held on loft, sum tynt the suet. 32

A long quhill thus fechtand thai wer,
That men no noyis na cry my*ch*t her;
Men herd nocht ell*is* bot granys & dynt*is*,
That slew fire, as men dois on flynt*is*; 36

The battle lasts long.

Sa faucht thai ilkañe egirly
That thai maid nouth*ir* noyis no cry,
Bot dang on othir at thar mycht,
With wapnys that war burnyst bry*ch*t. 40

They fight so eagerly that they raise no cries.

The Arrowis als so thik thai flaw,
That thai mycht [say] weill, at thai*m* saw,
That thai añe hydwiß schour can ma;
For quhar thai fell, I wndirta, 44

The arrows fly fast, making a hideous shower.

Thai left eft*ir* thañe taknyng
That sall neid, as I trow, lechyng
The ynglis archeris schot so fast,
That, mycht thar schot haf had last, 48

Had the English archers continued shooting,

24. *wes bludy*] bludy wes.
25. *thir*] thar.
27. *richt*] EH *om.* *mony*] mony a H.
28. *armour*] armuris.
30. *With*] And. *ryoll*] reale E; Royall H.
31. *roydly*] foully EH.
34. *no*] na EH. *na—her*] nor cry might heare H; my*ch*t her thar E.
35. *ell*[*is*] E *om.*
36. *dois*] slayis. *That—dois*] They strooke the fire as men H.
37. *Sa*] *placed before* egirly EH. *faucht thai*] Thai faucht EH.
41. *als so*] alsua.
42. *thai*] men H. [*say* EH] se C. *at*] that EH.
43. *ane*] A.
44. *I*] ik.
45. *taknyng*] takinning H.
48. *haf had*] haff ony. That gif their shot might haue had last H.

the Scotch would have suffered much.
But King Robert

It had beyne hard to scottis men.
[Bot] king robert, that weill can ken
That the archeris war perelouß,
And thar schot hard and richt grevouß, 52
Ordanit forrouth the assemble
His marschall with a gret menȝe,

appoints five hundred horsemen to attack the archers,
[Fol. 97. C.]

Fiff hundreth armyt weill in steill,
That on licht horß war [horsyt] weill, 56
For to prik emang the archeris,
And sua assailȝe thame with speris
That thai no laser [haf] to schute.
This marschall that I of mwt, 60

under the command of Sir Robert Keith, his marshal.

That schir robert of keth wes cald,
As I befor haß to ȝow tald,
Quhen that he saw the battalis swa
Assemmyll and to-giddir ga, 64
And saw the archeris schut stoutly,
With all thame of his cumpany

[Fol. 43 b. E.]
Sir Robert charges amongst the archers,

In hy apon thame can he ryde,
And our-tuk thame at a syde, 68
And ruschit emang thaim so roydly,
Strikand thame sua dispitfully,

and disperses them entirely.

And in sic fusiouñe berand douñe
And slayand thame without ransouñe, 72
That thai thame scalit euirilkañe;
And fra that tyme furth ther wes nañe
That assemlit sic schot till ma.
Quhen scottis archeris saw at swa 76

50. [*Bot* EH] The C.
51. *the*] thair EH.
52. *hard—richt*] rycht hard and E; hard and H.
53. *forrouth*] before H.
55. *weill in*] in-to EH.
56. [*horsyt* E] horsed H; armyt C.
57. *emang*] amang EH.
58. *with*] with thair.
59. [*haf*] haiff E; had CH.
60. *This*] His H. *I*] Ik. *of*] hereof H. *mwt*] mute EH.
61. *keth*] keyth E; Keith H.
62. *I*] Ik. *hass*] her has E; haue H. *to*] E *om.*
63. *that*] E *om.*
70. *Strikand*] Stekand E; Stryking H. *dispitfully*] dispitously EH.
71. *berand*] dushing them H.
72. *without*] for-owtyn.
75. *sic*] thicke H; E *om.* *till*] to.
76. *at*] that thai E; it was H.

Thai war rebutit, thai wox hardy,
With all thar mycht schot egirly
Emang the horſ-men that thar raid,
And voundis vyde to thame thai maid, 80
And slew of thame a wele gret dele;
Thai bar thame hardely and weill.

But the Scottish archers shoot still, and annoy the English horsemen.

For fra thair fais archer*is* were
Scalit, as I haue said ȝhow ere, 84
That ma than thai war be gret thing,
Swa that thai dred nocht thar schuting,
Thai wox so hardy that thame thoucht
Thai suld set all thair fais at noucht. 88

Now that the English archers are dispersed, the Scotch wax bold and despise their enemies.

THE marschall and his Cumpany
Wes ȝeit, as to ȝow ere said I,
Amang the archeris, quhar thai maid
With speris rowme quhar at thai raid, 92
And slew all that thai mycht ourta.
And thai weill lichtly mycht do swa,
For thai had nocht a strak to stynt,
Na for to hald agane a dynt; 96
And agane armyt men to ficht
May nakit men haff litill mycht.

The marshal rides thus amongst the English archers,

without being attacked at all. [Fol. 97 *b*. C.]

Thai scalit thame on sic maner,
That sum to thar gret battelis wer 100
Withdrawin thai*m* in full gret hy,
And sum war fled all vtrely.

He disperses them so that some retire, and some flee.

Bot the folk that behynd thame was,
That for thair awne folk had no space 104
ȝeit than to cum to the assemblyng,

But the Englishmen in the rear, before kept back by their own men, now advance.

77. *Thai*] E *om.* *wox*] woux.
78. *With*] And with EH. *schot*] thai schot full C; *but* EH *omit* thai *and* full.
79. *Emang*] Amang EH.
81. *wele*] full.
84. *haue said*] said till E; said to H. *ere*] here C; ar E; aire H; *see* l. 90; *also* l. 2 *above*.
85. *than*] na.
87. *wox so*] woux sa.
90. *to*] till.
92. *at*] that E; euer H.
100. *battelis*] bataill E; battell H.
104. *space*] place H.
105. *than*] E *om.* *to* (2)] *erased in* E.

In agane smertly can thai dyng.

As for the runaway archers, they will do no further harm.

The archeris that thai met fleand,
That than war maid so recryand, 108
That thair hertis war tynt cleirly,
I trow thai sall nocht scath gretly
The scottis men with schot that day.

And when King Robert sees his three hosts fighting so well,

And the gud king robert, that ay 112
Was fillit of full gret bounte,
Saw how that his battellis thre
So hardely assemblit thar,
That so weill in the ficht thame bar, 116
And sa fast on thair fais can dyng
That him thoucht nane had abaysing,
And how the archeris war scalit then;

he is blithe, and says to his men: "Sirs, be of good courage.

He was all blith, and till his men 120
He said, "lordingis, now luk that ȝhe
Worthy and of gud covyne be
At this assemble, and hardy;
And assemmyll so sturdely 124
That no thing may befor ȝow stand.

Our men are fighting freshly.

Our men so freschly ar fechtand,
That thai thair fais has cumrait swa
That, be thai [presit], I vndirta, 128
A litill fastar, ȝhe sall se
That thai discumfit soyn sall be.

Attack them, and let them feel how much we hate them.

[*Now ga we on them sa hardely, 131*
*And ding on them sa doughtely,
*That they may feele, at our comming,
*That we them hate in meekle thing:

For we have cause enough.

*For great cause they haue vs made,
That occupied our land[i]s brade, 136

109. *cleirly*] clenly.
110. *scath*] skaith H; schout E.
116. *That*] And EH.
122. *covyne*] cowyn E; comfort H.
126. *freschly*] fiercely H. *ar*] *precedes* so *in* E.
127. *cumrait*] cumbred H; grathyt E.
128. [*presit*] pressyt E; preassed H; previt C. *I*] Ik.
131*—144*. *From* H; *not in* EC.

*And put all to subiectioun:
*Your good[i]s made all theirs commoun:
*Our kyn and friend[i]s, for their awne,
Despitteously hanged and drawne: 140
*And wald destroy vs gif they might.
*Bot, I trow, God, through his foresight,
*This day hes granted vs his grace
To wrek vs on them in this place."] 144

But God has this day granted u revenge."

Quhen this wes said, thai held th*ar* way, 131
And on a syde assemblit thai
So stoutly, that at thar cu*m*myng
Thair fais wer ruschit a gret thing.

His men take fresh courage;

Ther men my*ch*t se men freschly ficht,
And men that worthy war and wycht 136
Do mony worthy wassalage;
Thai faucht as thai war in a rage.

[Fol. 98. C.]

and fight as if in a rage.

For quhen the scottis ynkirly
Saw thair fais sa sturdely 140
Stand in-to battale thamẽ agañe,
With all thar mycht and all thar mayñe
Thai layd on, as men out of wit;
For quhar thai with full strak mycht hit, 144
Thair mycht no armyng stynt thar strak;
Thai to-fruschit thame thai mycht our-tak,
And with axis sic duschis gaff
That thai helmys and hedis claff. 148
And thair fais richt hardely
Met thame, and dang on douchtely
With wapnys that war stith of steill.
Thar wes the battell strikyn weill; 152

They lay on blows like madmen,

cleaving helms and heads with their axes.

There was the battle well stricken.

138*. *goodis*] goods H; goods they A.
132. *a syde*] ane side H; ane feld E.
135. *men mycht*] my*ch*t men. *freschly*] felly E; fiercely H.
139. *ynkirly*] archery EH (*surely a mistake; see* ll. 147, 208).
144. *For*] And EH.
145. *armyng*] armur EH.
146. *to-fruschit*] to-fruchyt E; frushed H. *thame*] that E; all H.
150. *on*] on thaim. *douchtely*] doggedly (!) H.
152. *strikyn*] strekyt. *strikyn weill*] right cruell H.

There is such a din of blows,

So gret dy*n*nyng ther wes of dyntis
As wapnys apon armor stynt*is*,

such breaking of spears,

And of speris so gret bristing,
With sic thrawing and sic thristing, 156

such groans, cries, and shouts,

Sic gyrnyng, granyng, and so gret
A noyis, as thai can othir bet,
And cryit ensenȝeis on eu*er*ilk syd,
Gifand and takand wound*is* wyd, 160

that it is hideous to hear.

That it wes hydwiss for till her
All four the battelis, wicht that wer,
Fechtand in-till a front haly.

Ah! how gallantly Sir Edward Bruce and his men bear themselves!

Almychty god! full douchtely 164
Schir edward the bryß and his men
Amang thair fais contenyt thame then,
Fechtand in-to sa gud cowyne

[Fol. 44. E.]

So hardy, worthy, and so fyne, 168
That thar awaward ruschit was,

At last the English vanguard gives way, and retreat to the main army.

And, magre thair*is*, left the plaß,
And to thar gret rowt to warrand
Thai went, that than had apon hand 172

[Fol. 96 b. C.]

So gret not, that thai war effrait,
For scottis men thame hard assait,
That than war in ane [schiltrum] all.
Quha hapnit in that ficht to fall, 176
I trow agane he suld nocht riß.

Many feats of arms are done.

Ther men mycht se on mony wiß
Hardyment eschewit douchtely,

153. *dynnyng*] dinging H; dyn E.
156. *With*] And EH. *thrawing*] thrang EH.
159. *And cryit*] Crying H; And E. *euerilk*] ilka E; ilk H.
161. *till*] to EH.
162. *four the*] thair iiij E; the foure H. *wicht*] with EH.
163. *in-till*] in EH. *haly*] halyly.
164. *Almychty*] A mychty E; O mightie H. *full*] how EH.
165. *bryss*] bruce.
167. *in-to*] in E; *but* into H.
169. *awaward*] waward E; Vangard H.
171. *to*] till.
172. *than*] then H; tane E.
173. *not*] anoy E; noyse H.
174. *men*] that E; men that H.
175. *than*] they H. *ane*] A. [*schiltrum* E] shiltrum H; childrome C.
176. *in*] in-to. *ficht*] preasse H.
178. *men mycht*] mycht men.
179. *Hardyment*] Hardimentis EH.

And mony th*at* wicht war and hardy 180
Doune under feit lyand all dede,
Quhar all the feild of blud wes red.

Many bold men lie dead under-foot.

Armoris and quyntis that thai bare
With blud wes swa defowlit thar, 184
That thai mycht nocht discrivit be.

Armorial devices are so defiled with blood that they cannot be made out.

A! mychty god! quha than mycht se
The steward Walter and his rout
And the gud dowglas that wes stout 188
Fechtand in-to the stalward stour,
He suld say that till all honour
Thai war worthy, that in that ficht
Sa fast presit thair fais mycht, 192
That thai thame ruschit quhar thai ȝeid.

Stewart and Douglas are worthy of all honour.

Thair mycht men se mony a steid
Fleand on stray, that [lord] had nañe.

Steeds are seen fleeing away, without riders.

A! lord! quha than gud tent had tañe 196
To the gud erll off murreff,
And his, that swa gret rowt*is* gaf,
And faucht so fast in that battale,
Tholand sic payñe and sic travale, 200
That thai and thair*is* maid sic debat,
That quhar thai com, thai maid thai*m* gat!
Than mycht men heir ensenȝeis cry,
And scottis men cry hardely, 204
"On thamẽ! On thame! On thame! thai faill!"
With that so hard thai can assaill,
And slew all that thai mycht our-ta,
And the scottis archeris alsua 208

The Earl of Murray and his men make their way everywhere.

The Scotch cry—"On them! they fall!"

181. *Doune—lyand*] Sone liand wndre fete.
183. *Armoris*] Armys. *quyntis*] quhytyss E; coates H.
184. *wes*] war.
185. *discrivit*] descroyit E; described H.
188. *wes*] wes sa.
189. *the*] that EH.
193. *thai*] E *om.*
194. *mycht men*] men my*cht*.
195. [*lord*] *so* EH; lordis C.
197. *To*] Till.
198. *gaf*] geff.
200. *payne*] paynys. *sic* (2)] E *om.*
206. *can*] gan.

The Scotch archers shoot fast at the English, and much annoy them.

Schot emang thame so sturdely,
Ingrevand thame so gretumly,
That quhat for thame that with thame faucht,
And swa gret rowtis to thame raucht, 212
And presit thame full egirly,
[Fol. 99. C.] And quhat for arrowes that felly
Mony gret voundis can thame ma,
At last the English give way. And slew fast of thair horß alsua, 216
That thai vayndist a litell we;
Thai dred so gretly thane till de
That thair covyne was war than eir.
The Scotch redouble their efforts to break the English ranks. For thai that with thame fechtand weir 220
Set hardyment, [and] strynth, and will,
With hart and corage als thar-till,
And all thair mayne and all thar mycht,
[To] put thame fouly to the flycht. 224

How the ȝhemen men and the pouer men maid of schetis the maner of baneris, in supple of king robert the bruce & his folkis.

Now, whilst the battle was thus proceeding, IN this tyme that I tell of her,
That the battall on this maner
Wes strikin, quhar on athir party
Thai war fechtand richt manfully, 228

209. *emang*] amang EH. *sturdely*] deliuerly.
210. *Ingrevand*] Engrewand E; Engreeuing H.
213. *Catchword in* C—And quhat for arrowes that felly.
215. *ma*] *so* EH; may C.
217. *vayndist*] wandyst E; recooled H.
219. *was*] woxt H. *war—eir*] wer and wer.
220. *with —fechtand*] fechtand with thaim EH.
221. [*and* EH] C *om.*
222. *With*] And EH.
224. [*To* EH] And C. *fouly*] fully EH. *the*] E *om.*
225. *Rubric from* C; H *has*—How Scottish Swaynes of sheetes made Them Baners, and in battell rade.
226. *That the*] At that E; That thir H.
227. *quhar*] where H; E *om.* *party*] side H; *see next note.*
228. *Two lines in* H—Feghting they were full ernestly, They might haue seene who had bene by. *richt manfully*] enforcely E.

ȝhemen, swanys, and poveraill,
That in the parc to ȝheyme vittale
War left; quhen thai wist, but lesing,
That thair lordis with fell fichtyng 232
On thair fais assemblit war,
Ane of them-selwyne that wes thar
Capitane of thame all thai maid;
And schetis that war sum-deill braid 236
Thai festnyt in steid of baner*is*
Apon lang treis and on speris,
And said that thai wald se the ficht,
And help thar lordis at thar mycht. 240
[Quhen her-till] all [assentit] war,
[And in] a rowt [assemblit] ar,
xv thousand thai war and ma.
And than in gret hy thai can ga 244
With thair baner*is* all in a rout,
As thai had men beyn stith and stout.
Thai com with all that assemble
Richt quhill thai mycht the battale se. 248
Than all at anys thai gaf añe cry—
"Apon thame! on thame hardely!"
And thar-with-all cu*m*and ar thai.
Bot thai war ȝeit weill fer avay, 252
And ynglißˢ men, that ruschit war
Throu forßˢ of ficht, as I said air,

some Scottish camp-followers, left in the Park,

choose among themselves a captain,

and fasten sheets on boughs instead of banners.

They then assemble together, 15,000 in number.

They advance to get a good view of the battle,

and raise a loud cry.

And when the English see them thus advancing,

229. *ȝhemen*] ȝomen and E; Yeomen and H; *miswritten* ȝheman C. *poveraill*] pitaill E; Pedaill H.
230. *to ȝheyme*] to keepe H; ȝemyt E.
234. *wes*] was H; war E.
237. *festnyt* E] *miswritten* fesnyt C; made H.
238. *Apon*] And fastned on H. *on*] EH *om.*
241. [*Quhen her-till* E] When hereto H; Quhar till C. [*assentit*] assentyt E; assented H; assemblit C.
242. [*And in*] In EH; In-till C; *but* And *is necessary.* [*assemblit* E] assembled H; and assentit C.
243. *and*] or.
244. *thai can*] gan thai E; can they H.
245. *baneris*] *so* EH; *miswritten* baner C; *see* l. 237.
249. *gaf ane*] gave a.
250. *Apon—on*] Sla sla apon EH. *hardely*] hastily.
251. *ar*] war EH.
252. *ȝeit—fer*] wele fer ȝete.
254. *air*] ar.

[Fol. 99 b. C.] Quhen thai saw cu*m* with sic a cry
Toward thame sic añe cumpany, 256
That thai thoucht weill als mony war
As at war fechtand with thame thar,

whom they had not before seen, And thai befor had thame nocht seyñe,
Than, wit ȝhe weill, withouten weyñe, 260

they fall into a panic. Thai war abasit so gretumly,
That the best and the mast hardy
That wes in-till the oost that day
Wald, with thar mensk, haue beyn avay. 264

King Robert shouts his war-cry; The king robert be thair relyng
Saw thai war neir discomfyting,
And his [ensenȝe] can hely cry.

[Fol. 44 b. E.] Than with thame of his cumpany 268
His fais presit so fast, that thai
War than in-till [sa] gret effray,

and the English retreat more and more. That thai left place ay mar & mar.
For all the scottis men that war thar, 272
Quhen thai saw thamẽ eschew the ficht,

The Scotch press on all the faster. Dang on thame swa with all th*ar* my*cht*,
That thai scalit in tropellis ser,
And till discumfitur war ner; 276
And sum of thamẽ fled all planly.

Some few English stand firm. Bot thai that wicht war and hardy,
That schame letit till ta the flicht,
At gret myschef mantemyt the ficht, 280
And stithly in the stour can stand.

When the king of England sees his men flee, And quhen the king of Ingland
Saw his men fle in syndry place,

255. *cum*] cummand.
256. *Toward*] Towart. *ane*] A.
257. *thai*] thaim.
258. *at war*] that wes.
259. *thame nocht*] no*ch*t thaim EH.
263. *wes*] war. *the*] thair E; that H.
266. *neir*] ner at.
267. [*ensenȝe* E] Ensenyie H; menȝe C. *can hely*] he can fast H.
269. *presit*] he pressyt EH. *thai*] day.
270. *than*] E *om.* [*sa* EH] full C.
272. *war thar*] thar war.
274. *swa*] E *om.*
275. *scalit*] scalyt thaim. *tropellis*] troplys E; trowples H.

And [saw] his fais rout, that was 284
Worthyn so wicht and so hardy,
That all his folk [war] halely — and unable to stem the advance of his foes,
Swa stonayit, that thai had no my*ch*t
[To] stynt thair fais in the ficht, 288
He was abasit so gretumly,
That he and all his cumpany, — he and 500 men turn to flight
v hundreth armyt weill at ry*ch*t,
In-till a frusche all tuk the flycht, 292
And till the castell held ther way. — towards Stirling castle.
And ȝeit, as I herd sum men say,
That of wallanch schir Amer — Some say that Sir Aymer de
Quhen he the feld saw vencust ner, 296 [Fol. 100. C.] Valence seized
By the renȝe led avay the king, — the king's rein,
Agane his will, fra the fichting. — and led him away against his will.
And quhen schir gelis de argente
Saw the king thus and his me*n*ȝe 300
Schape thame to fle so spedely,
He com Richt to the kyng in hy, — But Sir Giles de Argentine bids
And said, "schir, sen that it is swa — his king farewell, disdaining to flee.
That ȝe thusgat ȝour gat will ga, 304
Haffis gud day! for agañe will I;
ȝheit fled I neuir sekirly,
And I cheiß heir to byde and de
Than till lif heir and schamfully fle." 308
His brydill than but mair abaid — He turns his bridle, and, singlehanded,
He turnyt, and agane he raid,
And on schir eduard the brysis rout

284. [*saw* EH] C *om.*
286. [*war* E] were H; so C.
288. [*To* EH] And C.
290. *all*] E *om.*
291. *v*] *so* E; Fifteene H. *hundreth*] hunder. *weill*] all.
293. *till*] to EH.
294. *as I*] haiff Ik.
295. *wallanch*] walence.
297. *renȝe*] reynȝe.
299. *gelis*] gylis E; Geiles H. *de*] the.
302. *com*] sped H.
303. *that*] E *om.*
305. *Haffis*] Hawys E; Haue H.
307. *heir*] her E; rather H.
308. *till—schamfully*] for to lyve schamly and E; for to liue and shamefully H.
309. *than*] E *om.*
311, 312 *follow* 313, 314 *in* H.
311. *And*] Right H. *schir*] E *om.* *brysis*] bruyss E; Bruces H.

attacks Sir Edward Bruce's host.

[That] wes so sturdy and so stout, 312
As dreid of na[kyn] thing had he,
He prikit, cryand "argente!"

So many set on him at once,

And thai with speris swa him met,
And swa feill speris on hym set, 316

that he is soon overthrown and slain.

That he and horß war chargit swa
That bath doune to the erd can ga;
And in that place than slayne wes he.
Of his ded wes [rycht] gret pite; 320

He was the third best knight of his day.

He was the thrid best knycht, perfay,
That men wist liffand in his day;
He did mony a fair Iourne.

He fought thrice against the Saracens.

On sarisenis thre derenȝeis did he; 324
And [in-till] ilk derenȝe of thai
He vencust sarisenis twa;
His gret worschip tuk thar ending.

After the king's flight, all flee too.

And fra schir amer with the king 328
Wes fled, wes nane that durst abyde,
Bot fled, scalit on ilka syde.
And thair fais thame presit fast,
Thai war, to say suth, all agast, 332
And fled swa richt effrayitly

Many flee to the river Forth, and are drowned.

[Fol. 100 b. C.]

That of thame a full gret party
Fled to the wattir of forth; and thar
The mast part of thame drownit [war]. 336

Bannockburn is so full of corpses,

And bannokburn, betuix the braiß,
Of horß and men so chargit waß,

312. [*That* EH] He C.
313. [*kyn* E] kin H; C *om.*
314. *argente*] the argente.
315. *speris*] *misprinted* spuris J. *with—swa*] right sturdely H.
318. *doune*] E *om.* *to*] till. *can*] gan.
319. *than*] thar E; there H.
320. *Of*] And of H. [*rycht* E] CH *om.*
321. *best knycht*] *so* EH; knycht best C.
324. *derenȝeis*] derenȝeys E; derenyies H; *miswritten* derenȝenis C. *did*] faucht E; made H.
325. [*in-till* E] into H; of C.
326. *vencust*] wencussyt E; vanquisht H.
332. *all*] swa.
333. *swa*] sa fast.
336. [*war* E] were H; ar C.
338. *Of—men*] Off men, off hors E; of men and horse H. *chargit*] stekyt.

That apon drownit horß and men
Men mycht paß dry atour it then. 340 *that men can pass over it dryshod.*
[And] laddis, swanys, and rangall, *The camp-followers assist in the slaughter.*
Quhen thai saw vencust the battall,
Ran emang thame and swa can sla
Thai folk, that no defens mycht ma, 344
That it war pite for to se.
I herd neu*ir* quhar, in na cuntre, *The English are in great distress.*
Folk at swa gret myschef war stad;
On a syde thai thair fais had, 348 *On one side are their foes,*
That slew thame doune vithout mercy,
And thai had on the tothir party *and on the other side is Bannockburn.*
Ba*n*nokburñe, that sa cu*m*myrsum was
Of slyk, and depnes for till pas, 352
That thair mycht nañe atour it ryde.
Thame worthit, magre thair*is*, abyde;
Swa that sum slayne, sum drownit war; *Some are slain, some drowned;*
Micht nane eschap that eu*ir* com thar. 356 *none escape,*
The quhethir mony gat avay,
[That ellis-whar fled], as I herd say. *except those who fled in some other direction.*
The kyng, with thame he with him had,
In a rout till the castell raid, 360
And wald haue beyn tharin, for thai
Wist no*ch*t quhat gat to get avay.
Bot philip the mowbray said him till *Sir Philip Mowbray advises the king of England not to attempt to stop in Stirling.*
"The castell, schir, is at ȝhour will; 364
Bot, cum ȝhe in it, ȝhe sall se
That ȝhe sall soyne assegit be.
And thar sall nañe of all yngland [Fol. 45. E.]

340. *atour*] owt our E; out ouer H.
341. [*And* EH] C *om.*
343. *emang*] amang. *can*] gan.
344. *Thai*] Tha H; As E.
345. *it*] E *om.*
346. *I*] Ik.
348. *a*] ane EH.
349. *vithout*] for-owtyn.
351. *cummyrsum*] cumbyrsum.
352. *Of*] For EH. *till*] to.
353. *atour*] out-our E; out ouer H.
354. *worthit*] worthys. But there behooued them to abyde H.
356. *euir*] *so* E; euer H; *looks like* ouir C.
358. [*That—fled*] That elsewhere fled H; That ellis war fled E; And fled full fast C. *herd*] sall.
367. *all*] E *om.*

To mak ȝow rescourß tak on hand. 368
And but rescours may no castele
Be haldin lang: ȝhe wat this wele;

"Better," says Sir Philip, "to rally your men,

Tharfor confort ȝow, and relye
Your men about ȝow richt straitlye, 372

and ride round by the Park."

And haldis about the park the way.
Knyt ȝow als sadly as ȝhe may,
For I trow that nane sall haf mycht

[Fol. 101. C.]

That chassis, with so feill to ficht." 376

So the king and his men ride by the Round Table towards Linlithgow

And as he consalit, thai haue doñe;
Beneth the castell went thai soyñe,
Richt by the rownde tabill thair way,
And syne the park [enveronyt] thai, 380
And toward lithkew held in hy.
Bot, I trow, thai sall hastely
Be convoyit with folk, that thai,
I trow, mycht suffer weill avay! 384
For *schir* Iames, lord of douglaß,
Com till his kyng and askit the chaß,
And he gaf him leif but abaid.
Bot all to few of horß he hade; 388

Douglas, with only 60 men, chases the English.

He had nocht in his rowt sexty,
The quhethir he sped him hastely
The way eft*ir* the kyng to ta.
Now let him on his wayis ga, 392
And eft*ir* this we sall weill tell
Quhat till hym in his chaß byfell.

371. *Tharfor*] And tharfor C; *but* EH *om.* And. *confort ȝow*] *so* EH; ȝow confort C.
372. *straitlye*] starkly.
373. *the* (2)] ȝour EH.
374. *Knyt—sadly*] Ryght als sadly E; Als sadly knit H.
377. *as—consalit*] his consaill.
378. *Beneth*] And be-newth E; And beneth H.
379. *thair way*] away.
380. *syne the*] the new H. [*enveronyt*] enweround E; enuirondo H; enveremyt C.
381. *lithkew*] lythkow E; Linlithgow H.
383. *convoyit*] conuoyed H; conweyit E. *folk*] sic folk.
386. *till his*] to the EH.
387. *leif*] lieue H; it E.
394. *till—his*] him in-till the chace. *Rubric from* C; H *has*—How the Erle of Harfurd in Bothwel was Tane ouer the walles, fled fra the chase.

How gud douglass chassit the king of Inglande eftir the battallis of bannokburne.

Qwhen the gret battell on this viſ
Wes discumfit, as I deuiſ, 396
Quhar xxx thousand thar wes ded,
Or drownit in-to that ilk sted;
And sum war in-to handis tañe,
And othir sum thair gat wes gañe, 400
The erll of herfurd fra the melle
Departit, with a gret menȝhe,
And straucht to bothwell tuk the vay,
That than at ynglisſ mennys fay 404
Wes, and haldin as place of wer.
Schir Walter gilbertstouñe wes ther
Capitane, and [it] had in ward.
The Erl of herfurde thiddirward 408
Held, and wes tañe in our the wall,
And fyfty of his men with-all,
And sett in houſ syndrely
Swa that thai had thar no mastry. 412
The layff went toward yngland;
Bot of that rout, I tak on hand,
The thre parteis war tañe or slayñe,
The laiff with gret payñe hayme ar gañe. 416
Schir moriſ alsua de berclay
Fra the gret battell held his vay
With a gret rout of waliſ men;
Quhar-euir thai ȝeid, men mycht tham ken: 420
For thai weill neir all nakid war,

In this great battle, 30,000 English were slain or drowned.

The earl of Hereford made his way to Bothwell, which then belonged to the English.

Sir Walter Gilbertstoun commanded there.

Hereford and fifty men are taken in over the wall.

Sir Maurice de Barclay got away, [Fol. 101 b. C.] with some Welshmen,

396. *I*] Ik.
397. *thar wes*] wele war EH.
398. *in-to*] in.
399. *in-to*] in-till.
400. *wes*] war E; are H.
404. *at*] in the E; was in H.
405. *and*] H *om.* *as*] as a HJ; *but* E *omits* a.
406. *gilbertstoune*] gilbertson EH.
407. [*it* EH] C *om.*
411. *houss* or *housis*] *read* housis *as the expansion of the contraction in* C; howssis E; houses H; *cf.* l. 737.
412. *mastry*] *so* CH; mercy (!) E.
415. *tane—slayne*] slane or tane.
417. *moriss*] mawrice E; Morise H. *de*] the EH.

who were nearly naked.

Or lynyng clothis had, but mair.
Thai held thair wayis in full gret hy;

Many of them are taken.

Bot mony of thair cumpany, 424
Or thai till yngland com, war tañe,
And mony als of thame war slañe.
Thai fled als othir wais ser,

Numbers flee to Stirling,

Bot to the castell that wes ner 428
Of strevilling fled [sic] a menȝhe,
That it wes wonder for to se;

so that the crags are covered with them.

For the craggis all helit war
About the castell, heir and thar, 432
Of thame that, for strinth of that sted,
Thiddirward till warrande fled.
And for thai war [sa] feill that thair
Flede vnder the castell war, 436

King Robert kept his men close to him; and so King Edward got away.

The king robert, that wes vitty,
Held ay his gude men neir him by,
For dreid that riß agane suld thai.
This wes the cauß, forsuth to say, 440
Quhar-throu the king of yngland
Eschapit haṁe in-to his land.

After the battle,

Qwhen at the feld so cleyn wes maid
Of yngliß men, that nane abad, 444

the Scotch began the plunder.

The scottis men soyne tuk [in] hand
Of thair*is* all that eu*ir* thai fand,
*As silu*ir*, gold, clathis, and armyng, 447*
*With [vessell] and all other thing
*That eu*ir* thai mycht lay on thar hand;
So gret a richeß thair thai fand, 450

429. *strevilling*] strewilline E; Striulling H. [*sic* EH] als C.
430. *wes*] was H; war E.
434. *till*] to EH.
435. [*sa* EH] C *om.*
438. *ay*] *so* H; in E.
439. *that—agane*] *so* EH; agane that riss C.
442. *in-to*] in-till.
443. *at*] that EH.
445. [*in* EH] on C.
446. Sa great riches there they fand H (*which is repeated, with* a *inserted, four lines lower*).
447*—450*. *Not in* E; *but found in* H. *As siluir*] Siluer and H. *With vessell*] And vessell H; With bestiall (!) C.

That mony man wes mychty maid
Of the richeß that thai thar had.
Quhen this wes doñe that ere said I,
The king send a gret cumpany
Wp to the crag, thamẽ till assale
That war fled fra the gret battale;
And thai thame ȝald, for-out debat,
And in hand has thame tane, fut-hat,
Syne to the kyng thai went thar way.
Thai dispendit haly that day
In spoulȝeing and richeß taking,
Fra end wes maid of the fechting.
And quhen thai nakit spulȝeit war
That war slayñe in the battale thar,
It wes forsuth a gret ferly
Till se sa*m*myn so feill dede ly.
Sevin hundreth paris of spur*is* rede
War tane of knychtis that war dede.
The erll of glowcister ded was thar,
That men callit schir gilbert of clar;
And s*chir* gelis de argente alsua,
And payne typtot, and othir ma,
That thair namys nocht tell can I.
And apon scottis me*n*nis party
[Thar wes] slayne worthy knycht*is* twa;
Wilȝamẽ Wepowñt wes ane of tha,
And schir Walter the roß añe othir,
That schir eduard the kyng*is* broth*ir*
Lufit, and held in sic dante

447 Many were made rich ever after.

452 The English who had fled to the crags give themselves up.

456 [Fol. 102. C.]

460 When the dead were all spoiled, the bodies formed a sad sight.

464 700 pairs of spurs were taken.

468 [Fol. 45 b. E.] Sir Gilbert of Clare, Sir Giles de Argentine, and Sir Payn Tybetot, were slain.

472 The Scotch lost 2 knights, Sir William Vipont and Sir Walter Ross.

447. *wes mychty*] my*ch*ty wes E; were rich H.
449. *ere said*] her say EH.
453. *for-out*] for-owtyn.
454. *thame tane*] tane thaim.
457. In riches, and in spraith taking H.
463. *Sevin*] Twa EH; Two A. *paris*] payr EH.
465. *ded wae*] *so* EH; was ded C.
466. *clar*] Clare H.
467. *schir*] EH *om.* *gelis*] gylis.
468. *typtot*] typont EH.
471. [*Thar wes* E] Thair was H; War C.
472. *Wepownt*] the wepoynt E; Wepont H.
473. *the*] of EH.
475. *held*] had.

Sir Edward Bruce greatly mourned for Ross,

That as him-self hym lufit he. 476
And quhen he wist that he wes dede,
He wes so wa and will of rede,
That he said, makand full euill cher,
That him [war] levar that Iournye wer 480
Wndone, than he swa ded had beñe.
Outaken him, men has nocht seyn
Quhar he for ony man maid menyng;

because he was fonder of Ross's sister than of his own wife Isabel.

For the cauſ wes of this lufing 484
That he his sist*ir* p*ar*amour*is*
Lufit, and held all at [rebour*is*]
His [awyne] wif, dame Esobell.
And tharfor swa gret distans fell 488

Isabel's brother, David, Earl of Athol, out of revenge, on the eve of the battle,

Betwix him and the erll davy
Of adell, brother to this lady,
That he, apon sanct Ioh*n*nis nycht,
Quhen [bath] the kyngis war bouñe to ficht, 492

seized some of the king's provisions at Cambuskenneth; [Fol. 102 b. C.]

In cambuskynneth the kyng*is* vittale
He tuk, and sadly gert assale
Schir Wilȝame of herth, and him slew,
And with hym ma men than enew. 496

for which he was banished.

Quharfor syne in-till Ingland
He was banyst, and all his land
Was sesit, and forfalt to the kyng,
That did tharof syne his likyng. 500

Qwhen the feld, as I said air,
Wes dispulȝeit and left all bair,

479. *full*] E *om.* *euill*] iwill.
480. [*war* E] wald C. *war levar*] had rather H.
484. *For*] And EH. *this*] hys EH.
486. [*rebouris* E] rabouss C. *all—rebouris*] at great retoures H.
487. [*awyne* E] awne C. *Esobell*] Ysabell E; Issobell H.
490. *adell*] athole EH.
491. *he*] the Erle H.
492. [*bath* E] both H; C *om.*
493. *cambuskynneth*] *so* H; camyskynnell E.
494. *He*] H *om.* *sadly*] hardly H.
495. *herth*] Airth H; keth E.
496. *ma men*] men ma.
497. *Quharfor*] Tharfor EH.
499. *and*] as EH. *forfalt*] forfaut E; forfeite H.
501. *Qwhen*] And when H. *said*] tauld ȝow E; tauld H.

The kyng and all his Cumpany
Ioyfull and blyth war and mery — 504 — The king and his men, joyful and merry, return to rest themselves.
Of the grace that thame fallyn was,
Towards thar Innys thair wayis tais
Till rest thame; for thai wery war.
Bot for the erll gilbert of clar, — 508 — The king mourned for Sir Gilbert de Clare, his kinsman, and had him buried with honour.
That slayne wes in the battale-place,
The kyng somdeill anoyit was,
For till hym neir syb wes he.
Than till a kirk he gert hym be — 512
Brocht, and walkit all that nycht.
And on the morn, quhen day wes licht,
The kyng raiß, as his wille wes.
Than till ane ynglißh knycht, throu caß, — 516 — By chance an English knight, who had escaped unhurt,
Hapnyt, that he ȝeid waverand,
Swa that na man laid on hym hand,
And in a busk hyd his armyng,
And waytit, quhill he saw the kyng — 520
In the mornyng cum furth airly;
Till him than is he went in hy. — seeing the king, yielded himself to him.
Schir mermadak betwng he hecht,
He rakit till the kyng all richt, — 524
And halsit hym apon his kne.
"Welcome, schir mermadak," said he, — His name was Sir Marmaduke Betoun.
"Till quhat man art thou presoner?"
"To nane," he said; "bot till ȝow her — 528
I ȝeld me, at ȝour will to be."
"And I resaiff the, schir," saide he; — The king received him courteously,
Than gert he trete hym curtasly.

504. *Ioyfull—war*] Glade, and ioyfull was H; Blyth and Ioyfull glaid E.
507. *Till*] To EH. *thai*] E *om.*
508. *clar*] clare H.
511. *neir*] ner wele.
515. *wille*] wille *or* willis CE (*printed* willis J; wills P); vse H.
516. *till*] to H; E *om.*
519. *And*] E *om.* *hyd*] he hid H. E *has* with, *but* J *prints* he hid.
521. *mornyng*] morne.
523. *betwng*] the twengue E; the Twemane H.
525. *halsit*] hailsed H; halyst E.
527. *Till*] To EH.
528. *till*] to EH.

He duelt lang in his cumpany, 532

and sent him home to England.

And syne in yngland him send he,
Arayit weill, but ransouñe fre,
And gaf hym gret giftis thar-to;
A worthy man that wald swa do 536

[Fol. 103. C.]

Micht mak him gretly for to priß.
Quhen mermadak apon this viß
Wes ȝolden, as I to ȝow say,

Sir Philip Mowbray delivers up Stirling castle to Bruce.

Than com schir philip the mowbray, 540
And to the king ȝald the castele;
His cwnnand has he haldyñe wele,
And with him tretit swa the king,
That he become of his duellyng, 544
And held him lelely his fay
Quhill the last end of his [lyf-]day.

We now tell how Douglas chased the English.

Now will we of the lord dowglas
Tell, how he followit the chas. 548
He had quheyne in his cumpany,
Bot he sped him in full gret hy,
And as he by the torwode fur,

Going by the Torwood, he meets Sir Lawrence Abernethy,

[Sa met he, rydand on] the mwr 552
Schir lowrens of abyrnethy,
That with four scor in cumpany
Com for till help the ynglisß men,
For he wes ynglisß man ȝeit then. 556
Bot quhen that he herd how it wes,

who comes over

He left the ynglisß mennys peß,

533. *in*] *so* H; till E.
536. *wald swa*] sua wald E; sa could H.
539. *I*] Ik.
544. *become*] belewyt E; beleft H.
546. [*lyf* EH] C *om.*
547. *Rubric in* H—How Iames Dowglas conuoyed the King Of England hame but Soiourning. *lord*] lord of.
548. *he*] that he.
549. *quheyne*] to quhone E; wheene H.
551. *by*] throuch E; through H. *fur*] foore H.
552. [*Sa—on* E] He met rydand in C; He saw come ryding ouer H.
553. *lowrens*] laurence EH.
554. *four scor*] xxiiij E; sextie H.
557. *that*] EH *om.* *how*] how that EH.

And till the lord douglaß richt thar — to Douglas's side.
For till be leill and trew he swar; 560
And than thai bath followit the chaß.
And or the kyng of yngland waß — Ere king Edwar passes Linlithgow, Douglas comes up with him.
Passit lythkew, thai com so neir,
With all the folk that with thame wer, 564
That weill emang thame schut thai mych*t*.
Bot thai thoucht thame our few to ficht
With the gret rowt that thai had thar, — [Fol. 48. E.]
For v hundreth men armyt thai war. 568 — The English band is one of 500 men.
To-gidd*ir* sarraly raid thai,
And held thame apon brydill ay.
Thai war gouernit full wittely,
For it semyt ay thai war redy 572
For till defend thame at thar mycht,
Gif thai assalȝeit war in ficht.
And the lord douglaß and his men
Thoucht thai wald nocht purpoß then 576 — [Fol. 108 b. C.] Douglas dare not attack them,
For to ficht with thame all planly,
He convoyit thame so narrowly,
That of the henmast ay tuk he.
Micht nane behynd his fallowis be 580 — but follows them continually, killing or capturing all stragglers.
Nocht a stane cast, [bot] he in hy
Wes ded, or tane delyuerly,
That [nane] rescours wald till hym ma,
All-thouch he lufit hym neuir swa. 584
On this wiß thame convoyit he,

559. *till*] to EH.
560. *till*] to EH.
563. *lythkew*] lythkow E; Linlithgow H.
565. *emang*] amang EH. *schut*] shoot H; swyth E.
566. *our*] to E; too H.
567, 568. *Transposed in* H. *men*] EH *om.*
573. *till*] to EH.
575. *lord*] lord of.
576. How that he wald no*ch*t shaip him then E; Thought it was not good purpose then H.
579. *henmast*] hindmest H.
581. *Nocht—stane*] A pennystane EH. [*bot* H] na E; than C.
583. [*nane* E] na C.
584. *lufit*] lywyt E; *corr. to* luwyt J.
585. *wiss thame*] maner EH. *he*] them he H.

Quhill at the kyng and his menȝhe
At Winchburgh the English bait their horses, and so does Douglas.
Till Wynchburch all *cum*myñe ar.
Than lichtit thai, all that war thar, 588
Till bayt thar horß that war wery;
Than douglaß and his cumpany
Baytit alsua besyde thame neir.
Thai war so feill, withouten weir, 592
And in armys so clenly dicht,
And swa arayit ay to ficht,
And he so quheyne and but gad*er*ing,
That he wald nocht [in] playne fichting 596
Assaill [thaim,] bot ay [raid] thame by,
Waytand his poynt ay ythandly.
The English proceed; Douglas still follows, cutting off the stragglers,
A litill quhile thai baitit thar,
And syne lap on and furth thai fair; 600
And he wes alwais by thame neir.
He leit thame nocht haf sic laseir
As anys wattir for to ma;
[And] gif that ony stad war swa, 604
That behynd war left ony space,
Sesit all soyne in hand he waß.
Thai convoit thame apon this wiß,
Quhill that the king and his rout is 608
till they come to Dunbar,
Cu*m*myn to the castell of dunbar,
Quhar he and sum of his men war
Resauit richt weill; for ȝeit than
where Earl Patrick receives the English,
The Erll patrik wes ynglis man, 612
That gert with met and drink alsua

586. *at*] that EH.
587. *Wynchburch*] wenchburg E; Wincheburgh H.
588. *thai*] E *om.* *war thar*] there were H; thai war E.
589. *Till*] To EH.
590. *Than*] And EH.
594. *ay*] for EH.
595. *quheyne*] quhoyne E; wheene H. *gadering*] *so* H; supleyng E.
596. [*in* EH] to C.
597. [*thaim* EH] C *om.* [*raid* E] rade H; ryde C.
598. *poynt*] time H.
601. *he*] E *om.*
603. *ma*] *so* EH; may C.
604. [*And* EH] C *om.* *that*] E *om.* *swa*] sa EH; sway C.
605. *behynd war*] he behind. *That—left*] And behind left was H.
606. *all soyne*] alsone.
607. *apon—wiss*] on sic awiss E.
610. *men*] menȝe.

Refresche thamẽ weill, and syne gert ta
A bate, and send the kyng by se
Till balmeburch in his awne cuntre. 616
Thair horß thar left thai all on stray,
Bot sesit wele soyne, I trow, war thai!
The laiff, that levit war without,
Adressit thame in-till añe rout, 620
And till berwik helde straucht the vay
In rout; bot, and we suth sall say,
Thai levit of thair rout party,
Or thai come thair; bot nocht-for-thi 624
Thai come till Berwik weill; and thar
In-till the toune resauit war;
Ellis at myscheiff had thai beyñe.
[And quhen] the lord douglas has seyñe 628
That he had lesit thar his payne,
Toward the king he went agañe.

and sends King Edward in a boat to Bamborough. [Fol. 104. C.]

The rest of the English push on to Berwick, which they enter.

Douglas gives up the chase.

THE kyng eschapit on this wiß;
Lo! quhat falding in fortouñe is, 632
That quhile apon a man will smyle,
And prik him syne ane othir quhile!
In na tyme stabilly can sche stande.
This mychty kyng of yngland 636
Scho had set on her quheill on hicht,
Quhen, with so ferlifull a mycht

Lo! what are the changes of fortune!

Fortune had set the king of England on such a height,

616. *balmeburch*] bawmburgh E; Bamburgh H.
618. *sesit—trow*] leesed als soone in hand H. *wele—trow*] I trow weill sone.
619. *levit war*] lewyt thar.
620. *ane*] a.
621. *the*] thair EH.
622. *sall*] E *om.* *In—we*] In a rout, and I the H.
623. They leaued of their men partly H; Stad thai war full narowly E.
625. *till*] to. *weill*] soone H.
626. *In-till*] In-to EH.
627. *at*] at gret EH.
628. *So in* EH (*except* lord off *for* lord *in* E); The gud lord douglas quhen he has seyne C.
629. *thar*] all.
631. *The*] *written with red capital* Y (*for* TH); This E.
632. *falding*] *so* H; fading E. *is*] lyes H.
633. *quhile*] whyles H; will E. *will*] quhill.
634. *him*] on hym. *ane othir*] a nothyr.
635. *stabilly*] stable EH.

Of men of armys and archeris,
And of fute men and hobleris, 640
He com rydand out of his land,
As I befor has borne on hand.
And on a nycht syne and a day
Scho set hym in so hard assay, 644
That he with sevintene in a bat
Wes fayne for to hald hame his gat!
Bot of this ilk quhelis turnyng
Kyng robert suld mak no murnyng; 648
For his syde, throu the quhele on hicht,
Wencust thar fais, wes mekill of mycht.
For twa contraris, ȝhe may wit wele, 651
*Set agane othir on a quhele;
*Quhen añe is hye, the tothir is law,
*And gif it fall that fortoune thraw
*The quheill about, it that on hicht
Was ere, [on force] it most douñe lycht; 656
And it, that wondir lawch wer ere, 651
Mon lowp on loft in the contrere.
So fure it of thir kyngis two;
Quhen that king robert stad wes so,
That in his gret myscheiff wes he,
The tothir wes in his maieste. 656
And quhen the kyng eduardis mycht
Wes lawit, kyng robert lap on hicht
And now sic fortoune fell hym till,

and soon afterwards he was fain to escape with 17 men in a boat.

As a wheel turns, when one side is high, the other is low.

[Fol. 104 b. C.] So fared it with these two kings.

When Edward was down, then Bruce rose.

640. *hobleris*] hobeleris; Hobillers H.
642. *has*] *so* CE; have HJ.
643. *on*] in EH.
644. *Sidenote in* E—The quhele of fortoun.
645. *sevintene*] few men EH.
646. *to*] till.
649. *his*] on his. *throu*] of H; E *om.*
650. Raiss, quhen the tothyr doun gan lycht EH.
651*—656*. E *om.* *Found in* H.
652*. *on*] in H.
653*. *the tothir*] another H.
656*. [*on force* H] C *om.* *most*] mon H.
651. *wondir*] wndre E. *wondir—wer*] laigh was vnder H.
652. *lowp*] lepe E; leape H. *loft*] hight H.
654. *that*] the.
655. *his*] E *om.*
658. *Wes—lap*] Woxt lesse, than Roberts raise H. *lap*] wes E; raise H.

That he wes hye and at his will. 660

At strevilling wes he ȝeit lyand;

Bruce remains at Stirling.

And the gret lordis that he fand
Ded in the felde, he gert berye
In haly placis honorabilly. 664
And the laiff syne that ded war thar
In-to gret pittes erdit war.

[Fol. 46 b. E.]

The castell and the towrys syñe
Richt to the grund doune gert he myñe, 668

He destroys the castle.

And syne to bothwell send has he
Schir Eduard with a gret menȝe.

He sends Sir Edward to Bothwell.

For thar wes fra thine send him worde
That the riche Erll of herfurde, 672
And othir mychty als, wes thar.
Soyne tretit he with schir valtar,
That erle, [and] castell, and the laiff,
In-to *schir* eduardis hand he gaf. 676

Sir Walter Gilbertstoun delivers up the Earl of Hereford to Sir Edward Bruce.

And to the king the erll send he,
That gert him richt weill ȝemyt be,
Quhill at the last thai tretit swa,
That he till yngland haṁe suld ga 680

Hereford is exchanged

Without paying of ransouñe, fre,
And that for hym suld changit be
Bischop robert, that blynd wes maid,
With the queyne that thai takin had 684

for the blind bishop Robert, the Scottish queen, and her daughter Margery.

In presouñe, as befor said I,
And [hyr] douchtir daṁe mariory.
The Erll wes changit for thir thre;
And quhen thai cu*m*myn haṁe war fre, 688

661. *strevilling*] strewillyne E; Striuiling H.
664. *placis*] place.
668. *to*] till; *and in* l. 677.
669. *has*] EH *om.*
671. *thar—send*] thar wes than send E; they therein send to H.
674. *Soyne*] Swa E; So H. *valtar*] wat*er* E; walter HJ.
675. [*and* EH] C *om.*
676. *In-to*] In E.
678. *ȝemyt*] keeped H.
681. *Without*] *so* H; Withouten C; For-owtyn E.
684. *With*] And EH. *takin*] takyn E; taken H; *miswritten* taking C.
686. [*hyr* E] her H; his C.
688. *hame war*] war hame all EH.

Bruce marries his daughter to Walter Stewart.

The kyngis douchter, that wes fair,
And wes als his apperand air,
With Walter steward cañ he wed;
And thai weill soyñe gat of thar bed 692

[Fol. 105. C.] She bears a son, called Robert after his grandfather, who succeeded his uncle David II., who reigned 42 years.

Añe knaiff child, throu our Lordis grace,
That eft*ir* his gude eld-fad*ir* was
Callit robert, and syne wes king,
And had the land in gouernyng 696
Eft*ir* his worthy Eyñe, davy,
That regnyt twa ȝer and fourty;
And in tyñe of the compyling

This book was compiled in the 5th year of Robert II.,

Of this buk, this robert wes kyng, 700
And of his kynrik passit was
v ȝeir; and wes the ȝer of grace
Añe thousand thre hundreth and sevinty
And v, and of his elde sexty. 704

A.D. 1375.

And that wes eft*ir* that the gud king,
Robert, wes brocht till his ending,

That is, 46 years after the death of the Bruce (A.D. 1329).

Sex and fourty vynt*ir*, but mar.
God grant that thai, that cu*m*myne ar 708
Of his ofspring, maynteyme the land,
And hald the folk weill to warrand,
And maynteme richt and ek laute,
As weill as in his tyñe did he! 712

King Robert's power increases daily.

Kyng robert now wes weill at hycht,
For ilk day than grew mair his mycht.
His men war rich, and his cuntre

689. *kyngis*] king hys E; Kings H.
690. *his*] E *om.*
691. *can*] gan. *Sidenote in* E (*scarce legible*)—wat*er* stewart mariss king Robert dowcht*ir*.
693. *Ane*] A EH. *knaiff*] knaw E; man H.
694. *eld-fadir*] auld father H.
697. *Eyme*] sonne H. *davy*] dawy.
698. *twa*] nyne H.
700. *this* (2)] this last H.
703. E *has*—I thowsand iiic sevynty.
707. *Sex*] *so* H; v E.
711. *ek*] E *om.*
712. *Rubric in* H—How King Robert rade in England, And brunt vp all Northvmberland.
714. *mair*] E *om.*
715. *war*] woux E; woxt H.

Aboundanit weill of corñe and fee, 716
And of alkynd othir richeß;
Myrth, solaß, and ek blithnes
Wes in the land all comonly,
For ilk man blith wes and Ioly. 720

Mirth and blitheness abound.

The king, eftir the gret Iournee,
Throu *con*sell of his folk preve,
In seir townys gert cry on hicht,
That quha sa clamyt to haf richt 724
To hald in scotland land or fe,
That in that tuelf moneth suld he
Cum and clayme it, and tharfor do
To the king that pertenyt th*ar*-to. 728

The king proclaims that all who claim to hold land or property must claim it and do homage within a twelvemonth.

And gif thai come nocht in that ȝer,
Than suld thai wit, withouten weir,
That herd thar-eft*ir* nañe suld be.

[Fol. 105 *b*. C.]

The king, that wes of gret bounte 732
And besynes, quhen this wes doñe,
Añe hoost gert su*m*mond eft*ir* sone,
And went syne soyne in-till Ingland,
And our-raid all northu*m*birland, 736
And brynt houß and tuk the pray,
And syne went haṁe agane thar vay.
I let it shortly pass [for-]by;
For thair wes doñe na cheuelry 740
Prowit, that [is] till spek of heir.

After this, Bruce makes a raid into Northumberland.

No deed of arms is done at this time.

716. *Aboundanit*] Haboundyt E; Abounded H. *and*] ande C.
717. *alkynd*] alkyn. *richess*] ryches E; *spelt* richass C.
718. *Myrth*] And myrth H. *solass*] and solace E; solace H. *ek*] all H; E *om*. C *transposes* solass *and* blithnes; *but see* l. 720, *where* blith *refers to the last sb.*
719. *Wes*] War. *all comonly*] commonaly. *land all*] haill land H.
722. *consell—folk*] rede off his consaill E; reede and counsell of his H.
723. *seir*] sundrie H.
724. *to*] till.
726. *that tuelf*] thai xij.
731. *herd*] hard EH.
735. *syne soyne*] thann E; *pr.* thaim J; then H.
737. *houss*] *written for* housis C; howssis E; townes H. *the*] thair EH.
739. [*for* E] fer C; far H.
741. *Prowit*] Prooued H. [*is* EH] wes C. *till*] to EH.

The king makes several raids into England.

The king went oft on this maneir
In yngland, for till riche his men,
That in richeſ aboundanit then. 744

rigio & propri.

743. *till*] to EH.
744. *aboundanit*] haboundyt E; abounded H.

[BOOK XIV.]

How the erll of carrik passit in Irland to vyn it, and vith him erll thomas randal & schir philip the mowbray, schir Iohne stewart, schir Iohne sowlis, & ramsay of ouchtirhouss.

THE erll of carrik, schir Eduard,
That stowtar wes than ane libbard,
And had no will till be in peß,
Thoucht that scotland to litill weß
Till his brothir and him alsua;
Tharfor till purpoß can he ta
That he of [Irland] wald be kyng.
Tharfor he send and had treting
With the erischry of Irland,
That in thar lawte tuk on hand
Of Irland for to mak hym king,
With-thi that he with hard fechting
Micht ourcum the ynglip men,
That in the land war wonnand then;
And thai suld help with all thair mycht.
And he, that herd thame mak sic hicht,

Sir Edward, earl of Carrick, who was stouter than a leopard,
4 thought Scotland too small for himself and his brother.
8 He therefore treats with the Irishmen,
who offer to elect him king,
12 if he will drive out the English.
16

Rubric in H—How sir Edward tooke on hand For to make weere into Ireland.

2. *ane*] a EH. *libbard*] Leopard H.

3. *no*] na. *till*] to EH. *be in*] liue at H.

6. *till*] to EH. *can*] gan.

7. [*Irland* E] Ireland H; yngland C.

9. *the*] E *om.* *erischry*] Irahry H; hyrsery E.

10. *lawte*] leawte.

11. *Irland for*] all Irland E; all Ireland H.

14. *the*] that H. *wonnand*] winning H.

In-till his hert had gret liking;

Sir Edward gathers an army, and embarks at Ayr, in the month of May, 1315.

And with the consent of the king,
Gad*er*it hym men of gret bounte,
And at air syne schippit he, 20
In-till the next moneth of maij;
Till Irland held he straucht his way.

He takes with him Earl Thomas Randolph, Sir Philip Mowbray,

[Fol. 47. E.]

He had thair in his Cumpany
The Erll thomas that wes vorthy, 24
And gud schir philip the mowbray,

[Fol. 106. C.]

That sekir wes in herd assay;

Sir John de Soulis, Sir John Steward, Ramsay of Ouchtirhouse,

Schir Iohne the sowlis, a gude knycht;
And schir Iohne Steward, that wes wicht; 28
The ramsay als of ouchtirhouſ,
That wes richt wicht and cheuelrouſ;

and Sir Fergus of Ardrossan.

And schir ferguſ de ardrossañe,
And othir knychtis mony añe. 32

They arrive safely,

In vaveryng [fyrth] arivit thai
Saufly, but bargane or assay,

and send their ships home.

And send thair schippis home ilkañe.
A gret thing haue thai vndertañe, 36
That with [sa] quheyne as thai war thar,

They are but 6000 in all, to attack all Ireland.

That wes sex thousand men but mar,
Schupe for to warray all Irland,
Quhar thai sall se mony thousand 40
Cum armyt on thame for to ficht.
Bot thouch thai quheyne var, thai var vicht,

17. *In-till*] Into H. *had*] he had H.
20. And syne at Air shipped he H.
21. *In-till*] Into H. *next*] neyst E; neist H. *maij*] mai E; May H.
23. *He*] And H. *thair*] there H; than E.
25. *gud*] E *om.*
26. *wes*] wes ay C; *but* EH *omit* ay.
27. *the sowlis*] the soullis E; Sowles H. *a*] ane. *a—knycht*] that was wight H.
28. *that—wicht*] a good Knight H.
30. *richt wicht*] wycht E; right wise H.
31. *de*] off E; of H.
33. *vaveryng*] wokingis E; Wolyngs H. [*fyrth* E] Firth H; furth C.
35. *send*] sent H.
37. [*sa* EH] C *om.* *quheyne*] quhoyne E; wheene H. *thar*] H *om.*
38. *wes*] was H; war E. *sex*] seuen H.
39. *for*] E *om.*
42. *quheyne*] quhone E; wheene H. *var*] war E; were H (*twice*).

And, for-outen dreid or effray,
In twa battelis thai tuk the way — 44 They come to Carrickfergus.
Toward cragfergus, it to se.
Bot the lordis of that cuntre,
Mavndwell, byset, and logañe, — Mandevill and others oppose them,
Thar men assemblit eu*i*rilkañe; — 48
De sawagiß wes alsua thair.
And, quhen thai all assemblit war,
Thai war weill neir tuenty thousand. — to the number of 20,000.
Quhen thai wist that in-till thar land — 52
Sic a men*z*he arivit war,
With all the folk that thai had thar, — The Irish advance to the attack.
Thai went toward thame in gret hy.
And fra schir eduard wist suthly — 56 Edward Bruce prepares for defence.
That neir till him cu*m*and war thai,
Hiß men he gert richt weill aray.
The vaward had the erll thomas,
And in the rerward schir eduard was. — 60
Thar fais approchit to the fichting, — A battle ensues.
And thai met thame but abaysing.
Thar mycht men se a gret melle;
For erll thomas and his men*z*he — 64 Earl Thomas and his men [Fol. 106 b. C.] soon slay 100.
Dang on thair fais sa douchtely,
That in schort tym men mycht se ly
Ane hundreth that all bludy war.

43. *for-outen*] for-owt E; without H.
44. *thai*] E *om.*
45. *to*] for to C; *but* EH *omit* for.
47. *Mavndwell*] Mandweill E; Maundewile H. *byset*] besat E; Bisset H.
48. *assemblit*] they sembled H.
49. *De sawagiss*] The sawagis E; The Sauages H. *wes*] war. *wes—thair*] als was with them there H.
50. *all*] E *om.*
52. *Quhen*] When that H. *in-till*] in H.
55. *gret*] H *om.*
56. *fra*] when H. *suthly*] surely H.
57. *till*] to EH. *neir—him*] to him neere H.
58. *richt*] thaim. *ke—weill*] right well he gart H.
59. *vaward*] awaward E; Vangard H.
60. *in*] E *om.* *And—rerward*] In the Reereward H.
61. *Here* H *has the rubric*—The first battell that Sir Edward, Wan in Ireland, with feghting hard.
63. *gret*] full great H.
64. *For*] The H.
67. *hundreth*] hunder.

Typical characters

The wounded horses rear and kick.

For hobynis, that war stekit thar, 68
Rerit and flang, and gret rowñe maid,
And kest thañe that apon thame raid.

The Scotch prevail.

And schir Eduardis Cumpany
Assemblit syne so hardely, 72
That thai thar fais ruschit all.

Those who fall have small power to rise.

Quha hapnyt in that ficht to fall,
It was perell of his Risyng.
The scottis men in that fechting 76
Swa apertly and weille thame bar,
That thair fais swa ruschit war,
That thai haly the flicht has tañe.

The flower of Ulster perished there.

In that battale wes tane or slañe 80
All hale the flour of wllister.
The Erll of murreff gret priß had ther;
For his [richt] worthy cheuelry
Confortit all his Cumpany. 84

It was a good beginning.

That wes a full fair begynnyng;
For, newlyngis at thair ariwyng,
In playne ficht thai discomfit thar

Their foes were 4 for 1.

Thar fais, that ay fowr for ane war. 88

They retreat to Carrickfergus,

Syne to cragferguß ar thai gañe,
And in the toune has Innys tañe.
The castell ẇele wes stuffit then
Of-new with wittale and vith men; 92

which is besieged.

Thar-till thai set añe sege in hy.
Mony ysche full apertly

69. *Rerit*] Relyt E; Reilled H.
71. *And—Eduardis*] Sir Edward and his H.
72. *syne*] then H. *so*] sa.
73. *ruschit*] there rushed H.
75. *perell*] great perill H.
78. *thair—ruschit*] all their faes rushed H.
79. *That*] And H.
80. *In*] That in.
81. *flour*] flur. *wllister*] wlsyster E; Wollistar H.
82. *priss*] price E; prise H.
83. [*richt*] right H; CE *om.*
84. *Confortit*] Comforted H; Comfort E.
85. *That*] This.
87. *ficht*] fegh (*sic*) H; bataill E.
88. *Thar fais*] Tha folke H. *ay fowr*] iiij ay.
91. *wele*] new H.
92. *Of-new*] Right well H.
94. *Mony ysche*] And mony ishe H; Mony eschewe E.

Wes maid, quhill thar the *sege* lay,
Quhill trewis at the last tuk thai. 96 **A truce is made.**
Quhen that the folk of wllister
Till his peſ haly cu*mm*yn wer, .
For schir eduard wald tak on hand
Till ryde forthirmar in the land, 100
Thair come till hym and maid fewte **Some ten or twelve chieftains submit to Edward Bruce.**
Sum of the kyngis of that Cuntre
Weill ten or tuelf, as I herd say ;
Bot thai held hym schort quhile thar fay. 104
For twa of thame, ane makfulchiane, **But two of them laid an ambush for him,**
And ane othir, hat makmartane,
With-set añe place in-till his way, **[Fol. 107. C.]**
Quhar him behufit neyd avay, 108
With twa thousand of men with speris, **with 2000 spearmen and 2000 archers,**
And als mony of thair archeris ;
And all the cattale of the land
War drawin thidder to warrand. 112
Men callis that place endwillañe ;
In all Irland strater is nañe. **in a very narrow pass.**
For schir eduard that kepit [thai] ;
[Thai] thoucht he suld nocht thar avay ; 116
Bot he his viage soyne has tañe,
And straucht toward the plaſ is gañe.

95. *sege*] sege it C; *but* E *omits* it. *thar—sege*] the Siege there H.
97. *wllister*] hulsyster E; Wollistar H.
99. *For*] Then H ; E *om.*
100. *Till*] To. *forthirmar*] farthermare H ; furth forthyr E.
101, 102. *Transposed in* EH. *Sum*] And H ; E *om.* H *has the rubric*—The withletting of the passe of Endnellane.
103. *I*] Ik.
104. *thar fay*] perfay H (*wrongly*).
105. *makfulchiane*] makgullane E ; Makgoulchane H.
106. *makmartane*] makartane E ; Macarthane H.
107. *With-set—place*] With-set a pase E ; Umbeset him H.
108. *behufit*] behowyt. *neyd avay*] ned away E ; of need to ga H.
112. *drawin thidder*] driuen hidder H.
113. *endwillane*] Inner*m*allane E ; Endnellane H.
115. [*thai* E] thay H ; ay C. H *has*—For-thy Sir Edward there kept thay.
116. [*Thai* E] He C ; And H.
117. *soyne*] sone E ; straight H.
118. *straucht*] euen H. *plass*] place H ; pass E.

The earl of Murray forces his way through.

The Erll of murreff, schir thomas,
That put hym ay first till assayis, 120
Lichtit on fut with his menȝhe,
And apertly the plaß tuk he.
The erische kyngis I spak of ar,
[Fol. 47 b. E.] With al the folk that with thame war, 124
Met him richt sturdely; bot he
Assalȝeit swa with his menȝhe,
That, magre thairis, thai wan the plaß;
Slayñe of thair fayis fele thar waß. 128

The Scotch chase the Irish host,

Throu-out the wod thame chasit thai,
And sesit in sic fusiouñe thar pray,
That all the folk of thar host war
Refreschit weill añe owk or mair. 132

and come to Kilsagart. Edward Bruce hears that his foes are gathering at Dundalk.

At kilsaggart schir eduard lay;
And thar weill soyñe he haß herd say,
That at dundawk wes añe assemble
Maid of the lordis of that cuntre; 136
In host thai war assemblit thar.

Sir Richard Clare,

Thar wes first schir richard of clare,
That in all Irland luf-tenand
[Was off] the king of yngland. 140

the Earls of Desmond and Kildare,

The erll of desmownt als wes thar,
And the erll alsua of kyldare;
The bremayne with the wardouñe;

119. *murreff*] Murray H.
120. *ay first*] fyrst ay E. H *has*—That first put him to all assayes.
121. *Lichtit*] He lighted H.
122. *plass*] place H; pass E.
123. *The*] Thir. *erische*] ersch E; Irish H.
124. That in the place enbushed were H. *thame*] him.
125. *richt sturdely*] full stoutly H.
127. *thai*] he H. *plass*] pass.
128. *fele thar*] full mony H.
130. *fusioune*] fusoune E; abundance H. *thar*] the EH.
132. *owk*] wouk E; Oulk H; weeke A.
133. *kilsaggart*] kilsagart E; Kylsagart H.
134. *thar*] there H; E *om.*
135. *dundawk*] dundalk E; Dondalk H. *ane*] an H; E *om.*
138. *schir*] H *om.*
139. *Irland*] Irland wes C; *but* EH *omit* wes. *luf-tenand*] luftenend C.
140. [*Was off* E] Was to H; Maid be C.
141. *desmownt*] desmond. *als*] E *om.*
143. *bremayne*] breman E; Bryane eke H. *with the*] and the H; and E. *wardoune*] wodoune E; Wardane H.

Thir war lordis of gret renouñe. 144
The butler alsua thair weſ,
And schir moriſ [le fyss] thomas;
Thir with thair men ar cu*m*my*n* [thar],
A richt gret hoost forsuth thai war. 148
And quhen schir eduard wist suthly
That thar wes sic añe cheuelry,
His host in hy he gert aray,
And thidd*ir*ward*is* he tuk the way; 152
And neir the touñe he tuk herbery.
Bot for he wist all wtirly
That in the touñe wes mony men,
His battalis he arrayit then, 156
And stude arayit in battale
To kep thame, gif thai vald assale.
And quhen that schir richard of clare,
And othir lordis that war thare, 160
Wist at the scottis men so neir
With thar battell*is* than cu*m*myne weir,
Thai tuk to consell at that nycht,
For it was layt, thai wald no*cht* ficht; 164
Bot on the morne in the mornyng,
Weill soyn eft*ir* the sone-rysing,
Thai suld ysche furth, all that war thair;
Therfor that nycht thai did no mair, 168
Bot herbreyt thame on athir party.
That nycht the scottis Cumpany
War wachit richt weill, all at richt;

Butler, Fitz-thomas, [Fol. 107 *b*. C.] and others, collect a host.

Edward Bruce comes to Dundalk.

Sir Richard Clare hears of his approach.

They agree not to fight that night.

144. *Thir*] That EH.
145. *wess*] was.
146. [*le fyss* E] le fitz H; besy *or* vesy C.
147. *Thir*] Thai E; That H. [*thar* E] there H; ar C.
149. *quhen*] E *om*. *suthly*] surely H.
150. *sic*] swilk. *ane*] a H; E *om*.
152. *he*] E *om*.
153. *he tuk*] tuk his E; tooke his H.
154. *all wtirly*] all witterly E; right perfitelie H.
155. *wes*] war E; were H.
159. *Rubric in* H—The battell of Dondalk in Ireland, That Sir Edward tooke with his hand.
160. *war thare*] thar war.
161. *at*] that.
162. *than*] EH *om*.
163. *at that*] that that
167. *war thair*] thar war E; there were H.

Next morning,

And on the morn, quhen day ves licht, 172
In twa battell*is* thai thame arayit;

the Scotch await the attack.

Thai stude with baneris all displayit,
For the battell all reddy bouñe.
And thai that war within the touñe, 176
Quhen soñe wes rysyn schynand clere,

Sir Richard Clare sends 50 scouts,

Send furth of thame that with him were
Fifty, till se the contenyng
Of scottis men and thar cu*m*myng. 180
And thai raid furth and saw thai*m* soyñe,
Syne come agane, forouten hoyñe.
And quhen thai sa*m*myn lichtit war,
Thai tald thair lordis that wes thar, 184

who return and say that the Scotch are hardly half a dinner for them.

That scottis men semyt to be
Worthye, and of full gret bounte;
"Bot thai ar nocht, withouten wer,
Half-deill añe dyner till vs here!" 188
The lordis [had] of this tithyng
[Fol. 108. C.] [Gret Ioy, and gret] reconfortyng;
And gert men throu the cite cry,
That all suld arm̃e thame hastely. 192

The English and Irish advance.

Quhen thai war armyt and purvayit,
And for to ficht all haill arayit,
Than went thai furth in gude aray;
Soyn with thair fayis assemblit thai, 196
[That] kepit thame richt hardely.

A great battle ensues.

The stour begouth thair cruelly;
For athir [part] set all thair mycht
Till rusche thair fayis in the ficht; 200

178. *him*] them H; in E.
179. *till*] to.
182. *forouten hoyne*] with-outyn hone EH.
184. *wes*] wer.
185. *semyt*] *so* E; *miswritten* semy C.
186. *full*] right H; E *om.*
188. *ane*] a EH.
189. [*had* EH] herd C.
190. [*Gret—gret* E] Great ioy, and great H; And had gret Ioy, and C.
194. *to*] the EH.
195. *Than—thai*] Thai went thaim.
196. *Soyn*] Sone E; Syne H.
197. [*That* EH] And C.
198. *begouth*] *so* CE; began H.
199. [*part* E] party H]; parteis C.
200. *Till*] To EH.

And with all mycht on other dang.
The stalward stour lestit weill lang,
That men mycht [nocht] persaue, no se,
Quha mast at thar abovin mycht be. 204
For fra soyn eft*ir* the sōñe-rysyng,
Quhill eft*ir* mydmorñe, the fichting
Lestit, in-till sic añe dout;
[Bot] than schir eduard, that wes stout, 208
With all thamē of his Cumpany,
Schot [apon] thame so sturdely,
That thai mycht thole no mar the ficht.
All in a frusche thai tuk the flicht; 212
And thai followit full egirly.
In-to the toune all comonly
They ent*er*it [bath] Intermelle.
Thair mycht men fellouñe slaucht*ir* se; 216
For the richt nobil Erll thomas,
That with his rout followit the chas,
Maid sic a slauchtir in the touñe,
And swa fellouñe occisiouñe, 220
That the rewis all bludy war
Of slayne men that war liand thar.
The lordis war gottin all avay
And quhen the toune, as I ȝow say, 224 [Fol. 48. E.]
Wes throu gret forß of fechting tañe,
And all thair fayis fled or slañe,
Thai herbryit thame all in the touñe,
Quhar of vittale was sic fusiouñe, 228
And swa gret aboundanß of vyñe,
That the gud erll had gret dowtyñe

The battle is doubtful from sunrise to noon.

At last the Scotch prevail.

Both hosts enter the town.

Thomas Murray slays many in the town.

The streets are all bloody.

The town is taken.

The Scotch find plenty to eat and drink.

201. *mycht*] paine H.
203. [*nocht* E] not H; C *om.* *no*] na E; nor H.
204. *at—mycht*] that thar abowe suld E; there at abone sould H.
207. *sic ane*] sik a H; swilk a E.
208. [*Bot* E] But H; That C.
210. [*apon* E] vpon H; on C.
214. *In-to*] In. *all comonly*] commonaly.
215. [*bath* E] baith H; bot C.
216. *mycht men*] men mycht EH.
219. *sic*] swilk.
228. *fusioune*] fusoun.
229. *aboundanss*] haboundance. *vyne*] wyne EH.
230. *gret*] E *om.*

[Fol. 108 b. C.] That of thair men suld dronken be,
And mak in drunkynneß sum melle. 232

The wine is portioned out.

Tharfor he maid of vyne lufre
Till ilk man, that he payit suld be;
And thai had all yneuch, perfay.

The Scotch are at ease.

That nycht rycht weill at eiß war thai, 236
And richt blith of the gret honour
That thame befell for thair valour.

They stay 3 days in Dundalk; then ride southwards,

Eftir this ficht thai soiornyt thair
In-to dundawk, thre dais & mar; 240
Syne tuk thai southwardis thar way.
The Erll thomas wes forrouth ay,
And as thai raid throu the cuntre,
Thai mycht apon the hillis se 244
Sa mony men, it wes ferly.
And quhen the erll wald sturdely
Dresß him to thame with his baner,
Thai wald fle, all that euir thai wer, 248
Swa that in ficht nocht añe abaid.
And thai southwardis thair wais raid,

till they come to a forest they called Kilross.

[Quhill] till a gret forest coṁe thai;
Kilroß it hat, as I herd say; 252
And thai tuk all thair herbry thair.

Sir Richard of Clare raises 5 squadrons,

In all this tyme richard of clare,
That wes the kyngis luf-tenand,
Of all the Barnage of Irland 256
A gret hoost he assemblit had;

233. *vyne*] wyne EH. *lufre*] levere E; Lewerie H.

239. *Rubric in* H—The third battell in Ireland, That good Sir Edward tooke on hand.

240. *dundawk*] dundalk E; Dondalk H. *&*] or H; but E.

241. *thar*] on thar C; *but* EH *omit* on.

242. Erle Thomas rade before them ay H.

248. *fle*] E *om.* *euir*] E *om.*

249. *ficht*] fight H; sycht E.

250. *southwardis*] southwart E; foorth on H.

251. [*Quhill* E] While H; Quhar C.

252. *Kilross*] Kylrose E; Kylros H. *I*] Ik.

256. *all—Barnage*] *so* H; the barnagis E.

Thai war v battellis, gret and braid,
That soucht schir Eduard and his men; — to attack Sir Edward,
Weill neir him war thai cummyn then. 260
He gat soyne vittyng that thai weir — who soon hears of their approach,
Cumand on him, and war so neir.
His men adressit he thame agañe,
And gert thame stoutly tak the plañe; 264
And syne the erll thar come to se,
And schir philip the mowbra send he, — and sends forward Mowbray and Stewart,
And schir Iohñe steward went alsua;
Furth till discouir, thair way [thai] ta. 268
Thai saw the host cum soyne at hand;
Thai war, to geſ, fiffty thousand.
Haym to schir Eduard raid thai then, — who report the enemy to number 50,000.
And said weill, thai war mony men. 272
He said agañe, "the ma thai be,
The mair honour allout haue we, — [Fol. 109. C.]
Gif that we beir ws manfully.
We are set heir In Iuperdy, 276 — Sir Edward Bruce addresses his host.
Till vyn honour, or for till de;
We ar fra hayme to fer to fle;
Tharfor let ilk man worthy be.
ȝoñe ar gadering of the Cuntre, 280
And thai sall fle, I trow, lichtly
And men assail [thaim] manfully."
All said thai than, "thai weill suld do."

261. *vittyng*] witting H; wittring E.
262. In haill battell comming neere H.
263. *adressit he*] addressed he H; he dressyt E.
264. *tak*] ta.
265. *thar*] thaim E. *thar come*] came them H.
266. *send*] *so* CE; sent H.
268. *till*] to EH. *thair*] ther E; the H. *thai ta*] they ta H; to ta C; ta thai E.
269. *cum soyne*] sone cum E; neere come H.
271. *to*] till.
275. *manfully*] manlyly.
277. *Till*] To. *vyn*] wyn EH. *till*] to.
278. *fra—fer*] to fer fra hame E; too far fra hame H.
280. *ar*] *so* E; ar but C; are but H; *which clogs the line. gadering*] gadryng*is* E; gaddered H. *the*] this EH.
282. [*thaim* E] them H; C *om.* *manfully*] manlyly.
283. *thai than*] than that.

The 10,000 Scotch attack their enemies.

With that approchand neir thame to 284
The Battellis come, reddy to ficht.
And thai met thame with mekill mycht,
That war ten thousand worthy men.
The scottis all on fut war then, 288
And thai on stedis trappit weill,
Sum helyt [all] in Irne and steill.

The Scotch, though on foot, prevail against the Irish on horseback.

Bot scottis men, at thair metyng,
With speris perssit thar armyng, 292
And stekit horß, and men doune bar.
Ane felloune fechting wes [than] thair;
I can nocht tell thair strak*is* all,
Na quha in ficht gert othir fall; 296
Bot in schort tyme, I vndirta,
Thai of Irland war cu*m*myrrit swa
That thai durst nane abyde no mar,

The Irish flee in disorder.

Bot fled scalit, all that thai war, 300
And levit in the battell-stede
Weill mony of thar gud men ded.

The field was strewed with dead men and armour.

Of wapnys, armyng, and ded men
The feld wes haly strewit then. 304
That gret hoost roydly ruschit weß;
Bot *schir* eduard leit no man chaß;
Bot with presoners that thai had tane
Thai till the wod agane ar gane, 308
Quhar that thair harneß levit wer.

The Scotch make good cheer.

That nycht thai maid thame mery cher,
And lovit god fast of his grace.
This gud knycht, that so vorthy was, 312
[Fol. 109 b. C.] Till Iudas, machabeus that hicht,

288. *scottis*] scottis men.
290. [*all* EH] thame C.
294. *Ane*] A. *fechting*] slaughter H. [*than* E] then H; thar C.
297. *I*] Ik.
298. *cummyrrit*] cumbred H; contraryit E.
299. *nane*] than E; them H.
300. *that—war*] here and there H.
303. *and*] and of E.
305. *roydly*] rudly E; rudely H.
310. *thame mery*] *so* H; thair men gud E.
312. *This*] The EH.
313. *that hicht*] mycht E; might H.

Micht liknyt weill be in that ficht.
Na multitud he forsuk of men,
Quhill he hade ane aganis teñ. 316

Edward Bruce is likened to Judas Maccabeus.

Thus, as I said, richard of clare
And his gret hoost rebutit war.
Bot he about him, nocht-for-thi,
Wes gaderand men ay ythandly, 320 [Fol. 48 b. E.]
For he thoucht ȝeit to cowir his cast.
It angerit him richt ferly fast,
That twiß in-to battell was he
Discumfit with añe few menȝhe. 324
And scottis men, that in the forest
War ryddin, for till tak thair rest,
All thai twa nychtis thair thai lay,
And maid thame myrth, solace, and play. 328
Toward odymsy syne thai rayde,
Añe erische kyng, that ayth had mayd
Till schir Eduarde of fewte;
For forrouth that him prayit he 332
To se his land, and na vittale,
[Na nocht] that mycht him help, suld fale.
Schir Eduard trowit in his hicht,
And with his rout raid thiddir richt. 336
A gret revar he gert hym paß;
And in a richt fair place, that was

Sir Richard of Clare

thinks to fight again.

The Scotch rest for 2 nights;

then ride to meet O'Dymsy, an Irish king who had vowed fealty to Bruce.

314. Be lyknyt weill that in-to fycht EH; (*miswritten* in-to that fycht E).
315. *Na—he*] Forsuk na multitud EH.
317. *Rubric in* H—How an Irish king, false and froward, Leete out a Loch vpon Sir Edward.
320. *ythandly*] ythenly E; ithandly H.
321. *cowir*] recouer H.
323. *in-to*] in-till.
324. *ane*] A.
325. *in*] to EH.
326. *till tak*] to mak.
329. *odymsy*] ydymsy E; Endrossy H.
330. *erische*] irsche E; Irish H.
331. *Till*] To EH. *of*] of his H.
332. *forrouth that*] before that time H.
334. [*Na nocht* E] Nor not H; C *om.* *him*] thaim. *that—him*] that they might helpe H. *fale*] nocht fale C; *but* EH *om.* nocht *here.*
337. *revar*] rywer E; Riuer H.

O'Dymsy makes the Scotch cross a river,

Lawch by a brym, he gert thame ta
Thair herbry, and said, he vald ga 340
To ger men vittale to thame bring.

and encamp in a low place.

He held his vay but mair duelling;
For till betraiß thame wes his thoucht.
In sic añe place he has thame broucht, 344
Quhar of Iourneis weill twa & mair

He removes all the cattle in the neighbourhood.

All the cattell withdrawin war;
Swa that thai in that land mycht get
No thing that worth war for to et. 348
With hungyr he thoucht thame to Febliß,
Syne bring on thame thair enymyß.
This fals tratour his men had maid,
A litell owth quhar [he] herbryit hade 352

He then lets out a loch,

Schir eduard and the scottis men,
The ysche of a louch to den;

in order to flood their camp.

And leit it out in-to the nycht.
The vattir than with sic a mycht 356

[Fol. 110. C.]

On schir Edward*is* men come douñe,

The Scotch are soon all afloat.

That thai in perell war till drouñe;
For, or thar wist, on flot war thai.
With mekill payñe thai gat avay, 360
And held thar livis, [as] god gaf graß;
Bot of thair harneß tynt ther was.

O'Dymsy gave them nothing to eat, but they had plenty of water to drink.

He maid thame na gude fest, perfay,
And nocht-for-thi yneuch had thai. 364
For thouch thame falit of the met,
I warne ȝow weill, thai war weill wet.
In gret distreß thair war thai stad,

339. *Lawch*] Laigh H. *brym*] bourne E; Burne H.
343. *till*] to EH.
344. *ane*] A.
345. *Quhar—twa*] Quhar of twa Iournais wele E; Wherefra twa iourneyes well H.
351. *tratour his*] traytour*is* E; Traitours H.
352. *owth*] South H; E *om.* [*he* EH] thai C.
354. *ysche*] ischow E; Ishe H. *den*] *so* E; dem H.
356. *vattir*] watre. *sic*] swilk.
358. *till*] to EH.
360. *avay*] away.
361. *livis*] lyff. [*as* EH] and C.
365. *thame falit*] they wanted H.

For gret defalt of mete thai had; 368
For thai betuix thai riveris tway
War set, and mycht paß nañe of thai.
The bane, that is añe Arm̃e of se,
That with horß may nocht passit be, 372
Wes betuix thame and wllister.
Thai had beyn in grett perell ther,
Ne war añe scu*m*mar of the se,
Thomas of dwn hattyn weß he, 376
Herd that the host so stratly than
Wes stad, and [salyt] up the ban,
Quhill he com weill neir quhar thai lay.
Thai knew him weill, and blith war thai. 380
Than, with four schippes that he had tane,
He set thame our the ban ilkane.
And quhen thai come in biggit land,
Wittale and mete yneuch thai fand; 384
And in a wode thame herbryit thai.
Nane of the land wist quhar thai lay;
Thai esyt tham̃e, and maid gud cher.
In-till that tyme, besyde tham̃e ner, 388
With a gret host, richarde of clar,
And othir gret of Irlande, war
Herbryit in-till a forest syde.
And ilke day thai gert men ryde 392
To bring wittalis, on ser maner*is*,
Till thame fra the toune of Coigner*is*,
That weill ten gret myle wes thai*m* fra.
Ilk day, as thai wald cum and ga, 396

A river is between them and Ulster.

One Thomas of Down sails towards them,

and, with 4 ships, carries them over the river.

None of the Irish know where the Scotch are.

The Irish host send out foragers to a town called Conyers.

368. *defalt*] defaut.
369. *For*] And EH. *thai* (2)] great H; E *om.*
371. *of*] of the EH.
373. *wllister*] Wlsistar H; hulsyster E.
375. *Ne war*] Were not H. *ane*] a H; E *om.* *scummar*] scummer H; scowmar E.
376. *dwn*] downe E; Dun H.
378. [*salyt* E] sailed H; sovit *or* sobit C.
382. *thame*] E *om.*
389. *richarde*] schyr rychard.
391. *in-till*] into H; in E.
393. *wittalis*] wittaill E; vittailes H.
394. *Till*] To EH. *Coigneris*] Cogners H.

[Fol. 110 b. C.] Thai cõme the scottis host so ner,
That bot twa myle betuix thai*m* wer.
And quhen erll thomas had persaving
Of thair come and thair gad*er*yng, 400

Thomas Murray takes 300 men,

He gat him a gud Cumpany,
Thre hundreth on horß wicht and hardy.
Thar wes schir philip the mowbray,
And schir Iohne stewart als, perfay, 404
With schir alane stewart alsua,
Schir gilbert boyde and other ma.

and sets an ambush for the foragers;

Thai raid till meit the vittelleris,
That with ther wittale fra coigneris 408
Com, haldand to the host the way.
So suddanly on thame schot thai,
That thai war sa abaysit all,

whom they surprise and take prisoners.

That thai leit all thair vapnys fall, 412
And mercy pitwysly can cry.
And thai tuk thame in thair mercy,
[Fol. 49. E.] And has thame up so [clenly] tane,
That of thame all eschapit nañe. 416

Murray learns that some of the Irish will come to meet the foragers,

The Erll of thamẽ [gat wittering]
That of thair host, in the evynnyng,
Wald cum out, at the woddis syde,
And aganis thair wittale ryde. 420
He thoucht than on a Iuperdy;

and dresses his men in the prisoners' armour.

And gert his menȝhe halely
Dicht thame in the presoners aray;

397. *the*] the E; *printed* to the J.
399. *Rubric in* H—How Sir Thomas of Randell, Wan fra the Irishmen their vittell. *erll*] the erle. *had*] EH *om.*
400. *Of*] Had off EH. *come*] *so* H; cummyng E. *gaderyng*] ganging EH.
402. *hundreth*] hunder E.
405. *With*] And EH.
406. *gilbert*] robert EH.
407. *till*] to EH.
408. *coigneris*] Cogners H; *see* l. 394.
413. *pitwysly*] petously. *can*] gan.
415. [*clenly* E] cleenely H; cleirly C.
417. *of*] through H. [*gat wittering* EH] he had vittyng C.
419. Some wald come out of the Wood side H.
421. *a*] ane.
422. *menȝhe*] men all H.
423. *the*] H *om.*

Thair pennownys als with thame tuk thai. 424
And quhill the nycht wes neir, thai baid,
And syne toward the host thai raid.
Sum of thair mekill host has seyne
Thair come, and wende weill thai had beyñe 428
Thair vittelouris; tharfor thai raid
Agane thame scalit, for thai hade
Na dreid that thai thair fayis wer;
And thame hungerit alsua weill sair. 432
Tharfor thai come abandonly;
And, quhen thai neir war, in gret hy
The Erll, and all that with him war,
Ruschit on thame with wapnys bar, 436
And thair ensenȝeis hye can cry;
And thai, that saw so sudandly
Thair fayis dyng on thamẽ, wes rad,
That thai no hert till help thame had; 440
Bot [to] thar host the vay can ta;
And thai chasit, and feill can sla,
That all the feldis strowit war;
Ma than añe thowsand ded wes thar. 444
Richt to thar hoost thai can thame chass,
And syne agane thair wayis tais.

The Irish are deceived, and advance without suspicion.

The Irish are frightened, [Fol. 111. C.] and flee;

and lose 1000 men.

ON this wiss wes the wittal tañe,
And of the erysche men mony slañe. 448
The Erll syne, with his Cumpany,
Presoners and wittalis halely
Haß brocht till Schir Eduard als swith;

The Earl of Murray presents his prisoners to Edward Bruce.

424. *pennownys*] Prisoners (*sic*) H.
428. *weill*] E *om.*
430. *scalit*] safely H.
432. And als they hungred very saire H.
437. *hye can*] hey gan.
438. *And*] Than. *so*] sua.
439. *wes*] were H; wad sa (*sic*) E.
441. [*to* EH] C *om.* *host*] ost E; Wood H. *the*] thar EH. *can*] gan E; they H.
442. *feill*] sua fele E; so feill H. *can*] gan.
443. *strowit*] ouerstrowed H.
444. *Ma*] *so* EH; May C. *wes*] war.
445. *to*] till. *can*] gan.
446. *tais*] gaes H.
448. *erysche*] Irche E; Irish H.
451. *Hass*] Thai E; They H. *als swith*] alswith.

And he wes of thair cummyng blith. 452
That nycht thai maid thame merye cher;
Richt all than at thair eiß thai wer.
Thai war all wachit sekyrly,

The Irish determine to go to Conyers,

And thair fais, on the tothir party, 456
Quhen thai herd how thar men waß slañe,
And how thar wittal all wes tane,
Thai tuk to consell at thai wald
Thair wayis towart coigneris hald, 460
And herbry in the cite ta.

and do so.

And in gret hye thai haue doñe swa;
And raid on nycht to the cite.
Thai fand thair wittale of gret plente, 464
And maid thame merely gud cher;
For all trast in the toune thai wer.

The Irish send out scouts, but they are taken.

Apon the morn thai [send] to spy,
Quhar scottis men had tane herbery. 468
Bot thai war met with all, and tane,
And brocht richt till the hoost agane.

Murray gets information from a prisoner,

The Erll of Murreff richt mekly
Sperit at añe of [thar] Cumpany, 472
Quhar thar host wes, and quhat thai thoucht
Till do; and said him, "giff he moucht
Fynd that till hym the suth said he,
He suld gang hame but ransouñe fre." 476

who says,

"Forsuth," he said, "I sall ȝhow say.

454. *Richt—than*] For rycht all E; For they euen H.
455. *all wachit*] ay walkyt E; all watched ay H.
457. *wass*] war E; were H.
458. *all*] als EH.
459. *to*] their H. *at*] that EH.
460. *coigneris*] Cogneres H.
462. *in*] than in.
463. *on*] be E; by H.
464. *wittale of*] of wictal E; vittaile H.
465. *merely gud*] rycht mery E; merie and good H.
466. *trast*] traist EH.
467. [*send* E] sent H; set C. *Cf.* l. 266.
469. *met*] E *om.* *all and*] and all H; all als E.
470. *agane*] ilkane EH.
471. *Murreff*] Murray H.
472. *Sperit*] He sperit C; *but* EH *omit* He. [*thar* E] their H; his C.
473. *wes*] lay H.
474. *Till*] To EH. *him giff*] gif that H.
477. *Forsuth—said*] He said forsuth EH.

Thai thynk, the morn, quhen it is day,
To seik ȝow with all thair menȝhe,
Giff thai may get wit quhar ȝhe be. 480
Thai haf gert throu the cuntre cry,
[On] payne of liff full felonly,
That all the men of [this] Cuntre
This nycht in-to the Cite be. 484

that all the men of the country are being collected in the town.
[Fol. 111 b. C.]

And trewly thai sall be so feill,
That ȝe sall no wiß with thame deill."
"De pardew," said he, "weill may be!"
To schir Eduard with that ȝeid he, 488
And tald hym wtrely this taill.
Than [haf thai tane] for consell haill,
That thai [wald] ryde to the cite
That ilk nycht, swa that thai mycht be 492
Betuix the toune, with all thar rout,
And thame that war the toune vithout.
As thai deuisit, swa haue thai doñe;
Befor the toune thai come alsoyñe, 496
And but half deill a myle of way
Fra the cite thar rest tuk thai.
And quhen the day wes dawin licht,
Fifty on hobynis, that war wicht, 500
Com till a litill hill, that wes
Bot fra the toune a litill spaß,
And saw schir Eduardis herbery;
And of the sicht had gret ferly, 504
That sa quheyn durst on ony wiß

The Scotch resolve to encamp near the town.

Fifty Irish scouts perceive the Scotch,

and wonder at their boldness

478. *the*] to.
482. [*On* H] Off E; Vndir C.
483. [*this* EH] his C.
484. *This*] To E; The H. *nycht*] morne (*wrongly*) H.
487. *Rubric in* H—How Thomas Randell chased hame, The Scurreours that fra Cogners came.
489. *wtrely*] vtterly H.
490. [*haf* E] haue H; as C. [*thai tane* EH] thai com C.
491. [*wald* E] will CH.
492. *ilk*] same H. *mycht*] may H.
494. *the toune*] *so* H; to cum E.
495. *swa*] so H; E *om.* *haue thai*] thai haf.
497. *half deill*] halfindall.
498. *cite*] toun H. *thar*] a EH.
499. *dawin*] dawyn E; dawning H.
505. *quheyn*] quhone E; wheene H. *durst*] H *om.* *on*] vpon H; E *om.*

Wndertak sa hye Empriß,
As for till Cum sa hardely
Apon all the [gret] cheuelry 508
Of yrland, for till byde battale.
And swa it wes, forouten fale;
since they had against them Richard of Clare, Desmond, Butler, and so many others.
For agane thame war gaderit thair
With the wardane, Richard of clar, 512
The butler, with [the] Erllis twa,
[Of] Desmwnd and [kildar] war tha,
Brwman, wardwn, and syr waryn,
And schir pascalle, [a] florentyn, 516
That wes añe knycht of lumbardy,
[Fol. 49 b. E.] And wes full of gret cheuelry.
The mawndwil*is* [war] thar alsua,
Besatis, loganys, and othir ma; 520
Sawagis als; and ȝeit wes añe,
Hat schir nycholl of kyllvanane.
And with thir lordis so feill wes then,
There were 5 Irish for 1 Scot.
That, for añe of the scottis men, 524
[Fol. 112. C.] I trow that thai war fiff or ma.
Quhen thair discurrowr*is* seyñe haß swa
The scottis host, thai went in hy,
And tald thair lordis all opynly, 528
How thai till thame war cu*m*mand ner;

506. *Wndertak*] Durst vndertake H.
507. *till*] to EH.
508. [*gret*] great H; CE *om.*; *it seems required. Cf.* l. 518.
509. *till*] to EH.
510. *forouten*] with-owtyn.
513. *butler*] Butlers H. *with*] and EH. [*the* H] CE *om.*
514. [*Of* H] Off E; C *om.* *Desmwnd*] Desmownd E; Delmound H; Dosmwnd C. [*kildar* EH] gildar C. *war tha*] alswa H.
515. *Brwman*] Brynrame E; Brunhame H. *wardwn*] wedoune EH. *syr*] *so* CH; fyȝe E. *See* l. 143.
516. *pascalle*] paschall E; Plastayne H. [*a* H] of CE.
517. *ane*] A.
518. *gret*] E *om.*
519. *The*] And H. *mawndwilis*] mawndweill*is* E; Maundewell H. [*war* E] was CH.
520. *Besatis*] Bissatris H. *loganys*] Loganes H. *See* l. 47
521. *Sawagis*] The Sauages H.
522. *Hat*] That heght H. *nycholl*] Michell H. *kyllvanane*] kylkenane E; Kylcalane H.
525. *ma* EH] may C.
526. *discurrowris*] Discurreours H. *hass*] hes H; had E.
528. *all*] EH *om.*
529. *till*] to EH. *cummand*] comming H; cummyn E.

To seik thame fer wes na myster.
And quhen the Erll thomaß had seyñe
That thai men at the hill had beyñe, 532
He tuk with him a gude menȝhe,
On horß añe hundreth thai mycht be,
And till the hill thai tuk the way.
In a slak thame enbuschit thai; 536
And, in schort tyme, fra the Cite
Thai saw cum rydand a menȝhe,
For till discowir, to the hill.
Than war thai blith, and held thamẽ still 540
Quhill thai war cu*m*myn to thame ner;
Than in a frusche, all that thar wer,
Thai schot apon thamẽ hardely.
And thai, that saw so suddandly 544
Thai folk cum on, abaysit war;
And nocht-for-thi, sum of thame thar
Abaid stoutly, to mak debat;
And othir sum ar fled thar gat. 548
And in-to weill schort tyme [war] thai,
That maid [arest], cu*m*rayit swa,
That thai fled halely thair gat;
And thai thame chassit richt to the ȝate, 552
And a gret part of thame haß slañe,
And syne went till thar host agane. 554

No need to seek the Scotch.

Murray and 100 horsemen lie in ambush.

They keep quiet and at last surprise some of the Irish,

who partly flee, and partly resist;

but even those who resist take to flight at last.

534. *hundreth*] hund*er*.
538. *rydand*] *so* E; rydande C.
539. *discowir*] discouer H; discur E.
541. *cummyn* E] commen H; *miswritten* cu*m*myne C.
542. *frusche*] rush H. *thar*] thai E; they H.
545. *Thai*] Tha H; That E
547. *mak*] make H; ma E.
549. [*war* E] were H; ar C.
550. [*arest* EH] *th*ar rest C. *cumrayit*] *miswritten* cumrayd C; contraryit E; disrayed H.
552. *richt*] H *om.*

[BOOK XV.]

When those within the town see their men slain,

Qwhen thai within haß seyn swa slañe
Thair men, and chassit ham agane,
Thai war all wa, and in gret hy
Till Armys hely can thai cry. 4
Thai armyt thame, all at thar war,
And for the battale maid thame ȝar.

they make a sally.

Thai yschit out, all weill arayit,
In battale with baner*is* displayit, 8
Bowne on thar best wiß, till assale
Thair fais in-to fell battale.

Sir Philip de Mowbray advises Edward Bruce.

And quhen schir philip the mowbray
Saw thame ysche in sa gud aray, 12
Till schir eduard the bryß went he,
And said, "s*chir*, it is gude that we

[Fol. 112 b. C.]

Schape for sum slicht, that may availl
Till help ws in this gret battaill. 16
Our men ar quheyn, bot thai haf will
Till do mair than thai may fullfill.

Sir Philip's plan.

Tharfor I rede, our caryage,
Forouten ony man or page, 20
By thame-selwyne arayit be;

1. *Rubric in* H—The feird battell in Ireland, That Sir Edward wan with strang hand.
3. *wa* EH] way C.
4. *Till*] To H. *can*] gan.
5. *Thai*] Than. *at*] that.
8. In-to the bataill baner displayit E; In haill battell with Baner displayed H.
10. *fell*] *so* CH; fele E.
12. *in* EH] in-to C.
16. *in—gret*] *so* CH; in-to this E.
17. *quheyn*] quhoyne E; good H.
18. *Till*] To EH.

And thai sall seyme fer ma than we.
Set we befor thame our baneris;
ȝon folk that cummys out of Coigneris, 24
Quhen thai our baneris thair may se,
Sall trow trastly that thair ar we,
And thidder in gret hy [sall] ryde.
Cum we than on thame at a syde, 28
And we sall be at avantage;
For, fra thai in our Caryage
Be enterit, thai sall cummyrrit be;
[And] than with all our mycht may we 32
Lay on, and do all that we may."

"Let us set up our banners before the baggage, whilst we lay wait for them."

And as he ordanit, done haf thai.
And thai that com out of Coigneris
Adressit thame to the Baneris; 36
And smat with spures the horß in hy,
Ruschand emang thame sodanly.
The Barell-feris that war thar
Cumrayd thame fast that rydand war. 40
And than the Erll, with his battale,
Com on, and sadly can assale.
And Schir Eduard, a litill by,
Assemblit swa richt hardely, 44
That mony fey fell vnder feit;
The felde wox soyñe of blud all weit.
With so gret felony thar thai faucht,
And sic rowtis till othir raucht 48
With stok, with stane, and with retrete,

His plan is adopted. The assailants attack Sir Edward's baggage. The Scotch issue from their ambush. A fierce battle ensues.

24. *Coigneris*] *so* CE; Cogners H.
26. *trow*] trew.
27. [*sall* EH] will C. *ryde*] thai rid.
31. *cummyrrit*] combryt E; cumbred H.
32. [*And* EH] C *om.*
34. *And*] All.
37. *smat—horss*] strooke the horse with spurres H.
38. *Ruschand*] And ruschyt E; And rushed H. *emang*] amang H; E *om.* *sodanly*] all sodanly C; *but* EH *om.* all.
39. *feris*] ferraris E; ferrars H.
40. *Cumrayd*] Cumbryt E; Cumbred H.
42. *can*] gan.
44. *swa—hardely*] with his company H.
45. *fey*] a fey EH.
49, 50. H *omit.* *can*] gan.

As athir part can othir bet,
[That] it wes hydwiß for to se
How thai mantemyt that gret melle 52
So knychtlik apon athir syde,
Giffand and takand voundis vyde,

It was past prime, before either side got any advantage.

That pryme wes passit, or men mycht se
Quha mast [at] thair abovin mycht be. 56
Bot soyne eft*ir* that pryme wes past,
The scottis men dang on so fast,
And schot on thame at abandoune,

[Fol. 113. C.]

As ilk man war A campioun, 60

At last the Scotch prevail.

That all thar fayis tuk the flicht;
Wes nane of thame that wes so wicht,
That eu*ir* durst abyde his fere;

[Fol. 50. E.]

Bot ilkane fled thair wayis sere. 64
Till the toune fled the mast party.

Earl Thomas chases the flying army into the town.

The Erll thomas sa ynkirly,
And his rout, chassit with swerd*is* bar,
That all emang thame mellit war, 68
[And] all to-gidder come in the touñe.
Than wes the slauchter so fellouñe,

Many are killed in the streets.

That all the rewys ran of blude.
Thame that thai gat, to dede all ȝude, 72
Swa that [than thar] weill neir wes ded
Als feill as in the battell-sted.

Fitzwarine is taken.

The fiȝwaryne wes taken thar;

51. [*That* EH] Than C.
52. *How*] E *om.*
53. *So—apon*] Sa keenely they faught on H.
54. *voundis vyde*] rowtis roid E; routes red H.
56. [*at* E] that C. *Quha—thair*] What part soonest H. *abovin*] abone H; abow E.
60. *campioun* E] Campeoune C; Scorpioun (!) H.
63. *euir*] ewyr.
64. *ilkane*] ilk man EH.
65. *Till*] To EH.
66. *The*] And. *ynkirly*] egrely E; egerly H.
68. *emang*] amang.
69. [*And* H] Bot C; That E.
71. *rewys*] ruys E; rewes H.
72. *all*] he H. *ȝude*] ȝhud E; yoode H.
73. [*than thar* E] thair wer C. *wes*] wer. H *has*—So that there were als feill dead.
74. *Als feill*] Well neere H.
75. *fiȝwaryne*] syve warine *or* fyve warine E; Swaryne H.

Bot so rad wes Richard of clar, 76 **Sir Richard of Clare escapes.**
That he held to the sowth cuntre.
All that moneth I trow that he
Sall haf no gret will for to ficht.
Schir Iohne steward, añe nobill knyc*h*t, 80 **Sir John Stewart is severely wounded.**
Wes voundit throu the body thair
With a sper that richt scharply schair.
To the mont-peler*is* went he syne,
And lay thair lang in-to helyne, 84
And at the last helit wes he.
Schir Eduard than, with his menȝe, **Edward Bruce encamps within the town.**
Tuk in the toune thair herbery.
That nycht thai blith war and Ioly 88
For the victory that thai had thar.
And on the morn, forouten mar,
Schir Eduard gert men gang and se
All the vitalis of that Cite. 92 **He finds in it a great quantity of provisions,**
And thai fand sic fusioune thar-in
Of corn [and] flour [and] wax and vyne,
That thai had of It gret ferly;
And schir Eduard gert halely 96 **which he sends to Carrickfergus.**
[To] cragferguss [it] cartit be.
Syne thidder went his men and he,
And helde the sege full stalwardly **A truce is made, to last till Easter Tuesday.**
Quhill palmesonday wes passit by. 100
[Than] quhill the tysday in pask-owk,
On athir half thai trowis tuk; **[Fol. 113 *b*. C.]**

76. *so*] swa. *rad*] feared H. *wes*] wes schir C; *but* EH *omit* schir.
77. *held*] *so* CH; fled E.
79. *gret*] gud.
80. *ane*] A.
82. *richt*] E *om.*
83. *To the*] Bot to E; But to H. *mont-peleris*] monpeller E; Mount Peller H.
84. *in-to*] in-till. *helyne*] Leeching H.
89. *victory*] victour.
92. *vitalis*] wictaill E; vittaile H.
93. *fusioune*] foysoun.
94. [*and* EH] C *om.* (*twice*).
97. [*To* H] In-to C; In-till E. [*it* H] CE *om.* *cartit*] caryit E; caried H.
101. [*Than* E] Then H; And C. *tysday*] twysday E; Tuesday H. *pask-owk*] payss wouk E; Pasche Oulk H.
102. *half*] side H. *trowis*] trewys E; trewes H.

So that thai mycht that haly tyd
In pennance and in prayer byd. 104

But on Easter Eve 15 ships arrive from Dublin,

Bot apon paske evin all richt
To the castell, in-till the nycht,
Fra devilling come schippis xv,
Chargit with armyt men bedeyne; 108

with 4000 recruits to guard the castle,

Four thousand, trow I weill, thai war:
In the castell thai enterit thair.

and Sir Thomas Mandeville at their head.

The mawndwell, ald schir thomas,
Capitane of that menȝhe he waß. 112
In the castell all preualy
Thai enterit, for that thai gert spy
That mony of schir eduardis men
War scalit in the cuntre then. 116

Mandeville hopes to surprise Sir Edward.

Tharfor thai thoucht in the mornyng
Till ysche, but langer delaying,
And till supprißthame suddanely;
For thai thoucht thai suld trastly [ly], 120
For the trewis that taken war.

But such treachery always fails.

Bot I trow falsat euirmar
Sall haue vnfair and euill ending.
Schir Eduard wist of this na thing, 124
For of tresoune had he na thoucht.
Bot for the trewis he lefit noucht
Wachis till set to the Castele;

105. *paske evin*] *the* pasche ewyn E; Pasch-Euen H. *all*] EH *om.*
106. *in-till*] in-to EH.
107. *devilling*] dewillyne E; Devilling H. *come*] come thair; *but* EH *om.* thair. *xv*] fifteene H.
108. *armyt*] armour and H. *bedeyne*] bedene E; bedeene H.
109. *Four*] Three H.
110. *thair*] ar.
111. *mawndwell*] Maundwell H; mawndweill E. *ald*] ald *or* als C; auld E; alswa and H.
112. *he*] EH *om.*
113. *In—all*] In the Castell full H; In-till the castell E.
114. *that—gert*] thai had gret (*sic*) E; they gart H.
119. *till*] to EH.
120. *thai*] that thai C; *but* EH *om.* that. [*ly* H] CE *om.*; *but it is necessary.*
122. *falsat*] falset EH.
123. *haue*] E *om.* *vnfair*] mischiefe H.
126. *trewis*] trewes H; trew E. *lefit*] lewyt E; letted H.
127. *Wachis—set*] To set wachis EH.

Ilk nycht he gert men wach it wele. 128 That night Neil Fleming, with 60 men, kept watch;
And neyll flemyng wachit that nycht
With sexty men worthy and wicht.
And als soyne as the day wox cleir,
Thai that within the castell weir 132
Had armyt thame, and made thame bouñe,
And syne the bryg avaled douñe,
And yschit in-till gret plente.
And quhen neyll flemyng can thaim se, 136 and next morning sees an army in motion,
He send añe till the kyng in hy,
Syne said to thame that war hym by,
"Now sall men se, I vndirtak,
Quha dar de for his lordis sak! 140 and prepares to check their advance.
Now beir ȝow weill, for sekirly
With all thir menȝe fecht will I.
In-till bargañe thamẽ hald sall we, [Fol. 114. C.]
Quhill that our mastir armyt be." 144
And with that vorde assemblit thai;
Thai war [to] few all out, perfay, He and his men fight with great courage,
With sic a gret rout for to ficht.
Bot nocht-for-thi, with al thar mycht, 148
Thai dang on thame so hardely,
That [all] thair fayis had gret ferly,
That thai war all of sic manheid
That thai no dreid had of thar dede. 152
Bot thar fell fayis sa can assaill, but are all slain.
That thar mycht no worschip availl,

128. *men—it*] wake it full H. *wach*] walk E; wake H.
129. *neyll*] nele.
131. *wox*] wes E; was H.
134. *syne*] *so* CH; sone E. *the—avaled*] thar brig awalit E; the drawbrig they let H.
136. *neyll*] nele. *can thaim*] thaim can C; gan thaim E; can them H.
137. *till*] to EH.
138. *Syne*] *so* CH; And E.
139. *I*] Ik.
140. *de*] dey E; H *om.*
142. *thir*] this E; yone H.
145. *vorde*] word.
146. [*to* E] too H; till C. *to—out*] all out too few H.
150. [*all* EH] C *om.*
151. *sic*] swilk.
152. *That*] As.
153. *fell*] feill H; E *om.* *can*] gane.
154. *thar—worschip*] na worschip thar mycht.

That thai ne war slayn eu*ir*ilkane
So cleyn, that thar eschapit nane. 156

How the kyng of Irland callit eduard com apon the scottis men.

However, his messenger reached king Edward,

And the man that went till the kyng
For till warn hym of thair ysching,
Warnit him in-till full gret hy.
Schir Eduard, that wes comonly 160
Callit the kyng of Irland,

who called his men to arms.

Quhen that he herd sic hy on hand,
In full gret hast he gat his ger.
Tuelf wicht men in his chalm*er* wer 164
That Armyt thame in full gret hy.
Syne with his baneris hardely
[The] myddis of the toune he tais,

[Fol. 50 b. E.]

With that neir cu*m*mand war his fais, 168
That had delt all thar men in thre.

As Mandeville is advancing,

The mawndwell, with a gret menȝe,
Richt throu the touñe his vay held douñe;
The layff on athir syde the touñe 172
Held to meit thame that fleand war;
Thai thoucht that all that thai fand thar
Suld de but ransoune eu*ir*ilkañe.
Bot othir wayis the gle is gañe; 176

Sir Edward and his men attack him fiercely.

For schir eduard, with his Baner,
And his men that I tald of ere,

155. *That*] Than E; Bot H. *ne*] EH *om.* *slayn*] slane wp E; slaine vp H.
157. *Rubric from* C. *till*] to EH.
158. *till*] to EH.
159. *in-till*] in EH.
160. *that wes*] wes E; was then H. *comonly*] commonaly.
161. *of*] of all H.
162. *Quhen that*] And quhen E; And when H. *herd*] hard E; had H. *hy*] haste H; thing E.
164. *wicht men*] with him H. *chalmer*] chawmer E; Chamber H.
166. *baneris*] baner EH.
167. [*The* EH] In C.
168. *With that*] Weill.
171. *his vay*] the way EH.
172. *layff*] lave EH.
175. *de*] dey E; die H.
178. *men*] twelff E; twelue H. *that—tald*] I tauld ȝow.

On all that rout so hardely
Assemblit, that it wes ferly. 180
For gib harpar befor him ȝeid,
That wes the douchtyest of deid
That than wes liffand of his stat,
And with añe ax maid him [sic] gat, 184
That he the first fellit to the grounde;
And eft*ir*, in a litill stounde,
The mawndwell by his armyng
He knew, and roucht him sic a swyng 188
That he till erd ȝeid hastely.
Schir Eduard, that wes neir hym by,
Reversit hym, and with a knyff
Richt in that place him reft the liff. 192
With that of Ardrossañe fergufß,
That wes añe knycht rycht curageoufß,
Assemblit with sexty and ma.
Thai pressit than thair fayis swa, 196
That thai, that saw thair lord slayñe,
Tynt hert, and wald haue beyn agañe.
And ay, as scottis men mycht be
Armyt, thai come to the melle; 200
And dang apon thai fayis swa,
That thai all hale the bak can ta,
And thai thame chassit to the ȝat;
Ther wes hard ficht and gret debat. 204
Thar slew schir Eduard with his hand
A knycht, that of all Irland

Gib Harper slays a foe with an axe;

[Fol. 114 *b*. C.]

and soon after knocks Mandeville down,

whom Sir Edward dispatches with a knife.

Sir Fergus of Ardrossan displays his valour.

More Scotchmen come up,

and at last the enemy gives way.

181. *harpar*] Harper H.
182. *of*] in.
183. *liffand*] leuand. *than—stat*] might be found of his estate H.
184. [*sic* E] sik H; C *om*.
185. *the* (2)] E *om*.
186. *eftir*] syne H; off thre (*wrongly*) E. *in*] into H.
187. *by*] be.
189. *ȝeid*] past H.
192. *him reft*] reft him. *him—the*] he reft his H.
193. *fergufs*] Sir Fergus H.
194. *ane*] A. *ane—rycht*] a wight Knight and H.
195. *sexty*] sextie men H.
198. *beyn*] bene E; bene H.
202. *hale*] E *om*. *all hale*] haillie H.
203. *thai thame*] tha men H.
204. *hard*] great H. *gret*] hard H.

Sir Edward slays Mandeville, as I said;

Wes callit best, and of mast bounte,
[To] surnamẽ mawndwell [hecht] he, 208
His propir nayme I can nocht say.
Bot his folk till so hard assay
War set, that thai of the dwngeouñe
Durst oppyn no ȝat, na bryg let douñe. 212

and pursues his foes so hard, that none escape.

And schir Eduard, I tak on hand,
Soucht thame, that fled thar to varrand,
So felly, that of all, perfay,
That yschit apon hym that day, 216
Eschapit of thaim neuir ane,
That thai ne war outhir tañe or slañe.

One Macnakill captures 4 or 5 ships.

For to the ficht maknakill then
Come with twa hundreth of gude sper-men, 220
And slow all that thai mycht to vyn.
This ilk maknakill, with a gyn,
Wan of thair schippes four or fiff,
And halely reft the men thair liff. 224

[Fol. 115. C.]

Quhen end wes maid of this fechting,
ȝeit than wes liffand neill flemyng.

After the battle, Sir Edward visits the dying Neil Fleming,

Schir Edward went him for to se
[About him slayne lay his menȝe, 228
All in A lump, on athyr hand;
And he, redy to dey, throwand.
Schir Eduuard had of him pite,]

208. [*To* EH] Of C. *mawndwell*] Maundweill E; Maundewile H. [*hecht*] heght H (*better spelt* hecht); had E; callit ves C.
209. *propir*] proper H; awne E.
210. *till*] to EH.
211. *that*] as.
212. *no*] na.
213—215. *One line in* H—Sir Edward sa then sought perfay.
213. *I*] Ik.
214. *varrand*] warand.
216. *apon*] foorth on H.
217. *Eschapit*] That ther eschapit C (*but* That ther *is not wanted*). E *has*—Thar eschapyt neuir ane (*omitting* of thaim). H *has*—That there escaped neuer ane (*also omitting* of thaim).
218. *thai ne*] thaim (*wrongly*) E. *That—ne*] Bot they H.
219. *maknakill*] Manakill H.
220. *of gude*] of H; E *om.*
221. *slow*] thai slew EH. *that*] EH *om.* *vyn*] wyn.
224. *halely*] haly.
225. *this*] that H.
226. *liffand*] life in H.
228—231. *From* EH; C *omits.*
230. *redy—dey*] to die readie H.
231. *had—him*] of him had great H.

And him full gretly menyt he, 232
And regratit his gret manhede,
And his worschip with douchty dede.
Sic mayn he maid, thai had ferly;
For he wes nocht custumabilly 236 whom he mourns for,
Wount for till meyne ony thing,
Na wald nocht heir men mak menyng.
He stude thar by quhill he wes ded,
And syne had him till haly sted, 240
And him with worschip gert he be and buries honourably.
Erdit, with gret solempnite.

How king robert bruce passit throu the tarbatis, and wan the Iles.

On this wiß yschit the mawndwele; So shall all treason fail.
Bot sekirly falsat and gyle 244
Sall eu*ir* haue añe euill ending,
As weill wes seyn by this ysching.
In tyme of trewis yschit thai, Because they attacked the
And in sic tyme as on paske day, 248 Scotch on Easter-day,
Quhen god raiß for to sauf mankyñe
Fra vem of ald ada*m*mis syñe.
Tharfor sic gret myschans thame fell,
That ilkane, as ȝe herd me tell, 252 they met with failure.
War slane vp, or than takyn [thar].
And thai that in the castell war

234. *with*] and. *And—with*] His worship and his H.
235. *mayn*] mane H. *thai had*] men had gret.
237. *till*] to EH. *meyne*] meyne men E; mene H.
239. *quhill*] while H; till E.
240. *till haly*] to hallowed H.
241. *him—he*] syne with worship gart him H.
Rubric from C. H *has*—How King Robert wan the Iles to hand, And gart his shippes saile on dry land.
243. *the mawndwele*] maundwill E; Maudewile H.
244. *falsat*] falset. H *has*—Bot wit ye well that fraud and guile.
245. *euir*] all wayis E; alwayes H.
246. *wes*] was H; is E. *by*] be.
249. *god*] Christ H. *for*] H *om.*
250. *Fra* EH] Fra *the* C. *vem*] wem E; weme H.
251. *sic*] sa EH.
253. *than*] els H; E *om.* [*thar* E] there H; war C (*but see next line*).

War set in-till sic fray that hour,

The men in the castle yield themselves to Sir Edward.

For thai couth se quhar na succour 256
Suld cum to releif thamẽ, that thai
[Shortly] swa tretit, and on a day
The castell till him ȝalde thai fre
Till sauf thamẽ thair liff*is*; & he 260
Held thame full weill [all] his cu*n*nand.
The castell tuk he in his hand,
And wittalit it weill, and has set
A gud wardane, it for to get; 264
And a quhile thair than restit he.
Of him no mair now spek will we,

We now go back to king Robert.

Bot till king robert will we gang,
That we haf [left] vnspokyn of lang. 268
Quhen he convoyit had to the se
[Fol. 51. E.] His brothir Eduard and his menȝhe,
[Fol. 115 b. C.] *With his schippes he maid him ȝar,
In-till the Ilis for till fare. 272

He takes Walter Stewart with him.

*Walter steward with hym tuk he,
*His mawch, and with him gret menȝhe;
And othir men of gret nobillay.

He goes to 'the Tarbard.'

Till the tarbard thai held thar way 272
In galayis, ordanit for thair fair:

He has to draw

Bot thame worthit draw thar schippes thar.

255. *in-till—hour*] in sik a fray that hour H; in-till sa gret E (*the rest of the line being blank*).

256. *For*] That H. *quhar na*] na where H.

257. *releif thame*] relieue them H; releyff E. *that*] *so* H; and E. *thai*] day H.

258. [*Shortly*] C *om.* Tretyt, & till a schort day E; That shortly then treitted they H.

259. *thai*] E *om.* To yeeld the Castell to him free H.

260. *thair liffis*] lyff and lym. To saue their liues, and certes he H.

261. [*all* H] CE *om.*

263. *it*] E *om.* *has*] in it H.

264. *get*] *so* CH; kept (*wrongly*) E.

265. *thair than*] tharin. *a—than*] there a whyle H.

267. *till*] to EH.

268. [*left* EH] C *om.*

269. *convoyit had*] had conwoyit E; had conuoyed H.

270. *and*] with H.

271*—274*. *Not in* E; *but found in* CH.

274*. *mawch*] Maich H.

271. *nobillay*] noblay EH.

272. *Till*] To EH. *the tarbard*] the Tarbarts H; tarbart E. *held*] tooke H.

274. *draw—schippes*] their ships draw H.

And a myle wes betuix the seis,
And that wes lownyt all with treis. 276
The kyng his schippis thar gert draw,
And for the vynd can stoutly blaw
Apon thar bak, as thai vald ga,
He gert men rapis and mastis ta, 280
And set thame in the schippis hye,
And salys to the toppis te,
And gert men gang thar-by drawand.
The vynd thame helpit, that wes blawand, 284
Swa that, in-till a litill spaß,
Thar flot all weill our-drawyn waß.
And quhen thai that in the Ilis war
Herd tell how the [gud] kyng had thar 288
Gert schippis with the salys ga
Out-our betuix the tarbartis twa,
Thai war abasit all vtrely.
For thai wist throu ald prophesy 292
That he that suld ger schippis swa
Betuix the seis [with] salis ga
Sald vyn the Ilis swa till hand,
That nane with strynth suld him withstand. 296
Tharfor thai cõme all to the kyng;
Wes nane that withstude his biddyng,
Outaken Iohñe of lorñe alane.
Bot weill soyne eftir he wes tañe, 300

his ships overland for a mile.

As the wind was strong, he has some sails set,

which assist the progress of the ships.

When the men of the Isles hear of this, they are amazed.

There was an old prophecy, that whoever should make ships sail there should conquer all the Isles.

276. *And*] Bot. *wes*] is H. *lownyt*] lompnyt E; loned H.
278. *vynd*] wynd. *can*] couth.
279. *vald*] wald E; can H.
280. *rapis—ta*] Masts, and rapes ma H.
282. *And*] *so* EH; And *the* C. *te*] tey E; tie H.
284. *vynd*] wynd.
285. *in-till*] into H; in E.
286. *weill*] there H; E *om.*
288. [*gud* E] good H; C *om.* *the—had*] that the good King H.
289. *Gert*] Gert his E; Gart his H. *the*] EH *om.*
290. *the*] E *om.* *tarbartis*] *miswritten* tarbatis C; Tabarts H; tarbart E.
291. *all*] sa.
294. *the*] *so* CH; thai E. [*with* EH] but C (*an obvious error*).
295. *vyn*] wyne.
298. *that*] E *om.* *Wes—withstude*] Durst nane gainestand H.
300. *he wes*] wes he.

All submit, and John of Lorn is taken,

And presentit wes to the kyng.
And thai that war of his leding,
That to the king had brokyn fay,
War all ded, and distroyit avay. 304

and put in prison, first at Dumbarton, afterwards at Lochleven.

The king this Iohñ of lorn haſ tañe,
And send soyne him till dumbertañe,
A quhile in presone thair till be,
And to louchlevin syñe send wes he, 308

[Fol. 116. C.]

Quhar he wes lang tyme in festnyng;
Thair-in, I trow, he maid endyng.

The king takes his pleasure.

The king, quhen all the Iles war
Brocht till his liking, leſ and mar, 312
Still all that sesoune thar duelt he
At hunting, and ga*m*myne, and gle.

The battale betuix the lord dowglass and the lord nevell of yngland.

Qwhen the king, on this maner,
Dantit the Iles, as I tell her, 316

Sir James of Douglas is in the forest.

The gud *schir* Iames of Dowglaſ
In-till the forest duelland waſ,
Defendand worthely the land.

At Berwick, at that time, was one Eumond de Calion, a Gascon.

That tyme in berwik wes wonnand 320
Ewmond de calioñ, a gascou*n*e,
That wes a knycht of gret renouñe;

301. *presentit*] presented H; present E. *wes*] ry*c*ht E; right H.
303. *to*] till.
304. *ded—distroyit*] destroyed and dead H.
305. EH *put* The king *after* lorn.
306. *send*] *so* CE; sent H. *soyne—till*] hym furth to EH.
307. *thair*] for H. *till*] to EH.
308. *And*] Syne H; Syn E. *syne*] EH *om.* *send*] sent H.
309. *lang tyme*] quhill.
310. EH *put* Thair-in *after* he maid.
313. *Still*] EH *om.* *duelt*] duellyt.
314. *and—and*] gamyn, and at E; and at game, and H. *Rubric from* C. H *has*—Lord Dowglas with battell plaine, Reskewed the Pray, and brought againe.
315. *Qwhen*] Quhill. *on*] apon E; vpon H.
316. *Dantit*] Dawntyt E; Had daunted H.
319. *worthely*] doughtely H.
320. *wonnand*] duelland.
321. *Ewmond*] Edmound EH. *de calion*] de cailow E; of Calhow H.
322. H *has*—He was a Knight of great Renoun.

And in-till gascone, his cuntre,
Lord of gret senȝeroy wes he. 324
He had than berwik in keping,
And maid añe preue gadd*er*ing,
And gat him a gret Cumpany
Of wicht men armyt Iolely, 328
And the nethir end of tevydaill
He prayit doune till him all haill,
And of the merß añe gret party;
Syne toward berwik went in hy. 332
Schir adam of gordoune, that than
Wes becu*m*myne a scottis man,
Saw thame swa drif avay thar fe,
And wend thai had beyn quheyn, for he 336
Saw bot the fleand scaill, perfay, 337
*And thame that sesyt in the pray.
*Than till schir Iames of douglaß
In-to gret hye the way he tais, 340
*And tald how ynglis men thair pray
*Had tane, and syne went thar way
*Toward berwik with all thar fee,
And said, thai quheyn war; and gif he 344
Wald speid him, he suld weill lichtly 337
Wyn thame, and reskew [all] the ky. 338
Schir Iames rycht soyne gaf his assent 345

He harries the lower end of Teviotdale.

Sir Adam of Gordon tells Douglas of this;

and says the English are few in number.

324. *Lord*] A lord C; *but* EH *omit* A. *senȝeroy*] senȝowry E; Senyeory H.
325. *He*] And H. *than*] then H; E *om.*
326. *And*] He H. *aue*] A.
329. *And*] All H. *tevydaill*] tewidale E; Teuidaill H.
330. *doune till*] into (*sic*) H.
334. *a*] EH *om.*
335. *swa drif*] dryf sua E; driue sa H.
336. *quheyn*] quhone. *had—for*] wheene were for that H.
337*—344*. *Not in* E; *found in* CH.
337*. *fleand scaill*] fleeing skaill H.
338*. *sesyt*] seeȝed H. *in* CH] *perhaps it should be* on.
339*. *Than*] Then H. *till*] to H.
340*. *In-to*] In full H.
342*. *went—way*] were went away H.
344*. *quheyn*] wheene H.
338. [*all* EH] C *om.*
345*—356*. *Not in* E; *found in* CH; *except* 347*, 348*, *which* H *omits.*
345*. *rycht*] H *om.*

*Till follow thame, and furth is went
[Fol. 116 b. C.] *Bot with the men that he had thair,
And met hym by the gat but mair. 348

Douglas pursues the English in haste.

*Thai followit thame in full gret hy,
*And com weill neir thame hastely;
*For, or thai mycht thame fully se,
Thai come weill neir vith thair menȝe. 352
*And than bath the forreouris and the scaill
*In-till a childrome knyt all haill,
*And wes a richt fair Cumpany.

The English drive the cows on in front, and protect the rear.

Befor thame gert thai driff the ky 356
With knavis and swanys, that na mycht 339
Had for till stand in feild to ficht. 340
The laiff behynd thame maid a scaill.
The dowglass saw thair purpoß haill,
And saw thame of sa gud cowyne,
And at thai war sa mony syne, 344

Douglas finds the English host is double his own,

That ay for ane of his war twa.
"Lordingis," he said, "sen it is swa
That we haff chassit on sic maner,
That we now cummyn ar so ner 348
That we may nocht eschewe the ficht
Bot gif we fowly tak the flicht,

346*. *Till*] To H.
347*, 348*. *In* C *only.*
350*. *com*] came H.
351*. *thame*] H *om.*
352*. *come*] came H.
353*. *And*] Bot H. *the forreouris*] forray H. (N.B. The line would scan better by omitting *And.*)
354*. *In-till—knyt*] Were knit into a sop H.
355*—340. H *transposes the lines, and has—*
But Knaues and Swaines that had na might,
For to stand into field to fight,
Before them gart they driue the Ky,
Thev were a right faire company.
339. *knavis*] knawis.
340. *till*] to. *to*] &.
341. *laiff—thame*] lave behynd thaim E; H *has*—And all togidder in a staill. *maid*] *th*ai maid C; *but* EH *omit* thai. *scaill*] *may be read either* scaill *or* staill; Jamieson *prints* stale; Hart *has* staill. *But see l.* 353*, *where* H *has* scaill.
342. *purposs*] lump all EH.
343. *cowyne*] conuyne H.
344. *at*] saw E; that H.
345. *ay*] thai E; they H.
347. *on*] of.
348. *now—ar*] are now commen H.
350. *tak*] ta.

Lat ilk man on his luf than meyñe,
And how he mony tyme has beyñe 352
In grat thrang, and coñe weill avay.
Think we till do richt swa this day;
And tak we of this furde heir-by
Our avantage, for in gret hy 356
Thai sall cum on vs for to ficht.
Set we than will, [and] strynth, and my*ch*t
For till meyt thame richt hardely."
And with that word, full hastely, 360
He [hes] displayit his Baner;
For his fayis war cu*m*and neir,
That, quhen thai saw he wes so quhoyñe,
Thai thoucht vyth thañe soyñe till haf doñe, 364
And assemblit full hardely.
Thair mycht men se ficht fellely,
And richt añe cruell melle mak,
And mony strakis giff and tak. 368
The douglass thair weill hard wes stad,
Bot the gret hardyment that he had
Confortit his men apon sic wiß,
That no man thoucht on cowardiß; 372
Bot faucht so fast with all thar mayñe,
That thai feill of thair fayis has slayñe.
And thouch thai wer be full fer ma
Than thai, ȝeit vre demanyt thai*m* swa, 376

but encourages his men,

and determines to give battle.

His foes see his men are but few, and attack him vigorously.

[Fol. 117. C.]
[Fol. 51 *b*. E.]
The Scottish host is hardly bestead.

351. *ilk man*] ilkane. *on*] of H. *luf*] life H. *luf than*] lemman. *meyne*] mene E; meene H.
352. *he—has*] we mony time haue H.
353. *come weill*] weill cu*m*myn.
354. *till*] to EH. *this day*] *so* H; to day E.
355. *furde*] Foord H.
358. [*and* EH] C *om*.
359. *till*] to EH.
361. [*hes* H] CE *om*.
363. *That*] And H. *he wes*] they were H. *quhoyne*] wheene H.
364. *Thai—till*] Thou*ch*t thai suld with thai*m* sone E. *vyth—done*] all was their awne bedeene H.
366. Thar men my*ch*t se men fecht felly E. *se*] see them H.
367. *richt ane*] A rycht EH.
369. *weill*] right H.
371. *Confortit*] Comforted H; Comfort E. *his men*] them H. *apon—wiss*] on sic awyss EH.
375. *wer—fer*] be weill fer way E; were full mony H.
376. *vre*] euyr. *vre—thaim*] them they demained H.

Yet Sir Eumond is slain,

That Ewmond de Caleoñe wes ded
Richt in that Ilk fechting-sted.

and all his men flee.

And all the lave, fra he wes doñe,
War planly thair discumfit soñe; 380

The Scotch recover their cattle.

And thai that chassit sum haß slayñe,
And turnyt the prayis haill agañe.
The hardest fechting forsuth this wes
That eu*ir* the gud lord of dowglaß 384
Wes in, as of sa few menȝhe.

Had not Douglas killed the leader, his men would all have been slain.

For, had nocht beyne his gret bounte
That slew thair chiftañe in the ficht,
His men till ded had all beyne dicht. 388
He had in-till Custum all-way,
Quhen eu*ir* he com till hard assay,
To press hym, the chiftañe to sla;

He often won by killing the enemies' captain.

And hap him fell, that he did swa; 392
That gert him victor haue feill siß.
Quhen schir Ewmond apon this wiß
Wes ded, this gud lord of douglaß
Till the forest his way he taiß. 396
His fayis gretly can hym dreid;
The word weill fer sprang of this deid,
Swa that in yngland neir thar-by
Men spak of It weill comonly. 400

377. *Ewmond*] Edmound E; Edmund H. *Caleone*] cailow E; Callok H.
378. *fechting*] fechtyn. Through Dowglas right in that ilke stead H.
379. *he*] this H.
380. *planly*] all haill H. *thair*] EH *om.*
382. *haill*] *so* H; all E.
383. *fechting*] feghting H; fycht E. *forsuth*] H *om.*
384. *of*] H *om.*
385. *as*] and H.
386. *had nocht*] nocht had.
387. *the*] that.
388. *till—all*] had all to dede.
392. *hap—fell*] her fell hap. H *is corrupt.*
393. *victor haue*] haff wictour.
394. *Ewmond*] Edmound E; Edmund H.
395. *this*] the. *of*] H *om.*
396. *Till*] To EH. *way he*] wayis.
397. *can*] gan.
398. *weill—sprang*] sprang weile fer E; sprang far H. *this*] his EH. *deid*] manhead H.
400. *weill comonly*] right commonly H; commonaly E.

Here H *inserts a rubric*—How Iames of Dowglas slew Newel, That vowed to meete him in battell.

Schir robert de Nevell in that tyde
Wonnyt at berwyk neir besyde
The marchis, quhar the lord dowglaß
In the forest reparande was, 404
And had at him full gret Invy,
For he him saw so manfully
Mak his boundis ay mar & mar.
He herd the folk that with him war 408
Spek of the lorde dowglaß*is* mycht,
And how forsy he wes in fycht,
And how hym oft fell [far] fortouñe.
He wrethit hym thar-at all soyñe, 412 [Fol. 117*b*. C.]
And said, "quhat weyn ȝhe, is thar nañe
That eu*ir* is worth bot hym alañe?
ȝe set hym as he war but peir:
Bot I avow, befor ȝow heir, 416
Gif eu*ir* he cum in-till this land,
He sall fynd me neir at his hand.
And giff I eu*ir* his Baneir
May se displayit apon wer, 420
I sall assembill on hym but dout,
All thouch ȝhe hald him neu*ir* sa stout."
Of this avow soyne bodword was
Brocht till schir Iames of douglaß, 424
That said, "giff he will hald his hicht,
I sall do swa, he sall haf sicht
Of me, and of my Cumpany
ȝeit, or oucht lang, weill neir hym by." 428
His retennew than gaderit he,

Sir Robert de Neville dwelt then at Berwick,

and is envious of Douglas's fame.

He says that, if he can get the chance, he will fight with Douglas.

News of this boast comes to Douglas,

who says he will soon shew himself.

401. *de*] EH *om*. *Nevell*] Nevile E; Newell H. *in*] at H; E *om*.
403. *marchis*] march.
406. *him saw*] saw him. *manfully*] manlyly.
407. E *puts* ay *before* his.
409. *dowglassis*] douglas.
410. *forsy he*] he forsye E; he forcie H.
411. *far*] *miswritten* sar C; fayr EH. *hym—fell*] he fell oft.
412. *hym*] E *om*. *all*] full H.
414. *hym*] he EH.
416. *I*] Ik.
418. *me*] E *om*.
419. *I*] Ik.
424. *till*] to EH.
427. *of*] E *om*.

That war gud men of gret bounte,
And to the marchis in gud aray
Apon añe nycht he tuk the way; 432

He goes to Berwick, and displays his banner there.

Swa that, in the mornyng airly,
He wes, with all his Cumpany,
Befor berwyk; and thair he maid
Men to display his baner braid. 436
And of his menȝhe sum send he
For till burñe townys twa or thre,
And bad thame soyn agane thame speid;
Swa that on hand, gif thar com neyd, 440
Thai mycht be for the ficht redy.

Sir Robert Neville, seeing Douglas's banner,

The nevell, that wist werraly
That dowglaß cummyn wes so neir,
And saw all braid stand his baneir, 444
Than with the folk that with hym war—
And he had a gret menȝhe thar,
For all the gud of that cuntre
In-till that tyme with hym had he, 448
Swa that he with hym thar had then
Weill may than wes the scottis men—

leads his men up a hill.

He held his way vp till añe hill,
And said, "lordyngis, it war my will 452
Till mak end of the gret deray
[Fol. 118. C.] That dowglass makis vs Ilk day.
Bot me think it speidfull that we

He waits for Douglas to approach.

Abyde, quhill his men scalit be 456
Throu the cuntre, to tak the pray.

431. *to*] till. *marchis*] march EH.
432. *ane*] A.
433. *in*] in-to.
437. *send*] sent.
438. *till*] to EH. *burne*] bryn.
440. *on*] at H.
442. *novell*] Newill E; Newell H. *werraly*] wittily.
446. *And*] *written* Ande C.
449. *with—thar*] thar with him.
450. *may*] *so* CE; ma H. *wes*] war.
451. *ane*] A.
453. *Till*] To EH.
454. *makis*] mayis E; does to H.
456. *quhill—scalit*] till that his Menyie H.
457. *Throu—the*] Skailled all, to take our H. *the* (2)] thair.

Than fersly schute on hym we may,
And we sall haue thame at our will."
Thus all thai gaiff consent thar-till, 460
And on the hill abaid huvande.
The men fast gadd*er*it of the land,
And drew till hym in full gret hy.
The douglaß than, that wes worthy, 464 Douglas cannot wait,
Thoucht it wes foly mair till byde.
Toward the hill than can he ryde; but rides towards the hill.
And quhan the Nevell saw at thai
Vald nocht paß furth to the forray, 468
[Bot] pressit till thame with thar mycht, Neville sees that a fight is near.
He vist veill than that thai vald ficht.
And till his menȝhe can he say,
"Lordingis, now hald we furth our vay; 472 [Fol. 52. E.]
Heir is the flour of this cuntre,
And ma than thai alsua ar we.
Asse*m*myll we [than] hardely; He encourages his men.
For douglaß with ȝon ȝemanry 476
Sall haf no mycht till vs, perfay."
Than in a frusche assemblit thai.
Thair mycht men heir the speris brast, The fight.
And men dyng apon othir fast, 480
And blude brist out at voundis vyde.
Thai faucht fast apon athir syde;
For athir party can tha*m*e payñe
Till put thair fais on-bak agañe. 484

458. *schute*] schout E; set H. *hym*] thaim E; them H.
460. *Thus*] Than. *consent*] assent EH.
461. *huvande*] howand E; houand H.
466. *can*] gan.
467. *Nevell*] Newill E; Newell H. *at*] that EH.
468. *Vald*] Wald.
469. [*Bot* EH] He (*wrongly*) C. *till*] to EH.
470. *vist*] wyst.
471. *can*] gan.
473. *this*] the.
474. *ma*] *so* CH; may E.
475. *Assemmyll*] Assembill. [*than*] thame so C; then EH.
476. *ȝemanry*] ȝhwmanry E; Yemanry H.
479. *Thair*] Than E; That H.
480. *men—apon*] ilkane ding on E; ilkane dang on H.
481. *voundis*] woundis.
483. *can*] gan.
484. *Till*] To EH.

Neville and Douglas fight hand to hand.

The Lordis of nevell and douglaß,
Quhen that the fichting fellest was,
Met to-giddir richt in the preß.
Betuix thame than gret bargañe wes; 488
Thai faucht felly with all thair maucht,
Gret rowtis athir till othir raucht.

Douglas was the stronger,

Bot douglaß sterkar wes, I hicht,
And mair vsit alsua to ficht, 492
And he set hert, and will alsua,
For till delyuer hym of his fa;

[Fol. 118 b. C.]

Quhill, at the last, with mekill mayñe

and slays Neville.

Throu forß the nevell haß he slayñe. 496
Than his ensenȝe he can hye cry,
And on the laiff so hardely
He ruschit, with all his menȝhe,

The English are soon put to flight.

That in-[till] schort tym men mycht se 500
Thair fayis tak on thame the flicht;
And thai thame chassit with all thar my*ch*t.

Sir Ralph de Neville and the baron of Hilton are taken.

Schir ralf the Nevell, in the chaß,
And the Baroun of hiltouñ waß 504
Takin, and othir of mekill mycht,
That wes slayn thair in-to the ficht,
That worthy in thar tyme had beyn.
And quhen the feld wes clengit cleyn, 508
Swa that thair fayis eu*ir*ilkane
War slayn, [or] chassit avay, or tane,

Then Douglas ravages the country,

Than gert he forray all the land,
And sessit all that eu*ir* he fand, 512

486. *that*] at.
487, 488. H *omits*.
490. *till*] to H; E *om*.
491. *sterkar*] starkar. *I*] Ik.
494. *till*] to EH.
496. *Throu*] Off E; Of H. *the*] then. *nevell*] Newill E; Newell H.
497. *he—hye*] hey gan E; can he H.
498. *laiff*] lave EH.
499. *all*] E *om*.
500. *in-till* E] in CH.
501. *on thame*] thaim to.
503. *ralf*] Rawff E; Ralph H. *the*] E *om*. *Nevell*] Newill E; Newell H. *the chass*] that place H.
506. *the*] that EH.
510. [*or* EH] C *om*.
512. *he*] thai.

And brynt the townys in thar vay;
Syne haill and feir haym cu*m*my*n* ar thai.
The pray soyne emang his menȝhe,
Eft*ir* thar meritis, delit he, 516
And held no thing till his behuf.
Sic dedis aucht till ger men luf
Thair lorde, and swa thai did, perfay.
He tretit thame so wiſly ay, 520
And with so mekill luf alsua,
And sic a countenans vald ma
Of thair deid, that the mast coward
Stoutar he maid than a libard; 524
With cherising thusgat maid he
His men wicht and of gret bounte.

and divides the spoil among his men.

Such deeds endeared him to his men.

Q when Nevell thus wes broucht to ground,
And of calȝeoun schir Ewmond, 528
The [dreid] of the lorde dowglaſ,
And his renoun, swa scalit waſ
Throu-out the marchis of yngland,
That all that war thar-in duelland 532
Thai dred him as the deuill of hell.
And ȝeit haf I herd oftsiſ tell,
That he so gretly dred wes than,
That quhen wiff*is* vald thar child*ir* ban, 536
Thai wald with rycht ane angry face

When Neville and Eumond are thus slain,

the dread of the lord Douglas spreads far and wide.

The English dread him like the devil.

English women, to frighten their children, say they

513. *the*] E *om.*
514. *haym*] E *om.*
515. *pray*] prayis. *soyne*] EH *om.*
516. *delit*] delt E; dealt hes H.
518. *till*] tq EH.
522. *a countenans*] a-wansement. *sic — countenans*] countenance that he H.
524. *Stoutar — maid*] He maid stoutar EH. *libard*] libart E; Leopard H.
527. *Nevell*] Newill E; Newell H.
528. *calȝeoun*] Cailow E; Calhow H. *schir*] auld schyr. *Ewmond*] Edmound EH.
529. [*dreid*] drede E; dread H; deid C; *see l.* 533. *the*] the good H. *lorde*] lord of.
532. *war thar-in*] thar war in. *duelland*] dwelland H; wonnand E.
533. *Thai*] EH *om.* *the*] the fell E; the selfe H.
534. *I*] Ik.
536. *thar*] E *om.*
537. *with rycht*] rycht with E; euen with H.

will give them to the black Douglas. [Fol. 119. C.]

Beteche thame to the blak dowglaß; 538
For, with thair taill, he wes mair fell 539
Than wes ony deuill in hell. 540
Throu his gret vorschip and bounte 539
Swa with his fayis dred wes he, 540
That thame grevit till heir his name.

He may now dwell in peace.

He may at eiß now duell at hame
A quhile, for, I trow, he sall nocht
With fayis all a quhile be socht. 544
Now let him in the forest be;
Of him no mair now spek will we.

We return to Sir Edward at Carrickfergus.

Bot of schir Eduarde the worthy,
That with all his gude cheuelry 548
Wes at cragfergus ȝeit liand,
Till spek mair will we tak on hand.

538. *Beteche*] Betake H.
539*, 540*. *In* C *only*.
541. *grevit*] growyt E; groowed H. *till*] to EH.
544. *all—quhile*] mony dayes H.
546. *Of*] And of H. *no—spek*] spek now no mar E; speake na maire H.
548. *gude*] EH *om*.
549. *at*] in.
550. *Till*] To EH. *will we*] we will EH.

[BOOK XVI.]

Quhen schir eduard, as I tald air,
Had discumfit richard of clair,
And of Irland all the Barnage
Thriß, throu his worthy vassalage, 4
And syne with all his men of mayñe
Till cragfergus wes cu*m*myn agayñ,
The gud erll of murreff, thomas,
Tuk leiff in scotland for till paß; 8
And he hym levit with a [gruching],
And [syne] him chargit to the king
Till pray him specialy that he
Suld cum In Irland him to se. 12
For, war thai bath in-to [that] land,
Thai suld fynd nane suld thai*m* vithstand.
The Erll furth than his way has tañe,
And till his schippes is he gañe, 16
And salit out weill our the se;
In scotland soyñe arivit he.
Syne to the king he vent in hy;
And he resauit hym gladsumly, 20

When Sir Edward had defeated Richard of Clare,

and returned to Carrickfergus,

Sir Thomas Murray returned towards Scotland,

where he soon arrives.

[Fol. 82 b. E.]

He tells the king about his brother's deeds,

1. *Rubric in* H—Here past in Ireland the Noble King To his brother with great gaddering. *I*] Ik. *tald*] said EH.
7. *murreff*] Murray Sir H.
8. *till*] to EH.
9. *with a*] without H. [*gruching* E] grudging H; grunching C.
10. [*syne* EH] C *om.*
11. *Till*] To EH.
12. *Suld—In*] Wald come in H; Cum in-till E.
13. [*that* EH] the C.
14. *vithstand*] withstand.
16. *schippes*] schipping.
17. *out weill*] weill out E; well out H.
18. *In*] In-till.
19. *to*] till. *vent*] went.
20. *he*] E *om.*

And sperit of his brotheris fair,
And of Iourneis that he had thair;
And he him tald all but lesyng.
Quhen the king had left spering, 24

and says that Sir Edward wishes him to go to Ireland.

His charge to the [gud] king tald he.
And he said, 'he wald blithly se
His brothir and als all the effeire
Of that cuntre and of that were.' 28
A gret menȝhe than gaderit he.

[Fol. 119 b. C.]

And twa lordis of gret bounte,

King Robert makes Walter Stewart and James Douglas wardens in his absence,

The tañe the steward walter waß,
The tothir Iames of dowglas, 32
Vardanis in [his] absens maid he,
For till manteym weill the cuntre.
Syne to the se he tuk his vay.
[And] at lowchryan in galloway 36
He schippit, with all his menȝhe;

and goes to Carrickfergus.

Till cragfergus soyne cummyn is he.
Schir Eduard of his com wes blith,
And went down for to meit him swith, 40
And velcummyt hym with gladsum cher;
Sa did he all that with him wer,
And specialy the Erll thomaß
Of murreff, that his nevo was. 44
Syne to the castell went thai thar;
He maid thame mekill fest and far.

21. *brotheris*] brodyr.
22. *he*] thai EH.
24. *had left*] left had EH. *spering*] the spering E; his speaking H.
25. [*gud* E] CH *om.*
27. *als all*] also H; se E. *effeire*] affer.
28. *of that*] what it H. *that were*] thar wer.
31. *The tane*] The ane H. *the—walter*] Walter Stewart H.
32. *tothir*] other H.
33. *Vardanis*] Wardanys. [*his* EH] C *om.*
34. *till*] to EH. *manteym*] maintaine H.
35. *his*] the.
36. [*And* EH] C *om.* *lowchryan*] lochriane E; Lochreane H.
38. *Till*] To EH.
40. *for*] E *om.*
41. *velcummyt*] welcumyt.
42. *he*] so CH; thai (*wrongly*) E.
45. *thar*] there H; *th*ar or yar E; yar J.
46. *He*] And EH. *fest—far*] feast and fare H.

Thai sudIornyt thair dayis thre
In gret myrth and in rialte. 48

They feast for 3 days.

How king robert the Bruce passit in Irland with his brothir Eduard.

Kyng robert, apon [thiskyn] wiß,
In-till Irland arivit is;
And quhen in cragfergus had he
With his men sudIornyt dais thre, 52
Thai tuk to consell that thai vald
With all thar folk thar vayis hald
Throu all Irland, fra end to othir.
Schir Eduard than, the king*is* brothir, 56
Befor in the avaward raid.
The kyng him-self the reirward maid,
That had, in-till his Cumpany,
The Erll thomas, that ves vorthy. 60
Thair wayis furthwarde haf thai tañe,
And soyne ar passit Inde*r*willane.
This wes in the moneth of may,
Quhen byrdis syngis on the spray, 64
Melland thair notys with syndry sowñe
For softnes of that sweit sesouñe;
And lewis on the branchis spredis,
And blomys bricht besyd thame bredis, 68

When king Robert had been 3 days in Ireland,

they all set out to explore the country.

King Robert commands the rearguard.

Description of May.

47. *sudIornyt*] soiournyt E; soiournde H; *and so in* 52. *thair*] therein H.
48. *In gret*] And that in. *gret—in*] mirth, solace, and H. *in rialte*] royaltie H; Iolite E.
49. *apon*] now upon H. [*thiskyn* E] this CH.
53. *vald*] wald.
54. *vayis*] wayis.
55. *to*] till.
57. *avaward*] awaward E; Vangard H.
58. *reirward*] Reeregard H.
61. *furthwarde*] fordward H; southwart E.
62. *Inderwillane*] euerilkane H; E *om.*
63. *Rubric in* H—Here faught King Robert in Ireland, With 5 thousand against 40 thousand.
64. *on the*] in ilk E; on ilk H.
65. *syndry*] seymly EH.
66. *that*] the EH.
67. *lewis*] levys E; Leaues H. *on*] of EH.
68. *besyd*] about H.

Fields and flowers.

And feldis florist ar with flowr*is*,
Weill savourit, of seir colowr*is*,
And all thing worthis blith and gay,
Quhen that this gud king tuk his vay 72
To ryd furthward, as I said ar*e*.
The vardane than, richard of clar*e*,
[Fol. 120. C.] Wist the kyng wes arivit swa,

Richard of Clare assembles 40,000 men;

And wist that he schupe for till ta 76
His way toward the south cuntre.
Of all [Irland] assemblit he
Till him a full gret cheuelry
Of squyar*is*, burgeſ, and ȝemanry, 80
Quhill he had neir fourty thousand.

yet is afraid of open battle.

Bot he vald nocht ȝeit tak on hand
With all his fayis in feld to ficht,
But vmbethoucht him of a slicht; 84

He lays an ambush in a wood,

That he, with all that gret menȝhe,
Vald in a vode enbuschit be,
All preuely besyde the way,
Quhar at thair fayis suld paſ avay, 88
And let the vaward paſ fer by,

intending to attack their rearguard.

And syne asse*m*myll hardely
On the Reirward, with all thar men.
Thai did as thai deuisit then; 92
In a wode thai enbuschit wer.
The scottis hoost raid by thame nere;

69. *florist ar*] strowed are H; ar strowyt E.
70. *savourit*] sawerand E; sauouring H.
73. *furthward*] southwart E; Southward H.
76. *that*] H *om.* *for till*] him for to H; him to E.
78. *Of*] And of. [*Irland* EH] Ingland C.
79. *Till—gret*] Bath burges and E; Baith Burgesses and H.
80. *Of—burgess*] And hobilleris and EH.
84. *But*] Bot he. *a*] ane.
86. *Vald*] Wald. *a*] E *om.* *vode*] wod.
87. *All*] And.
88. *at*] that. *pass*] E *om.* H *has* — Where their faes behooued to ga.
89. *vaward*] awaward E; Vangard H.
90. *assemmyll*] assembill.
91. *Reirward*] Reeregard H.
93. *a*] ane.
94. *hoost*] ost E; men H.

For thai na schawing of thame maid.
Schir Eduard weill fer forrouth raid 96 Sir Edward rides past the place of ambush.
With thame that war of his menȝhe,
To the reirward na tent tuk he.
And schir richard of clare in hy,
Quhen schir Edward wes passit by, 100
Send wicht ȝhomen that veill couth schut,
To bikkir the reirward apon fut.
Than twa of thame that send furth war Two archers shoot at the Scottish host.
At the wode-syde thame bykkirrit thar, 104
And schot emang the scottis men.
The king, that had thar with him then
V thousand wicht and ek hardy,
Saw thai twa sa abaundonly 108
Schut emang thai*m*, and cu*m* so neir;
He vist richt weill, withouten weir, King Robert perceives that some stratagem is intended, and keeps his men back.
That thai weill neir swm power had.
Tharfor a bydding has he mad, 112
That no man [suld] be so hardy
Till prik till thame; but sarraly
Ryde reddy ay in-till Battale,
Till defend gif men vald assale. 116
"For we sall soyne, I vndirta,"
He said, "haf for till do vith ma."
Bot s*chir* colyne ca*m*mell, that ner [Fol. 120 *b*. C.]
Wes by, quhar thai twa ȝhomen wer 120 [Fol. 53. E.]
Schutand emang thame hardely, But Sir Colin Campbell presses forward,
Prikit on thame in full gret hy,

95. *For*] Bot EH.
96. *fer forrouth*] foorth before H.
98. *Tb*] *so* EH; And to C.
101. *wicht*] lycht E; light H. *ȝhomen*] ȝomen. *veill*] weill.
105, 109. *emang*] amang.
107. *V*] Weill v E; Well neere fiue H. *ek*] EH *om.*
111. *weill*] rycht. *swm power*] some power H; suppowall E.
113. [*suld*] sould H; sall E; C *om.*
114. *Till*] To EH. *till*] at EH.
115. *in-till*] in-to EH.
116. *Till*] To EH. *vald*] wald.
117. *I*] Ik.
118. *till*] to EH.
119. *cammell*] Cambell E; Campbell H.
120. *ȝhomen*] ȝhumen E; Yemen H.

and slays one of the archers.

And soyne the tañe he haſ our-tane,
And with his sper him soyne haſ slayñe. 124

The other kills Sir Colin's horse.

The tothir turnyt and schot agayñe,
And at a schot his hors has slayñe.
Vith that the king come hastely,
And in his gret malancoly, 128

King Robert knocks Sir Colin down for disobedience,

With añe trunsiouñe in[till] his nave,
To schir colyne sic dusche he gave,
That he dynnyt on his arsouñe.
The king bad smertly tyt hym douñe, 132
Bot othir lordis that war [him] by
Avisit the king in sum party.

and says that such disobedience is full of danger.

He said, "the breking of bydding
Micht cauſ be of discomfiting. 136
Weyn ȝhe ȝon rebaldis durst assale
Vs so neir in-till [our] Battale,
Bot gif thai had suppowale neir?

He advises his men to be wary.

I wat richt weill, forouten weir, 140
That we sall haue till do in hy;
Tharfor luk ilk man be reddy."

Then 30 of the enemy's archers appear,

With that weill neir xxx and ma
Of bowmen com, and bykkyrrit swa 144

and shoot some of the king's men.

That thai hurt of the kyngis men.
The king haſ gert his archeris then
Schute for till put thaim than agayñe.

123. *tane*] ane H.
124. *his*] the E; a H.
128. *in—gret*] in-till his E; into his H.
129. *ane*] A. *intill* E] into H; in C. *nave*] new E; neefe H.
130. *he*] did H. *gave*] gewe E; giue H.
131. *dynnyt*] fell downe H.
132. *The—bad*] Then bad he EH.
133. [*him* EH] C *om.*
134. *Avisit*] Ameyssyt E; Hes meased H. *in sum*] in-to.
135. *He*] And he E; Bot he H. *the*] EH *om.*
136. *be of*] be of thar C; all our E; H *has*—Might be cause of disconfiting.
138. *in-till our*] *so* E; C *omits* our; in our awne H.
139. *suppowale*] suppowaill E; supplee right H.
140. *forouten*] with-owtyn EH.
141. *till*] to EH.
143. *and*] or.
146. *gert*] sent H.
147. *Schute*] To shoot H. *till*] to EH. *thaim than*] thai men E; them H.

With that thai enterit in ane playñe, 148
And saw arayit agane thame stand
In four battellis fourty thousand.
The king said, "now, lordingis, lat se
Quha worthy in this ficht sall be! 152
On thame forouten mair abaid!"
So stoutly than on thame thai raid,
And assemblit so hardely,
That of thair fayis a gret party 156
War laid at erd at thar meting;
Thar wes of speris sic bristing,
As athir apon othir raid,
That it a veill gret frusche haß maid. 160
Horß com thair fruschand, hed for hed,
Swa that feill on the grund fell ded.
Mony a wicht and worthy man,
[As] athir apon othir ran, 164
War duschit ded douñe to the ground;
The rede blude out of mony a wound
Ruschit in sa gret fusiouñe than,
That of the blude the stremes ran. 168
And thai, that vrath war and angry,
Dang on othir so hardely
With wapnys that var bricht & bar,
That mony a vicht man ded ves thar. 172
For thai, that hardy war and wicht,
And frontly with thar fayis can ficht,
Pressit thame formast for till be.
Thair mycht men cruell bargane se, 176

Soon the Scotch see 40,000 men against them.

The Scotch make the attack.

There is great breaking of spears.

[Fol. 121. C.]

Many are slain or severely wounded.

148. *ane*] A.
153. *forouten*] withoutten H.
157. *War*] Were H; Was E.
160. *veill*] wele E; full H.
161. *fruschand*] *so* CE; rushing H.
162. *fell*] lay H.
164. [*As* EH] Haiss (*wrongly*) C.
166. *rede—of*] blood ran out at H.
167. In sik effusion, that euen than H.
168. *That of the*] Of very H.
169, 170. H *omits*.
169. *vrath*] wraith.
172. *vicht*] gud E; good H. *ded ves*] deyit E; died H.
174. *frontly*] froutly *or* frontly C; frontlynys E; *printed* stoutlynys J; stoutly H. *can*] gan.
175. *till*] to EH.
176. *bargane*] battell H.

The battle is very severe.

And hard battall, I vndirstand.
In-till [all] the weir of [Irland]
So hard ane fechting wes nocht seyñe.

Sir Edward won 19 battles in 3 years,

The quhethir of gret victoriß nynteyñe 180
Schir Eduard had, withouten wer,
In-till leß than in-to thre ȝeir;

sometimes defeating 20,000 men.

And in syndry battelis off thai
He vencust tuenty thousand & ma, 184
With trappit horß richt to the feit.
Bot, in [all] tymis, he wes ȝeit

He had always more than 1 against 5, but king Robert had here only 1 against 8.

Ay añe for v, quhen lest wes he.
Bot the kyng in-to this melle 188
Had allwayis aucht of his famen
For añe, bot he swa bar him then
That his gud deid and his bounte
Confortit swa all his menȝhe, 192
That the mast coward hardy wes.

King Robert was always in the thick of the fight.

For, quhar he saw the thykkest preß,
So hardely on thame he raid,
That ay about hym rowme he maid, 196
[That he slew all he might ourtak, 197*
And rudely rushed them abak.] 198*

Sir Thomas Murray was always close to him.

And Erll thomas, the worthy, 197
Wes in all tymis neir hym by,
And faucht as he war in a rage;
Swa that, throu thar gret vassalage, 200
Thar men sic hardyment can tak,

177. *battall*] bargaine H. *I*] Ik. *vndirstand*] tak on hand EH.
178. *In-till*] In EH. [*all* EH] C *om.* *of*] of all C; *but* all *should precede* the weir, *as in* EH. [*Irland* EH] Ingland C.
179. *hard*] great H. *ane*] A.
180. *victoriss*] wictours.
181. *had*] has.
182. *In-till*] And in-to E; And that in H. *in-to*] in EH.
184. *He vencust*] He vanquisht H; Wencussyt E. *tuenty*] xxx E; twentie H.
186. *in all tymis*] in all tymys E; in to tymis C; in all that time H.
196. *ay*] thar. H *has*—And sa great roome about him made.
197*, 198*. *In* H *only*; CE *omit*. *In* H, ourtak *is spelt* ouertake, *and* abak *is spelt* aback.
198. *tymis*] tyme.
200. *throu*] for.
201. *sic*] sic gret. *can*] gan E; did H.

That thai no perell wald forsak.
Bot thame abaundonyt so stoutly,
And dang on thame so hardely, 20
That all thair fayis afrayit war.
And thai, that saw weill, by thair fair,
That thai eschewit sum deill the ficht,
Thai dang on thame with all thar my*ch*t, 208
And pressit thame dyngand so fast, 209
*That thai the bak gaf at the last.
*And thai, that saw thai*m* tak the flicht,
*Pressit thame than with all thar my*ch*t, 212*
And in thair fleying feill can sla. 209
The kingis men haß chaßit swa,
That thai war scalit cu*i*rilkañe.
Richard of clare the vay has tañe 212
To devillyng, in full gret hy,
With othir lordis that fled him by,
And varnyst bath castell and townys
That war in thair possessownis. 216
Thai war so felly fleyit thar,
That, [as] I trow, Richard of clar
Sall haf no will to faynd his my*ch*t
In battell na in forß of ficht, 220
Quhill king robert and his men ȝhe
Is duelland in-to that Cuntre!
Thai stuffit strynthis on this viß;
And the king, that wes sa till priß, 224
Saw in the feild richt mony slayn.

[Fol. 121 *b*. C.]
The English and Irish begin to give way,

and at last take to flight.

Richard of Clare retreats to Dublin.

His men are much scared,

[Fol. 53 *b*. E.]

and are afraid to face king Robert

203. *abaundonyt*] abandound.
208. *Thai—thame*] Than dang thai on.
209*—212*. *In* CH; E *omits*.
209*. *thame dyngand*] dinging on them H.
212*. *Here* H *repeats* l. 208.
209. *can*] gan.
211. *war—cuirilkane*] discomfist them ilkane H.
212. *vay*] way.
213. *devillyng*] dewillyne E; Deuilling H. *in*] in-to.
215. *varnyst*] warnysyt E; garnisht H. *castell*] *so* H; castell*is* E.
217. *felly*] fellounly H.
218. [*as* H] CE *om*. *Richard*] *schir* Richard.
220. *forss of*] field to H. *of*] to.
222. *in-to*] in.
223. *viss*] wiss.
224. *sa*] E *om*. *till*] to EH.

Robert sees a prisoner weeping, and asks him why he weeps.

And ane of thame that thar ves tane,
That wes arayit Iolely,
He saw gret wondir tendirly. 228
He askit him, 'quhy he maid sic cher?'

"Sir, it is no wonder, for the flower of all North Ireland lies dead here!"

He said him, "*schir*, forouten wer,
It is no vonder thouch I grete,
I se heir feill fellit to fete, 232
The flour of [all north] Irland,
That hardyest wes of hert and hand,
And mast doutit in hard assay."

"Thou hast more cause for mirth, having yourself escaped death."

The king said, "thou haß vrang, perfay; 236
Thou haß mair cauß myrthis till ma,
For thou the ded eschapit swa."

Rychard of clare on this maner,
And all his folk, discumfit wer 240
With [few] folk, as I [to] ȝow tald.

When Sir Edward hears of his brother's success in his absence, he is very wroth.

And quhen Eduard the bruce so bald
Wist at the king had fouchten swa
With sa feill folk, and he thar-fra, 244
Micht no man se añe vrathar man.
But the gude king said till hym than,

[Fol. 123. C.]

That It wes in his awñ foly,
For he raid sa vnvittandly, 248
So fer befor, and no avaward
Maid to thame of the reirward.
For he said, 'quha on were vald ryde,

226. *ves*] wes.
228. *gret*] greyt E; him weepe H. *wondir tendirly*] right dulefully H.
229. *He*] And.
230. *forouten*] with-owtyn.
231. *vonder*] wondre.
232. *heir—fete*] fele her lossyt the suet E; sa mony slaine at my feete H.
233. [*all north* EH] the north of all C.
234. *wes*] was. *hert and*] thair.
236. *haß*] dois. *vrang*] wrang.
241. [*few* EH] feill (*wrongly*) C. [*to* E] haue to H; C *om.*
242. *so*] sa H; the E.
245. *no*] na. *vrathar*] wraither H; waer E.
248. *vnvittandly*] wnwittely E; vnwittely H.
249. *avaward*] waward. *and—avaward*] making na ward H.
250. To them that were in the Reeregard H.
251. *vald*] wald.

In the vaward, he suld na tyde
Presſ fra his rerward fer of sicht;
For gret perell so fall thar mycht.'
Of this ficht will we spek no mair.
The king and all that with him war
Raid furthwarde in-to bettir aray,
And neir to-giddir than ere did thai.
Throu all the land planly thai raid;
Thai fand nane that thame varnyng maid.
Thai raid evin forrouth drouchyndra,
And forrouth devilling syne alsua;
Bot to gif battale nane thai fand.
Syne thai went forthwarde in the land,
And sowth till lwnyk held thair way,
That is the southmast touñe, perfay,
That in Irland may fundyn be.
Thair lay thai dayis twa or thre,
And buskit syne agane to fare.
And quhen that thai all reddy war,
The king haſ herd añe woman cry
And askit quhat that wes in hy.
"It is añe landar, schir," said añe,
"That hir childyne richt now haſ tañe,
And mon lewe now behynd vs her,
Tharfor scho makis ȝon euill cher."

252 Robert reproves him for his carelessness.

256 Thereafter, the Scottish host held better together.

260

They pass Drogheda and Dublin.

264 They proceed to the very southernmost town of Ireland.

268

After a halt, as they prepare to go on, the king hears a woman's cry,

272

and learns that a poor laundress is seized with labour.

276

252. *the vaward*] a waward E; the Vangard H.
253. *Presſ*] Pass EH. *rerward*] Reeregard H. *of*] fra H; from A.
254. *so*] swa.
256. *The*] Bot the EH; But the A. *with him*] thar.
257. *furthwarde*] furthwart E; fordward H. *in-to*] in E; in a H.
258. *neir*] neere H; nerar E.
260. *varnyng*] obstakill E; obstacle H.
261. *evin*] ewyn. *forrouth*] before H. *drouchyndra*] drochindra E; Drochynda H.
262. *forrouth*] before H. *devilling*] dewillyne E; Deuilling H; Deviling A.
263. *Bot*] And.
264. *forthwarde*] southwart EH.
265. *sowth*] rycht E; right H. *lwnyk*] Lynrike H; Lymrik A; Kynrike E.
271. *herd*] hard. *ane*] A.
272. *And*] He EH.
273. *ane* (1)] a H; the E. *landar*] layndar E; Lauender H.
274. *childyne*] child-ill E; childeuill H.
275. *lewe*] leve E; leaue H.

The king said, "Certis, it war pite
That scho in that poynt left suld be
For certis, I trow, thar is no man
That he ne will rew vp-on voman." 280

He makes his men halt, and prepares a tent for her.

His host all than arestit he,
And gert añe tent soyne stentit be,
And gert her gang in hastely;
And othir women till be hir by, 284
Quhill scho delyu*er* wes, he bad;
And syne furth on his wayis raid:
And how scho furth suld caryit be,
Or eu*ir* he fur*e*, than ordanit he. 288

[Fol. 122 b. C.] This was a courteous deed of a king towards a poor laundress.

This wes a full gret curtasy,
That sic a kyng and swa mychty
Gert his men duell on this maner
Bot for a full pou*ir* laynder. 292

Northward*e* agane thai tuk the vay;
Throu all Irland thus passit thai
Throu conag*e* richt to dewilling,

They pass through all Meath, Munster, Leinster, and Ulster unopposed.

And throu al myth and Irell syne, 296
And mwnser and [throu] lainenser,
And syne haly throu vllister
To cragfergus forout battell;
For thar wes nane durst thame assale. 300

280. *vp-on voman*] a woman than E; of women than H.
281. *host*] ost. *than*] thar.
282. *ane*] A.
284. *till*] to E; H *om.*
285. *delyuer wes*] wes deliuer E; deliuered was H.
288. *fure than*] furth fur E; fure H.
290. *sic*] swilk.
292. *full*] EH *om.* *laynder*] lauender EH.
293. *Northwarae agane*] Norvard*e* agane C; Agayne northwart E; Againe Northward H. *the*] thair EH.
294. *thus*] then H. *thus—thai*] than perfay.
295. *conage*] all connach E; all Connoch H. *richt*] H *om.* *dewilling*] dewillyne E; Deviline H.
296. *myth*] methy E; Mich H; Meath A. *Irell*] Iereby E; Irrelle H; Tyrrell A.
297, 298. *Transposed in* E.
297. *And*] Through H. *mwnser*] monester E; Monaster H; Munster A. [*throu*] through A; CEH *om.* *lainenser*] lenester E; Lawester H; Linster A.
298. *vllister*] wlsister E; all Vlsister H; all Ulster A.
299. *forout*] for-owtyn E; without H.

The kingis than of the eryschrye
Com to schir Eduarde halely,
And thair manrent till him can ma,
Bot gif that it war añe or twa. 304
Till cragfergus thai come agane;
In all that vay wes no bargane,
Bot gif that ony pwnȝhe wer
That is nocht for till spek of her. 308
The erische kyngis than eu*i*rilkañe
Hayme till thar awne repar ar gañe,
And vnd*ir*tuk in all-kyn thyng
For till obeyß till the biddyng 312
Of s*chir* Eduard, that thar king call thai.
He wes weill set now in gud way
To conquest the land all halely;
For he had apon his party 316
The eryschry and vllister,
And he wes swa furth of his wer
That he wes passit throu all Irland
Fra end till end throu strynth of hand. 320
Couth he haf gou*er*nit hym throu skill, [Fol. 54. E.]
And fallowit nocht to fast his will,
Bot with mesour haf led his deid,
It wes weill lik, withouten dreid, 324
That he mycht haff conquerit weill
The land of Irland eu*i*rilk deill.

All the Irish kings submit to Sir Edward.

There was but little fighting.

The Irish kings return home.

Sir Edward is now in a good position,

having passed over all Ireland.

If he had used some tact, he might have conquered all Ireland.

301. *than*] EH *om.* *the*] E *om.* *eryschrye*] Irchery E; Irishry H.
303. *manrent*] *so* H; *spelt* mantrent C; manredyn E. *till—can*] can to him H; gan him E.
306. *vay*] way. *no*] nane.
307. *that*] it H. *pwnȝhe*] poynȝe E; Skirmish H.
308. *till*] to EH.
309. *erische*] Irsche E; Irish H. *than*] H *om.*
312. *obeyss till*] obey to EH.
313. *call*] callit E; called H.
314. *weill—now*] now weill set. *in*] *so* EH; and in C; *but* and *is not wanted.*
315. *conquest*] conquer E; conquesse H. *all*] EH *om.*
317. *eryschry*] Irschery E; Irishry H. *vllister*] wlsystyr E; all Vlsister H; all ulster A.
318. *of*] on EH.
319. *all*] E *om.*
320. *end* (2)] wthyr E.
322. *fallowit*] folowyt E; followed H.
325. *conquerit*] conqueissed H.
326. *euirilk*] ilka.

Bot his outrageouſ succudry
His own pride prevented that. And will, that mar wes [than] hardy, 328
Of purpoſ letit hym, perfay,
As I heir-eft*ir* sall ȝow say.

How the gud dowglass slew the erll richmonde of yngland.

Now leiff we heir the nobill king
All at his eiſ and his liking, 332
[Fol. 123. C.] And spek we of the lord douglaſ,
Meantime lord Douglas is left to defend the Scottish border. That left to kep the marchis waſ.
He gert get vrichtis that ves sle,
And in the hawch of lyntoun-le 336
He gert thame mak a fair maner.
And quhen the hous*is* biggit wer,
He gert purvay hym richt weill thar.
For he thoucht for till mak Infair, 340
And till mak gud cher till his men.
An English earl, named Sir Thomas, living at Richmond, is envious of Douglas. In rychmond wes thar wonnand then
Ane Erll, men callit s*chir* thomas;
He had Invy at the dowglas, 344
And said, "gif that he his Baner
Micht se displayit apon wer,
That soyn assemble on it suld he."
He herd how dowglaſ thoucht to be 348
At lyntoun-le añe fest till ma;
And he had wittyng weill alsua,

327. *succudry*] sucquedry E; succudry H.
328. *mar wes*] wes mar. [*than* EH] and C.
330. *I*] Ik.
Rubric in H—How Dowglas slew Richmond, syne at meat In battell their harbreours serued in seat.
333. *lord*] lord of.
335. *get*] *so* CH; set E. *ves sle*] war sleye.
336. *hawch*] halche E; hawgh H. *lyntoun-le*] lyntaile E; Lyntalle H.
338. *housis*] houss (= hous*is*) C; howssis E; houses H.
340. *for—mak*] to mak ane EH.
341. *till* (1)] to EH. *till* (2)] to H.
342. *thar*] E *om.*
343. *men callit*] that men callit E; that called was H.
349. *lyntoun-le*] lyntainley E; Lyntalle H. *ane*] and E; a H. *till*] to EH.
350. *had*] gat H. *wittyng*] witting H; wittering E.

That the king and a gret menȝe
War passit than of the cuntre, 352
And the Erll of murref, thomas.
Tharfor he thoucht the cuntre was
Febill of men, for till withstand
Men that thame soucht vith stalvard hand; 356
And of the marchis than had he
The gouernale and the pouste.
He gaderit folk about hym then,
Quhill he wes neir ten thousand men, 360
And wode-axis gert vith hym tak;
For he thoucht he his men wald mak
Till hew douñe Iedward forest cleyñe,
That na tre suld tharin be seyne. 364
Thai held thaim furthward on thar vay;
Bot the gud lord of dowglaſ ay
Had spyis out on ilka syde,
And had gud witting that thai vald ryde, 368
And cum apon hym suddanly.
Than gaderit he richt hastely
Thame that he mycht of his menȝe;
I trow that than with hym had he 372
Fifty, that worthy war and vicht,
At all poynt armyt weill and dicht
And of archeris a gret menȝhe
Assemblit als with hym had he. 376
A place than wes thar in the way,
Quhar he wist weill thai vald avay,

He learns that king Robert and Sir Thomas Murray had gone away.

He gathers 10,000 men, and proceeds to Jedwood forest, to hew down the trees there.

Sir James of Douglas hears of this, and assembles 50 men and some archers.

[Fol. 123 b. C.]

He lays an ambush in a pass

355. *till*] to EH.
356. *thame soucht*] them sought H; suld E (*the verb being omitted*). *vith*] with EH.
361. *gert*] gert he C; *but* EH *omit* he. *vith hym*] them A.
362. *he* (2)] E *om.*
363. *Till*] To EH. *doune*] E *om.* *Iedward*] Iedwort E; Iedburgh H. *cleyne*] sa clene.
365. *vay*] way.
366. *of*] EH *om.* *ay*] that ay EH.
368. *And*] EH *om.* *had*] Gat H. *witting*] wittering. *vald*] wald EH.
371. *mycht*] mowcht.
372. *had he*] wald be.
373. *vicht*] wicht.
377. *than*] thar.
378. *wist*] thocht. *thai—avay*] thai suld away E; that passe wald they H.

that grew narrow like a shield,

That had wode apon athir syde;
The Entre wes weill large and vyde; 380
And as añe schelde it narrowit ay
Quhill that, in-till añe place, the vay
Wes nocht a penny-staňe cast of breid.

The lord of douglaß thiddir ȝeid, 384
Quhen he wist thai war neir cumand,
And in a clewch on the ta hand

and tells his archers to wait for his order.

All his archeris enbuschit he,
And [bad] thame hald thame all preue 388
Quhill that thai herd him raiß the cry,
And than suld thai schute hardely
Emang thar fayis, and hald thame thar
Quhill that he throu thame passit war; 392
And syne with him furth hald suld thai

He twists together the birch-trees on each side of the path.

Than byrkis on athir syde the way,
That ȝoung and thik wes growand ner,
He knyt to-giddir on sic maner, 396
That men mycht nocht weill throu thaim ryde.
Quhen this wes done, he can abyde
Apon the tothir half the way;

When Richmond approaches, Douglas waits till he enters the pass.

And Richmond in-till gude aray 400
Com rydand in the first battale.
The lorde dowglaß haß seyn veill all,
And gert his men all hald thame still,
Quhill richt at hand thai com thame till, 404

Then the Scotch all rush upon him at once,

And Enterit in the narrow way.
Than with añe schout on thame schot thai,

380. *vyde*] wid.
381. *ane*] A.
382. *ane*] A.
384. *ȝeid*] he ȝeid C; *but* EH *omit* he.
386. *in*] E *om.* *clewch*] Cleugh H; louch E.
387. *All*] Has.
388. [*bad* E] bid C.
389. *herd*] hard.
390. *thai*] E *om.*
391. *Emang*] Amang. *hald—thar*] sow thaim sar E; saile them saire H.
395. *wes*] war.
398. *he*] E *om.* *can*] gan.
399. *half*] side of H.
400. *in-till*] in EH.
401. *battale*] escheill E; Eshell H.
402. *veill all*] him weill EH.
404. *richt at*] at thair EH.
406. *ane*] A.

Cryand on hicht, "douglaß, douglaß!" — crying "Douglas! Douglas!"
Than richmonde, that [rycht] worthy waß, 408
Quhen he [has] herd sa riß the cry,
And dowglaß baner saw planly,
He dressit him thiddir-ward in hy.
And thai com on sa hardely, 412
That thai throu thame maid thame gud way;
All at thai [met] till erd bar thai.
The richmond borne doune thar was; — Douglas kills Richmond with a dagger,
On hym arestit the Dowglaß, 416
And him reuersit; syñe with a knyff — [Fol. 124. C.]
Richt in that place hym reft the liff.
Añe hat apon his helm he bare, — [Fol. 54 b. E.]
And that tuk douglaß with him thar 420
In taknyng, for it furrit waß. — and takes away his furred hat.
And syne in hy his way he tais,
Quhill in the wode thai enterit war;
The archeris weill has borne thame thar; 424
For weill and hardely schot thai.
The ynglißh rout in gret effray — The English are dismayed.
War set, for douglaß suddandly,
Vith all thame of his Cumpany, 428
Or euir thai wist, war in thar rout,
And thrillit thame weill neir throu-out;
And had almast all doñe his deid,
Or thai till help thame couth tak hede. 432
And quhen thai saw thar lord ves slayñe, — Seeing their lord slain,

407. *Cryand*] And cryt E; And cried H.
408. [*rycht*] right H; than E; C *om.*
409. [*has* E] had H; C *om.* *herd*] hard. *riss*] rise H; raiss E.
410. *saw*] he saw C; *but* EH *omit* he.
411. *him*] E *om.*
413. *gud*] the. H *has*—That through them haue they made their way.
414. [*met* EH] mycht C. *bar*] dang H.
416. *On—the*] And soone arested him H.
417. *syne*] and E; H *om.*
418. *hym reft*] reft him.
420. *douglass—him*] with him dowglas.
422. *his—he*] thair wayis E; his wayes H.
429. *war*] wes.
430. *thrillit*] thyrlyt E; thirled H.
432. *Or*] Ere H. *till*] to EH.
433. *ves*] was H; E *om.*

they retreat a little,

Thai tuk hym vp, and vent agayne
Till draw thame fra the schot avay;
Than in añe playne assemblit thai. 436

and take up quarters for the night.

And, for thar lord that thar wes ded,
Thai schupe thame in that Ilke sted
For till tak herbery all that nycht.
And than the douglaß, that wes wicht, 440

Douglas hears that a clerk named Ellis, with 300 men, have taken up their quarters near him.

Gat wittering that añe clerk, elyß,
With weill thre hundreth enymyß,
All straucht till lyntoun-le war gañe,
And herbery for thair host had tañe, 444
Than thiddir is he went in hy,
With all thame of his cumpany,
And fand clerk Eliß at the met,
And all his rout about him set. 448

Douglas and his men attack Ellis as he is at meat, and slay him and nearly all his men.

And thai com [on] hym stoutly thair,
And with suerdis that scharply schar
Thai seruit thame full egyrly.
Thai war slayn doune so halely, 452
That thar weill neir eschapit añe.
Thai seruit thame in sa gret wayne
With scherand swerdis and with knyvis,
That weill neir all lesyt thar livis. 456

They had a cruel *entremet* at their dinner!

Thai had añe felloune entremaß,
For that su[r]charge to chargeand waß!
Thai that eschapit thair throu caß

434. *vent*] turnyt E; turned H.
435. *Till*] To EH.
436. *ane*] A.
438. *Ilke*] Ilk EH.
439. *till*] to EH.
441. *wittering*] wit H. *that*] E *om.* *elyss*] ane elyss C (*but* EH *omit 2nd* ane); Elyss E; Eleis H.
443. *till*] to EH. *lyntoun-le*] lyntaile E; Lyntalle H.
447. *Eliss*] Ellys E; Eleis H.
448. *all*] E *om.* *rout*] round.
449. [*on* EH] C *om.* *hym*] thaim EH.
452. Slayn war thai full grewously E.
453. *thar*] E *om.*
454. *in*] on. *sa*] full H.
456. *lesyt*] left E; leesed H. *thar*] the.
457. *ane*] A. *entremass*] eftremess E; Intermais H.
458. For that subcharge too charging was H; That sowrchargis to chargand wes E.

Richt till thar host thair wayis tais, 460 [Fol. 124 b. C.]
And tald how that thar men war slayñe
So cleyne, that neir eschapit nane.
And quhen thai of the host has herd
How that the dowglaß with thame ferd, 464 When the rest of the English hear of this,
That had thar herbreouris all slayne,
And ruschit als thame-self agañe,
And slew thar lord in-myd thar rowt,
Ther wes nane of thame all sa stowt, 468
That mair will had than till assale
The dowglaß; tharfor till consale
[Thai] ȝeid, and till purpoß haß tañe
Till wend hamward, and haym [ar] gañe; 472 they propose to return home with all speed.
And sped thame swa apon thair way,
That in yngland soyne cu*m*myn ar thai.
The forest left thai standand still;
Till hew it than thai had no will; 476 They left Jedwood forest untouched.
And specialy, quhill the dowglaß
So neir hand by thair nychtbour waß.
And he, that saw thame turn agane,
Persauit weill thair lord ves slañe, 480 Douglas now perceives that the man whom he killed was Richmond himself.
And by the hat that he had tane
He wist it alsua weill; for añe,
That takyn wes, said him suthly,
That the richmond co*m*monly 484 One of the prisoners recognizes Richmond's furred hat.
Wes wount that furrit hat to were.
Than dowglaß blithar wes than ere;

460. *thar*] the. *Richt—thar*] To their great H. *thair*] the EH.
462. *neir*] ner E; there H.
463. *the*] thar. *has*] had EH.
465. *herbreouris*] herbryouris E; herbryours H. *all*] E *om.*
466. *als*] all EH.
469. *had than*] than had E; had them H.
470. *The—tharfor*] Therefore they haue tane H. *till*] to EH.
471. [*Thai* E] He C (*wrongly*). *Thai ȝeid*] That time H.
472. *haym*] hamwart. [*ar* E] are H; is C.
474. *in*] to H.
476. *Till*] To EH.
477. *And*] E *om.*
480. *ves*] wes.
482. *it*] E *om.*; right H. *alsua weill*] well also H.
483. *suthly*] surely H.
484. *the richmond*] Rychmound E; Richemond ay H.

For he weill wist that the richmond,
His felloune fa, wes broucht to ground. 488

Thus did Sir James of Douglas defeat 10,000 foes with only 50 men.

Schir Iames of dowglaß on this viß,
Throu his vorschip and gret empriß,
Defendit worthely the land.
This poynt of weir, I tak on hand, 492
Wes vnd*ir*tane so apertly,
And eschevit richt hardely;
For he stonayit, withouten weir,
The folk that weill ten thousand weir 496
With fifty armyt men, but ma.

I can tell you of two other fights fought by 50 men.

I can als tell ȝow othir twa
Poyntis, that weill eschevit weir
With fifty men; and, but all weir, 500
Thai war done swa richt hardely, 501*
That thai war prisit soueranly
[Fol. 125. C.] Atour all othir poyntis of wer
That in thar tym eschevit wer. 504*

This one was the first.

This wes the first, that sa stoutly 501
Wes broucht till end weill with fifty.

The second was in Galloway, when Sir Edward defeated Aymer St John and 1500 men.

In galloway the tothir fell;
Quhen, as ȝe forrouth herd me tell, 504
Schir Eduard the bryß with fifty
Vencust of saint Iohñe s*chir* am*er*y
And xv hundreth men be tale.

487. *the*] EH *om.*
490. *vorschip*] worschip. *gret*] his EH.
493. *so*] full E; right H.
494. *eschevit*] eschewyt E; encheeued H; *and so in* l. 499.
495. *stonayit*] na stonayit (!) E; astoneyed H. *withouten*] for-owtyn. *weir*] wer E; weere H.
496. *The*] That.
500. *all*] E *om.*
501*—504*. *Not in* E. *Found in* CHJ.
501*. *done—richt*] all done sa H.
502*. *prisit*] praised H.
504*. *eschevit*] encheeued H.
501, 502. H *has*—This was the first: that with fiftie Was brought to end, and sa stoutly.
502. *till*] to EH.
503. *In*] In-to E. *tothir*] other H.
504. *forrouth—me*] heard me before H.
505. *Schir*] How Sir H. *bryss*] bruyss E; Bruce H.
506. *Vencust*] Wencussyt E; Vanquisht H. *amery*] amy (*miswritten for* amery) C; Amery E; Aymery H.
507. *xv*] fifteene H; fyfty E.

The thrid fell in-to Eske dale, 508 The third was in Eskdale,
Quhen that *schir* Iohñe de sowlis waſ against Sir John de Soulis.
[The] gou*er*nour of all that plaſ,
That to *schir* androu the herdclay
With fifty men withset the vay, 512
That had thar in his Cumpany
Thre hundreth horsit Iolely. [Fol. 55. E.]
This *schir* Iohñe, in-to plane melle, But Sir John, having 300 men,
Throu hardyment and sou*er*ane bounte 516 had the best of it.
Vencust thame sturdely ilkañe,
And *schir* androu in hand haſ tañe.
I will nocht reherſ all the manor;
For quha sa lik*is*, thai may heir 520 Young women still sing about it in ballads.
ȝoung wom*en*, quhen thai will play,
Syng it emang thame ilke day.
Thir war the worthy poynt*is* thre,
That, I trow, eu*ir*mar sall be 524
Prisit, quhill men may on thai*m* meyñ.
It is weill worth, forouten weyn, (meany?) It is very fit that the names of such heroes should obtain lasting
That thar namys for eu*ir*mar,
That in thar tyme so worthy war 528 praise.
That men till heir ȝeit haſ dantee
Of thair worschip and gret bounte,
Be lestand ay furth in lovyng;
Quhare he, that is of hevyn the king, 532

508. *in-to*] in-till E. *Eske dale*] Esdaill E; Eskdaile H.
509. *de*] the E; of H. *sowlis*] soullis E; Sowles H.
510. [*The* EH] C *om.*
511. *the*] EH *om.* *herdclay*] hardclay E; Hardeclay H; Herkelay A.
512. *withset*] beset H.
515. *in-to*] in-till.
516. Throu sowerane hardiment that felle E; Through Soueraigne hardement, and bountie H.
517. *Vencust*] Wencussyt E · Vanquisht H.
519. *all*] now H; E *om.*
521. *women*] *miswritten* woman C; wemen E; women H.
522. *emang*] amang. *ilke*] ilk E; euerilk H.
525. *Prisit*] Praised H. *meyn*] mene EH.
529. *dantee*] daynte E; daintie H.
530. *Of*] For E; That H. *gret*] thair EH.
531. *lestand—in*] alway lesting into H. *lovyng*] lowing; (*and in l.* 534).
532. *hevyn the*] hewynnys E; Almightie H.

Bring thame hye vp till hevynnis bliß,
Quhar alway lestand loving iß!

Meanwhile some Englishmen, dwelling beside the Humber,

In-till this tyme that the Rychmond
Wes on this maner broucht to ground, 536
Men of the cost of yngland,
That duelt on hummyr or neirhand,
Gaderit thame a gret menȝhe,

sail in ships towards Scotland. [Fol. 125 b. C.]

And went with schippes to the se, 540
And toward scotland went in hy,
And in the firth com hastely.
Thai wend till haf all thar liking;

They knew that king Robert was absent.

For thai vist richt weill at the king 544
Wes than fer out of the cuntre,
And with him mony of gret bounte.

They sail up the Firth of Forth,

Tharfor in-to the firth com thai,
And endlang furth held thai thar vay 548

and land at Inverkeithing, near Dunfermline.

Quhill thai, besyde Enuerkethyñe,
On vest half, toward dunfermlyñe,
Tuk land, and fast begouth to reif.

The earl of Fife opposes them.

The Erll of fiff and the schirreff 552
Saw till thar cost schippes approchand,
Thai gaderit till defend thair land,
And ay forgane the schippis ay,
As thai salit, thai held thar way, 556
And thoucht till let thame land to tak.
And quhen the schipmen saw thame mak

533. *hye vp*] he wp.
535. *Rubric in* H—How the Bishop of Dvnkeldin syne, Scomfist the shipmen beside Dumfermling. *In-till*] In EH.
538. *hummyr*] humbre E; Homber H.
540. *with*] in EH.
543. *haf*] haf had CH; *but* E *omits* had.
544. *vist*] wyst. *richt*] EH *om.* *at*] that EH.
546. *And*] E *om.*
548. *furth—vay*] It wp held thai E; it held vp their way H.
549. *Enuerkethyne*] Enuerkething E; Innerkething H.
550. *vest*] west. *dunfermlyne*] dunferlyng E; Dumfermling H.
551. *reif*] ryve.
552. *schirreff*] schyrryve.
554. *till*] to EH; *and in l.* 557.
555. *ay forgane*] aforgayn E; they forgane H.
556. *held*] tooke H.

Sic contenanß in sic aray,
Thai said emang thai*m* all that thai 560
Vald nocht let for thame land to ta.
Than to the land thai sped thame swa,
That thai com thair in full gret hy,
And arivit full hardely. 564

The Scottis men saw thair cu*m*myng,
And had of thame sic abasyng,
That thai all sa*m*myn raid thame fra,
And the land letleß leit thame ta. 568

The Scottish host is seized with a panic, though there are 500 men of them.

Thai durst nocht fecht vith thame, for-thi
Thai vithdrew thame all halely;
The quhethir thai var v hundreth ner.
Quhen thai avay thus ridand wer, 572
And na defens begouth to schop,
Of dunkelden the gude bischop,
That men callit willȝame syncler,
Com with a rout in gud manere, 576
I trow on horß thai war sexty.
Hym-self wes armyt Iolely,
And raid apon a stalward steid;
A chemeyr, for till heill his veid, 580
Aboue his armyng had he then;
And als weill armyt ves his men.
The Erll with the *schir*reff met he [Fol. 126. C.]
Awayward with [thar] gret menȝe. 584

But William Sinclair, bishop of Dunkeld, comes up with 60 knights, well armed.

559. *Sic*] Swilk. *in*] and H.
560. *emang*] amang. *all*] H *om.*
567. *sammyn raid*] haill did ryde H.
568. *And*] And to C; *but* EH *omit* to; *see* l. 588. *letless*] but stop H.
571. *var*] war. *hundreth*] hunder.
572. *avay*] away.
573. *schop*] schape E; shape H; *misspelt* scop C.
574. *dunkelden*] dunkeldyn EH. *bischop*] byschap E; Bishop H.
575. *syncler*] the sanctecler E. That William was called of Sincler H.
580. *chemeyr*] chemer E; Chimmer H.
581. *Aboue*] Apon E; Abone H. *armyng*] armour EH.
582. *als—ves*] armyt weill als war E; armed also were H.
583. *with*] and EH.
584. *Awayward*] Awaward C; Awaywart E; Ryding away H. [*thar* E] their H; a C.

He askit thame weill soyn, 'quhat hy
Maid thame till turne so hastely?'
Thai said, thair fais with stalvard hand
Had in sic fusiouñe takyñe land, 588
That thai thoucht thame allout to fele,
And thame to few with thame to dele.

He reproves the earl of Fife for his cowardice,

Quhen the bischop herd it wes sa,
He said, "the king aucht weill to ma 592
Of ȝow, that takis sa weill on hand
In his absens till wer the land!
Certis, gif he gert serwe ȝow weill,
The gilt spuris, richt by the heill, 596
He suld in hy ger hew ȝow fra;
Richt vald with cowardis men did swa.
Quha lufis his lord and his Cuntre,
Turñe smertly now agane with me!" 600

telling him he is a fine guardian of the country,

and ought to have his gilt spurs cut off.

Advice on [illegible]

With that he kest of his Chemer,
And hynt in hand a stalward sper,
And raid toward his fayis in hy.
All turnyt with hym halely; 604
For he had thame repreuit swa,
That of thame all nane vent him fra.
He raid befor thame sturdely,
And thai hym followit sarraly, 608
Quhill that thai com neir approchand
To thar fais that had tane land.

Then the bishop leads his men to the attack in good order.

[Fol. 55 b. E.] And sum war knyt in gud aray,
And sum war set to the forray. 612

The bishop exhorts his men.

The gud bischop, quhen he thame saw,
He said, "lordingis, but dreid or aw
Prek we apon thame hardely;

585. *He*] And.
586. *till*] to EH; *and in* l. 594.
587. *stalvard*] stalwart.
588. *fusiouné*] foysoun. *land*] the land.
594. *the*] his EH.
595. *serwe*] serff E; serue H.
598. *vald*] wald EH; should A.
599. *and*] or.
605. *repreuit*] reprowyt.
606. *vent*] went H; fled E.
608. *hym—sarraly*] followed full manfully H.
612. *set*] went EH.

And we sall haf thame veill lichtly. 616
Se thai vs cum but abaysing,
Sa that we mak heir na stynting,
Thai sall weill soyne discumfit be.
Now dois weill, for men sall se 620
Quha lufis the kyngis mensk to-day!"
Than all to-giddir, in gud aray,
Thai prekit apon thame sturdely.
The bischop, that wes richt hardy, 624
And mekill and stark, raid forrouth ay.
Than in a frusche assemblit thai,
And thai that, at the first metyng
Of speris, feld so sair sowing, 628
Vayndist and vald haf beyn avay;
Toward thar schippis in hy held thai,
And thai com chassand felonly,
And slew thame sa dispitfully, 632
That all the feldis strowit war
Of Inglis men that slayn wes thar;
And thai that ȝeit held vnslayn
Pressit thame to the se agane. 636
And scottis men, that chassit swa,
Slew all that thai mycht our-ta.
Bot thai that fled [ȝeit], nocht-for-thi,
Swa till thar schippis can thame hy, 640
And in sum bargis sa feill can ga,
For thair fais thame chasit swa,

The bishop and his men set on the English, [Fol. 126 b. C.]

who retreat to their ships.

Many English are slain;

but some get away.

616. *veill*] wele. *lichtly*] hastely H.
617. *Se thai*] Gif they see H.
620. *sall*] soyn sall C; *but* EH *omit* soyn. *See* l. 619.
625. *forrouth*] fordward H.
628. *Of—feld*] Feld off the speris E; Felt of their speares H.
629. *Vayndist*] Wandyst E; Vanisht H; Vanquisht A. *vald*] wald.
630. *thar*] the.
631. *com chassand*] thaim chassyt E them chased H.
632. *sa*] sua E; full H. *dispitfully*] despitously EH.
634. *wes*] war.
635. *So* CH. *that ȝeit*] ȝeyt that.
636. *thame*] E *om.*
638. *that*] that euir.
639. [*ȝeit* E] yet H; C *om.*
640. *can*] gan.
641. *bargis*] barge E; baittes H. *can*] gan.
642. And thair fayis hastyt thaim sua.

That thai ourtummyllit, and the men
That war thar-in all drownit then. 644

One Englishman did a great feat;

Thar did ane yngliß man, perfay,
A weill gret strynth, as I herd say.

he seized a Scotchman who was handling him hotly,

For quhen he chassit wes to the bat,
A scottis man, that hym handlyt hat, 648
He hynt [than] by the armys twa;
[And], war him weill or war him wa,

threw him over his back, carried him off, and threw him into a boat.

He evin apon his bak hym flang,
And with hym till the bat can gang, 652
And kest him in, all magre his.
This wes ane weill gret strynth, I wiß.
The yngliß men, that wan avay,
Till thair schippes in hy vent thai, 656
And salit hayme, angry and wa
That thai had beyn reboytit swa.

How gude king robert the bruce com hame agane fra Irland.

Nearly 500 men were killed, besides those who were drowned.

Qwhen that the schipmen on this viß
Wes discumfit, as I deuiß, 660
The Bischop, that so weill hym bare
That he all hertit that wes thar,
Wes ȝeit in-to the fechting-sted,
Quhar that v hundreth neir weȝ ded, 664
Forouten thame that drownyt war.
[Fol. 127. C.] And, quhen the feld wes spulȝeit bare,

643. *ourtummyllit*] ourtumblyt.
644. *thar-in*] thar. *all*] war E; were H.
645. *perfay*] that day H.
646. *I herd*] Ik hard.
647. *to the*] till his.
649. [*than* E] vp H; hym C.
650. [*And* EH] For C.
651. *flang*] *so* E; flang *or* slang C; slang H.
652. *till*] to E; in H. *can*] gan.
654. *ane*] A.
655. *wan*] went H. *avay*] away.
656. *Till*] To E; Toward H. *vent*] went EH.
658. *reboytit*] rebutyt E; rebuted H.
Rubric in H—The hame-come of King Robert Out of Ireland fra Sir Edward.
660. *Wes*] War.
662. *wes thar*] thar war. And had comforted all that were there H.
663. *the*] E *om.*
664. *that v*] neere twa H. *hundreth*] hundir. *neir*] well H. *wes*] war.

Thai went all hayme to thar repare.
To the bischop is fallen faire, 668 **The bishop did a great feat.**
That throu his priß and his bounte
Haß eschevit sa gret Iournee;
The kyng tharfor, ay fra that day, **Therefore the king always called him 'his own bishop.'**
Hym lufit, honorit, and prisit ay, 672
And held hym in-to sic daynte,
That 'his awne Bischop' him callit he.
Thus thai defendit the Cuntre
Apon bath halfis the scottis Se, 676
Quhill that the king wes out of land,
That than, as I haue borñe on hand,
Throu all Irland his courß had maid,
And agane to Cragfergus raid. 680
And quhen his brothir, as he var king, **When Sir Edward has all Ireland at his command,**
Had all erischry at his bidding,
And halely vlcister alsua,
He buskit hame his way to ta. 684 **king Robert returns to Scotland,**
Of his men that war mast hardy
And prisit of all cheuelry
With his brothir gret part left he, **leaving some men behind him.**
And syne he went on to the se. 688
Quhen thair levis on athir party
Wes tane, he vent to schip in hy.
The Erll thomas with him he had; **Sir Thomas Murray goes with him.**
Thai rasit salys but abaid, 692
And in the land of gallowa, **They arrive safely in Galloway.**
Forouten perell, arivit thai. 694

668. *is*] is it H.
670. *Hass—gret*] Wes eschewyt swilk a E; Encheeued sik a great H.
672. *honorit—prisit*] and prisyt and honoryt E; and praised and honoured H.
673. *into sic*] in suylk.
676. *the*] of the H.
677. *land*] the land H.
678. *I*] Ik.
681. *var*] war.
682. *erischry—his*] the Irschery at E; the Irishry at H.
683. *halely*] haly. *vloister*] wlaistre E; Vlsister H; Ulster A.
684. *ta*] ga H.
686. *of all*] mast of E; als of H.
688. *he—to*] is went him to E; is went vnto H.
690. *vent*] went. *to*] to the.
693. *the*] E *om.*
694. *Forouten*] For-owt E; Without H.

[BOOK XVII.]

The vynnyng of the toun of berwik be the scottis men throu the menys of sym of spaldyn.

The Scottish lords gladly welcome king Robert on his return.

The lordis of the land wes fayñe
Quhen thai wist he wes cu*m*my*n* agane,
And till him went in full gret hy;
And he resauit thame richt gladly, 4
And maid a fest and gladsum cher.
And thai so wond*ir*ly blith wer
Of his come, that na toung my*ch*t say;
Gret fest and fair till him maid thai. 8
Quhar-eu*ir* he raid, all the Cuntre
Gad*er*it in daynte hym to se.
Gret gladschip than wes in the land;
All than wes wonnyne till his hand. 12

[Fol. 127 b. C.] Fra red*is* swyr till orkynnay
[Fol. 56. E.] Wes nocht of scotland fra his fay,
He possesses all Scotland except Berwick.
Outaken berwik it allañe.
That tyme thar-in wonnyt añe, 16
That capitane wes of the touñe.

The captain of Berwick is hated by the Scotch.

All scottis men in suspiciouñe
He held, and tretit thame richt Ill.
He had ay at thame hevy will, 20
And had thame fast at vnd*ir* ay.

1. *wes*] war EH.
4. *richt gladly*] hamlyly E; tenderly H.
5. *a*] thaim EH.
6. And then sa wonder blyth they were H.
7. *toung*] man. *come—toung*] comming, as man H.
8. *and—him*] to him for-thy H.
11. *gladschip*] gladnesse H.
13. *redis swyr*] the red swyr E; the red Swyre H. *till orkynnay*] to orknay E; vnto Orknay H.
20. *at*] to EH. *hevy*] right ill H.
21. *fast*] all H.

Quhill that it fell, apon a day,
That a burgeß, sym of spaldyng, — Sim of Spalding,
Thoucht it wes richt añe angry thing — 24
Ay swagat till reboytit be;
Tharfor in-till his hert thoucht he,
That he vald slely mak cowyñe
With the marschall, quhais cosyñe — 28 who had married the marshal's cousin,
He had weddit on-till his viff;
And as he thoucht, he did beliff.
Letteris till him he send in hy
With a trast man all preualy, — 32
And set hym tym to cum at nycht — tells him to come at night to the Cowport, stealthily
With ledderis and gud men & vicht
Till the kow-ȝet all preuely,
And bad him hald his trast treuly; — 36
And he suld meit thame at the vall;
For his vach thar that nycht suld fall.
Quhen the marschall the letteris saw, — The marshal reads the letter,
He vmbethoucht him than a thraw; — 40
For he vist, by him-selvin he
Micht nocht of mycht na power be
For till eschewe so gret a thing;
And gif he tuk till his helping, — 44
Ane or othir suld wrethit be.
Tharfor richt till the king ȝeid he, — and consults king Robert.
And schawit him betuix thai twa
The lettir, and the charge alsua. — 48

24. *it*] that It EH. *ane*] EH *om.* *angry*] heauie H.
25. *Ay swagat*] Swagate ay E; On sik sort H. *till*] to EH. *reboytit*] rebutyt E; rebuted H.
27. *vald*] wald. *cowyne*] covyne E; conuyne H.
29. *on-till*] till E; to H.
33. *at*] A E; ane H.
34. *gud—vicht*] with gud men wicht.
38. *vach*] walk E; watch H. *his—nycht*] on that night his watch H.
39. *letteris*] lettre E; letters H.
41. *he*] that he C; *but* E *omits* that. *vist*] wist. *him-selvin*] himselfe that H.
42. *na*] no E; nor H.
43. *eschewe*] escheyff E; encheeue H.
45. One, another sould wraithed be H; E *has*—Ane othyr lett*ir* suld writtyn be (!)
46. *till*] to EH.
47. *him*] It him.

Quhen [that] the king herd that this trañe
Wes spokin in-to sic Certane,
That him thoucht thar-in [na] fantyß,

The king tells him he has done well.

He said him, "certis, thou vroucht haß viß, 52
That thou discou*er*it first till me;
For gif thou had discou*er*it [thee]

[Fol. 128. C.]

Till my nevo, the Erll thomas,
Thou suld displeß the lord douglaß; 56
And him alsua in the Contrer.
Bot I sall wirk on sic maner,
That thou at thine entent sall be,
And haue of nane of thame magre. 60

"I bid thee keep to the agreement.

Thou sall tak kep weill to thi day,
And with thame that thou purcheß may
At ewin thou sall enbuschit be
In dwnß park; bot be prewe. 64

I will send Murray and Douglas after thee."

And I sall ger the Erll thomas,
And the lord alsua of dowglaß,
Athir with añe quheyñe of men,
Be thair till do as thou sall ken." 68
The marschall than, but mair delay,
Tuk leif, and held on furth h*is* vay,
And held the spek preue and still,

The marshal, with some men of Lothian, keeps his tryst.

Quhill the day that wes set him till. 72
Than of the best of lowdyañe
He with him till his trist haß tañe;
For s*chir*reff thar-of than wes he.

49. [*that* E] CH *om.*
50. *Wes—sic*] Spokyn wes In-till.
51. [*na* EH] no A; C *om.*
52. *viss*] wiss.
53. *thou*] has E; hes H. *first*] the fryst E; it first H. *till*] to EH.
54. [*thee* H] the E; hye C.
55. *Till*] To EH.
61. *thi*] thy H; the E.
63. *ewin*] Euen H.
64. *dwnss*] dwns E; Dunce H. *prewe*] priue E; priuie H.
67. *ane quheyne*] A sowme E; a certaine H.
68. *till*] to EH.
69. *than*] E *om.*
70. *on furth*] furth on EH.
71. *the*] his EH.
73. *Rubric in* H—The winning of Barvike the feghting That was in the toun at the winning.
74. *with*] E *om.*

Till dwns park with his menȝe 76
He com at evyn, all preuely.
And syne, with a gude Cumpany,
Soyne eft*ir* come the Erll thomas,
That wes met with the lord dowglaß; 80
A richt fair Cumpany thai war,
Quhen thai war met to-gidd*ir* thar.
And quhen the marschall the cowyne
Till bath the lordis lyne be lyne 84
Had tald, thai went on furth thar vay;
Fer fra the toune thar horß left thai.
Till mak it schort, swa thai vroucht than
That, but seying of ony man, 88
Outane sym of spaldyne allañe,
That gert the deid be vndirtane,
Thai set thair ledd*er*is to the wall;
And, but persaving, com vp all; 92
And held thame i*n* ane nwke preue,
Quhill at the nycht suld passit be.
And ordanit, that the mast party
Of [thair] men suld gang sarraly 96
With thar lordis, and hald a staill,
And the remanand suld all haill
Scaill throu the toun, and tak and sla
The men that thai mycht our-ta. 100
Bot soyn thar ordinans brak thai;
For, als soyn as it dawit day,
The twa part of thair men and ma,

Murray and Douglas follow him.

The marshal tells them of the plot.

They all come unseen to the town-wall,

climb over it,

and hide within the town.

[Fol. 128 *b*. C.]

At daybreak,

76. *dwns*] duns E; Dunce H.
77. *all*] full H; E *om*.
83. *cowyne*] covyn E; conuyne H.
84. *Till*] To EH; *and in* l. 87.
85. *on furth*] furth on EH. *vay*] way.
87. *thai vroucht*] wroucht thai EH.
90. *the*] that.
92. *vp*] wp E; in H.
93. *ane nwke*] A nuk.
94. *at*] that EH.
96. [*thair* EH] *th*ai C. *sarraly*] sikkerly H.
97. *staill*] *so* H; stale E.
100. *The*] All the CH; *but* E *omits* All.
101. *thar*] this E; his H.
102. *dawit*] dawen was H.
103. *part*] part*is*.

they rush from their hiding-place,

All scalit, throu the toune to-ga. 104
So gredy war thai till the gude,
That thai ran richt als thai var woude,

and slay many.

And sesit housis and slew men;
And thai, that saw thair fais then 108
Cum apon thame so suddanly,

The Englishmen rally.

Throu-out the toun thai rasit the cry,
And schot to-gidder heir and thair.

[Fol. 56b. E.]

And ay, as thai assemblit war, 112
Thai vald abyde and mak debat.
Had thai beyn warnyt, weill I wat,
Thai suld haf sald thair dedis der;
For thai war gud men, and thai wer 116
Fer ma than thai war at thame soucht;
Bot thai war scalit sa at thai moucht
On na maner assemblit be.
Thar wes gret melleis twa or thre; 120

The Scotch put the English to flight.

Bot scottis men so weill thame bar,
That thair fais ay ruschit war,
And cumrayit at the last war swa,
That thai haly the bak can ta. 124

Some escape.

Sum gat the castell, bot nocht all,
And sum ar slyddin our the wall,
And sum war in-to handis tañe,
And sum war in the bargane slañe. 128
On this viſ thame contenit thai,
Quhill it wes neir noyne of the day;

Those that are in the castle,

Than thai that in the castell war,
And othir that fled to thame thar, 132

104. *to-ga*] gan ga E; can ga H; *see* l. 575.
105. *till*] to. *war—till*] for to get H.
106. *var*] war.
107. *sesit*] sieged H.
113. *vald*] wald.
115. *dedis*] liues H.
117. *ma*] *so* E; may C. *at*] that.
118. *sa*] E *om.*
120. *wes*] war.
123. *cumrayit*] contraryt E; disrayed H.
124. *can*] gan. *haly—bak*] all hail the flight H.
127. *in-to*] in-till.
128. *in the*] in-till.
130. *noyne*] none.

That war a richt gret Cumpany, — being numerous,
Quhan thai the baner saw sympilly
Swa standand, stuffit with sa quhoyn,
Thar ȝettis haf thai opnyt soyn, 136 — sally out.
And yschit on thame hardely.
Than Erll thomas, that wes worthy, — Murray and Douglas meet [Fol. 129. C.] them.
And als the gude lord of douglaſ,
With the few folk that vith thamẽ waſ, 140
Met thame stoutly with vapnys seir.
Thar men mycht se, that had beyn neir,
Men abaundoune thamẽ hardely.
The ynglis men faucht cruelly, 144 — There is hard fighting.
And with all mychtis can thame payne
Till rusche the scottis men agane.
I trow thai had swa done, perfay,
For thai war fewar fer than thai, 148
Gif it ne had beyn ane new maid knycht, — Sir William of Keith and Gaulistoun performs wonders.
That till his name schir vilȝhamẽ hicht
Of keth, and of the gawlistoune
He hecht, throu differens of sur-noune, 152
That bair hym sa [rycht] weill that day,
And put him till sa hard assay,
And sic dyntis about him dang,
That, quhar he saw the thikast thrang, 156
He prikit with sa mekill mycht,
And sua enforsaly can ficht,
That he maid till his menȝhe vay;

134. *baner*] baner*is* E; Baners H. *saw*] sa H. *sympilly*] simpilly H; simply E.
135. *Swa standand*] Standand and E; Saw stand, and H. *sa*] so H; a E. *quhoyn*] wheene H.
136. *opnyt*] apnyt.
139. *als*] *follows* lord *in* EH.
143. *thame*] E *om.*
145. *can*] gan.
146. *Till*] To EH.
149. *Gif—had*] Had it not H. *ane*] A.
150. *vilȝhame*] wilȝam E; William H.
151. *keth*] keyth E; Keith H. *the*] E *om.* *gawlistoune*] gallistoun E; Gallistoun H.
152. *sur-noune*] *miswritten* surrenoune C; sournome E; Surnoun H.
153. *sa*] H *om.* [*rycht* E] right H; C *om.*
157. *prikit*] pressit E; preassed H.
158. *enforsaly*] enforslye E; enforcedly H.

[And] thai that neir war by hym ay 160
Dang on thair fais sa hardely,
At last the English give way, and escape to the castle.
That thai haf tane the bak haly,
And till the castell held thair vay,
And at gret myscheiff enterit thai. 164
For thai war pressit thair so fast,
That thai feill lesit of the last;
Bot thai that enterit, nocht-for-thi,
Sparit thair ȝettis hastely, 168
And in hy to the wallis ran,
For thai war nocht all sekir than.

Thus was the town taken.
THE touñe wes takyn on this viß,
With gret vorschipe and hye empriß; 172
And all the gud that thai thar fand
Was sesit smertly in-till hand.
Much spoil is found in it.
Wittaill thai fand in gret fusiouñe,
And all that fell till stuff of touñe; 176
Thai kepit that fra distroying,
And syne haß vord send to the king.
And he wes of that tithing blith,
The king advances to Berwick.
And sped him thiddirward full swith. 180
And as he throu the Cuntre raid,
[Fol. 129 b. C.] Men gaderit till him, quhill he had
A mekill rout of worthy men.
And the folk that war wonand then 184
In-till the merß and tevidaill,
And in the forest alß all haill,

160. [*And* EH] *Th*at C. *thai*] E *om*. *by*] to H.
162. *the*] thair. *haly*] in hy EH.
163. *thair vay*] the way.
166. *feill lesit*] left mony H.
168. *Sparit*] Closed H.
171. *Rubric in* H—Here sent they word to the King, That came to the Castell yeelding. *viss*] wiss.
172. *With*] Throu E; Through H. *empriss*] emprise H; priss E.
173. *thai*] E *om*.
174. *smertly intill*] hailly in their H.
175. *fusioune*] foysoun.
176. *till*] to. *fell—of*] serued to stuffe a H.
177. *Thai—that*] That kepyt thai EH.
178. *vord*] word.
180. *full*] E *om*.

And the Est end of lowdiañe,
Befor [that] the king com, ar gañe 188 Many other Scotchmen advance against the town.
To berwik with a stalward hand,
That nane that wes that tyme wonand
On ȝond half tweid durst weill apeir.
And thai that in the castell weir, 192
Quhen thai thair fais in sic plente
Saw forrouth thame assemblit be, The English are discouraged,
And had na hope of reskewyng,
Thai war abasit in gret thing. 196
Bot thai the castell, nocht-for-thi, but hold the castle for five days more,
Held thai fiff dayis sturdely,
Syne ȝald it on the sext day, when they yield.
And till thair Cuntre syne vent thai. 200
Thus wes the castell and the toune
Till scottis men possessioune
Broucht; and soyn eft*ir* the king
Com ridand with his gad*er*ing 204 The king enters Berwick.
Till berwik, and in the casteill
He herbryit is, bath fair and weill,
And all his gret lordis hym by.
The remanand all comonly 208
Till herbry in the toune ar gañe.
The king haſ than till Consell tañe, He determines not to destroy the walls,
That he vald nocht brek douñe the vall,
Bot castell, and the toune with-all, 212
Stuff weill with men and vith vittaill [Fol. 57. E.]
And alkynd othir apparaill

187. *And*] And in C; *but* EH *omit* in. *lowdians*] lothiane.
188. [*that* EH] C *om.* *ar*] and ar C; *but* EH *omit* and.
189. *a*] sa.
191. *half*] side H.
194. *forrouth*] before H.
198. *thai*] *so* CE; H *om.* *sturdely*] right sturdely H.
199. *ȝald*] ȝauld.
200. *vent*] went.
201. *Rubric in* H—Here Walter Stewart took of the King Baith Town and Castell in keeping.
205. *Till*] To EH.
206. *herbryit is*] wes herbrid EH.
207. *gret*] E *om.*
208. *all comonly*] commonaly.
209. *in*] till.
210. *till*] to EH.
211. *vald*] wald.
214. *alkynd*] alkyn.

but to garrison the castle.

That mycht availl, or ȝeit mysteir
Till hald castell or touñe of wer. 216

Walter, steward of Scotland,

And valter, steward of scotland,
That than ves ȝoung and avenand,

the king's son-in-law,

And sone-in-law wes to the king,
Had sa gret will and sic ȝarnyng 220

undertakes to guard Berwick.

Neirhand the marchis for till be,
At berwik to ȝemsall tuk he;
And resauit of the kyng the touñe,
Bath the castell and [the] dwngeouñe. 224

Bruce sends men on a foray into England. [Fol. 130. C.]

The king gert men of gret nobillay
Ryde in-till ynglande, for till pray,
That broucht out gret plente of fee;
And sum cuntreis trewit he 228

He garrisons the town, and victuals it for a year.

[For] vittale, [that in] gret foysouñe
He gert bring smertly to the touñe,
Swa that bath toune and castell war
Weill stuffit for añe ȝeir and mair. 232

Besides archers, townsmen, and crossbow-men,

The gude steward of scotland then
Send for his frendis and his men,
Quhill he had vith him, but archer*is*,
But burgeß and but oblester*is*, 236

Walter has 500 men with him;

Fiff hundreth men wicht and worthy,
That armys bar of Ancistry.

also John Crab,

Iohñe crab, a flemyne, als had he

215. *ȝeit*] yet H; ell*is* E.
216. *Till*] To EH.
217. *valter*] walt*ir*.
218. *ves*] wes. *avenand*] vail-yeand H.
219. *sone—law*] sonne in law H; syne in laucht (!) E.
222. *At*] That EH. *to ȝemsall*] to ȝemsell E; in keeping then H.
224. *Bath*] Bath of C (*but* of *is not wanted*); And EH. [*the* E] CH *om.*
225. *nobillay*] Nobillay H; noblay E.
226. *till*] to EH. *pray*] take Prey H.
227. *That*] And H.
228. *trewit*] tholyt. And with some Countries trewes tooke he H.
229. [*For* EH] And C. [*that is* EH] in-to C.
231. *toune—castell*] castell and toun.
232. *ane*] *so* CH; A E. *and*] or H.
236. And but burdowys and aw-blaster*is* E; And but Burgesses and Aulisters H.
238. *armys bar*] bar armys EH.
239. *flemyne*] flemyng EH. C *badly puts* als *before* a.

That wes of gret subtilite, 240 a Flemish engineer.
Till ordane till mak aparale
For till defend and till assale
Castell of wer or than Cite,
That nane slear mycht fundin be. 244
He gert engynis and tra*m*mys ma, John Crab makes various engines of war;
And purvait gret fyre alsua;
Spryngald*is* and schot*is* on seir maner*is*,
That till defend castell affer*is*, 248
He purvait in-till full gret wañe,
Bot gynis for crakkis had he nane. but he had no cannon,
For in scotland ȝeit than, but wene,
The oyß of thame had nocht beyn sene. 252 as the use of them was then unknown in Scotland.
And quhen the toune apon this viß
Wes stuffit, as I heir deuiß,
The nobill king his vay haß tañe,
And ryddin toward lowdiañe; 256
And valter steward, that ves stout, Walter Steward remains in Berwick.
He left in berwik with his rout,
And ordanit fast for Apparaill,
Till defend gif men vald assaill. 260

Qwhen till the king of Ingland When the king of England hears that he has lost Berwick,
Wes tald how that, with stalward hand,
Berwik wes tane, and stuffit syne

240. *gret subtilite*] sa gret sutelte EH.
241. *till* (2)] and E; and to H.
245. *trammys*] tra*m*mys *or* cra*m*mys C; cranys *or* tranys E; Traines H. (*The word is uncertain.*)
246. *gret*] *so* CE; great H. *Perhaps it should be* grek (Greek); *which might have been written* grec, *and read as* gret.
247. *Spryngaldis*] Fire-galdes H. *schotis*] schot E; shot H.
248. *till*] to EH.
249. *wane* EH] *badly spelt* vayne C.
250. *gynis*] gynnys E; gunnes H. *nane* EH] nayne C.
251. *wene* EH] weyne C.
252. *oyss*] wss E; vse H. *sene* E] seene H; seyne C.
253. *And*] E *om.* *viss*] wiss.
254. *I*] Ik.
255. *vay*] way.
256. *lowdiane*] lowthiane.
257. *valter*] walt*ir*.
258. *in*] at.
260. *Till*] To EH. *vald*] wald.
261. *Rubric in* H—The King of England his power Gaddered to siege Barvike but weere. *till*] to EH.

With men and vittale and armyne, 264
He wes anoyit gretumly,
And gert assembill hastely
His consale, and haſ tane to rede
[Fol. 120 b. C.] That he his host wald thidd*ir* leid; 268
he determines to besiege it, And, with all mycht that he my*ch*t get,
To the toune añe assege set,
and to intrench his army outside it, And [ger] dik thame so stalwardly,
That, quhill thame likit thair to ly, 272
Thai suld fer out the trastar be.
And gif the men of the Cuntre
With strynth of men vald thame assale
At thair dyk*is* in-to Battale, 276
that the Scotch might not dare attack him. Thai suld avantage haue gretly;
And thoucht all suth, for gret foly
War till assaill in-to fechting
At his dikis so stark a thing. 280
This decided on, he collects his host. Quhen his consell on this maneir
Wes tañe, he gert bath fer and neir
His host haly assemblit be;
A gret folk than with him had he. 284
Earl Thomas of Lancaster goes with him, Of la[*n*]cister the Erll thomaſ,
That syne wes sanctit, as men sais,
In-till his Cumpany wes thar,
and other earls And all the Erllis als that war 288
In yngland worthy for to ficht,

264. *vittale—armyne*] wictaill of armyn E; armour and vittaile fyne H.
265. *anoyit*] anoyit richt C; *but* EH *omit* richt.
266. *assembill*] be summound H. *hastely*] all halely.
268. *wald*] *so* CH; will E.
270. *So* E; C *has* he set *for* set (*wrongly*); H *has*—Vnto the toun a Siege set.
271. [*ger*] *such must be the reading;* gert CE; gart H (*all wrong*).
273. *trastar*] traister E; surer H.
275. *men*] folke H.
278. *And—suth*] Thocht all scottis E; Although forsooth H. *for*] it H.
281. *his*] this.
283. *host*] ost E; men H.
284. *A*] Ane. *folk*] Oast H.
285. *lancister*] longcastell EH *miswritten* lacister C.
286. *sanctit*] sanct EH.
287. *In-till*] In.
288. *als that*] that als.

And baronis als of mekill mycht — and barons.
With him to that assege had he;
And gert the schippes by the se — 292 Several ships sail thither at the same time.
Bring schot and othir apparale,
With gret varnysing of vittale.
To berwik with all this menȝe,
With his vittalis arayit, cõme he; — 296
And till gret lordis, ilkane syndri,
Ordanit añe felde for thar herbry.
Than men mycht se soyne palȝeonis — So many tents are pitched round
Be stentit on syndry fassownys, — 300 Berwick, that they form a town.
So feill, that thai a toune maid thair
Mair than bath toune and castell war.
On othir half syne, on the se,
The schippis com in sic plente, — 304 The ships arrive.
Vith vittale, armyng, and vith men,
That all the havyn wes stoppit then.
And quhen thai that war in the toune
Saw thair fais in sic foysouñe — 308
By land and se cum sturdely,
Thai, as wicht men and richt worthy, — The Scotch prepare for
Schupe thamẽ for till defend thar stede, — [Fol. 181. C.] defence.
That thai in auentur of dede — 312
Suld put thame, or than rusche agañe
Thar fais; for thair capitane
Tretit thame sa lusumly, — They are fond of their captain.
And thar-with-all the mast party — 316
Of thame that armyt with hym wer — [Fol. 87 b. E.]
War of his blude, and sib men ner;

292. *the*] his.
294. *With*] And EH. *varnysing*] warnysone E; Garnisoun als H.
295. *this*] his.
296. *With* E] With all C; And with H. *vittalis*] bataillis. H *has*—And with his battels arriued came he.
298. *ane*] A.
299. *Than*] That E. *se soyne*] sone se E; see their H. *palȝeonis*] pailȝownys E; Pauilliouns H.
300. *on*] of.
301. *So—toune*] That thai A toune all sone.
311. *for till*] soone to H; to E.
315. *lusumly*] lufiely E; louingly H.
318. *and*] or H. *men*] him.

Or ellis thai war his allye.
Of sic confort men mycht thaim se, 320
And of sa richt fair contenyng,
None are afraid. As nane of thame had abasing.
On dayis arayit weill war thai,
And on the nycht weill wachit ay. 324
They watch for 6 days, unassailed. Weill sex dais thai swa abaid,
That thai na full gret bargane maid.

How valter steward ves assaiȝeit in berwik be the kyng of Ingland.

In-till this tym that I tell here,
That thai withouten bargane wer, 328
The English intrench themselves. The Inglis-men sa closit had
Thar host with dikis at thai maid,
That thai war strynthit gretumly.
Syne with all handis besaly 332
Thai schupe thame with thar apparale
Thame of the toune for till assale.
On the Eve of the Nativity of the Virgin, Sept. 7, 1319, the English And on our ladeis evin mary,
That bare the byrth that all can by, 336
That men callis hir natiuite,
Soyn in the mornyng men mycht se
The ynglis host Arme thame in hy
display their banners, And display baneris sturdely, 340
And assemmyll till thar baner*is*
With Instrum*en*tis on seir maner*is*,

319. *thai*] E *om.* *his allye*] his elye E; of his ally H.
320. *confort*] comfort EH.
323. *arayit*] armyt E; armed H.
324. *wachit*] walkyt E; watched H.
325. *thai swa*] sua thai.
326. *thai*] E *om.* *maid*] haid E; had H.
327. *Rubric from* C. H *has*—
How Englishmen dyked them about,
And syne went to the Siege but dout.
330. *at*] that EH.
335. *on*] of. *ladeis evin*] ladys ewyn E; Ladies Euen H.
336. *can*] gan.
340. *display*] displayit.
341. *till*] to EH; *and in* ll. 352, 360.
342. *on*] of.

As scaffatis, ledder*is*, and couer*yng*ie,
Pyk*is*, howis, and ek staff-slyng*is*; 344 and advance with all their apparatus of siege.
Till ilk lord and his battale
Wes ordanit quhar he suld assale.
And thai within, quhen that thai saw
[That] menȝe raynge thame swa on raw, 348 The Scotch assemble at their posts.
Till thar ward*is* thai went in hy,
That war stuffit richt stalwardly
With stanys, schot, and othir thing,
That nedit till thair defending; 352
And in-to sic maner abaid [Fol. 121 b. C.]
Thair fais that till assayl thame maid.
Quhen thai without war all redy,
Thai trumpit till añe sawt in hy; 356 Trumpets sound to the assault.
And ilk man with his apparale,
Quhar he suld be, vent till assale.
Till Ilk kyrneill that wes thair
Archeris till schute assignit war. 360 Archers are sent forward.
And quhen on this viß thai war bouñe,
Thai went in hy toward the touñe,
And fillit dykis richt hastely.
Syne to the wallis hardely 364 The assailants try to plant their ladders,
Thai went with ledder*is* that thai had;
Bot thai so gret defens haß maid,
That war abovin apon the wall,
That [oft] ledder*is* and men with-all 368 which are thrown down.
Thai gert fall flatlynges to the grounde.
Than men mycht se in litill stound

343. *scaffatis*] scaffaldis E; Scaffolds H. *couerynyis*] couering E; Couerings H.
344. *ek staff-slyngis*] with staf-slyng.
348. [*That* E] Thai C; Tha H. *menȝe*] men H.
351. *schot*] & schot.
354. *till—thame*] to them sailyie H.
356. *till—sawt*] till A salt E; to the assault H.
358. *vent*] went EH.
363. *richt*] E *om.*
364. *wallis*] wall ry*cht*.
366. *defens hass*] defend that.
368. [*oft* E] baith H; *miswritten* of C.
370. *in*] in a.

Men assalȝeand richt [hardely],
Dressand vp ledderis douchtely, 372
And sum on ledderis pressand war.
Bot thai that on the wall ves thar
Till all perellis can abandoune
Thame, till thair fais war doungyn douñe. 376

The besieged are in great danger,

At gret myschef defendit thai
Thair toune; for, gif we suth sall say,

the walls being very low.

The vallis of the toune than wer
Sa law, that a man with a sper 380
Micht strik añe othir [vp in] the face.
And the schot als so thik thar was
That it wes wonder for till se.

Walter Steward rides round continually.

Walter steward, with a menȝe, 384
Raid ay about, for to se quhar
That for till help mast myster war;
And quhar men pressit mast, he maid
Succoure till his that myster had. 388

The town is attacked at all points.

The mekill folk that wes vithout
Had enveronyt the touñe about
Swa that na part of it wes fre.
[Thar] mycht men assailȝeouris se 392
Abandoune thame richt hardely;
And the defendouris douchtely
Vith all thar mychtis can thame payñe
[Fol. 132. C.] Till put thair fais forß agañe. 396
On this viß thame contenit thai

371. *richt*] E *om.* [*hardely* EH] hardy C.
372. *Dressand*] Preassing H.
373—376. H *has two differing lines here*—And them abone defending well, Tumbling them downe to their vnseill.
374. *ves*] war.
375. *can*] gan.
376. *doungyn*] dongyn.
377. *At — myschef*] With great annoy H.
381. [*vp in* H] wp in E; in-to C; *see* l. 731.
383. *wes*] war.
386. *till*] to EH.
388. *till his*] to them H.
389. *mekill*] mony H.
392. [*Thar* E] Their H; That C. *assailȝeouris*] the assailiaris.
395. *can*] gan.
396. *forss*] force H; with force E.
397. *viss*] wiss.

Quhill noyne wes passit of the day;
Than thai that in the schippes war
Ordanit a schip vith full gret far 400
Till cum with all hir Apparale
Richt to the vall, for till assale.
[Till myd-mast wp thair bat thai drew,]
With Armyt men tharin enew; 404
A brig thai had, for till lat fall
Richt fra the bat apon the vall.
Vith bargis by hir can thai row,
And pressit thame full fast to tow 408
Hir by the brighouß to the wall;
On that entent thai set thame all.
Thai broucht hir quhill scho com veill neir;
Than mycht men se on seir maner 412
Sum men defend, and sum assale
Full besaly with gret trawale.
Thai of the toune so weill thame bare,
That the schipmen sa handillit war 416
That thai the schip on na maner
Micht ger cum till the vall so neir
That thair fall-brig mycht reik thar-till.
So lang abaid thai fechtand still 420
Quhill that scho ebbit on the ground;
Than mycht men, in a litill stound,
Se thame be fer of war cowyne

The besiegers prepare a ship,

in which they lift up a boat, full of men, half-mast high.

The ship approaches the wall,

but cannot get so near as to let fall their drawbridge from the boat to the wall.

[Fol. 56. E.]

398. *noyne*] none E; Noone H.
400. *vith*] with EH.
401. *Till*] To EH.
403. And in that schip thai maid gret glew C; Till myd mast wp thair bat thai drew E; To the mid Mast their bate they drew H.
407. *can*] gan. *hir—row*] they can her tow H.
408. *thame—tow*] her right fast to row H. *full*] rycht EH.
409. *Hir by*] Beside H.
411. *veill*] well.
412. *seir*] sic.
414. *gret trawale*] hard battaile H.
415. *So in* CH; With in sa stoutly thai thaim bar E.
416. *handillit*] handlyt E; handled H.
418. *cum—vall*] to cum the wall E; come to the wall H.
419. *reik*] reeke H; neych E.
420. *So in* CH; For oucht thai mycht, gud or ill E.
423. *cowyne*] conuyne H.

Than thai war eir, that war hir In. 424

The tide ebbs, and the ship is left aground.

And quhen the se wes ebbit sa,
That men all dry till hir mycht ga,
Out of the toune yschit in hy
Till hir a weill gret Cumpany, 428
And fyre till hir has kendlyt soyne.

The ship is burnt.

In-till schort tyme swa haf thai doñe,
That thai in fyre has gert hir [bryn],
And sum war slayn that var hir In; 432
And sum fled and avay ar gane.

The Scotch capture a clever engineer,

Ane engynour thair haf thai tañe,
That sleast wes of that mister
That men vist, outhir fer or ner; 436

and retreat into the town,

[Fol. 133 b. C.]

only just in time.

In-to the toun syne enterit thai.
It fell thame happely, perfay,
That thai gat in so hastely;
For thair come a gret Cumpany 440
In full gret hy vp by the Se,
Quhen thai the schip saw byrnand be.
Bot or thai com, the tothir var past,
The ȝhet thai barrit and closit fast. 444

There is hard fighting.

The folk assalȝeit fast that day,
And thai within defendit ay
On sic a viß, that thai that var
With gret enforß assalȝeand thar 448
Micht do thar will on na maner.

At evening, the besiegers grow weary.

And quhen that evynsang-tym ves neir,
The folk without, that war wery,
And sum woundit full Cruelly, 452

424. *eir*] er E; euer H.
426. *till—mycht*] mycht till hyr.
429. *till*] in H.
430. *In-till*] In-to EH.
431. *thai—has*] into fire they H. [*bryn* E] byrne C; birne H; *see* ll. 457, 467.
432. *sum war*] mony H.
435. *sleast wes*] wes sleast EH.
436. *vist*] wyst. *outhir*] ony.
438. *perfay*] that day H.
442. *byrnand*] brynnand E; burning H. *be*] hie H.
444. *ȝhet—closit*] ȝat and barryt It rycht.
445. *The*] That.
447. *a viss*] a wise H; awiss E.
448. *gret enforss*] sik a force H.

Saw thame within defend thai*m* swa,
And saw it wes nocht eyth till ta
The touñe, with sic defens wes maid
[By thaim] that it in stering had. 456
The host saw that thar schip wes brynt,
And of thame that thar-in war tynt,
And thar folk woundit and very;
[Thai] gert blaw the retret in hy. 460
Fra the schipmen reboytit war,
Thai let the tothir assale no mar.
For throu the schip thai wend ilkañe
That thai the toune weill suld haf tañe. 464
Men sais that ma schippis than swa
Pressit that tyme the toune till ta;
Bot for that thar ves brynt bot añe,
And the gynour tharin wes tañe, 468
Now heir tharfor mencione maid I
Bot of a schip all anerly.

The English see their ship is burnt,

and retreat.

Some say more ships than one approached the town.

I mention but one.

Q when thai had blawen the ratret,
Thai folk, that tholit had panys gret, 472
Vithdrew thame haly fra the wall;
The assalt haf thai levit all.
And thai within, that very war,
And mony of thame voundit sar, 476
War blith and glad quhen at thai saw

The besieged are glad to see their foes retreat,

454. *till*] to.
455. *with*] quhill E; while H.
456. [*By thaim*] By them H; And thai CE. H *has*—By them that within the steering had; E *has*—And thai that in-till faring had (*which makes little sense*).
457. *wes*] was H; war E. H *has*—And of their men in hy were tynt.
459. *very*] wery.
460. [*Thai* E] They H; The C.
461. *reboytit*] rebotyt E; rebuted H.
466. *till*] to EH.
467. *ves*] wes.
468. *gynour*] engynour E; Ingynour H.
469. *Now*] EH *om.* *tharfor*] befor.
471. *thai—blawen*] that thai blawyn had.
472. *Thai*] Thair E; Tha H. *had*] H *om.*
474. *levit all*] left all E; left withall H.
475. *very*] wery.
476. *voundit*] woundyt war.
477. *at*] that. *at thai*] they them H.

Thair fais swagat thame vithdraw.
And, fra thai wist suthly that thai
[Fol. 123. C.] Held to thair palȝeonys thair vay, 480
Thai set gud wachis to thar wall;
and refresh themselves. Syne to thar Innys went thai all,
And esyt thame that very war.
And othir, that war woundit sar, 484
Had lechis gude forsuth, I hicht,
That helpit thame as thai best mycht
Men are weary on both sides, On athir syde wery war thai;
That nycht thai did no mair, perfay. 488
and there is a 5 days' truce. Fiff dayis thar-eftir thai war still,
That nane till othir did mekill Ill.
Now leiff we thir folk heir liand
All still, as I haf borne on hand, 492
And turn the courß of our carpyng
Till Schir robert the douchty king,
That assemblit bath fer and neir
King Robert, hearing of king Edward's approach, Ane host, that, quhen he vist but weir 496
That the king swa of Ingland
Had assegit with stalward hand
Berwik, quhar valter steward waß,
Till purpoß with his men he tais, 500
That he vald nocht sa soyne assale
The kyng of Ingland with battale,
determines not to attack him in his trenches; And at his dykis specialy,
For it mycht weill turn to foly. 504
Tharfor he ordanit lordis twa,

478. *Thair—swagat*] Thair fayis on that wiss E; Sa in haill battell H.
480. *vay*] way EH.
481. *Thai*] E *om.*
482. *to*] till.
483. *very*] wery.
484. *othir*] als them H. *war woundit*] had woundis.
485. *I*] Ik.
486. *as—best*] with all their H.
489. *thar-eftir*] eftyr E; efter H.
490. *mekill*] great H.
491. *Rubric in* H—Here sent King Robert in England, Dowglas and Mvrray with stalward hand.
492. *All*] And. *I*] Ik.
494. *Till*] To EH; *and in* l. 500.
496. *that quhen*] and when H; quhen that E. *vist*] wist EH.
501. *vald*] wald.

The Erll of murreff wes ane of tha,
The tothir wes the lord dowglaß,
With xv thousand men to paß 508
In yngland, for till burn [and] sla,
And swa gret ryot thar till ma,
That thai that lay segande the touñe,
Quhen thai herd the distructiouñe, 512
That thai suld in-till Ingland ma,
Suld be sa dredand and sa wa
For thair child*ir* and [for thair] wiff*is*,
That thai suld dreid suld leiß thar liff*is*, 516
And thar gudis alsua, that thai
Suld dreid [than] suld be had avay,
That thai suld leif the sege in hy.
And wend to reskew hastely 520
Thair gude, thair frendis, and thair land.
Tharfor, as I haf borne on hand,
[Thir] lordis send he furth in hy;
And thai thair way tuk hastely, 524
And in Ingland gert byrn and sla,
And vroucht tharin so mekill wa
As thai forrayit the Cuntre,
That it wes pite for to se 528
Till thame that vald It ony gude,
For thai distroyit all as thai ȝude.
So lang thai raid distroyande swa,
As thai trauersit to and fra, 532

but sends Murray and Douglas to ravage England,

in the hope that the English may take alarm,

and raise the siege.

[Fol. 133 *b*. C.]

They advance into England,

[Fol. 56 *b*. E.]

and lay waste the country,

doing great damage.

506. *murreff*] Murray H.
507. *lord*] lord of.
509. *till*] to EH. *burn*] bryn. [*and* EH] to C; *see* l. 525.
510. *till*] to EH.
511. *segande*] segeand E; sieging H.
512. *herd*] heare H.
515. [*for thair* EH] eke C.
516. *suld leiss*] to lese E; to losse H.
518. [*than* E] that C; they H.
519. *That*] And H; E *om*. *the*] thair.
520. *hastely*] thaim hastely C; *but* EH *omit* thaim.
522. *I*] Ik.
523. [*Thir* EH] The C.
524. *way tuk*] wayes held H.
525. *byrn*] bryn E; burne H.
526. *vroucht*] wroucht.
527. *forrayit*] fure through H.
529. *vald*] wald EH.
532. *As*] That H. *to*] oft to H.

They advance to Ripon;

That thai ar cu*m*myne till repouñe,
[And] distroyit haly the touñe.

then to Borough-bridge and Mitton.

At burrow-brig syne thar herbry
Thai tuk, and at mytoun thar-by; 536
And quhen the men of that Cuntre
Saw thar land sa distroyit be,

The Yorkshire men assemble in great numbers and of all trades,

Thai gad*e*rit, in-till full gret hy,
Archeris, burgeß, with ȝhemenry, 540
Prestis, clerkis, monkis, and frer*is*,
Husband*is*, and men of all myster*is*,

till at last they number 20,000 men.

Quhill at thai sa*m*myn asse*m*myllit var
Weill tuenty thousand men and mair. 544
Richt gud armyng eneuch thai had,

The Archbishop of York commands them.

The archbischop of ȝork thai maid
Thair Capitañe; and to Consale
Haß tane, that thai in playn battale 548
Wald assale the scottis men,
That fer fewar than thai war then.

They attack the Scotch,

Than he displayit his baneir,
And othir bischoppes that thar ver 552
Gert display Baneris alsua.

on the way to Mitton.

All in a rout furth can thai ga
Toward mytouñe the reddy vay;
And quhen that scottis men herd say 556
That thai war till thame cu*m*and neir,

The Scotch are divided into two hosts.

Thai buskit thame on thar best maneir,
And delit thame in-till battellis twa.

533. *That*] Sa that H. *till*] to EH. *repouñe*] repoun EH.
534. [*And* EH] That thai C. *the*] that EH.
535. *burrow-brig*] borowbrig E; Borrow-brig H. *herbry*] *so* E; herbery C; harbery H; *see* ll. 209, 298.
536. *mytoun*] Midtoun H.
539. *in-till*] in-to EH.
540. *with*] and EH.
541. *monkis and*] Abbots H.
542. *mysteris*] maneris.
543. *at*] that. *Quhill—sammyn*] While they togidder H.
545. *armyng*] armys E; armour H. *eneuch*] Inew E; aneugh H.
552. *thar ver*] were there H.
553. *Baneris*] thar baneris E; their Baner H.
554. *can*] gan.
555. *mytoune*] Midtoun H. *vay*] way EH.
556. *that*] the EH.
557. *That*] E *om.* *till*] to.
559. *in-till*] into H; in E.

Dowglaß the vaward he can ma; 560
The reirward maid the erll thomas,
For chiftane of the host he was.
And, sua ordanit in gude aray,
Toward thair fais thai held thair vay. 564
Quhen athir had of othir sicht, [Fol. 134. C.]
Thai pressit on bath half*is* to ficht. The battle is joined.
The Ingliß men com on sadly
With gud contenanß and hardy, 568 The English advance steadily,
Richt in a frount vith a Baner,
Quhill thai thair fayis com so neir
Th.t thai thar visage veill my*cht* se;
Thre sper-lynth, I trow [weill] mycht be 572 but, when only at a distance of three spear-lengths,
Betuix thame, quhen sic abasing
Tuk thame, but mar, in-to a swyng, are seized with a panic, and flee.
Thai gaf the bak all, and to-ga.
Quhen scottis men haß seyn thame swa 576
Affrayitly fle all thar [way],
In gret hy apon thame schot thai,
And slew and tuk a gret party.
The laiff fled full effrayitly 580
As thai best mycht, to seik varrand.
Thai war chassit so neir at hand, Nearly 1000 Englishmen perish;
That weill ane thousand deit thar;
And of [thaim] ȝeit thre hundreth war 584 of whom 300 were priests.
Prestis, that deit in-to that chaß.

560. *vaward—can*] awaward gan E; the Vangard can H.
561. *the*] EH *om.*
565. *athir*] that they H.
566. *halfis to*] half to the E; the halfes to H.
567. *on*] rycht EH.
569. *frount*] *so* CH; frusch E. *vith*] with EH. *a*] thair EH.
570. *thai*] that H; E *om.*
571. *veill*] well H; E *om.*
572. *lynth*] lenth. *I trow*] trow I H. [*weill* E] it H; well A; C *om.*
574. *but—into*] that but mar in E. *but—swyng*] that but assonyeing H.
575. *gaf*] tooke H. *all and*] and all H.
576. *hass*] had.
577. [*way* EH] avay C.
578. *schot*] set H.
581. *mycht*] moucht E; mought H. *varrand*] warand.
582. *war*] E *om.*
583. *weill ane*] well a H; ner A E.
584. *And*] E *om.* [*thaim* E] thai C; tha H.
585. *into*] in EH. *chass*] place H.

This skirmish was therefore called the 'Chapter of Mitton.'

Tharfor that bargañe callit waſ
'The chaptour of mytouñe'; for thare
Slayn sa mony prestis ware. 588

Q when thir folk thus discumfit was,
And scottis men had left the chaſ,
Thai went thame furthwarde in the land
Slayand, distroyand, and byrnand. 592

The besiegers of Berwick are again on the move.

And thai [that] at the sege lay,
Or it wes passit the fift day,
Had maid thame syndry apparale
To gang eftsonis till assale. 596

They make a 'sow,' full of armed men,

Of gret gestis añe sow thai maid,
That stalward heling owth it had,
With armyt men enew thar-in,
And Instrumentis als for to myne. 600

and many scaffolds higher than the wall.

Syndry scaffatis thai maid vith-all
That war weill hyar than the wall,
And ordanit als that by the se
The toune suld weill assalȝeit be. 604

[Fol. 134 b. C.]

And thai vithin, that saw thame swa
So gret apparale schap till ma,

John Crab prepares a 'crane,' running on wheels;

Throu [crabbis] consale, that ves sle,
Añe cren thai haf gert dreſ vp hey 608
Rynand on quhelis, that thai mycht bring

586. *Tharfor*] That for.
587. *chaptour*] chaptur E; Chapter H. *mytoune*] Midtoun H.
589. *Rubric in* H—The other assault of Barvike, That was right sharpe to Scots kinrike. *thir*] that thir H; this E. *thus*] H *om.*
591. *furthwarde*] forthward E; fordward H.
592. *distroyand — byrnand*] destroying and burnand H; swa and destroyand E.
593. [*that* EH] C *om.* *sege*] sege E; Siege H.
594. *Or*] Ere H.
597. *ane*] A.
598. *owth it*] outwith H; abowyn It E.
599. *enew*] Inew E; anew H.
600. *als*] EH *om.*
601. *scaffatis*] scaffaldis E; Scaffolds H.
602. *weill*] far H.
604. *weill assalȝeit*] right well sailyied H.
605. *And*] E *om.*
606. *schap till*] to them H.
607. [*crabbis*] *misworitten* craggis C; crabys E; Crabbes H.
608. *Ane cren*] A crane EH. *hey*] *so* E; hie H; hye C.

It quhar neid war of mast helping.
And pik and ter als haf thai tane,
And lynt [and] hardiß with brynstañe, 612
And dry treis that weill wald [brin],
And mellit syne athir othir in;
And gret flaggatis tharof thai maid,
Gyrdit with Irñe-bandis braid; 616
Of thai flaggatis mycht mesurit be
Till a gret Tunnys quantite.
Thai flaggatis byrnand in a baill
With thair Cren thoucht thai till availl. 620
And gif the sow come to the wall,
Till lat thame byrnand on hir fall,
And with añe stark cheyne hald thame thar
Quhill all war brint [vp] that [thar war]. 624
Engynys alsua for till Cast
Thai ordanit and maid redy fast,
And set ilk man syne till his ward.
And schir valter, the gude steward, 628
With armyt men suld ryde about,
And se quhar at thar var mast dout,
And succur thar with his menȝhe.
And quhen thai in-to sic degre 632
Had maid thame for thair assaling,
On the rude-evyn, in the dawing,

they also prepare pitch, tar, lint, hards, with brimstone, and dry sticks,

bound together with iron bands.

They mean to set this bale on fire,

and lower it with the 'crane' upon the 'sow.'

They prepare also other engines.

[Fol. 59. E.] Sir Walter Steward is to go the circuit of the walls constantly.

On the Eve of the Exaltation of the

610. *neid—mast*] that nede war of EH.
611. *ter*] Tar H.
612. [*and* EH] C *om.* *with*] and EH.
613. [*brin* E] byrne C; birne H.
614. *syne*] EH *om.*
615. *flaggatis*] fagaldis E; Faggots H.
617. *Of—flaggatis*] The fagaldis weill E; The Faggots well H.
618. *Tunnys*] Tunnys, *altered to* Twnnys C; Tunnes H; townys E.
619. *flaggatis byrnand*] fagaldis brynnand E; Fagots burning H.
620. *Cren*] cran EH. *thai*] E *om.* *till*] sould H.
622. *Till*] To EH. *thame*] It EH. *byrnand*] brynnand.
623. *ane—cheyne*] a starke Chenyie H; stark chenȝeis E. *thame*] It EH.
624. [*vp* H] wp E; C *om.* [*thar war* E] there were H; ves thar C.
625. *till*] to EH.
630. *at*] that EH. *var*] war E; was H.
632. *into*] in.
633. *thair*] E *om.* *assaling*] assailyeing H; defending E.
634. *rude-evyn*] Rood Euen H.

Rood, Sept. 13, 1319,

The Inglifß host blew till assale.
Than mycht men with ser apparale 636
Se that gret host Cum sturdely;

the English attack Berwick again.

The toune enveremyt thai in hy,
And assalit with sa gud will—
For all thair mycht thai set thar-till— 640
That thai thame pressit fast of the touñe.
Bot thai, that can thame abandouñe
Till ded, or than till woundis sare,

The besieged make a good defence.

So weill has thame defendit thare, 644
That ledderis to the ground thai flang,
And vith stanys so fast thai dang
Thair fais, that feill thai left lyand,
Sum ded, sum hurt, and sum swavnand. 648

[Fol. 185. C.]

Bot thai that held on fut in hy
Drew thame avay deliuerly,
And skunnyrrit tharfor na-kyn thing,
Bot went stoutly till assalyng. 652

There is severe fighting.

And thai abovin defendit ay,
And set thame till so harde assay,
[Quhill] that feill of thame voundit war,
[And] thai so gret defens maid thar, 656
That thai styntit thair fais mycht.
Apon sic maner can thai ficht
Quhill it wes neir noyne of the day;

The besiegers send forward their 'sow.'

Than thai without, in gret aray, 660
Pressit thair sow toward the wall;

638. *enveremyt*] enweround E; enuironed H.
639. *sa gud*] sua gret E; full great H.
641. *That—of*] That thaim pressyt fast on E; Fast they them preassed to H.
642. *can*] gan.
643. *Till*] To EH. *till*] to EH.
645. *flang*] *so* E; slang H; flang *or* slang C; *see* xvi. 651.
648. *swavnand*] swonand E; swoonning H.
649. *fut*] foot H; feyt E.
650. *avay*] away EH.
651. *skunnyrrit*] scounryt E; soiournde (!) H. *thar—kyn*] there for na kin H; no*cht* for that E.
653. *abovin*] aboun.
654. *till*] to EH.
655. [*Quhill* E] While H; How C. *voundit*] woundyt.
656. [*And* EH] That C.
658. *can*] gan.
659. *noyne*] none.
660. *in*] on EH.

And thai within weill soyne gert call — The besieged,
The Engynour that takyñe was, — by threats,
And gret manauß till him mais, — 664 compel the
And swoir that he suld de, bot he — captured engineer
Provit on the sow sic sutelte, — to attack it.
That he [to-fruschyt] hir ilke deill.
And he, that has persauit weill — 668
That the dede wes [weill] neir hym till,
Bot gif he mycht fulfill thar will,
Thoucht that he all his mycht vald do;
Bendit in gret hy than wes scho, — 672 *She* (i.e. a great
And till the sow wes evin set. — engine of war) is
In hye he gert draw the cleket, — planted opposite
And smertly swappit out the stañe, — the 'sow.'
That evyn out-our the sow is gane, — 676 The first shot
And behynd hir a litill we — misses.
It fell, and than thai cryit hey
That war in hir—"furth to the wall,
For dreid[les] it is our*is* all." — 680
The Engynour than deliuerly — The engineer
Gert bend the gyne in full gret hy, — shoots again;
And the stane smertly swappit out. — and the stone
It flaw [out], quhed*ir*and, with a rout, — 684 flies out, with a loud rush,
And fell richt evin befor the sow. — very near the
Thair hertis than begouth till grow; — mark.
Bot ȝeit than, with thair mychtis all,

662. *weill*] right H; E *om.*
665. *swoir*] swour.
666. *Provit*] Prowyt E; Preeued H.
667. [*to-fruschyt* E] sould frush H; till frusche C. *hir*] E *om.*
669. [*weill* E] CH *om.*
671. *all*] at. *vald*] wald.
673. *And*] That. *till*] to H. *evin*] soyn evin C; then euen H; ewyn E.
675. *the*] A EH.
676. *our*] ouer H. Ewyn our the sow the stane is gane E.
677. *hir*] her H; It E. *we*] wey.
678. *hey*] *so* E; hye C; hie H.
680. *dreidles*] dreid C; dredles E; dreedlesse H.
681. *Engynour*] Ingynour H; gynour E.
682. *in—hy*] full hastely H.
683. That kest the stane right smertly out H.
684. [*out* E] ouer H; C *om.* *quhedirand*] quhethirand E; whiddering H. *with*] in H.
686. *till*] to EH.

The besiegers still advance.

Thai pressit the sow toward the wall, 688
And haß hir set thar[to] Iuntly.

The third missile rises high in the [Fol. 135 b. C.] air,

The gynour than gert bend in hy
The gyne, and swappit out the stañe,
That evin toward the lift is gane, 692

falls with great force, and

And with gret wecht syne duschit douñe
Richt by the wall, in a randoune,
[And] hyt the sow in sic maner,

crushes the chief beam in the 'sow.'

That it, that wes the mast summer 696
And starkast for till stynt a strak,
In-swndir with that dusche he brak.

The men within it run out in alarm, and the besiegers shout out—'The sow has farrowed!'

The men ran out in full gret hy,
And on the wallis thai can cry, 700
'That thair sow ferryit wes thair!'

John Crab burns up the 'sow.'

Iohñe crab, that had his geir all ȝar,
In his fagattis haß set the fyre,
And our the wall syne can thame wyre, 704
And brynt the sow till brandis bair.

With all this, fast assalȝeand war
The folk without with felloune ficht,

The fighting continues.

And thai within with mekill mycht 708
Defendit manfully thar stede
In-till gret auentur of dede.

The ships sail near,

The schipmen with gret apparale
Com with thair schippes till assale, 712

their topcastles filled with armed men,

With top-castellis warnist weill,
And wicht men armyt in-till steill.

689. *tharto*] thair to E; thereto H; thar in C. *Iuntly*] gentilly E; cunningly H; *perhaps we should read* Iustly (= exactly).
691. *swappit*] wappyt E; swakked H. *the*] a H.
695. [*And* EH] That C.
696. *summer*] sower EH.
697. *till*] to EH.
698. *he*] It.
699. *out*] foorth H.
700. *can*] gan.
701. *ferryit wes*] was feryt.
703. *his*] the H. *fagattis*] fagaldis E; Faggots H. *the*] a H.
704. *thame*] it H. *wyre*] wyr.
705. *till*] in H. *brandis*] brundis.
709. *manfully*] manlily.
710. *In-till*] Into EH.
713. *castellis*] castell. *warnist*] garnisht H.
714. *And*] Off. *in-till*] into EH.

Thair batis vp apon thair mastis
Drawyn weill hye and festnyt fast is, 716
And pressit with that gret atour
Toward the wall, bot the gynour
Hit in añe espyne with a staňe,
And the men that war thar-in gañe, 720
Sum dede, [sum] dosnyt, [come doun] vyndland.
Fra thine-furth durst nane tak [on] hand
With schippes preß thame to the vall.
But the laiff war assalȝeand all 724
On ilka syde sa egyrly,
That certis it wes gret ferly,
That thai folk sic defens haß maid,
For the gret myscheif that they had. 728
For thair wallis so law than weir,
That a man richt weill with a sper
Micht strik añe othir vp in the face,
As eir befor tald till ȝow was. 732
And feill of thamē war woundit sare,
And the layf so fast travaland war,
That nane had tume rest for till ta,
Thair aduersour*is* assailȝeit swa. 736
Thai war within sa stratly stad,
That thar wardane, [that] with [him] had
Ane hundreth men in Cumpany

and with boats hauled high up against the masts.

One boat is hit, and the men thrown out.

The defence is difficult.

[Fol. 59 *b*. E.]

The walls were very low.

[Fol. 136. C.]

The besieged are very hard pressed.

715. *apon*] in middes H. *mastis*] mast EH.
716. *fast is*] fast EH.
717. *that—atour*] *so* CE; their great auenture H.
719. *in*] H *om*. *ane espyne*] ane hespyne C; the aspyne E; an Aspine H.
720. *And*] That H. *gañe*] ilkane H.
721. Sum ded sum dosnyt, come doun wynland E; Sum dede dosnyt sum dede vyndland C; Came downe dushing on the land H.
722. [*on* EH] vpon C.
723. *press*] to preyss E; to preasse H. *vall*] wall EH.
725. *ilka*] ilk E; euerilke H.
727. *thai*] that.
728. *For*] With.
732. *eir*] her E; here H. *tald*] said. *till ȝow*] to ȝow EH; you it A.
734. *travaland*] trauelling H; trawaillyt E.
735. *tume*] tyme E; laiser H. *for*] H *om*. *till ta*] to ma.
738. [*that* E] CH *om*. [*him* EH] thame C.
739. *hundreth*] hundir.

Armyt, that wicht war and hardy, 740
And raid about for till se quhar
That his folk hardest pressit war,
Till releif thame that had mister,
Com syndry tymes in placis ser 744
Quhar sum of the defensour*is* war
All dede, and othir woundit sare;

Their reserve, of 100 men,

Swa that he of his Cumpany
Behufit to leiff thair party, 748

are all employed at the walls, except 1.

Swa that, be he añe courß had maid
About, [of all the] men he had
Thair wes levit with him bot añe,
That he ne had thame left ilkañe 752
To releve quhar he saw mister.

The men who were assailing Mary-gate burnt the drawbridge,

And the folk that assalȝeand wer
At mary ȝet, [to-hewyn] had
The barraß, and a fyre had maid 756
At the draw-brig, and brynt it douñe;

and attempt to burn the gate itself.

And war thringand in gret foysouñe
Richt [to] the ȝet, añe fyre till ma.
And thai within gert smertly ga 760
Ane to the wardane, for till say
How thai war set in hard assay.

Sir Walter, hearing of this danger, assembles a force,

And quhen schir valter steward herd
How men sa stratly with thame ferd, 764
He gert cum of the castell then
All that war thar of armyt men,

741. *till*] to EH.
743-6. H *omits*.
743. *Till releif*] To releve.
745. *defensouris*] defendouris.
748. *to leiff*] for to leve. *thair*] a gret H.
749. *ane*] A EH.
750. [*of—the* E] of all his H; to all to C.
752. *thame — ilkane*] left thaim eu*e*rilkane. For he had them left euerilkane H.
755. [*to-hewyn* E] they hewen H; be-hevin C.
756. *barrass*] Barres H.
759. [*to* EH] in C. *ane*] A EH. *till*] to EH.
760. *And*] Than.
761. *till*] to EH.
764. *with*] E *om*. *men—thame*] that his men sa straitly H.
765. *of*] fra H.
766. *war thar*] thar war.

For thar that day assalȝeit nane,
And with that rout in hy is gañe 768
Till mary ȝet, and till the wall
Is went, and saw the myscheif all;
And vmbethoucht hym suddandly,
Bot gif gret help war set in hy 772
Thar-to, thai suld burne vp the ȝet
[With] the fire [that he fand] thar-at.
Tharfor apon gret hardyment
He suddanly set his entent; 776 [Fol. 136 b. C.]
And gert all wyde set vp the ȝet,
And the fyre that he fand thar-at
With strinth of men he put avay.
He set hym in full hard assay; 780
For thai that war assalȝeand thar
Pressit on hym with vapnys bair,
And he defendit with all his mycht.
Thar mycht men se a fellouñe sicht; 784
With staffing, stoking, and striking
Thar maid thai sturdy defending.
For with gret strynth of men the ȝet
Thai defendit, and stude thar-at, 788
Magre thair fais, quhill the nycht
Gert thame on bath halfis leif the ficht.

and repairs to the point assailed.

He suddenly throws open the gate, and sallies out.

A hard battle ensues.

At last the English retreat.

THai of the host, quhen nycht can fall,
Fra the assalt with-drew thame all, 792
Voundit, and wery, and forbeft.

At night, the English retire.

767. *thar*] E *om.*
769. *Till*] to EH (*twice*).
770. *Is went*] *so* CH; He send E. *myscheif*] perill H.
773. *burne*] bryn.
774. [*With* H] And C. [*that—fand*] *so* H; *miswritten* haffand C. E *has*—That fra the wall thai suld nooht let.
780. *in*] to.
782. *vapnys*] wapnys.
783. *all*] E *om.*
785. *With*] Off. *staffing*] stabing E; sticking H. *stoking*] *so* CE; stopping H.
790. *halfis*] half. *leif*] leve.
791. *can*] gan.

With mate cher the assalt thai left,
And till thar Innys went in hy,
And set thar wachis hastely. 796
The laif thame esit as thai mycht best;
For thai had gret myster of rest.

They are much surprised at the defence made by the Scotch.

That nycht thai spak al comonly
Of thame within, and had ferly 800
That thai sa stout defens haſ maid
Agane the gret assalt thai had.
And thai within, on othir party,
Quhen thai thair fais so halely 804
Saw thame withdraw, thai var all blith,
And vachis haſ ordanit swith,
And syne ar till thar Innys gane.
Ther wes bot few of thame ves slañe, 808
Bot feill war voundit wikidly;
The laiff our mesur war wery.

It was a hard assault.

It wes Añe hard assalt, perfay,
And certanly, I hard neu*ir* say 812
Quhar quheyn men mair defens had maid,
That swa richt hard assalȝeing had.
And of a thing that thair befell

A great wonder took place.

I haf ferly, that I of tell. 816
That is, that in-till all that day,
Quhen all thair mast assalȝeit thai,
[Fol. 137. C.] And the schot thikkest [wes] with-all,

Women and children gathered up arrows, and carried them to the men on

Women with child and child*ir* small 820
In Arme-fullis gad*er*it vp, and bair
Till thame that on the wallis war

794. *mate*] mad. *mate—assalt*] faintnesse there the Sault H.
799. *al comonly*] commonaly.
801. *hass*] had EH.
804. *halely*] hastily.
805. *thame withdraw*] withdraw thaim.
806. *And*] And thair C; And their H; *but the line is better without* thair; E *has*—And has ordanyt thair wachis swith.
808. *ves*] then H; E *om.*
809. *voundit*] woundyt. *wikidly*] wttrely E; cruelly H.
813. *men*] E *om.*
814. *hard*] sharpe H.
816. *I*] Ik. *of*] sall.
818. *thair mast*] the maist H.
819. [*wes* EH] thar C.

Arrowes, and nocht añe slayñe ves thar,
Na ȝeit voundit; and that wes mar 824
To myrakill of god almychty;
And to nocht ellis It set can I.
On athir syde that nycht thai war
All still, and on the morne, but mar, 828
Thar come tithandis out of Ingland
Till thame of the host, that bare on hand
How that by borrow-brig and mytouñe
Thair men war slayne and dwngin douñe; 832
And at scottis men throw-out the land
Raid ȝeit, byrnand and distroyand.
And quhen the king haß herd this taill,
His consell he assemblit haill, 836
Till se quhethir farar war him till
Till ly about the toune all still,
And assaill quhill it wonnyne war,
Or than In yngland for till fare, 840
And reskew his land and men.
His consell fast discordit then;
For southren men vald that he maid
Arest thar, quhill he wonnyn had 844
The toune and the castell alsua.
Bot northir men wald no-thing swa,
That dred thar frendis for till tyne,
And mast part of thar gudis syne 848
Throu scottis mennys cruelte;

the walls, and not one was wounded; which was a miracle.

[Fol. 60. E.]

News of the defeat at Mitton is brought to the English.

King Edward takes counsel,

whether to stay or retreat.

The men of the South of England advise him to stay.

The men of the North are alarmed for their friends, and advise retreat.

823. *and—thar*] *so* CH; and stanys nane slane war E.
824. *voundit*] woundyt.
825. *Tb*] To a H; The E.
830. *Till*] To EH. To the Oast, that was mislykand H.
831. *by*] at H. *and*] at E; by H. *mytoune*] Midtoun H.
832. *dwngin*] dongyn.
833. *at*] that the H; at the E. *throw-out*] throu EH.
834. *byrnand*] brynnand. *distroyand*] slayand H.
835. *haes*] had.
837. *Till*] To EH. *farar*] fayr E; better H.
838. *Till ly*] To ly E; Abide H.
840. *till*] to EH; *and in* l. 847.
841. *men*] his men.
843. *southren*] sotheroun E; the South H.
846. *northir*] northyn E; North H.

Thai wald he leit the sege be,
And raid for till reskew the land.

The Earl of Lancaster advises the king to return;

Of loncastell, I tak on hand, 852
The Erll thomas wes añe of thai,
That Consalit the king hame to ga.

and, finding that the king inclines to the Southerners' advice,

And, for that mair enclynit he
Till the folk of the [south] Cuntre 856
Than till the [northir] mennys will,
He tuk it to sa mekill Ill,
That he gert turß his geir in hy,
And with his battall halely, 860

[Fol. 137 b. C.]

That of the host neir thrid part waß,

goes home, with all his men, without leave.

Till Ingland hame his way he tais.
But leiff, he hame has tane his gat;
Tharfor fell eftir sic debat 864
Betuix him and the king, that ay

For this, Sir Andrew Herdclay took him to Pomfret,

Lestit, quhill androu herdclay,
That throu the king wes on him set,
Tuk hym syne in-to pomfret, 868

and there beheaded him.

And on the hill besyde the touñe
Strake of his hede but ransouñe;
Tharfor syne drawin and hangit ves he,
And with him weill a fair menȝe. 872

It was said that this Earl Thomas was canonised, and performed miracles.

Men said syne eft*ir*, this thomas,
That on this viß maid martir was,
Wes sanctit and myraclis did,
Bot envy syne gert thame be hid. 876
Bot quhethir he haly wes or nañe,

851. *the*] his.
852. *loncastell*] longcastell EH.
856. [*south* E] north CH.
857. [*northir*] northyn E; southren C; Southeroun H; *cf.* l. 846.
861. *thrid*] the thrid C; *but* EH *omit* the.
866. *Lestit*] Lastyt. *herdclay*] hardclay E; Hardeclay H; Herkely A.
868. *syne in-to*] rycht in E; syne and into H.
869. *the*] ane.
871. *drawin—hangit*] hyngyt and drawyn E; hanged and drawen H.
872. *weill—fair*] a weill gret E; a great H.
874. *viss*] wiss E; wise H; wayes A.
875. *sanctit*] saynct E; syne a Sanct H. *myraclis*] gud myraclis C; myrakillis E; miracles H.

At pomfret thusgat wes he slane.
And syne the king of yngland,
Quhen that he saw hym tak on hand 880
Till paß his way sa oppinly,
Hym thoucht it wes perell to ly
Thar with the laiff of his menȝe;
And his harnaß tursit has he, 884 King Edward retreats.
And [in]till Ingland hame can far.
The scottis men, that distroyand war The Scotch host under Murray avoid him,
In yngland, herd soyne tell tithyng
Of this gret sege the departing. 888
Tharfor thai tuk westward the way,
And by carlele hame went [ar] thai, going home by Carlisle.
With prayis and with presoner*is*,
And othir gud*is* on seir maner*is*. 892
The lordis till the king ar gane,
And the laiff haß thar vayis taňe;
Ilk man till his repair Is gaňe.
The king, Iwiß, wes woundir fayne 896 King Robert is much pleased.
That thai war cu*m*my*n* haill and feir,
And at thai sped on sic maner,
That [thai] thair fais discu*m*fit had,
And, but tynsale of men, had maid 900

878. *thusgat*] thus.
881. *Till*] To EH.
883, 884. *Transposed in* H.
883. *Thar*] And H. *laiff*] lave EH.
884. Hys harnays tharfor tursit he EH.
885. *And*] H *om.* [*in-till* E] till C; To H. *can*] can he H; gan he E.
887, 888. *For these* 2 *lines* H *has* 8, *viz.* Throughout England full cruelly, Burning and wasting right rigorously, When that they haue heard tythings tell Of this great Siege that was sa fell: That they all skailed were and gane, Vnto England hame againe: Sa that their folks relieued were, And set now free from all danger.
887. *herd soyne*] sone hard.
888. *the*] E *om.*
889. *Tharfor—tuk*] Then did they take H.
890. *by*] till. *hame went*] returned H. [*ar* E] are H; C *om.*
891. *prayis*] prise H.
893. *till*] to.
894, 895. H *omits.* *laiff*] lave. *vayis*] wayis. *Is gane*] agayne.
897. *war cummyn*] returned H.
898. *at*] that EH.
899. [*thai* EH] C *om.*
900. *had*] has.

Reskowrſ to thame that in berwik
War assegit richt till thar dik,
[That into full great danger wes, 903*
Through strength of them that sieged hes.] 904*

[Fol. 138. C.] And quhen the kyng had sperit tithand 903

He enquires how they fared in England;

How thai had faryne in-till Ingland,
[And of their iourney what progresse, 905*
That they haue had, and what successe,] 906*
And thai haf tald hym all thar fair, 905
How Ingliſ men discumfit war,

and is glad at their success.

Richt blith in-till his hert wes he,
And maid thame fest with ga*m*myn and gle. 908

Thus was Berwick rescued.

BErwik wes on this maner
Reskewit, and thai that thar-in wer.
He wes worthy añe prince till be
Throu manheid and Subtilite, 912
That [couth] throu vit sa hye a thyng,
But tynsale, bryng till gude ending.

King Robert goes to Berwick,

Till berwik syne the way he tais;
And quhen he herd thar how it waſ 916
Defendit swa richt apertly,
He lovit thame that var thar gretly.

and praises Sir Walter

Valter stewardis gret bounte
Atour the laif commendit he, 920

for his stout defence at the gate.

For the richt gret defens he maid

[Fol. 60 b. E.] At the ȝet, quhar that men brynt had
The brig, as ȝhe herd me deuiſ.

901. *Reskowrss*] Rescours E; Recourse H.
902. *till—dik*] faire and thicke (!) H.
903*, 904*. *In* H *only*.
904. *faryne*] farne EH. *intill*] into H; In E.
905*, 906*. *In* H *only*.
905. *haf*] had. *thar*] hale the.
911, 912. *So in* CH; E *transposes the lines*.
913. [*couth* EH] thoucht C. *throu*] with EH.
914. *But*] But gret. *gude*] E *om*.
915. *way—tais*] King gaes H.
917. *swa richt*] rycht swa. *swa—apertly*] sa doone manfully (*sic*) H.
918. *var*] war.
919. *stewardis*] stewart his.
920. *Atour*] Out our.
922. *that*] EH *om*.

And certis he wes weill till priß, 924
That sa stoutly with playne fechting
At oppyn ȝet maid defending.
Micht he haf lifit quhill he had beyñe
Had Sir Walter lived long,
Of perfit elde, withouten weyñe, 928
His renouñe suld haf strekit fer.
he would have been famous.
Bot dede, that vachis ay to mar
With all [hyr] mycht waik and vorthy,
Had at his worschip gret Invy; 932
That in the flour of his ȝoutheid
But death ended all his doughty deeds.
Scho endit all his douchty deid,
As I sall tell ȝow forthirmar.
Quhen the king had a quhill beyne thar, 936
The king sends for masons,
He send for masonis fer and neir,
That sleast wes of that misteir,
And gert weill ten fut hye the vall
and makes the town-wall higher.
About berwik his toune our all. 940
And syne soyne toward lowdyañe
With his menȝe his gat has gane;
And syne he gert ordane in hy
He then prepares to go to Ireland,
Bath armyt men and ȝhemanry, 944
In-till Irland in hy till fair,
[Fol. 138 b. C.]
Till help his brothir that wes thair.
to help his brother.

924. *weill*] meekle H. *till*] to EH.
928. *elde*] eild EH. *weyne*] wene EH.
930. *vachis*] walkis E; watches H. *mar*] mer. *ay—mar*] euer ner H.
931, 932. H *omits*. [*hyr* E] his C; *see l.* 934. *waik—vorthy*] and forthi E.
932. *gret*] sic.
933. *That in*] Into H.
934. *Scho*] Sa. *Scho endit*] Made end of H.
938. *wes*] war E; was H.
940. *berwik his*] berwyk*is* E; Baruike the H.
941. *soyne*] EH *om*. *lowdyane*] lothyane E; Louthiane H.
944. *ȝhemanry*] ȝhumanry.
945. *till*] to EH.
946. *Till*] To EH.

[BOOK XVIII.]

How schir Eduard the bruce vess slayn in Irland.

Edward Bruce will not wait for his reinforcements,

Bot he, that rest anoyit ay,
And wald in travaill be all-way,
A day forrouth thair arivyng
That war send till hym fra the king, 4
He tuk his way, furthwarde to fare
Magre them all that with hym war.

but, with only 2000 men,

For he had nocht than in that land
Of all men, I trow, twa thousand, 8
Outane the kyngis off erischry,
That in gret rowtis raid hym by.

goes to Dundalk.

Toward dundawk he tuk the vay;

Sir Richard of Clare

And quhen richard of clare herd say 12
That he com with añe few menȝhe,
All that he mycht assemblit he,
Of all Irland, of Armyt men;

assembles 20,000 men on horseback,

Swa that he had thar with him then 16
Of trappit horſ tuenty thousand,

besides foot soldiers, and goes northward.

Bot thai[m] that war on fut gangand;
And held furth northwarde on his vay.
And quhen schir Eduard haſ herd say 20
That cummyn neir till hym wes he,

Three scouts are sent forward by Edward,

He send discurrouris hym till se;
The sowlis and the steward war thai,

3. *forrouth*] before H.
5. *furthwarde*] south-wart E; Southward H.
6. *them*] *written* theme C.
9. *erischry*] Irchery E; the Irishry H.
11. *dundawk*] dundalk.
13. *ane*] a H; sa E.
18. *thaim*] them H; thai CE.
19. *vay*] way EH.
22. *till*] to EH.
23. *sowlis*] sowllis E; Sowles H.

And als schir philip the mowbray. 24
And quhen thai seyn had thar cummyng,
Thai went agane to tell the king,
And said weill thai war mony men.

who report that the host is very large.

In hy schir Eduard ansuerd then, 28
And said, that he suld fecht that day,
Thouch Tryplit or quadruplit war thai.

Edward says he shall fight.

Schir Iohne steward said "sekirly,
I red ȝe ficht nocht in sic hy. 32
Men sais my brothir is cumand
With xv hundreth men neir hand;
And war thai knyt with ȝow, ȝe mycht
The trastlyar abyde to ficht." 36

Sir John Stewart advises him to wait till his brother comes.

Schir Eduard lukit richt angrely,
And till the sowlis said in hy,
"Quhat sais thou?" "schir," he said, "perfay,
As my fallow [has] said, I say." 40

De Soulis gives the same advice.

And than till schir philippe said he.
"Schir," said he, "sa our lord me se,
Me think it na foly to byde
ȝour men, that spedis thame to ryde. 44
For we ar few, our fais ar feill;
God may richt weill our veirdis deill;
Bot it var vounder that our mycht
Suld ourcum so feill in ficht." 48

[Fol. 139. C.] So does Sir Philip Mowbray.

Than with gret Ire, "allaß," said he,
"I wend neuir till here that of the!
Now help quha will, for sekirly

Edward, in great wrath, declares that he will certainly fight.

24. *als*] E *om.*
26. *the king*] tithing EH.
30. *Tryplit — quadruplit*] tribill and quatribill E; flue or sex times ma H.
32. *ȝe—nocht*] nocht ȝe ficht CE; *but* H *has*—yee feght not; *which is far better.* *in*] on.
34. *hundreth*] *so* CH; thowsand E.
37. *richt*] all.
38. *sowlis*] soullis E; Sowles H. *said*] he said C; *but* EH *omit* he.
39. *sais*] sayis.
40. [*has* E] CH *om.*
41. *than*] E *om.* *And—philippe*] Then to Sir Philip the Mowbray H.
43. *it — foly*] na foly for. H *wrongly omits* na.
46. *veirdis*] werdis.
47. *var vounder*] war wondir.

This day, but mair baid, fecht vill I. 52
Sall na man say, quhill I may dre,
That strynth of men sall ger me fle!
God scheld that ony suld vs blame,
That we defoull our nobill name!" 56

They agree to do so.

["Now] be it swagat than," q*uod* thai;
"We sall tak that god will purvay."

But the Irish kings, hearing of this,

And quhen the kyng*is* of Erischry
Herd say, and vist all sekirly, 60
That thar kyng, with sa quheyn, vald ficht
Agane folk of sa mekill mycht,
Thai com till [him] in full gret hy,

counsel him to wait;

And consalit hym full tendirly 64
For till abid his men; and thai
Suld hald thar fais all that day
Doand, and on the morne alsua,
With thair saltis that thai suld ma. 68
Bot thair mycht na consell availl;

which he refuses to do.

He wald all gat haff the battaill.
And quhen thai saw he wes so thra
To fecht, thai said, "ȝe may weill ga 72
To ficht with ȝon gret Cumpany;

Then they say they must withdraw from him.

Bot we acquyt vs vtirly,
That nane of vs will stand to ficht;
Assuris nocht tharfor in our mycht. 76
For our maner is, of this land,
Till follow and ficht, and ficht fleand,
And nocht till stand in plane melle

52. *vill*] will EH.
53, 54. *dre*] drey. *fle*] fley.
56. *That—defoull*] That we defile H; Giff we defend (!) E.
57. [*Now* EH] C *om.*
59. *Erischry*] Irchery E; Irishry H.
60. *vist*] wyst. *all*] it H; E *om.*
61. *quheyn*] quhone. *vald*] wald EH.
63. [*him* EH] C *om.*
68. *saltis*] assaults H; rounnyngis E.
70. *the*] E *om.*
73, 74. *Transposed in* H.
76. *Assuris*] Trust H. *in*] into H.
77. *of*] in H.
78. *Till*] To E. *and—and*] and to H.
79. *till*] to EH; *and in l.* 92

Quhill the ta part discumfit be." 80 [Fol. 61. E.]
He said, "sen that ȝour custum is,
I ask no mair at ȝow bot this,
That is, that ȝhe and ȝour menȝhe [Fol. 139 b. C.]
Wald all to-gidd*ir* arayit be, 84
And stand on fer, but departing,
And se our ficht and our endyng."
Thai said weill at thai suld do swa,
And syne toward thair men can ga, 88
That war weill fourty thousand neir.
Edward, with thame that vith him weir,
That war nocht fully twa thousand,
Arayit thame stalwardly till stand 92
Agane fourty thousand and ma.
Schir Eduard that day wald no*ch*t ta
His cot-Armour, bot gib harper,
That men held [as] withouten peir 96
Of his estat, had on that day
All haill schir Eduard*is* aray.
The ficht abaid thai on this wiß;
And in gret hye thar enymyß 100
Com, till assemmyll all reddy,
And thai met thame richt hardely.
Thai war sa few, forsuth to say,
That ruschit with thair fais var thai; 104
And thai that pressit mast to stand
War slañe douñe, and the remanand
Fled till erischry for succour.
Schir Eduard, that had sic valour, 108

He asks them to wait a little apart,

to see him fight and die.

They withdraw accordingly,

and Edward prepares for battle, having 2000 men only.

Sir Edward's armour was worn that day by Gib Harper.

Sir Edward's host is overborne, and many of them are slain.

Sir Edward himself,

80. *ta*] ane H.
82. *I*] Ik. *no—ȝow*] at ȝow no mar.
86. *our* (2)] the E.
87. *at*] that EH.
88. *can*] gan thai.
89. *fourty*] threttie H; twenty E; *cf. ll.* 17, 18, 93.
93. *fourty*] *so* CE; threttie H.
96. [*as* H] *miswritten* has C; als E.
101. *assemmyll*] assemble.
103. *Thai—forsuth*] Bot thai sa few war south E; They were sa few, the sooth H.
105. *pressit mast*] *so in* E; CH *transpose the words.*
107. *erischry*] the Irche E; the Irishry H. *for*] *so* CH; to E.

Sir John Steward, and Sir John de Soulis are all slain.

Wes ded, and Iohne steward alsua ;
And Iohne de sowlis als vith thai,
And othir als of thair Cumpany.
[Thai] wencust war sa suddanly, 112
That few in-till the place war slayñe.
For the laiff haß thair vayis tane
Till the erische kyngis, that ves thar,
That in haill battale howand war. 116

John Thomasson, leader of the men of Carrick,

Iohne tomasswn, that wes leder
Of thame of carrik that thair wer,
Quhen he saw the discumfiting,

takes refuge with an Irish king;

With-drew him till añe erische king 120
That of his acquyntans had he ;
And he resauit him in lawte.
And quhen Iohne cu*mm*y*n* wes to th*at* king,

and soon sees Sir Philip [Fol. 140. C.] Mowbray being

He saw be led fra the fechting 124
Schir philipe [the] mowbray, the vicht,
That had beyne doysnyt in the ficht,

led by 2 men along the causeway leading to the town.

And be the Armys led wes he
With twa men, apon the cawse 128
That wes betuix thame and the touñe,
That strekit lang in a randoune.
Toward the toune thai held thair vay,
And quhen in myd cawse war thai, 132
Schir philip of his desynaiß
Ourcome, and persauit he waß

110. *Iohne de*] Iohne the E; Sir Iohn H.
112. [*Thai* E] They H; That C. *wencust war*] war wencussyt E ; vanquisht were H.
113. *place*] Plaine H.
114. *laiff*] lave EH. *vayis*] wayis.
115. *erische*] Irsche E; Irish H. *ves*] war.
116. *That*] And.
117. *tomasswn*] thomas sone E; Thomson H.
120. *erische*] Irsch E; Irish H.
122. *lawte*] leawte E; daintie H.
125. [*the* E] CH *om.* *vicht*] wicht.
126. *doysnyt*] dosnyt E; discomfist (!) H. *in*] in-to.
127. *be the*] by the H; with E.
128. *the*] *so* CH; A E. *cawse*] cause E; Caussey H.
130. *That*] And.
132. *cawse*] cause E; the Caussey H.
133. *desynaiss*] desynes E; businesse H.
134. *wass*] wes E.

Tane, and swagat led vith twa.
The tane he swappit soyñe hym fra, 136 *Sir Philip shakes off his captors,*
And syne the tothir in gret hy;
Syne drew his suerde deliuerly, *draws his sword, and goes along the causeway towards the battle-field,*
And till the fecht the vay he tais
Endlang the cawse, that than waß 140
Fillit in-to [sa] gret foysouñe
Of men that than went to the touñe.
And he, that met thame, can thame ma
Sic payment, quhar he can ga, 144
That weill añe hundreth men gert he *turning 100 men aside from it as he goes.*
Leiff, magre thair*is*, the cawsee;
As Iohñe tomasswn said suthly,
That saw his deid all halely. 148
Toward the battall evyn he ȝeid.
Iohñe tomasswn, that tuk gud heid *John Thomasson calls to him to come back.*
That thai war vencust all planly,
Cryit on hym in full gret hy, 152
And said, "cum heir, for thar is nañe
On liff; For thai ar dede ilkañe."
Than stude he still a quhile, and saw *He waits awhile, and then comes back.*
That thai war all done out of daw; 156
Syne went toward him sarraly.
This Iohñe wroucht syne sa vittely, *Thomasson's men retreat to Carrickfergus.*
That all that thidder fled than wer,
[Thouch] that thai lesit of thair ger, 160
Com till cragfergus haill and feir.

135. *swagat led*] led suagat.
136. *swappit*] swakked H.
138. *Syne*] And E; He H. *his*] the.
139. *the—he*] his wayis.
140. *cawse*] cause E; Caussey H.
141. *into*] *so* CH; in-till E. [*sa* H] CE *om.*
142. *to*] till.
143. *can thame*] agayn gan.
144. *ga*] them ta H.
145. *ane hundreth*] A hund*ir*.
146. *cawsee*] cause E; Caussey H.
147. *tomasswn*] thomas sone E; Thomson H; *and in l.* 150.
151, 152. *Transposed in* H. *vencust*] wencussyt E; vanquisht H. *Cryit on*] And cried to H.
156. *out*] E *om.*
157. *sarraly*] sikkerly H.
158. *vittely*] wittely EH.
160, 161. *Transposed in* H. [*Thouch that*] Thoucht that E; Although H; How that C. *lesit*] lossyt E; left some H. *till*] to EH.

The soldiers try to get Sir Edward's head,

And thai, that at the fechting weir,
Soucht schir Eduard, to get his hede,
Emange the folk that thar ves ded; 164

and, finding Gib Harper,

And fand gib harper in his ger.
And, for sa gude his armys wer,

cut Gib's head off,

Thai strak his hed of, and syñe it
Thai haf gert saltit in-till a kyt, 168

[Fol. 140 b. C.] which they put in salt, and send to the king of England.

And send it syne in-till Ingland,
To Eduard king in-till presand.
Thai wend schir Eduard*is* it had beyñe;
Bot, for the armyng that wes scheyne, 172
Thai of the hed dissauit war,
All-thouch schir Eduard deit thar.

Thus died these noble men.

On this wiß war thai nobill men
Throu wilfulneß all losit then; 176
And that wes syn and gret pite.
For had thair outrageouß bounte
Beyne led with wit and with mesure,
Bot gif the mair misaduenture 180
Befell thame, it suld richt hard thing
Be till leid thame till outraying;

[Fol. 61 b. E.] Had they been well led, they would not have been so easily conquered.

Bot gret outrageouß Succudry
Gert thame all deir thair vorschip by. 184
And thai, that fled fra the melle,
Sped thame in hy toward the Se,
And to cragfergus cu*m*myn ar thai.

The men sent by king Robert to help Sir Edward

And thai that war in-to the vay, 188
To schir Eduard send fra the king,
Quhen thai herd the discumfiting,

164. *Emange*] Amang.
168. *saltit*] salt.
169, 170. *syne*] E *om*. *To—in-till*] Till the king Eduuard in E. H *has*—And in a Present but hething In England sent it to the King.
174. *All-thouch*] Allthoucht.
176. *Throu*] For. *losit*] lesyt E; lossed H.
181. *Befell*] Bene fallyn. *richt*] bene H.
182. Should lead them to discomforting H. *till* (1)] to. *outraying*] owtreying.
183. *Succudry*] *so* H; surquedry E.
184. *deir*] her E. *vorschip*] worschip EH.
188. *vay*] way EH.

Till cragfergus thai went agane;
And that wes nocht forouten pane. 192
For thai war mony tymes that day
Assalit with erischry, [bot thai]
[Ay] held to-giddir sarraly,
Defendand thame so wittely 196
That thai eschapit oft throu mycht,
And mony tymes alß throu slicht;
For oft of thair*is* till thame gaf thai
Till let thame scathleß pass thar vay. 200
And to cragfergus com thai swa.
Than batis and schippes can thai ta,
And salit till scotland in hy,
And thar arivit all saufly. 204
Quhen thai of scotland had witt*er*ing
Of schir Eduard*is* discomfiting,
Thai menyt hym full tendrely
Our all the land all comonly; 208
And thai that with hym slayne var thar
Full tendrely alß menyt war.

return to Carrickfergus,

escaping thither with much difficulty.

They then sail back to Scotland.

The Scotch lament Sir Edward's death.

How king eduard com agane in scotland vith his power till Edinburgh eftir the ded of gud Schir eduard the Bruce in-till Irland.

Eduard the bruce, as I said air,
Wes discumfit on this manare. 212
And quhen the feld wes clengit cleyñe, [Fol. 141. C.]

191. *Till*] To EH.
192. *forouten*] withoutten H.
193. *tymes*] tyme.
194. *erischry*] Irschery E; Irishrie H. [*bot thai* EH] that ay C.
195. *Ay held* E] Thai held C; Held them H.
196. *Defendand thame*] And defendyt. *wittely*] worthely H.
198. *alss*] alsua E; oft H.
199. *till*] to EH; *and in l.* 201. H *is corrupt.*
200. *Till*] To EH.
202. *Than*] That. *schippes*] shipmen H. *can*] gan E; H *om.*
204. *thar arivit*] arivit thar C; *but* E *has* thar arywyt.
205. *wittering*] witting H.
206. *discomfiting*] wencussing.
208. *all comonly*] full commonly H; commonaly E.
210. *war*] thai war CH; *but* E *omits* thai.
211. *I*] is H. *air*] aire H; her E.
212. *manare*] maner.

Sa that na resisteris wes seyne,
Sir Richard of Clare goes to Dundalk. The vardane than, richard of clare,
And all the folk that with him war 216
Toward dundawk has tane the vay;
Swa that richt na debat maid thai
At that tyme with the erischrye,
Bot to the toune thai held in hy. 220
John Maupas takes Gib Harper's head to king Edward of England, who is much pleased. And syne haſ send furth to the king,
That Ingland had in gouernyng,
Gib harperis hed in-till añe kyt.
Iohñe mawpaſ till the king had It, 224
Quhilk he resauit in gret dayntee;
Richt blith of that present wes he;
For he wes swa glad that he wes swa
Deliu*er*it of sic fellouñe a faa. 228
In hert tharof he tuk sic pryde,
King Edward determines to invade Scotland, That he tuk purpoſ for to ryde
With a gret host in-till Scotland,
Till revenge hym, with stalward hand, 232
Of the tray, travaill, and of teyne,
That done till hym thar-in had beyne.
And a richt gret hoost gad*er*it he,
and sends ships thither with much provisions. And gert his schippes by the se 236
Cum, with gret foysoune off vittale;
For at that tyme he thoucht all hale
For till distroy so cleyn scotland,

214. *na resisteris*] ne resistens E; na resistance H.
215. *vardane*] wardane. *richard*] schyr Richard.
217. *dundawk*] dundalk E; Dondalk H.
219. *erischrye*] Irschery E; Irishry H.
221. *hass*] had.
222. *Ingland had*] had Ingland.
223. *in-till*] into H; in E. *ane*] A EH.
224. *mawpass*] mavpas E; Mawppas H.
225. *Quhilk—resauit*] And he ressawyt It. *gret*] E *om.*
228. *sic—a*] *so* CH; a felloun E.
231. *in-till*] into H; in E.
232. *Till revenge*] For to weng.
233. *the*] E *om.* *travaill*] of trawaill. *of*] the H.
234. *till—thar-in*] tharin till him.
238. *thoucht—hale*] *so* CH; wald him taile E.
239. *So* CH; To dystroy wp sa clene the land E.

That nane suld be thar-in liffand; 240
And with his folk in gret aray
Toward scotland he tuk the vay.
And quhen king robert vist that he
Com on hym with sic añe menȝe, 244
He gad*e*rit men, bath fer and neir,
Quhill sa feill till him cu*m*myn weir,
And war als for till cum hym to,
That him weill thoucht he suld weill do. 248
He gert with-draw all the catele
Of lowdiane eu*e*rilk deill,
And till strynthis gert thamẽ be send,
And ordanit men thame to defend. 252
And with his hoost all still he lay
At culroß, for he walde assay
Till ger his fais throu fasting
Be feblist, and throu lang walking; 256
And fra he feblist had thair mycht,
Asse[*m*]myll he wald with thamẽ till ficht.
He thoucht till wirk apon this viß;
And Ingliß men with gret mastriß 260
Com with thar hoost in lowdiane,
And soyne till Edinburgh ar gañe,
And thair abaid thai dayis thre.
Thair schippes that war on the se 264
Had the vynd contrar till thamẽ ay,

King Robert prepares to resist him.

He collects all the cattle of Lothian into fortresses.

He awaits his foes at Culross.

[Fol. 141 *b*. C.]

The English soon reach Edinburgh, where they stay 3 days.

240. *be*] leve.
241. *folk*] Oast H.
243. *vist*] wist EH.
244. *ane*] A EH.
245. *men*] his men.
247. *till*] to EH.
248. *weill* (1)] EH *om.* *suld weill*] rycht weill suld.
250. *lowdiane*] lowthiane EH.
251. *till strynthis*] into strengths H. *send*] led H.
252. *thame—defend*] to defend that stead H.
253. *hoost all*] ost als.
256. *feblist*] feeble H. *walking*] waking H.
258. *he—till*] with them he wald to H; than with thaim to E.
259. *till*] to EH; *and in* ll. 265, 267, 268, 273.
261. *in*] to H. *lowdiane*] lowthian E; Louthiane H; *and in* l. 273.
262. *soyne*] sone E; then H. *ar*] are they H.
265. *vynd*] wynd.

Swa that apon no maner thai
Had power till the fyrth till bring
Thair vittale, till releiff the king. 268
And thai of the host that falit met,
Quhen thai saw that thai mycht nocht get
Thair vittalis to thame by the se,
Than send thai furth a gret menȝhe 272
For till forray all lowdiañe;
Bot cattell haf thai fundyn nañe,
Outane a kow that wes haltand,
[Fol. 68. R.] That in tranentis corñe thai fand; 276
Thai broucht hir till thair hoost agane.
And quhen the Erll of varane
That cow saw anerly cum swa,
He askit 'gif thai gat no ma?' 280
And thai haf said all till him, "nay."
"Than, certis," said he, "I dar say
This is the derrest beiff that I
Saw euir ȝeit; for sekirly 284
It cost añe thousand pund and mar!"
And quhen the king and thai that war
Of his consell saw thai mycht get
Na catell till thar host till et, 288
That than of fasting had gret payne,
Till Ingland turnyt thai hame agayñe.
At melroß schupe thai for till ly,
And send befor ane cumpany, 292

Their ships are delayed by contrary winds.

They send out foragers, who find only one lame cow.

When Earl Warenne sees them bringing it,

he says it is very dear beef, for it must have cost 1000 pounds.

The English retreat to Melrose,

266. *thai*] of way H.
268. *vittale*] wictaillis E; vittaile H.
271. *to*] till.
272. *Than—furth*] They sent then foorth H; Thai send furth ryght E.
275. *Outane*] Owtakyn E; Except H. *kow*] *so* CH; bule E.
276. *tranentis corne*] *so* CE; Tranent toun H.
277, 278. And when the Erle of Warrane, Saw their Forrayours come againe H.
277. *Thai—hir*] That broucht thai.
278. *varane*] warayne.
279. *That—saw*] Saw that bule E; And a Kow H.
280. *gat*] fand H.
282. *certis—he*] said he certis.
283. *beiff*] best E; beast H.
285. *ane*] A EH; *and in* l. 292.
290. *hame*] E *om.*
291. *till*] to EH.

Thre hundreth neir of Armyt men. — sending on 300 men in advance.
Bot the lord dowglaß, [that] wes then
Besyde in-till the forest neir,
Vist of thar com and quhat thai veir; 296 Douglas lies in wait for them,
And with thame of his Cumpany
In-till melroß all preuely
He hufit in-till añe enbuschement.
And a richt sturdy frer he sent 300 and sends a friar to watch,
Without the ȝet, thar com till se,
And bad him hald him all preve, [Fol. 142. C.]
Quhill that he saw thame cu*m*and all — who is to cry "Douglas!"
Richt till the Cunȝhe of the wall, 304 when they come near enough.
And [than] crye hye, "dowglaß! dowglaß!"
The frer furth than his way he tais,
That wes derff, stout, and ek hardy;
His mekill hude helit haly 308 The friars' hood hides his armour,
The Armyng that he on hym had;
Apon a stalward horß he raid, — and he awaits the English on horseback.
And in his hand he had a spere,
Abydand apon that maner 312
Quhill that he saw thame cu*m*and neir.
And quhen the formast passit weir
The Cunȝhe, he cryit, "dowglaß! dowglaß!" — He cries "Douglas!"
Than till thame all añe courß he maiß, 316 and charges.
And bare añe douñe deliuerly;
Than dowglaß, with his Cumpany, — Douglas and his men rush out.
Yschit apon thame with a schout.
And quhen thai saw sa gret a rout 320

294. [*that* EH] C *om.*
296. *Vist*] Wyst E; Wist H. *com*] comming H; *and in* l. 301.
299. *hufit*] howyt E; howered H. *in-till*] into H; in E. *ane enbuschement*] A buschement E; a bushment H.
303. *cumand*] comming H.
304. *till*] to EH. *Cunȝhe*] coynȝe E; cunyie H. *of*] thar of.
305. *than crye*] than cry E; crye C; crie on H.
306. *furth than*] than furth EH. *way he*] wayis EH.
307. *derff—ek*] all stout derff and E; right darfe, stout, and H.
308. *helit*] couered H.
309. *Armyng*] armur.
312. *Abydand*] And abaid EH.
315. *Cunȝhe*] coynȝe E; cunyie H.
316. *ane*] A EH.
318. *Than*] And. *with*] and.

The English flee, and are nearly all slain.

Cum apon thame sa suddanly,
Thai war abaysit richt gretumly,
And gaf the bak but mair abaid.
The scottis men emang thame raid, 324
And slew all thaim thai mycht ourta;
Añe gret martirdome thair can thai ma.

A remnant escape, and tell how Douglas welcomed them.

And thai that eschapit vnslayne
Ar till thar gret host went agañe, 328
And tald thame quhat kyn velcummyng
Dowglaß thaim maid at thair metyng,
Convoyand thame agane roydly,
And varnyt thame the playn herbery. 332

How the gud king robert the bruce followit the king eduard of Ingland south in his awn land.

The English are much grieved,

THe king of Ingland and his men,
That saw thair herbreouris then
Cum reboytit on that maneir,
Anoyit gretly in hert thai weir, 336
And thoucht that it war gret foly
In-to the wode till tak herbery.

and encamp near Dryburgh; and soon after return home.

Tharfor by driburgh, in the playne,
Thai herbryit thame; and syne agañe 340
Ar went till Ingland haym thar vay.
And quhen the king robert herd say

322. *richt*] EH *om.*
323. *gaf*] E *om.*
325. *thaim thai*] thaim at thai C; *but* them they H; that thai E.
326. *Ane*] A E; And H. *thai*] H *om.*
327. *eschapit*] scaped were H.
328. *Ar*] And H. *gret—went*] Oast went hame H.
329. *kyn*] good H.
330. *metyng*] comming H.
331. *Convoyand*] That conwoyit. *roydly*] rudly E; rudely H.
332. *varnyt—playn*] warnyt planly.

Rubric in H—Here followed King Robert in hight, The English King with all his might.
334. *herbreouris*] harbreours come H.
335. *Cum*] H *om.; see last line.* *reboytit*] rebutyt E; Rebuted H. *that*] that great H.
336. *gretly—hert*] in thair hart E; in their hearts H.
338. *In-to*] In-till. *till*] to EH.
339. *the*] a H.
341. *haym*] E *om.* *haym—vay*] but delay H.

That thai war turnyt hame agane,
And how thair herbreour*is* var slane, 344
In hy his host assemblit he,
And went south our the scottis se, [Fol. 142 b. C.]
And till Ingland his way he tais.
Quhen his host all assemblit was, 348 King Robert, with 30,000 men, in 8 battallens,
Auchty thousand he wes and ma;
And aucht battellis he maid of tha;
In ilk battell wes ten thousand.
Syne went he furth on to Ingland, 352
And in hale rout followit sa fast pursues the English,
The ynglifs king, quhill at the last
He com approchand to byland, and finds them at Byland.
Quhar, at that tyme, thar ves liand 356
The king of Ingland with his men.
Kyng robert, that had witt*er*ing then
That he lay thair, with mekill mycht,
Tranontit swa on hym añe nycht, 360
That, be the morne that it wes day,
Cu*m*myn in-till playn feld war thai, But between the Scotch and Byland there is a steep hill.
Fra biland bot añe litill space.
Bot betuix [thaim] and It thar wafs 364
Añe craggy bra, strekit weill lang,
And a gret peth wp for to gang.
Othirwayis mycht thai nocht avay
Till pafs till biland*is* abbay, 368
Bot gif thai passit fer about.
And quhen the mekill Inglifs rout [Fol. 62 b. E.]

346. *south*] foorth H.
347, 348. H *omits*. *way he*] ways. *all*] E *om*.
351. *wes*] war.
352. *on to*] till E; to H.
353. *in*] in-till.
355. *to*] by H.
356. *ves*] wes.
358. *wittering*] witting H.
360. *Tranontit*] Tranountyt E; Tranoynted H. *ane*] A E; ane H.
362. *in-till*] in A E; to the H.
363. *ane*] A EH.
364. [*thaim* E] them H; him C.
365. *Ane*] A EH.
366. *peth*] *so* CE; Path H.
367. *avay*] away E; haue way H.
368. *Till*] To EH (*twice*).
370. *And*] But.

When the English find that the Scotch are so near, they occupy the hill,

Herd at king [robert] wes so neir,
The mast part of thame that thar weir 372
Went to the path and tuk the bra,

and prepare to defend it.

Thair thoucht thai thair defens to ma.
Thair baneris thair thai gert display,
And thair battellis on breid aray, 376
And thoucht weill to defend the place.
Quhen king robert persauit [has],
That thai thame thoucht thair to defend,
Eft*ir* his consell haß he send, 380
And askit quhat wes best till do.

Douglas undertakes to take the hill by assault,

The lord dowglaß ansuerd thar-to,
And said, "*schir*, I will vndir-ta
That in schort tyme I sall do swa, 384
That I sall vyn ȝon place planly,

or cause the English to descend.

Or than ger all ȝon Cumpany
Cum douñ till ȝow heir in this plañe."

The king bids him do so.

The king than said till him agane, 388
"Do than," he said, "and god the speid!"
Than he furth on his wayis ȝeid,

[Fol. 143. C.]

And of the host the mast party
Put thame in-till his Cumpany, 392
And held thar vay toward the plaß.

Sir Thomas Murray,

The gud Erll of murreff, thomaß,
Left his battell, and in gret hy,

371. *at*] that EH. *king*] the king CH; *but* E *omits* the. [*robert* EH] C *om.* *so*] sa E; H *om.* *neir*] ner E; neere H.
372. *thar weir*] thar wer E; were there H.
373. *path*] peth.
374. *thai*] E *om.*
375. *Thair*] There H; The E.
376. *breid*] braid.
377. *place*] *so* CE; pass E.
378. [*has* E] hes H; wass C.
379. *thame—thair*] thoucht thar thaim E; them thought for H.
381. *till*] to EH; *and in* l. 387.
385. *vyn*] wyn EH.
387. *heir in*] her to E; into H.
388. *than said*] said than. H *has*—Or ye sall neuer trow me againe.
389. *Do—and*] Do than quhar mychty E; The King then said, great H.
391. *party*] hardy.
393. *vay*] way EH. *plass*] place H; pass E; *and in* l. 398.
394. *gud*] H *om.* *thomass*] *schir* thomass C; Sir Thomas H; *but* E *omits* schir, *and* H *omits* gud.

Bot with thre men in Cumpany, 396 *with 3 men only,*
Com till the lordis rout of dowglaß;
And, or he enterit in the plaß, *hurries up the hill before all the rest.*
Befor thame all the place tuk he,
For he vald that men suld him se. 400
And quhen schir Iames of dowglaß *Douglas praises him greatly,*
Saw that he swagat cummyn waß,
He prisit him thar-of gretly,
And velcummyt hym full humylly, 404 *and follows him.*
And syne the place can sammyn ta.
Quhen Ingliß men saw thaim do swa,
Thai lichtit and agane thame ȝeid.
Twa knychtis, that douchty war of deid, 408 *Two English knights, Sir Thomas Arthin and Sir Ralph Cobham,*
Thomas arthyn aňe hat to name,
The tothir schif rauf of [cobhame],
Com doune befor all thair menȝe, *advance to attack the Scotch.*
Thai war bath of full gret bounte, 412
And met thair fais richt manly;
Bot thai war presit gretumly.
Thair mycht men se men weill assale,
And men defend with stout battale, 416 *A fierce fight ensues.*
And arrowes fle in gret foysouňe,
And thai that owth war twmmyl douňe
Stanis apon thame fra the hicht.

396. *thre*] four E; few H. *in*] of his.
397. *till—of*] to the Court of the Lord H.
399. *place*] *so* CH; pass E; *and in* ll. 400, 405.
400. *vald*] wald.
403. *prisit*] praised H.
404. *full humylly*] hamlyly E; honorably H.
405. *syne*] to H. *can*] *so* CH; thai E. *sammyn ta*] togidder ga H.
408. *that—war*] rycht douchty.
409. *arthyn*] ouchtre E; of Struthers H. *ane hat*] heght ane H; ane had E.
410. *rauf*] rawf E; Ralph H. [*cobhame* E] coubane C; Cowbane H; *but note the rime.*
After l. 410 H *inserts*—Thir twa Knights of good degree; *and omits* l. 414.
412. *of full*] full of.
413. *richt manly*] manlely E; right manfullie H.
414. H *omits. presit*] pressyt rycht.
415. *men* (2)] rycht E. *men weill*] well other H.
417. *arrowes*] harnys E; *but* H *as* C.* *fle*] fley.
418. *owth*] owe E; abone H. *twmmyl*] tumbill E; tumbled H.

The Scotch put Sir Ralph Cobham to flight,

Bot thai that set bath will and mycht 420
To vyn the peth, thame pressit swa,
That schir raulf [of cobhame] can ta
The way richt till his host in hy,

and take Sir Thomas,

And left schir thomas manfully 424
Defendand with gret mycht the plaß,
Quhill that he swa supprisit waß
That he wes tane throu herd fechting;

who was ever afterwards held to be the best of English knights,

And tharfor syne, quhill his ending, 428
He ves renownyt for best of hand
Of a knycht, wes in all Ingland

since he surpassed Cobham.

For this ilk [schyr] raulf of [cobhame]
In all Ingland he had the nam̃e 432
For the best knycht of all that land;
And for schir thomas duelt fechtand

[Fol. 142 b. C.]

Quhar schir raulf, as befor saide we,
With-drew him, p*ri*sit our hym wes he. 436

When Sir Robert saw his men assail the hill so boldly,

THus war thai fechtande in the plaß;
And quhen the king robert, that waß
Wiß in his deid and ek verty,
Saw his men ay swa douchtely 440
The peth apon thair fayis ta,
And saw his fais defend tham̃e swa,
Than gert he all the erischry
That war in-till his Cumpany, 444

421. *vyn*] wyn EH.
422. *raulf*] rauff E; Ralph H. [*of cobhame* E] Cowbane H; coubane C. *can*] gan.
423. *richt*] wp. *host*] Oast H; horss E.
424. *manfully*] manlily.
425. *plass*] place H; pass E.
428. *quhill*] while H; in E.
430. *wes in*] off.
431. [*schyr* E] Sir H; C *om.* *raulf*] Rawf E; Ralph H. [*cobhame* E] Cowbane H; coubane C.
432. *In*] In-till. *the*] E *om.*
435. *we*] *so* CH; I E.
436. *he*] *so* CH; hely E (*wrongly*).
437. *Rubric in* H—The discomfiting of Englishmen At Bylands Path into the Glen. *plass*] place H; pass E.
439. *ek verty*] auerty E; eke worthie H.
440. *ay swa*] sa ry*c*ht.
441. *peth*] *so* CEH.
443. *erischry*] Irschery E; Irishry H.

Of Argyle and the Ilis alsua,
Spede thame in hy on-to the bra.
He bad thame leiff the peth haly,
And clym vp in the Craggis by, 448
And speid thame fast, the hicht to ta;
And thai in gret hy haß done swa,
[And (clamb) allgait wp to the hycht,
And (left) nocht for thair fayis mycht. 452
Magre thair fayis, thai bar thaim swa
That thai ar gottyn aboun the bra.]
Than men mycht se thame ficht felly,
And rusche thair fais sturdely. 456
And thai that till the paß war gañe,
Magre thair fais, the hycht haß tañe.
Than layd thai on with all thar mycht;
Thair mycht men se men felly ficht. 460
Ther wes añe pereluß Bargañe:
For a knycht, hat schir Iohñe bretañe,
That lichtit wes abovyn the bra,
With his men gret defens can ma; 464
And scottis men sa can assaill,
That gaf thame so fellouñe battale,
That thai war set in sic affray
That thai, that fle mycht, fled avay. 468
Schir Iohñe of bretane thar wes tane,

he sends the men of Argyle to help them,

telling them to climb up the side of the hill.

They do so, and gain the summit.

There is again a fierce struggle.

Sir John Breton defends the hill bravely,

[Fol. 63. E.]

but is at last taken,

446. *hy on-to*] hy vnto H; gret hy to E.
447. *He*] And. *peth*] *so* CEH.
448. *in—by*] on the Craiges thereby H. *by*] hy.
450. And in great hy they haue done sa H; Than might men se thaim stoutly ga E.
451—454. C *omits*. *From* E; *found also in* H.
451. [*clamb*] clambe H; clymb E. *allgait*] as Gaittes H.
452. [*left* H] leve E.
455. Then faught they wonder fellounly H.
456. *rusche*] rushed H. *sturdely*] right sturdely H.
457—460. H *omits*.
460. *men* (2)] thaim.
461. *ane*] A E; a right H.
462. *hat*] heght H; E *om*. *bretane*] the bretane E; of Brittaine H.
463. *wes*] hes H. *abovyn*] aboune E; abone H.
464. *With*] And. *can*] gan.
465. *And*] Bot the H. *sa can*] sua gan E; can sa H.
466. *That*] And EH. *thame*] to thame CH; *but* E *omits* to, *and* H *has* feill *for* felloune.
468. *fle mycht*] mycht fley.
469. *of*] the.

And richt feill of hir folk war slane.

together with two French knights.

Of franß thar tane ves knychtis twa;
The lord of souly wes añe of tha, 472
The tothir wes the marschall bretañe,
That wes [a weill] gret lord at hame.
The laiff sum deid, and sum war tañe;
The remanand thai fled ilkañe. 476

The king of England, seeing his men thus beaten, flees southwards.

And quhen the king of yngland,
That ȝeit at biland wes liand,
Saw his men discumfyt planly,
He tuk his way in full gret hy, 480
And southwardis fled with all hi*s* my*ch*t.
The scottis men chast hym herd, I hicht,
And in the chaß haß mony tane.
The king quytly avay is gane, 484

[Fol. 144. C.]

And the mast part of his menȝhe.

Walter Stewart, with 500 men, chases the English to the gates of York.

Valter steward, [that] gret bounte
Set ay on hye cheuelry,
With v hundreth in Cumpany 488
Till ȝork*is* ȝettis chaß can ma,
And thair sum of thair men can sla,
And abaid thair quhill neir the nycht,
Till se gif ony vald ysche to ficht. 492
And quhen he saw nane vald cum out,
He turnyt agane with all his rout,

470. And maist part of his Menyie slaine H.
471. *tane ves*] tane wes E; were tane H.
472. *of souly*] of Sowllie H; the sule E.
473. *tothir*] other H.
474. [*a weill* E] a right H; ane C.
475. *deid—war*] ded war and sum EH.
476. And the remanand fled ilkane E; The remnand fled were euerilkane H.
481. *southwardis*] Southward H; furthwart E.
482. *chast—I*] chassyt fast Ic.
483. *tane*] slaine H.
484. *quytly*] quicly *or* quitly E; quickly H.
486. *Valter steward*] Walter Stewart H; Stewart walt*ir* E. [*that* E] of CH.
487. *on hye*] on hey E; upon hie H.
488. *hundreth*] hund*ir*.
489. *chass*] the chass E; a chase H. *can*] gan. *ma* EH] may C.
490. *can*] gan. *sla* EH] slay C.
492. *Till*] To EH. *vald*] wald; *and in* l. 493.
493. *cum*] ishe H.

And till the host is went in hy,
That than tane had thair herbery 496
In-till the abbay of Biland,
And riweus that wes by neir hand.
Thai delt emang thame that war ther
The king of Inglandis ger, 500
That he had levit in-to biland;
All gert thai lepe out our thar hand,
And maid thame all glaid and ek mery.
And quhen the king had tane herbery, 504
Thai broucht till him the presoner*is*
All vnarmyt, as it effer*is*;
And quhen he saw Iohñe of Bretañe,
He had at hym richt gret disdeyñe; 508
For he wount wes till spek hely
At hayñe, and our dispitfully;
And bad haf him avay in hy,
And luk he kepit war stratly, 512
And said, "war it no*ch*t [that] he war
Sic a catiff, he sulde by sair
His wourdis that war sa angry;"
And mekly he hym cryit mercy. 516
Thei led him furth, forouten mair,
And kepit hym weill, ay quhill thai war

He then returns to the main host,

who are at Byland and Rievaulx.

When the prisoners are brought before king Robert,

he is much displeased with Sir John Breton, on account of his spiteful speeches;

who is therefore closely guarded,

495. *the—is*] his ost he E; the Oast they H.
496. *than*] *miswritten th*ane C. *than—had*] tane had than E; then had tane H.
498. *riweus*] ryfuowis E; Rewes H. *wes*] were (!) H. *by—hand*] neere by lyand H.
499. *emang*] amang.
500. *The*] And gaue the H; *but* Inglandis *has four syllables.*
501. *in-to*] in.
502. *gert—our*] gripped they into H.
503. *all*] H *om.* *ek*] E *om.*
508. *disdeyne*] disdaine H; engaigne E.
509. *till*] to E. *wount—till*] of him wald H. *hely*] hychtly.
510. *our*] too H. *dispitfully*] dispitusly.
511. *And*] He H. *avay*] away EH.
513. [*that* EH] *th*ar C.
514. *catiff*] catyve. A Captiue, as he then was there H.
515. *wourdis*] wordys. His words he sould full deare aby H.
516. *mekly — cryit*] he humbly cryit him E; he full fast can cry H.
518. *weill*] H *om.* *ay*] EH *om.*

Cu*m*myn hame to thair awne Cuntre.

till ransomed for 20,000 pounds.

Lang eft*ir* syne ransonyt wes he 520
For tuenty thousand pund to pay,
As I haf herd mony men say.

Then the two French knights come before the king.

Qwhen that the king this spek had maid,
The franche knychtis, that tane men had, 524
Wes broucht richt thar byfor the king;
And he maid thame fair velcu*m*myng,
And said, "I wat richt weill that ȝhe,
For ȝour gret worschip and bounte 528

[Fol. 144 b. C.]

Com for till se the fichting heir.
For, sen ȝe in the Cuntre war,

He addresses them courteously.

ȝour strinth, ȝour vorschip, and ȝou*r* my*ch*t
Vald nocht thoill ȝow escheve the ficht; 532
And sen that cauß ȝow led thar-till,
And nouth*ir* wreth na euill will,
As frendis ȝhe sall resauit be,
Quhar velcum heir all tym ȝe be." 536

They thank him.

Thai knelit and thankit hym gretly
Of the grace he thame did suthly, 537*
And he gert tret thame curtasly; 538
[And lang quhill with him thaim had he,
And did thaim honour and bounte. 540

At last he sends them to France without ransom.

And quhen thai ȝarnyt to thair land,
To the king of Fraunce in presand
He sent thaim quit, but ransoun fre,

519. *to*] till.
522. *I*] Ik. *mony*] *so* H; syndry E.
524. *franche*] frankys E; French H. *that—men*] men takyn E; they taken H.
525. *Wes*] War E; Were H.
526. *velcummyng*] welcu*m*ming.
529. *till*] to EH.
532. *thoill*] thole H; lat E. *escheve*] eschew EH.
534. *wreth*] wreyth E; wrath H. *euill*] ȝeit euill C; Iwill E; yet ill H.
536. *velcum—tym*] all tyme welcum her E; And welcome be all time to me H. *ȝe be*] be ȝe.
537*. *In* C *only*.
539—546. *From* E; *also in* H; *in place of these* 8 *lines*, C *has but one*—Frendis he coude resaif hamely.
539. *And*] A H. *had*] held H.
542. *To*] Vnto H.

And gret gyftis to thaim gaff he. 544
His frendis thusgat curtasly
He couth ressawe, and hamely,]
And his fais stoutly [to]-stonay.
At biland all that nycht he lay. 548

The Scotch are blithe, and ravage the country round.

For thair victor all blith thai war;
And on the morn, forouten mair,
Thai haiff furthwarde tane thair vay.
So fer at that tyme travalit thai 552
Byrnand, slayand, and distroyand,
Thair fayis, vith thair mycht, noyand,
Quhill to the wald cummyn war thai.

Then they return home, destroying the vale of Beauvoir (?) as they go.

Syne northwarde tuk thai hame thar way, 556
And distroyit, in thair repair,
The vale haly of beauvare.
And syne with presoners and catele,
Richeß, and mony fair Iowele, 560
Till scotland tuk thai hame thar way,
Blith and glad, Ioyfull and gay.
And ilk man went to thair repair,

They praise God for their success.

And lovit god thame fell so fair, 564
That thai the king of Ingland
Throu vorschip and throu strinth of hand,
And throu thair lordis gret bounte,
Discumfit in his awne Cuntre. 568

544. *gret gyftis*] gifts great H.
546. *hamely*] right humbly H.
547. *to-stonay*] *certainly the right reading; miswritten* till stonay C (*by usual change of* till *for* to); astoney H; stonay E.
549. *victor*] wictour E; victorie H.
550. *forouten*] withoutten H.
551. *furthwarde*] forthwart E; Southwards H.
554. *vith*] with all.
555. *to*] till. *wald*] *so* CE; wall H.
556. *northwarde*] northwart. Syne North againe they tooke the way H.
557. *distroyit*] syne hameward H.
558. The wale all planly of Beauewar E; They destroyed haill the wall of Bewar H.
561. *Till*] To EH.
562. *Blith*] Bath blyth. *glad—gay*] ioyfull of their Pray H.
563. *thair*] his H.
564. Thanking great God of their welfare H.
566. *vorschip*] worschip.
567. *lordis*] Kings H.
568. *Discumfit*] Discomfist had H.

[BOOK XIX.]

How the lord sowlis thoucht throu tressoun vith his complisis till haf put doun gud king robert the bruce & how he wes varnit be a lady.

A short peace.

THus wes the land a quhile in peß;
Bot covatiß, that can nocht ceß
Till set men apon felony,
Till ger thame Cum till senȝory, 4

Some great lords conspire against king Robert.

Gert lordis of full gret renoune
Mak a fell coniuracioune
Agane robert, the douchty king;
Thai thoucht till bring him till ending, 8
And for till bruke, eftir his dede,
[Fol. 63 b. E.] The kynrik, and [ryng] in his sted.
[Fol. 145. C.] The lord of Sowlis, schir vilȝame,

The lord de Soulis was the chief of them,

Of that purchaß had mast defame; 12
For principall tharoff wes he
Bath of assent and cruelte.
He had gert be with him syndri,
Gilbert mayle-Erll, Iohn of logy, 16
Thir war the knychtis I tell of heir,
And richard broune alß, a squyeir;

RUBRIC. *haf*] *miswritten* hap.
1. *Thus*] Than.
3, 4. *Till*] To EH.
9. *for till*] for to H; to E.
10. [*ryng*] liff C; to ryng E; Reigne H.
11. *Rubric in* H—Of the great Treasoun the ordaining, To Robert the Brvce the noble King.
11. *of Sowlis*] the soullis E; Sowles H.
14. *Bath*] E *om.* *and*] of that.
15. *gert be*] gottyn.
16. *mayle-Erll*] male-herbe E; Malyerd H.
17. *the*] EH *om.* *I—of*] that I tell.

And gud *schir* dauid the brechyñe
Wes of this deid arettit syne, 20
As I sall tell ȝow forthirmair.
Bot thai ilkañe discou*er*it var
Throu añe lady, as I herd say,
Or till thair purpoſ cum mycht thai. 24
For scho tald haly to the king
Thair purpoſ and thair ordanyng,
And how that he suld haf beyn ded,
And sowlis ryng in-till his sted; 28
And tald him werray taky*n*nyng
That this purcheſ wes suthfast thing.
And quhen the king wist it wes swa,
Sa sutell purchaſ can he ma, 32
That he gert tak thame eu*ir*ilkañe.
And quhar the lord sowlis ves tañe,
Thre hundreth and sexte had he
Of squyeris, cled in his liverye, 36
At that tyme in his Cumpany,
Outane knychtis that var Ioly.
In-to berwik than takyn ves he;
Than mycht mẽn all his menȝe se 40
Sary and wa; for, suth to say,
The king leit thame all paſ thar vay,
And held thame that he takyn had.
The lord sowlis syne eft*ir* maid 44
Playn granting of [all] that purchaſ.

and Sir David Brechin was implicated in it.

They were found out by means of a lady,

who told the king.

The king seizes them.

De Soulis has 300 squires in his livery.

He was taken at Berwick.

De Soulis confesses all,

19. *the*] off.
20. *arettit*] arested H.
22. *var*] war.
23. *ane*] A EH.
24. *Or*] Ere H.
25. *haly*] hailly H; all E.
28. *ryng*] Ring H.
29. *werray*] *so* CE; very H.
30. *That*] E *om.* *purchess*] purpose H.
32. *can*] gan. *ma*] ta H.
34. *ves*] was.
35. *hundreth*] hund*ir*.
38. *var*] war.
39. *than*] EH *om.* *ves*] wes.
40. *Than*] That.
41. *for*] bot E; the H.
42. *thar vay*] thair way E; away H.
43. *that*] at EH.
44. *syne*] sone E; then H.
45. *all that*] *so* E; that haill H; that C.

A *par*liament tharfor set thar vaß;
And thidd*ir* broucht thir menȝe war.
The lord sowlis haß grantit thar 48

In open parliament, and is imprisoned in Dumbarton Castle,

The deid in-to plane *par*liament;
Thar soyn eft*ir* he wes sent
Till his penans till dumbertañe,

where he dies.

And deit in that tour of stañe. 52

[Fol. 145 *b*. C.]

Schir gilbert male-erll, and logy,
And richard brouñe, thir thre planly,
War with ane assiß thar ourtane.

Three others were beheaded.

Tharfor thai drawin war ilkañe, 56
And hyngit and hedit alß thar-to,
As men had demyt thame till do.

Sir David Brechin is tried.

And gud schir dauid the brechyñe
Thai gert challanß richt stratly syñe; 60

He confesses that he knew of the plot,

And he grantit, that of that thing
Ves maid till hym discou*e*ryng,

but did not consent to it.

Bot he thar-till gaf na consent.
And for he helit thair entent, 64
And disco*u*erit [It] nocht to the king,
That he held of all his halding,
And had maid till him [his] fewte,

He is condemned to be hung.

Iugit to hang and draw wes he. 68
And as thai drew him for to hyng,
The pepill ferly fast can thring

46. *tharfor set*] set tharfor. *thar*] H *om*. *vass*] was.
47. *thiddir broucht*] broucht thiddir. *thir*] this E; that H.
48. *sowlis*] the sowll*is* E; Sowles H. *thar*] *so* EH; *miswritten* war (*copied from* l. 47) C.
51. *Till*] To H. *penans*] paines H. *till*] to E; in H.
52. *in that*] thar in a.
53. *male-erll*] maleherbe E; Malyerd H.
55. *ane assiss*] a-syss E; assise H. *thar*] than.
57. *hyngit*] hangyt. *alss*] E *om*.
58. *demyt*] dempt E; damned H. *had—thame*] them damned had H. *till*] for to E; to H.
59. *dauid the*] dawy off.
60. *challanss*] chalance E; challenge H.
62. *Ves*] Was H; Wes wele E.
64. *And*] Bot H.
65. [*It* EH] C *om*.
66. *That—of*] Whome of he held H.
67. *had*] E *om*. [*his* E] CH *om*.
68. *to*] till.
70. *can*] gan.

Him and his myscheiff [for] to se,
That to behald was gret pite. 72

Sir Ingraham Umphraville,

Schir Ingerame vmphravell, that than
Wes with the king [as] scottis man,
Quhen he that gret mischeif can se,

seeing him drawn to execution, expresses his great regret.

"Lordis," he said, "quhar-to press ȝe 76
To se at myscheiff sic a knycht,
That wes so vorthy and so wicht,
That I haf seyn ma preſ to se
Him for his richt souerane bounte 80
Than now dois for till se him heir?"
And quhen thir vordis spoken weir,
With sary cheir he held him still,
Quhill men had doñe of him thar vill. 84

After the execution, he buries the body honourably.

Syne, with the leiff of the king,
He broucht him menskfully till erding.
And syne to the king thus said he,
"A thing, pray I ȝow, grant to me; 88

He asks the king to let him dispose of his lands in Scotland.

That is, that ȝhe of all my land,
That in-to scotland is lyand,
Wald gif me leiff till do my will."
The king than soyne haſ said him till, 92
"I will weill graunt that it swa be;
Bot tell me, quhat anoyis the?"
He said agañe, "grant [me] mercy, [Fol. 146. C.]
And I sall tell ȝow it planly. 96

He says he has no heart to remain in Scotland.

Myne hert giffis me no mor to be
With ȝow duelland in this Cuntre.

71. [*for* EH] C *om.*
73. *vmphravell*] the umfraweill E; Vmfrauile H.
74. [*as* E] a CH.
75. *can*] gan E; did H.
76. *Lordis—said*] He said lordingis EH.
79. *I*] Ik. *ma*] *so* EH; may C.
81. *till*] to EH; *and in ll.* 91, 108, 112.
85. *Syne*] And syne.
86. *menskfully*] *so* CH; menskly E.
87. *thus*] EH *om.*
88. *pray I*] I pray EH. *to*] E *om.*
90. *into—is*] is in-till scotland E; is into Scotland H.
92. *hass*] hes H; had E.
94. *anoyis*] annoyes H; amowis E.
95. *grant me* H] *schyr* graunt E; grant C.

Tharfor, bot at it nocht ȝow greiff,
I pray ȝow hertly of ȝour leiff. 100
For quhar sa richt worthy a knyc*ht*,
And sa cheuclruſ and sa wicht,
And sa renownit of vorschip syñe
As gud schir dauid the brechyñe, 104
And sa fulfillit of all manheid,
Wes put to sa fellouñe a ded,
My hert forsuth may nocht gif me
Till duell, for na thing that may be." 108
The king syne said, "sen thou will swa,
Quhen-eu*ir* thou lik*is*, thou may ga;
And thou sall haf gude leiff thar-to
Thi liking of thi land till do." 112
And he him thankit gretumly,
And of his land in full gret hy
As him thoucht best, disponit he.
Syne at the king of gret bounte, 116
Befor all thai that with him war,
He tuk his leyff for eu*ir*mair;
And vent in Ingland to the king,
[Fol. 64. E.] That maid him richt fair velcu*m*myng, 120
And askit him of the north tithing.
And he him tald all, but lesing,
How thai knychtis distroyit war,
And all, as I tald [till] ȝow air, 124
And of the kyngis Curtasye,
That levit him debonarly
Till do of his land his liking.
In that tyme war send fra the king 128

For, since Sir David Brechin was hung,

he cannot remain in Scotland longer.

The king grants him all his request.

He thanks him, and disposes of his lands.

He takes his leave.

King Edward receives him graciously.

99. *bot at*] bot that E; that H.
101. *richt*] Noble and H.
103. *vorschip*] worschip EH; hye vorschip C.
104. *the*] off.
106. *felloune*] welanys E; villanous H.
109. *syne—sen*] said sen that EH.
110. *thou likis*] the likys E; ye will H. *thou* (2)] ye H.
119. *vent*] went EH.
120, 121. H *omits*.
124. *all*] E *om*. [*till* E] CH *om*.
126. *levit*] lewyt.
127. *Till*] To EH. *of*] with H.
128. *war*] wes.

Of scotland messinger*is* to tret
Of peſ, gif that thai mycht it get,
As thai oftsiſ befor war send,
Quhar that thai couth no*cht* bring till end. 132
For the gud king had in entent,
Sen god sa fair grace till him sent,
That he had wo*m*nyn all his land
Throu strinth of Armys till his hand, 136
That he peſ in his land wald ma,
And all the landis stabill swa,
That his air eft*ir* hym suld be
In peiſ, gif men held thair laute. 140

Messengers come from king Robert to the English court, to treat of peace.

[Fol. 146 b. C.]

King Robert is desirous that his successor should enjoy peace.

IN this tyme now that vmphrevele,
As I bair ȝow on hand eir-quhil,
Com till the king of Ingland,
The scottis messingeres thar he fand 144
Of peſ and rest to haf tretiſ.
The kyng wist schir yngerame veſ viſ,
And askit his consell thair-to,
Quhat he wald rede him for till do. 148
"For him," said he, "thoucht herd to ma
Peſ wyth kyng robert bruce his fa,
Quhill that he of hym vengit war."
Schir Ingerame till hym maid ansuar, 152
And said, "he delt sa Curtasly
With me, that on na viſ suld I

These messengers arrive.

King Edward asks Umphraville's advice,

not wishing for peace.

Umphraville says he will give no counsel against Bruce.

129. *to* EH] for to C.
131. *oftsiss befor*] befor oft-syss.
132. *Quhar that*] How that E; Suppose H. *till*] it to H.
134. *sa fair*] sik H. *till—sent*] to him had sent H; had him lent E.
137. *land*] *so* CH; tyme E (*perhaps better*).
138. *the*] E *om.* *landis stabill*] land establisht H.
140. *thair*] E *om.*
141. *In*] In-till. *now that*] that the H; that E. *vmphrevele*] umfrawill E; Vmfrauile H.
146. *yngerame*] Ingrahame E; Ingrame H. *vess viss*] wes wiss.
147. *his*] E *om.*
148. *till*] to EH.
149. *him—he*] he said him. *herd*] hard. *him—herd*] he said, he was laith H.
152. *till—maid*] maid till him.

Giff consell till his merring."
"The behufis neid-way," said the king, 156
"To this thing heir say thine aviß."

Being further urged, he says that the Scotch are now so hardy in war that they cannot be beaten.

"Schir," said he, "sen ȝour willis is
That I say, wit ȝhe sekirly,
For all ȝour gret cheuelry, 160
Till deill with hym ȝhe haf no mycht.
His men ar worthyn all sa wicht
For lang vsage of gret fechting,
That has beyne norist in sic thing, 164
That ilk ȝeman is sa wicht
Of his, that he is worth a knycht.
Bot and ȝhe think ȝour weir to bring
Till your purpoß and gud liking, 168

Therefore the English should make a long truce,

Lang trewis with hym tak sall ȝe.
Than sall the mast of his menȝhe,
That ar bot sympill ȝhemanry,
Be distrenȝeit all comonly 172
To wyn thair met with thair travale.

and meanwhile the Scotch would become less warlike.

And sum of thame neid mon thame call
With plewch and harrow for to get,
And othir ser craftis, thair met, 176
Swa that thai armyng sall worth ald,
And sall be rottyn, distroyit, or sald;
[Fol. 147. C.] And feill, that now of weir ar sle,

155. *merring*] nethring E; hurting H.
156. *The—neidway*] The behowis nedwayis E; Thou behooues needwise H.
158. *willis*] *so* CE; will it H.
161. *Till*] To EH. *hym*] them H.
162. *ar—sa*] all worthyn ar sa E; sa worthie are and H.
163. *gret*] EH *om.*
164. *has beyne*] has bene E; haue bene H.
165. *ȝeman*] ȝowman E; Yeman H.
167. *and*] gif H.
168. *Till*] To EH. *your*] good H. *and gud*] and ȝour E; at your H.
169. *sall*] EH *om.*
172. *distrenȝeit*] dystroyit E; dystroynit P; strenyied H. *all comonly*] commonaly.
174. *neid—call*] of need mon call H; nedis but faill E.
176. *ser—thair*] Crafts their dayly H.
178. *sall*] H *om.* *rottyn*] rousted H. *distroyit*] stroyit. *or*] and EH. *Here follows the catchword—*
And fele that now of ver are sle.

In-till a lang trewis sall de, 180
And othir in thair sted sall riß
That sall cwn litill of sic mastriß.
And quhen thai thus [diswsyt] ar,
Than may ȝhe move on thame ȝour wer, 184
And sall richt weill, as I suppoß, 185
Bryng ȝour entent till gud purpoß." 186

And then, when they are grown unused to war, the English can attack them better.

Till this assentit thai ilkane; 185
And eft*ir* syne war trewis tañe
Betuix the twa kyngis, that wer
Talit to [lest] for thretten ȝheir, 188
And on the marchis gert thame cry.

A truce for 13 years is agreed upon.

The Scottis men kepit thame lely;
Bot ynglißmen apon the se
Distroyit, throu gret Iniquite, 192
Marchand-schippis that saland war
Fra scotland to flandriß with war,
And distroyit the men ilkane,
And till thar oyß thar gude haß tañe. 196

But the English did not keep to it, but destroyed the Scottish ships.

The king send oft till ask redreß,
Bot nocht thar-of redreß ther wes;
And he abaid all tyme askand.
The trewis on his half gert he stand 200
Apon the marchis stabilly,
And gert men kep thame lelely.

Bruce demands redress, but none is given.

180. *a*] the E; tha H. *trewis*] trewes H; trew E.
182. *cwn*] conn E; ken H. *sic*] that.
183. *thus*] E *om.* [*diswsyt* E] diffused (*for* disused) H; deuisit (!) C.
185*, 186*. *Found in* EJ; *but omitted in* P. H *also omits these lines.* *till*] to.
185. *Till*] To EH.
186. *syne*] sone.
187. E *wrongly inserts* Butwer *before* Betuix. *the*] E *om.*
188. *Talit*] Tailȝeit E; Taken H. [*lest* E] last H; rest C; *see* l. 204. *thretten*] thretteene H; viij (*for* xiij) E; *see l.* 229.
190. *lely*] lelely.
191. *Bot*] Bot the.
192. *Iniquite*] crueltie H.
194. *to*] till. *war*] waire H.
195. *the—ilkane*] euirilkane.
196. *till*] to EH. *thar* (2)] the EH. *gude*] goods H.
198. *thar—ther*] off It redressyt.
200. *trewis*] trewes H; trew E.

The ded of gud schir valter steward.

While this truce lasted

IN this tyme that the trewis war
Lestand on marchis, as I said ar, 204

Walter Stewart falls ill.

Walter steward, that worthy was,
At bathket a gret seknes tais.

His sickness is incurable,

His euill it wox ay mair and mair,
Quhill men persauit by his fair 208
That hym worthit neyd to pay the det
That na man for till pay may let.
Schrevyn, and als repentand wele,
Quhen all wes done him ilke dele 212
That nedit cristin man till haf,

and he dies.

As gud cristyn the gast he gaf.

He is greatly lamented.

Than mycht men heir folk gret and cry,
And mony a knycht and ek lady 216
Mak in [apert] richt euill cher;
Sa did thai all that eu*ir* thair wer.
All men hym menyt comonly;
For of his elde he wes worthy. 220

[Fol. 147 b. C.]

Quhen thai lang tym̄e thar dule had maid,

He is interred at Paisley with great honour.

The corſ̄ to paslay haf thai had,
And thar, with gret solempnite
And with gret dule, entyrit wes he. 224
God for his mycht his saull he bring
Quhar Ioy ay lestis but Endyng!—Amen.

203. *Rubric in* H—Walter Stewart here died he, At Paslay eirded syne was he. *the*] E *om.*
205. *Walter*] *schir* walt*ir*.
206. *bathket*] Bathcat H; bathgat E.
207. *it—ay*] ay woux E; waxt ay H.
209. *hym—to*] he of need must H.
210. *for*] E *om.* *till*] to EH.
211. *Schrevyn*] schrywyn E; Shriuen H. *repentand*] repenting H; repentit E.
212. *him*] to him H.
213. *nedit—till*] crystyn man nedyt till E; Christen men ought for to H.
215. *mycht—folk*] men my*ch*t her men. *gret*] weepe H.
216. *ek*] mony A E; faire H.
217. [*apert* E] apart C. *Mak—richt*] Murning and making full H.
219. *comonly*] commonaly.
221. *tyme*] quhill.
224. *entyrit*] erdyt E; eirded H.
225. *he*] mot H; E *om.*

Eftir his ded, as I said air,
The trewis that swa takyn war 228
For till haf lestit xiij ȝeir, [Fol. 64 *b*. E.]
Quhen twa ȝeir of thame passit weir
And ane half, as I trow, alsua, When two years and a half of the truce was over,
Kyng robert saw men wald no*ch*t ma 232 Bruce finds he can get no redress;
Redreß of schippes that war tane,
And of the men alß thar war slaũe
Bot continuit thair mavite
Quhen eu*ir* thai met thame on the se. 236
He send and acquyt hym all planly, wherefore he declares the truce broken.
And gaf the trewis wp oppinly,
And, in wengeans of this trespaß,
The gud erll of murreff, thomaß, 240 Sir Thomas Murray, the Earl of Mar,
And donald Erll of mar alsua,
And Iames of douglaß with thaim twa, Sir James of Douglas, and Sir James Stewart
And Iames steward, that ledar was
Eft*ir* his gud brother disseß, 244
Of all his brothir men in weir,
He gert apon thar best maner
With mony men bown thai*m* to ga prepare to make a raid upon England.
In Ingland, for to burne and sla. 248
And thai held furth soyn till Ingland—
Thai war of gud men ten thousand—
And brynt and slew in-to thair way;
Thair fais fast distroyit thai. 252
And swagat*is* furthward can thai fair, They invade England,

227. *Rubric in* H—The Erle of Mvrray and Dowglas, With their Oast commen to Wardal was. *ded*] death H.
229. *xiij*] thretteene H; viij E.
232. *Kyng*] The king.
235. *continuit*] ay continuit C; ay continued H; contynowyt (*omitting* ay) E. *mavite*] mawyte E; prauitie H.
237. *acquyt*] *so* CE; quit H. *all*] E *om*.
239. *in*] in the.
242. *thaim* E] them H; thai (*for* thai*m*) C.
244. *brother*] bro*ther*is.
245. *brothir*] brud*er*yis.
248. *burne*] bryn.
249. *soyn*] soone H; E *om*.
251. *And*] Thai. *in-to*] in-till.
253. *swagatis*] swagat E; thusgaite H. *furthward*] southwart. *can*] gan.

and advance to Weardale.

Till wardill quhill thai cu*m*my*n* war.
That tym̃e Eduard of carnavarãne,

[Fol. 148. C.] At this time Edward of Carnarvon dies, and is succeeded by Edward of Windsor.

The king, wes ded, and laid in stañe. 256
And Eduard, his soñe, that wes ȝyng,
In Ingland crownyt wes for kyng,
And surnam̃e had of wyndissoyr.
He had in france beyn of befor 260
With his moder dame Isabell,
And wes weddid, as I herd tell,
Till a ȝoung lady fair of face,

He had married Philippa of Hainault,

That the erllis douchter waß 264
Of he*n*naut; and of that cuntre
Broucht with hym [men] of gret bounte.

and had Sir John of Hainault with him.

Schir Iohñe of he*n*naut wes thar leder,
That wes richt viß and wicht in wer. 268
And that tym that scottis men war
At wardale, as I said ȝow ar,

He was then at York.

In-to ȝork wes the new maid king,
And herd tell of [the] distroying 272
That scottis men maid in his Cuntre.

He gathers 50,000 men.

A gret host till him gad*e*rit he;
He was weill neir fifty thousand.
Than held he northward*e* in the land 276
In haill battale with that menȝhe.

He is 18 years old.

xviij ȝeir ald that tyme wes he.
The scottis men all cokdaill

254. *Till*] To EH. *wardill*] wardaill E; Wardall Park H.
255. *carnavarane*] carnauerayne E; Carnauerane H.
256. *stane*] Lame (!) H.
258. *wes for*] wes to E; then was H.
259. *had*] E *om.* *wyndissoyr*] wyndyssor E; Windsore H.
260. *of*] thar E; H *om.*
262. *I*] Ik.
263. *Till*] To H; With E.
265. *hennaut*] hennaud E; Henault H.
266. [*men* EH] ane C.
267. *of hennaut*] the hennaud E; de Henault H. *thar*] E *om.*
268. *richt*] E *om.* *viss*] wyss.
269. *that—that*] in that time the H.
270. *wardale*] wardaile E; Wardall Parke H.
271. *In-to*] In-till.
272. [*the* EH] thair C.
276. *northwarde*] northwart.
279. *all cokdaill*] a day cokdaile E; they had all Cokdaill H.

Fra end till end thai heryit haill, 280
And till wardaill agane thai raid.
Thar discurrour*is*, that sicht had had
Of cu*m*myng of the ynglis̃ men,
To [thair] lordis thai tald it thên. 284
Than the lord douglas̃ in a lyng
Raid furth [for] till se thair cu*m*myng,
And saw that sevyn battell*is* war thai,
That com rydand in gud aray. 288
Quhen he that folk behaldin had,
Toward his host agane he raid.
The Erll sperit giff he had seyñe
The Inglis̃ host; "ȝa, s*chir*, but weyñe." 292 [Fol. 148 *b*. C.]
"Quhat folk ar thai?" "s*chir*, mony men."
The Erll his ayth has̃ [suorn] him then,
"We shall ficht with thame, thouch thai war
ȝeit ma eftsoñis than thai ar." 296
"Schir, lovit be god," he said agañe,
"That we haue sic añe Capitañe,
That swa gret thyng [dar] vnd*ir*ta.
Bot, be saint bryde, It beis nocht swa, 300
Giff my consaill may trowit be.
For fecht on na maner sall we
Bot it be at our avantage.
For me think It war nane outrage 304
Till fewar folk aganys ma
Avantage, quhen thai ma, to ta."
As thai war on this wis̃ spekand,
Our añe hye ryg thai saw rydand 308

The Scottish scouts, seeing the English host advancing, give warning.

Douglas rides forward,

and sees 7 battalions of the English.

The Earl of Murray says he shall fight the English.

Douglas dissuades him, and advises him to bide his time.

The Scotch see an English battalion coming,

280. *thai heryit*] had heryd.
282. *had* (1)] has E; hes H.
284. [*thair* EH] thai C.
286. [*for* H] CE *om.* *till*] to EH.
290. *host*] ost E; Oast H.
292. *The—schir*] That ost ȝa *schir* he said E; The Oast? yea Sir (he said) H.
294. [*suorn* E] made H; C *om.* *him*] euen H; E *om.*
295. *thame*] them, yea H.
296. *ȝeit—eftsonis*] Full ma by far H. *ar*] now are H.
298. *ane*] A EH.
299. [*dar* EH] can C.
304. *nane*] na E; no H.
305. *Till*] To EH.

Toward thame evyn a battell braid;
Baneris displayit enew thai had.

followed by another,

And añe oth*ir* come eft*ir* neir,
And richt apon the sa*m*my*n* maner 312

till 7 of them appear.

Thai com, quhill sevyn battell*is* braid
Out-our that hye Ryg passit had.

The Scotch are on the North bank of the Wear,

The scottis men war than liand
On north half [wer], toward scotland. 316
The daill wes strekit weill, I hicht.

the banks of which are steep.

On athir syde thar wes añe hicht
Till the vattir douñe, su*m* deill stay.
The scottis men in gud aray, 320
On thair best wiß buskit ilkañe,
Stude in the strynth that thai had tañe;

The Scotch are a quarter of a mile from the river.

And that wes fra the wattir of wer
A quart*ir* of ane myle weill ner. 324
Thai stude thar, battell till abyd.

The English ride down to the river on the other side.

And ynglißmen, on athyr syd,
Com ridand dounward, quhill thai wer
To wer*is* wattir cu*m*myn ner; 328
And on othir half thair fais war.
Than haf thai maid a-rest richt thar;

[Fol. 149. C.]

The English send their archers forward,

And send out archeris a thousand
With hwdis of, and bowis in hand, 332
And gert thai*m* weill drink of the vyñe,
And bad thai*m* gang to bikkyr syñe
The scottis host in abandoune,

309. *a*] in H.
310. *enew*] Inew E; anew H.
311. *ane othir*] a nothyr E; another H.
314. *hye*] hey.
315. *than*] thar.
316. [*wer* E] neir C; neere H; *see l.* 323.
317. *I*] Ik.
319. *Till*] And till E; And to H. *vattir*] wat*ir*.
323. *fra*] far fra H.
324. *ane*] A EH.
325. *Thai—thar*] Thar stud thai EH.
328. *weris*] Weeres H. *ner*] als ner.
329. *And*] As.
332. *hwdis of*] hudis off E; Hounds (!) H.
333. *vyne*] wyn.
335. *abandoune*] a randoun H.

And luk if thai mycht dyng thaim douñe. 336
For mycht thai ger thame brek aray, [Fol. 65. E.]
Till haue thaim at thar will thoucht thai:
Armyt men doun with thaṁe thai send, supported by knights.
Thame at the watter till defend. 340
The lord dowglaß haß seyn that fair, Douglas sees them coming,
And men that richt weill horsit war,
And armyt, a gret Cumpany, and tells a company to lie in ambush.
Behynd the battell preuely 344
He gert hufe, to byd thar cummyng.
And quhen he maid to thame taknyng,
Thai suld com prikand fast, and sla
With speris that thai mycht our-ta. 348
Donald of mar thar chiftañe waß, It is commanded by Donald of Mar and Archibald Douglas.
And archbald with hym of dowglaß.
The lord dowglaß toward thaim raid;
A gown on his armyng he had, 352
And trawersit alwayis vp agañe, Douglas entices the English forward.
Thame neir his battell for till trayne.
And thai, that drunkyn had of the vyne,
Com ay wp endlang in a lyne, 356
Quhill thai the battell com so neir
That arrowis fell emang thaim seir.
Robert of ogill, a gud squyer, nota. de ogle. (in margin of C.)
Com prekand than on a courser, 360
And on [the] archeris cryit agane, Robert Ogle, a squire, warns the English archers.
"Ȝhe wat nocht quha mais ȝow that traiñe!
It is the lord dowglaß, that will

336. Thai ger (*sic*) thaim cum apon thaim doun E.
338. *Till*] To EH; *and in ll.* 340, 354.
341. *lord*] lord of C; *but* EH *omit of.* *that*] thair EH.
344. *battell*] bataillis.
345. *hufe*] howe E; hower H.
348. *that*] all that H.
350. *with hym*] E *om.*
352. *armyng*] armur.
354. *battell*] bataillis.
355. *the*] H *om.* *vyne*] wyne EH.
356. *endlang*] *so* CH; lingand E.
358. *emang*] amang.
360. *than—a*] on a good H.
361. [*the* EH] C *om.*
363. *It*] That.

Sum of his playis ken ȝow till!" 364
And quhen thai herd spek of dowglaß,
The hardyest affrayit was,
And agane turnit halely.

But Douglas gives the signal, [Fol. 149 b. C.] and 300 archers are slain.

His takyñ maid he thai*m* in hy; 368
And the folk that enbuschit war
So stoutly prekit on thame thar,
That weill thre hundreth haf thai slayñe,
And till the wattir hame [agayne] 372
The remanand all can thai chaß.

Sir William Erskine, a young Scottish knight, is taken prisoner.

Schir williame of Erskyn, that waß
Newlyngis makyn knycht that day, 375
Weill horsit intill gud aray, 376
Chassit, with othir that war thar,
So fer-furth, [that] his horß him bar 376
Emang the lwmp of Ingliß men,
That with strang hand he [tane] wes then.
Bot of hym weill soyn chaynge wes maid
For othir that men takyn had. 380

A retreat on both sides.

Fra thir Ingliß archeris war slayñe,
Thai folk raid till thar host agane.
And richt swa did the lord dowglaß;
And quhen that he reparit was, 384

The English begin to pitch their tents for the night.

Thai mycht emang thair fayis se
Thair palyȝeownys soyne stentit be.
Than thai persauit soyne in hy,
That thai that nycht wald tak herbery, 388

364. *Sum*] *follows* ken *in* EH.
366. *affrayit*] effrayit.
368. *thaim*] than E; then H. *maid—thaim*] then he made H.
371. *hundreth*] hundir.
372. [*agayne*] agane E; againe H; *miswritten* ar gayne C.
373. *all*] *begins the line in* E. *can*] gan.
374. *that*] thar.
375*, 376*. *In* CH; E *om.* H *has* —New made Knight that samine day, Well horsed into good array.
376. [*that* EH] with C.
377. *Emang*] Amang. *lwmp*] lump.
378. *That*] And EH. *he—wes*] he takyn wes C; wes takyn EH. *For* takyn, *read* tane.
379. *chaynge*] chang E; change H.
382. *Thai*] Thir.
383. *lord*] lord off.
385. *emang*] amang.
386. *Thair*] The. *palyȝeownys*] pailȝownys E; Pauillions H.
387. *Than*] And.

And schap till do no mar that day,
Tharfor alsua thame herbreit thai,
And stentit palȝeownys soyn in hy.
Tentis and lugg*is* als thair-by 392
Thai gert mak, and set all on raw.

The Scotch do the same.

Twa novelreis that day thai saw,
That forrouth in scotland had beyn nañe.
Tymbrys for helmys wes the tane, 396
That thame thoucht than of gret bewte,
And alsua wounder for to se;
The tothir crakk*is* war of wer,
That thai befor herd neu*ir* eir. 400
Of thir twa thyngis thai had ferly.

Two novelties were seen that day, viz. crests and cannon.

That nycht thai wachit stalwardly;
The mast part of thame armyt lay,
Quhill on the morñe that it wes day. 404

The Scotch keep watch all night.

THE ynglis men thame vmbethoucht,
Apon quhat maner that thai moucht [Fol. 150. C.]
Ger scottis lewe thair avantage;
For thame thoucht foly and outrage 408
To gang wp to thamẽ, till assale
Thame at thar strynthis in playn battale.

The English wish to make the Scotch leave their position.

Tharfor of gud men añe thousand,
Armyt on hors bath fut and hand, 412
Thai send, behynd thair fayis to be
Enbuschit in-till a wale;
And schup thair battellis, as thai wald

They place an ambush of 1000 men in a valley.

They make a feigned attack.

389. *schap*] shape H; schup E. *till*] to EH.
390. *alsua thame*] thaim alsua.
391. *stentit*] stented H; stent E; styntit C (*but see l.* 386). *soyn*] E *om.*
394. *novelreis*] noweltyis E; new things H.
395. *forrouth*] before H.
396. *Tymbrys*] Tymbres H; Tymmeris E. *wes*] war.
399. *tothir*] other H. *crakkis*] crakys E; Craikes H. *of*] for H.
400. *herd*] had H.
402. *wachit*] walkyt.
407. *lewe*] leve E; leaue H.
409. *to*] till.
410. *strynthis*] strenth E; Strength H.
411. *aue*] A EH.
413. *behynd*] before (!) H.
414. *wale*] *so* CE; valley H.

Apon thame till the fechting hald. 416
For thame [thoucht] scottis men sic will
Had, that thai mycht no*cht* hald thai*m* still.

They know the Scotch will come out to meet them.

For thai knew thame of sic corage,
That thai trowit strenth and avantage 420
Thai suld leyff, and meit thame planly.
Tha*n* suld thar buschement hastely
Behynd prek on thame at the bak;
Sa thoucht thai weill thai suld thai*m* mak 424
For till repent thame of thair play.

The 1000 men go to their ambush.

Thair enbuschement furth send haf thai,
That thame enbuschit preualy.

Next morning the advance is sounded.

And on the morn, sum-deill airly, 428
[In-till] the host syne trumpit thai,
And gert thair battell braid aray;
And all arayit for to ficht,
Thai held toward the watt*ir* richt. 432

The Scotch see them coming,

Scottis men, that saw thame do swa,
Bown on thair best wiß can thai*m* ma;

and advance likewise.

And in battell planly arayit,
With baneris to the vynd displayit, 436
Thai left thair strynth, and all planly
Com doune to meit thame hardely
In als gud maner as thai mowcht,
Richt as thair fayis befor had thoucht. 440
Bot the lord dowglaß, that ay-quhar

417. *thame*] thai E; they H. [*thoucht* EH] C *om.* *sic*] of sik H.
418. *Had*] H *om.*
420. *trowit*] thoucht E; sould leaue H.
421. *leyff*] leve. And meete them in the field plainely H.
422. *hastely*] halily.
423. *prek*] brek EH.
424. *mak*] wracke H.
425. *For—of*] And make them to repent H.
426. *send haf*] sent H.
429. [*In-till* E] Into H; And till C. *syne*] soone H; hey E.
430. *battell braid*] battells brade H; braid bataill*is* E.
431, 432. *Transposed in* H. *all*] well H. *Thai*] And H.
434. *can*] gan.
436. *to*] till. *vynd*] wynd.
438. To feght they shupe them hastely H.
441. *quhar*] where H; was war E.

But Douglas finds out about the ambush,

Set out wachis heir and thar,
[Gat] wit of thair enbuschement.
Than in gret hy soyn is he went 444

[Fol. 150 *b*. C.]

Befor the battellis, and stoutly
He bad ilk man turn hym in hy
Richt as he [stud], and, turnit swa,
Vp till thair strynth he bad thai*m* ga, 448

and bids his men turn right about without breaking the ranks, and so retreat.

Swa that na let thar-in be maid.

[Fol. 65 *b*. E.]

And thai did as he biddin had,
Quhill to thair strynth thai com agañe;
Than turnyt thai thame with mekill mayn, 452
And stude reddy to giff Battale,
Giff thair fayis wald thame assale.

They do so, and when they come to their former place of strength, they face their foes again.

Quhen Inglifs men hafs seyn thai*m* swa
Toward thar strynth agane wp ga, 456
Thai cryit hey, 'thai fled thar way.'
Schir Iohñe de he*n*naut said, "perfay,
ȝone fleying is right degyse.
Thair armyt men behynd I se, 460
And thair baner*is*, swa that thai thar
Bot turne thame as thai standand
And be arayit for the ficht,
Gif ony press*is* thame with mycht. 464

Sir John of Hainault sees the manœuvre, and explains it.

Thai haf seyne our enbuschement,
And agane to thar strinth ar went.
ȝone folk ar gouernyt wittely;
And he that ledis thame war worthy, 468

He says the Scotch are led by a captain

442. *Set*] *so* CH; And set E. (Had set *would do best*.)
443. [*Gat* E] To CH.
444. *in—soyn*] in-till gret hy.
447. [*stud* E] stood H; said C. H *has*—Right as they stood, them turned them sa.
449. *thar-in be*] be therein H; thar thai E.
451, 452. *Transposed in* H. *to*] till. *mayn*] *so* CE; payne P; paine H.
455. *hass*] hes H; had E.
457. *fled*] fley E; flee H. *thar way*] away H.
458. *de*] of H; E *om*.
459. *degyse*] Tragedie (!) H; E *om*.
461. *thai*] *so* EH; *miswritten* thaim C.
462. *Bot*] Sall H.
463. *the*] to.
464. *pressis*] pressyt. *pressis thame*] wald them preasse H.
466. *to*] till.
468. *And*] For H. *thame*] E *om*. *war*] is EH.

fit to govern the Empire of Rome.

For a-viß, worschip, and wisdoṁe,
To gouerne the Empyre of rome."
Thus spak that worthy knycht that day;

The ambushed men return.

And the enbuschement, fra that thai 472
Saw that thai swa discouerit war,
Toward thar host agane thai far.
And the battell of Ingliß men,

The English, having thus failed, retreat to their tents.

Quhen thai saw thai had falit then 476
Of thar purpoß, to thair herbery
Thai went, and lugit thame in hy.
On othir half richt swa did thai;
Thai maid no mar debat that day. 480

At night fires are lighted.

Qwhen thai [that] day ourdrivyn had,
Fyres in gret foysoune thai maid,
Als soyñe as the nycht fallen was.
Than the gud lord of dowglaß, 484

[Fol. 151. C.]

That spyit had a plaß thar-by,

Douglas finds a place 2 miles off, better suited for encampment.

Twa myle fra thine, quhar mar trastly
The scottis host mycht herbery ta,
And defend thame bett*ir* alsua 488
Than ellis in ony place thar-by.

It is a great park, walled round.

It wes a park, that halely
Wes enveronyt about with [wall];
It wes neir full of treis all, 492
Bot a gret playn in-till it was.
Thiddir thoucht the lord dowglas
Be [ny*ch*tyrtale] thair host to bryng.
Tharfor, forouten mair duelling, 496

469. *a-viss*] auise H; awise E. *worschip*] wit H.
470. *Empyre*] *miswritten* Enpyre C.
475. *battell*] bataill*is* E; battells H.
478. *lugit*] logit.
481. [*that* EH] the C.
484. *Than*] Then H; And than E.
485. *spyit had*] had spyit.
486. *Twa—thine*] Twa myile thine that E; That twa mile hyne H. *mar*] maist H.
490. *that*] all.
491. [*wall* EH] all C.
494. *lord*] lord of.
495. [*nychtyrtale* E] nychtir daill C; night all H.
496. *forouten*] without H.

Thai bet thair fyres and maid thame mair,
And syne all sa*m*myn furth thai fair,
And till the park, without tynsele,
Thai come, and herbryit thai*m* richt wele 500
Vpon the vatt*ir*, and als neir
Till it as [that] thai forrouth weir.

By night, the Scotch, after having made up their fires, retire to the park.

And on the morn, quhen it wes day,
The Inglis host myssit avay 504
The scottis men, and had ferly,
And gert discurrour*is* hastely
Prek to se quhar thai var avay.

At daybreak, the English miss the Scotch, and send out scouts to find them.

And by thair fyres persauit thai,
That thai in the park of wardale 508
Had gert herbery thar host all hail.

They find them in the park in Weardale.

Tharfor thair host, but mair abaid,
Buskit, and evin anent thai*m* raid, 512
And on othir half the vatter of wer
Gert stent thair palȝeownys, alß neir
As that befor stentit war thai.

The English also shift their camp.

Aucht dayis on bath halff*is* swa thai lay, 516
That Inglis men durst nocht assale
The scottys men with playne battale,
For strinth of erd that thai had ther.

For eight days nothing is done

Thar wes ilk day Iustyng of wer, 520
And scry*m*myng maid full apertly,
And men tane on ather party.
And thai that tane war on a day

beyond jousting and skirmishing.

497. *mair*] mar E; yare H (*which perhaps is right*).
498. *syne—sammyn*] syne all samyn E; all sa*m*myn syn C; syne togidder H. *furth*] can H.
499. *without*] for-owtyn. *tynsele*] tynseill.
500. *richt*] all H; E *om.* *wele*] weill E; haill H.
502. [*that*] *inserted for the metre; see* l. 515. *forrouth*] beforouth E; before H.
504. *avay*] away EH.
507. *Prek*] Pryk E; Passe H. *var avay*] war away.
509. *wardale*] werdale E; Wardaill H.
513. *And*] H *om.* *half*] side H. *vatter*] wat*ir*. *wer*] Weere H.
515. *that*] thar E; of H.
516. *halff*is] halff. *thai lay*] lay thai. *bath—swa*] this wise H.
521. *scrymmyng*] scrymyn E; skirmishing H. *maid*] H *om.*

[Fol. 151 b. C.] On añe othir changit war thai. 524
But othir dedis nane war doñe,
That gretly is apone till moñe;

On the ninth day Douglas sees a way to circumvent the English.

Quhill it fell, on the nynt day,
The lord dowglaſ haſ spyit a vay, 528
How that he mycht about thame ryd,
And cum apon the ferrest syd.
And at evyn him purvayit he,

He takes 500 men with him,

And tuk with him a gude menȝe, 532
v hundreth on horſ, ves richt hardy;

and, in the night, rides to the other side of the English host.

And in the nycht, all preuely,
For-out noyis so fer he raid,
Quhill that he neir enveremyt had 536
Thar host, and on the ferrer syd
Toward thame slely can he ryd,

Half his men carry bare swords,

And half the men that with hym war
[He gert in hand have suerdis bar; 540

to cut the ropes of the English tents,

And bad thaim hew rapys in twa,
That thai the pailȝownys mycht ma
To fall on thaim that in thaim war.]

whilst the rest should use their spears.

Than suld the laiff that forouth ar 544
Stab doune with speres sturdely.
And, quhen thai herd his horne, in hy
To the wattir hald doun the way.
Quhen this wes said that I here say, 548

526. *is apone*] here are for H. *till*] to EH. *mone*] *so* EH; moyne C.
527. *nynt*] nynth H; sewynd E (*wrongly*).
528. *hass*] hes H; had E. *vay*] way.
530. *apon*] on E; on them at H. *ferrest*] ferrer E; Forrest (!) H.
531. *him purvayit*] purwayit him E; puruayed H.
533. *ves richt*] wicht and EH.
535. *For-out—fer*] Without noyse or din H.
536. *enveremyt*] enweronyt E; enuironed H.
537. *ferrer*] ferrar E; Forrest (!) H.
538. *can*] gan.
539. *half*] E *om.* (wrongly). *half—men*] the maist part H.
540—543. C *omits*. *From* E.
540. *He—have*] Bare in their hands H.
541. *rapys*] Pauillions (*by mistake*) H.
542. *pailȝownys*] Pauillions H.
544. *forouth*] folowit E; Forrayours (!) H. *ar*] thar.
545. *Stab*] Strike H.
547. *the*] thair.
548. *I*] Ik. *that—here*] as I heard H.

Toward thair fais fast thai raid,
That on that syd no vachis had.
And as thai neir war approchand,
Añe yngliß man, that lay bekand 552
Hym by a fyre, [said] to his feir—
"I wat nocht quhat may tyd vs heir;
Bot a richt gret [growyng] me tais;
I dred me sair for the blak dowglaß." 556
And he, that herd [him], said, "perfay,
Thou sall haf cauß, gif that I may!"
With that, with all his Cumpany,
He ruschit on thame hardely, 560
And prowd paltzeownys doune he bare,
And with speris that scharply schar
Thai stekit men dispituisly.
The noyis weill soyn raiß, and the cry; 564
Thai stabbit, stekit, and thai slew;
And mony paltzeownys doun thai drew.
A felloun slauchtir maid thai thair,
That thai, that liand nakit war, 568
Hed na power defens to ma;
And thai but pite can thame sla.
[Thai] gert thame wit that gret foly
Wes, neir thar fayis for to ly, 572
Bot gif thai trastly vachit war.
The scottis men war slaand thar
Thair fayis on this viß, quhill the cry

They approach the English unperceived.

An Englishman, lying baking himself at a fire, says he feels much afraid of the black Douglas.

Douglas, hearing him, says, "Thou shalt have cause." [Fol. 66. E.]

The Scotch rush forward, cut the English tent-ropes, and use their spears.

A dreadful slaughter ensues. [Fol. 152. C.]

550. *vachis*] wachis E; Marches H.
553. [*said* EH] syde C.
555. *a richt*] rycht a E; a H. [*growyng* E] groouing H; grevyng C.
556. *me*] E *om.* *the*] H *om.*
557. [*him* EH] C *om.*
560. *on*] in on.
561. *prowd*] E *om.*
562. *And*] E *om.*
564. *the*] als the H; E *om.* *cry*] skry H.
565. And thai stabbyt stekyt and slew.
566. *mony*] E *om.* *doun*] doun ȝarne. *drew*] threw H.
569. *Hed*] Had EH.
570. *can*] gan.
571. [*Thai* E] They H; That C. *gret*] E *om.*
573. *trastly*] straitly H. *vachit*] wachit E; watched H.
574. *slaand*] slayand.
575. *viss*] E *om.*

The whole of the English host is at last aroused.

Raiß throu the gret host comonly, 576
That lord and othir var on steir;
And quhen the dowglaß wist thai veir
Armand thame all comonly,

Then Douglas blows his horn, to collect his men.

He blew his horñe for till rely 580
His men, and bad thame hald thar vay
Toward the wattir, and swa did thai ·

He retreats behind the rest.

And he abaid henmast, to se
That nane of his suld lefit be. 584
And as he swa abaid hufand,

A man with a club attacks him, and nearly kills him.

Swa come añe with a club in hand,
And swa gret rowtis till him raucht,
That, had nocht beyn his mekill maucht 588
And his richt souerane gret manhede,
In-till that plaß he had beyne ded.

But he at last kills his assailant.

Bot he, that na tyme wes affrayit,
Thouch he weill oft wes herd assayit, 592
Throu mekill strynth and gret manheid
Has brocht the tothir on-to ded.

The Scotch miss their leader.

His men, that to the wattir douñe
War rydyn in-till a randouñe, 596
Myssit thar lord quhen thai com thar.
Than war thai dredand for him sar;
Ilkane at othir sperit tithing,
Bot ȝeit of hym thai herd no thing. 600

They determine to go and seek him.

Than can thai consale sa*m*myn ta,
That thai to sek hym vp [wald] ga.
And, as thai war in sic affray,

576. *gret*] EH *om.* *comonly*] commonaly E; all commonly H.
577. *lord*] Lords H. *var*] war.
578. *veir*] wer.
579. *comonly*] commonaly.
580. *till*] to EH.
583. *henmast*] hindmest H.
585. *swa—hufand*] baid swa howand E; abade sa howand H.
586. *Swa come*] Come thane. *Swa—a*] There came a Carle with H (*better; for see l.* 608).
587. *rowtis*] A rowt.
589. *gret*] E *om.*
591—594. H *omits.*
591. *'affrayit*] effrayit.
594. *on-to*] to the.
595. *to*] till EH.
596. *rydyn*] ridyne E; ridden H.
601. *can*] gan.
602. [*wald* EH] can C.
603. *affray*] effray.

A tutlyng of his horne herd thai. 604 They hear the tootling of his horn.
And thai that haß it knawin swith
War of his cu*m*myng wound*ir* blith,
And sperit at him of his abaid;
And he tald how a carll him maid 608
With his club richt añe fellouñe pay, [Fol. 152 *b*. C.] He explains what danger he was in.
That met him stoutly in the way;
"That, had nocht vre helpit the mair,
I had beyn in gret perell thair." 612
Thusgatis spekand, thai held thar way,
Quhill to thar host cu*m*myn ar thai,
That on fut, armyt, thame abaid,
For till help, gif thai myster had. 616
And, alß soyne as the lord dowglaß Douglas meets the Earl of Murray,
Met with the Erll of murreff was,
The Erll sperit at hym tithing
How he had farñ in his outyng. 620
"Schir," said he, "we haf drawyn blude." and says—"Sir, we have drawn blood."
The Erll, that wes of mekill mude,
Said, "and we had all thidd*ir* gane,
We had discumfit thame ilkane." 624
"It mycht haf fallyn weill," said he, Douglas and Murray discuss events.
"Bot sekirly enew war we
To put vs in ȝon auentur.
For, had thai maid discumfitur 628
On vs that ȝond*ir* passit wer,
It suld all stonay that ar heir."
The Erll said, "sen that it swa is,

604. *tutlyng*] tutilling E; towting H.
609. *his*] A. *richt ane*] sic E; sa H.
611. *vre*] fortoun E; God H. *helpit*] helped him H.
612. *I*] He EH.
613. *Thusgatis*] Thusgat E; Thusgaite H.
614. *thar*] the.
619. *hym*] thaim.
620. *he*] thai. *his*] thair. *outyng*] owting.
622. *mekill*] Noble H.
624. *discumfit*] destroyed H.
625. *It*] That.
626. *enew*] ynew.
630. *It—stonay*] It might haue stonisht them H.

The Earl advises to attack the English.

That we may nocht with Iuperdiß 632
Our felloune fais forß assale,
We sall it do in playn battale."

Douglas said it would be great folly to do so.

Lord douglaß said than, "be saint bryd,
It war gret foly at this tyd. 636
Till ws with sic añe host till ficht,
That ilk day growis of mycht,
And vittale haß thar-with plente.
And in thar cu*n*tre heir ar we, 640
Quhar thar may cu*m* vs na succourß;

He says it would be more prudent to retreat,

Herd is to mak ws heir rescourß;
Na we may forra for to get met;
Sic as we haf heir mon we et. 644
Do we with our fayis tharfor
That ar heir liand vs befor,
As I herd tell this othir ȝer

as the fox did from the fisherman.

How that a fox did vith a fischer." 648

Nota. how the fox playt wyth the fischar.

[Fol. 153. C.]

"How did the fox?" the Erll can say.

Douglas says—"A fisherman had a little hut near a river,

He said, "a fischar quhilome lay
Besyde a ryver for till get
His nettis, that he thar had set. 652
A litill luge thar had he maid;

with a bed and a fire in it,

And thar-within a bed he had,
And ek a litill fyre alsua;

and but one door.

A dure ther wes, withouten ma. 656

632. *Iuperdiss*] Iupertys E; ieoparddies H.
633. *forss*] force H; for to E.
634. *it do*] do It.
635. *Lord*] The lord EH. *than*] EH *om.*
638. *ilk—growis*] growys ilk day. *of*] of maire H.
639. *vittale hass*] has wictaill. *tharwith*] at all H.
641. *vs*] to vs H.
643. Na we ne may ferrar mete to get E; Nor we not forray may to get meat H.
644. *Sic*] Swilk. *mon we*] we mon.
647. *I*] Ik.
648. *How*] E *om.* *vith*] with.
649. *oan*] gan.
651. *for till*] for to E; fish to H.
652. *that*] then H. *thar had*] had thar EH.
653. *luge*] loge. *thar had*] tharby.
655. *ek*] E *om.*
656. *A—ther*] And ane doore H. *withouten*] for-owtyn.

A nycht, his nettis for till se
He raiſ, and thair weill lang duelt he.
And quhen that he haſ done his ded,
Toward his luge agane he ȝed, 660
And with licht of the litill fyre,
That in the luge wes byrnand schyre,
In-till the luge a fox he saw,
That fast can on a salmond gnaw. 664
Than till the dure he went in hy,
And drew añe swerd deliuerly,
And said, "tratour, thou mon heir out."
The fox, that wes in full gret dout, 668
Lukit about sum hoill to se;
Bot nane ysche thar couth he se,
Bot quhar the man stude sturdely.
A lawchtañe mantill than hym by 672
Lyand apon the bed he saw;
And with his teyth he can it draw
Atour the fyre; and, quhen the man
Saw his mantill ly byrnand than, 676
Till red it ran he hastely.
The fox gat out than in gret hy,
And held his way his warand till.
The man leit hym begilit Ill, 680
That he his salmond swa had tynt,
And alsua had his mantill brynt,

One night, on his return to the hut,

he sees there a fox, gnawing at a salmon.

He draws his sword, and stands in the doorway.

[Fol. 66 *b*. E.]

The fox, seeing no other way of escape,

seizes a mantle that lies on the bed,

and draws it towards the fire.

The man rushes forward to save it, and the fox escapes.

So the man lost his salmon, and had his mantle burnt,

657. *A*] Ane H. *till*] to EH.
659. *that*] EH *om*. *hass*] had EH.
660. *luge*] luge *or* lugis C; loge E; *see* l. 653. *So also in ll.* 662, 663.
663. *the*] his.
664. *can—gnaw*] on ane salmound gan gnaw E; in can a Salmond draw H.
666. *ane*] a H; his E.
667. *tratour*] Reiffar. *out*] lout (!) H.
670. *ysche—se*] eschew persave couth he E; ishe foorth there could get he H.
672. *lawchtane*] lauchtane. A Mantle he perceiued him by H.
674. *teyth*] teth. *can*] gan.
675. *Atour*] Out our E; Out ouer H.
676. *byrnand*] brinnand E; burning H.
677. *Till*] To EH. *red*] rid H.
680. *leit*] thought H.
681. *salmond swa*] gud salmound.

and the fox escaped.

And the fox scathleſ gat his way.
This ensampill I may weill say 684
By ȝon folk and vs that ar heir.

We are the fox, and they the fisherman.

We ar the fox, & thai the fischer
That stek*is* forouth ws the way;

[Fol. 153 *b*. C.]

Thai weyñe we may nocht get avay, 688
Bot richt quhar [that] thai ly; perde,
All as thai think, it sall nocht be;

I think I can spy a way of escape, though it is rather wet.

For I haf gert spy ws a gat.
Suppoſ that it be sum-deill wat, 692
A page of ouris we sall nocht tyñe.
Our fayis, for this small tranontyñe,
Wenys we sall weill pryd ws swa,
That we planly on hand sall ta 696
To gif thame oppynly battale;

Our foes shall fail.

Bot at this tyme thair thoucht sall fale.
For we to-morne heir all the day
Sall mak alſ mery as we may, 700

To-morrow night we will make up our fire brightly,

And mak ws boune agane the nycht.
And than ger mak our fyres bricht,
And blaw our hornys, and mak fair

as if all the world were ours, and, when it is very dark, we will retreat.

As all the warld our awne it war, 704
Quhill that the nycht weill fallyn be.
And than, with all our harnaſ, [we]
Sall tak our way hamward in hy,
And we sall gyit be richt graithly 708
Quhill we be out of thair danger,
That lyis now enclosit her.

683. *scathless*] harmelesse H. *his way*] away EH.
684. *I—weill*] weill I may.
685. *folk*] ost.
687. *forouth*] before H.
688. *weyne*] thinke H.
689. [*that* H] CE *om*. *perde*] bot perde E; Parde H.
690. *All*] Yet H.
691. *spy*] se.
694. *tranontyne*] tranowntyn E; tranoynting H.
695. *weill*] *precedes* we *in* E. *ws*] us.
702. *bricht*] lycht.
704. *it*] E *om*.
706. [*we* EH] hye C.
708. *richt*] E *om*. And alltogiddler hald sickerly H.
710. *lyis*] thinks us H.

Than sall we all be at our will,
And thai sall let thame trwmpit Ill, 712 They shall be deceived."
Fra thai wit weill we be avay."
Till this haly assentit thai,
And maid thame gud cher all that nycht,
Quhill on the morn that day wes licht. 716

Apon the morn all preualy
Thai turst harnaß and maid reddy; Next morning they pack up everything.
Swa that, or ewyn, all bouñe war thai.
Thair fayis, that agane thame lay, 720
Gert haf thair men that thar wes ded The English employ the day in burying the dead.
In cartis till añe haly sted.
All that day caryand thai war
With cartis, men that slayñe war thar. 724
That thai war feill, men mycht weill se, There were many of them.
That in carying so lang suld be.
The hostis bath all that day wer [Fol. 154. C.]
In peß; and, quhen the nycht ves ner, 728
The scottis folk, that lyand war
In-till the park, maid fest and far, At night, the Scotch make up great fires,
And blew hornys and fyres maid,
And gert thame byrñ bath bricht & braid, 732
Swa that [thair] fyres that nycht war mair brighter than ever before.
Than ony tyme befor thai war.
And quhen the nycht wes fallyn wele, At nightfall, they ride away
With all thair harnaß ilke deill 736 privily,
All preualy thai raid thair way.
Soyn in a moß enterit ar thai and enter a moss,

712. *trwmpit*] trumpyt.
718. *turst*] tursyt.
719. *ewyn*] Euen H.
720. *Thair*] And thair.
721. *wes*] war.
722. *haly*] hallowed H.
723—726. H *omits*.
725. *men mycht*] mycht men.
727. *all*] E *om*.
728. *and quhen*] till that H. *ves*] wes.
732. *thame—bath*] mak thaim.
733. *that* (1)] at. *thair—nycht*] fyres that nycht C; their fires that night H; that nycht thair fyris E.
736. *ilke*] ilka E; euirilk H.

that was a mile broad.
That had weill a lang myle on breid;

They cross the moss on foot, leading their horses.
Out-our that moß on fut thai ȝeid, 740
And in thair hand thar horß led thai.
It wes richt añe noyus way;
And nocht-for-thi all that thar wer
Com weill outour it, haill and fer, 744

They lose very little, except a few sumpter-horses.
And tynt bot litill of thar ger,
Bot gif it war ony swmmer
That in the moß wes left liand.

When all have crossed the moss,
Quhen all, as I haf born on hand, 748
Out-our the moß that wes so braid

they are very glad,
War cu*m*myn, a gret gladschip thai had,

and ride homewards.
And raid furth hamwarde on thar way.
And on the morn, quhen it wes day, 752
The ynglißmen saw the herbery
Quhar scottis men war wount to ly

The English, next day, are astonished.
All woyd; thai wonderit gretly then,
And send furth syndry of thar men 756
To spy quhar thai war gane avay,

They find their traces, leading to the moss,
Quhill at the last thair traß fand thai,
That till the mekill moß thame had,
That wes so hydwiß for till waid, 760

which they dare not cross.
That aventur thame thar-to durst nañe;
Bot till thar host agane ar gane,

739. *had*] was H. *a—on*] twa myle lang of E; twa mile of H.

742. *It*] And it. *richt ane*] rycht A E; a full right H. *noyus*] noysome H.

After l. 742 H *inserts four lines, and alters ll.* 743, 744; *thus*—

Bot Flaikes in the Wood they made
Of wands, and them with them had:
And sykes therewith brigged they:
And sa had well their horse away,
On sik wise, that all that there were,
Came through the Mosse baith haill and feere.

743. *thar*] thai. *See also last note.*

746. *ony*] ony auld H. *swmmer*] summer E; Sowmeere H. (*Summer* = sumpter-horse.)

748. *I*] Ik.

749. *the*] that.

750. *a*] H *om.* *gladschip*] gladnesse H.

751. *hamwarde*] hamwart.

754. *war—to*] before can H.

755. *woyd thai*] voyde and H.

757, 758. H *transposes these lines, and (for l.* 757) *has*—And syne when they were gane away.

760. *till*] to EH.

761. *aventur*] awntyr E; auenture H. *thame tharto*] thame to thar C; *but* thaim thar-to E; H *has*—of them.

And tald how that thai passit war,
Quhar neu*ir* man wes passit ar. 764
Quhen ynglifs men herd it wes swa,
In hy till Consale can thai ta,
That thai wald follow thai*m* no mar. [Fol. 154 *b*. C.]
Thair host richt than thai scalit thar, 768 The English host disperses.
And ilk man till his awn he raid.
Kyng robert than, that witt*er*yng had King Robert sends 20,000 men to relieve Douglas,
That his men in the park swa lay,
And at quhat myscheiff thar war thai, 772
Ane host assemblit he in hy.
Of tuenty thousand richt hardy
He send furth hafs with erllis twa, with the Earls of March and Angus.
Of marche and angoufs war thai, 776
The host in wardale till releiff;
And, gif thai mycht so weill escheiff [Fol. 67. E.]
That sa*m*myn mycht be thai and thai,
Thai thoucht thair fayis till assay. 780
So fell it that on the sa*m*myn day When Douglas's scouts, having crossed the moss,
That the mofs, as ȝhe herd me say,
Wes passit, the discurrour*is*, that thar
Rydand befor the hostis war, 784
Of athir host hafs gottin sicht. get sight of the other host,
And thai, that worthy war and wicht,
At that metyng Iustit of wer.
Ensenȝeis hye thai cryit ther; 788 warcries are raised.
And by thair cry persauit thai

764. *wes*] had H; E *om.*
766. *till*] to EH. *can*] gan.
769. *he*] they H; E *om.*
770. *Kyng—than*] And king Robert. *witteryng*] witting H.
771. *That*] At.
772. *at quhat*] *so* E; quhat at C. *at—thar*] what mischiefe then at H.
774. And x thousand men, wicht & hardy E; Ten thousand men wight and hardy H.
775. *He—hass*] He has send furth E; And sent them foorth H.
776. *marche*] the merss E; Stratherne H. *angouss*] anguss E; Angus H.
777. *wardale*] werdale. *till*] to EH.
779. *mycht*] nycht E; night H. *be—thai* (2)] *so* CE; that meete might they H.
784. *hostis*] ost.
787. *that*] thair EH.
788. *hye*] hey.

By the cries they discover that they are friends.

That thai war frend*is*, and at a fay.
Than mycht men se thame glad & blith,
And tald it to thair lord*is* swith. 792

The hosts meet with great joy.

The host*is* bath met sa*m*myn syne;
Thar wes richt hamly welcu*m*myñe
Maid emang gret lordis thar;
Of thair metyng Ioyfull thai war. 796

Earl Patrick's men have plenty of provisions,

The Erll patrik and his men3he
Had wittale with thame gret plente,

which they give to Douglas's men.

And thar-with weill relevit thai
Thar frend*is*; for, the suth to say, 800
Quhill thai in wardall liand war,
Thai had defalt of met, bot thar
Thai war relevit with gret plente.

All go to Scotland joyfully.

Toward scotland with ga*m*myn & gle 804
Thai went, and hame weill cu*m*my*n* ar thai,
[Fol. 155. C.] And scalit syñe ilk man thar vay.

King Robert welcomes them home,

The lordis ar went on-to the king,
That maid thame richt fair welcu*m*myng; 808

and rejoices at their safe return.

For of thar come richt glad wes he:
And that thai [sic perplexite]
For-out tynsale eschapit had,
Thai war all blith and mery made. 812

790. *at—fay*] *so* CE; na fay H.
793. *hostis*] ost.
795. *emang*] amang thai.
798. *wittale*] wictaillis E; vittaile H.
799—806. *For these* 8 *lines* H *has these four*—And gaue it to them with glad cheare, Thus went they hameward all in feare: Destroying the Countrie in their way, In Scotland well commen are they.
802. *defalt*] defawt.
806. *thar vay*] thair vay. (*Better*—his way.)
807. *ar went*] went then H. *on-to*] all to H; to E.
808. *maid—richt*] has maid thaim.
809. *come*] comming H.
810. [*sic perplexite* E] with sic prosperitie CH.
811. *Forout*] Withoutten H.
812. *Thai—all*] All war thai. They were all blyth, mery, and glad H.

[BOOK XX.]

How gud kyng robert the bruce crownyt his ȝoung sone davy & dame Iohane his spouss.

Soyne eft*ir* that the Erll thomaſ
Fra vardale thus reparit was,
The kyng assemblit all his mycht,
And left naſie that wes worth to ficht. 4
A gret host than assemblit he,
And delt his host in partis thre.
A part to norhame went but let,
And thair aſie strat assege wes set, 8
And held thame in, richt at thar dik.
The tothir part on to awnwyk
Is went, and thair aſie sege set thai;
And quhill at thir assegis lay 12
At the castellis, I spak of ar,
[Apert] assaltis maid thai thar,
And mony fair gud cheuelry
[Eschewyt wes full douchtely]. 16

King Robert assembles a large army,

and besieges Norham.

Another part of his army besieges Alnwick;

1. *Rubric in* H—The King Robert assembled there, Three Oasts, in England for to fare.
2. *vardale*] wardaill E; Wardall H.
3. *The kyng*] E *om.*
7. *norhame*] norame EH.
8. And a stark assege has set E; And there a stalward Siege they set H.
10. *on to*] vnto H; till E. *awnwyk*] Anwyk E; Anuike H.
11. *ane*] A E; a H.
12. *at*] that EH. *thir assegis*] there the Siege H.
13. *the*] thir. *castellis*] Castell H. *I*] as I C; *but* E *omits* as. *I—of*] as I said H.
14. [*Apert* E] Part of CH. *assaltis*] eschewys oft.
15. *gud*] EH *om.*
16. *From* E; *so also* H; C *omits.* *Eschewyt*] Encheeued H. *wes*] war E; was H; *the usual form is* wes, *which I have therefore adopted; see l.* 24.

The kyng at thai castell*is* liand
Left his folk, as I bare on hand,

whilst a third part, commanded by himself,

And with the thrid host held h*is* way
Fra park to park, hym for to play, 20
Huntand, as all his awn It war.

overruns Northumberland.

And till thame that war with him thar
The landis of northu*m*birland,
That next scotland thar wes liand, 24
In fee and heritage gaf he,
And thai payit for the selys fee.
On this wiſ raid he distroyand,

King Edward advised by his mother and Mortimer,

Quhill that the kyng of Ingland, 28
Throu consell of the mortymer,
And his moder, at that tyme wer

makes peace with king Robert.

[Ledar*is*] of hym, that than ȝoung wes,
To kyng robert, till tret of peſ 32

[Fol. 155 *b*. C.]

Send messyngers, and swa sped thai,
That thai assentit on this way,
Than a perpetuall peſ to [tak],
And thai a mariage suld mak 36

Robert's son David, then five years old,

Of kyng robert*is* soñe davy,
That than bot fiff ȝeir had scarsly,

is betrothed to Edward's sister, Joan of the Tower,

And of dam̃e Ioh*a*ne alſ of the tour,
That syne wes of full gret valour. 40
Sistir scho was to the ȝoung king
That Ingland had in gouernyng,

then 7 years old.

That than of [eild] had sevin ȝer.
[And monyme*ntis* and lettrys ser, 44

18. *bare*] bar.
21. *It*] E *om.*
24. *next*] neyst. *scotland thar*] to scotland EH. *mes*] war.
30. *at*] that E; that at H.
31. [*Ledaris* E] Leaders H; Leder C. *of*] to H.
32. *till*] to EH.
34. *thai*] he H.
35. Suld thar a perpetuale pess tak E. [*tak* E] take H; mak C.
37. *Of*] With H; Off the E.
38. That fiue yeeres auld was then surely H.
39. *Iohane*] Iane H. *tour*] towre H.
41. ȝ*oung*] ȝing.
42. *Ingland had*] had Ingland.
43. [*eild* EH] Ingland (!) C. *than—had*] had in eild then H.
44—49. *From* E; CH *omit.*

Diplomacy
[illegible]

That thai off Ingland that tyme had,
That oucht agayn scotland maid,
In-till that tretyß wp thai gaff;
And all the clame that thai my*cht* haff — 48 The English give up all claim to Scotland,
In-till scotland on ony maner.]
And king robert, for scatheß ser — and king Robert agrees to pay the sum of 20,000 pounds.
That he till thame of Ingland
Had done of weir, with stalward hand, — 52
Fully xx thousand pund suld pay
Of sylu*ir* in-to gude monay.
Quhen men thir thyng*is* forspokin had, — When this is arranged,
And with selys and athis maid — 56
Fesnyng of frendschip and of peß,
That neu*ir* for na chanß suld ceß,
The maryage syne ordanit thai — the marriage is appointed to take
Till be at berwyk, and the day — 60 place at Berwick.
Thai haue set quhen [that] it suld be;
Syne went ilk man till his Cuntre.
Thus maid wes peß quhar wer wes air,
And syne the assegis rasit wair. — 64 The sieges of Norham and Alnwick are raised.
The kyng robert ordanit till pay
The silu*ir*, and agane the day
He gert weill for the [mangery]
Ordane, quhen that his sone davy — 68 [Fol. 67 b. E.] Arrangements are made for the wedding, and Murray and Douglas are appointed to conduct the marriage-feast.
Suld weddit be; and erll thomaß,
And the gud lord alß of douglaß,
In-till his stede syne ordanit he
Devysour*is* of that fest till be; — 72

50. *scathess*] scaithis. *ser*] *misprinted* feare H.
51. *till*] to.
52. *of*] in H. *with*] through H.
54. *in-to*] and gold and H.
57. *Fesnyng*] Festnyng E; Seesing H.
60. *Till*] To EH
61. [*that* EH] C *om.* *it*] this.
64. *syne*] thus. *assegis*] segis E; Sieges H.
65. *robert*] H *om.* *till*] to E; for to H.
66. *agane*] against H.
67. [*mangery* E] manIory C; *misprinted* Maugery H.
70. *alss*] E *omits; follows* And *in* H.
71. *syne*] E *om.*
72. *till*] to EH.

For añe male eſ tuk hym so sare,
That he on na viſ mycht be thar.

King Robert falls ill.

His maill eiſ of Añe fundying
Begouth; for, throu his cald lying, 76

[Fol. 156. C.]

Quhen in his gret myschef wes he,
Him fell that herd perplexite.

He stays at Cardross.

At cardroſ all that tym he lay;
And quhen neir cu*m*myñe wes the day 80
That ordanit for the vedding wes,

Murray and Douglas go to Berwick with prince David,

The Erll and the lord dowglaſ
To berwik come with mekill fair,
And broucht ȝoung davy with thai*m* thair. 84

where they are met by the English queen, Mortimer,

And the queyne and mortymer
On othir party cu*m*myn wer
Vith gret affeir and rialte;

and the princess Joan.

The ȝoung lady of gret bewte 88
Thidder thai broucht with rich affeir.
The wedding haue thai maid richt ther
With gret fest and solempnite;

Much rejoicing takes place,

Thair mycht men myrth and gladschip se. 92
For full gret fest thai maid richt thar,

and English and Scotch are very friendly.

And Ingliſ men and scottis war
To-gidder in Ioy and in solaſ;
Na felloune spek betuix thai*m* was. 96
The fest a weill lang tyme held thai,
And quhen thai buskit till fair avay,

The queen leaves the princess at Berwick.

The queyn haſ left hir douchter thar
With gret richeſ and ryall far. 100

73. *ane—ess*] a malice E; his sicknesse H. *tuk hym*] him tuk.
75. This malice off enfundeyng E; His sicknesse came of a fundying H.
76. *Begouth for*] He had tane H.
81. *vedding*] weddyn.
82. *lord*] lord of.
83. *To—come*] Come to berwik.
84. *davy*] dawy E; Dauid H.
85. *and*] and the. The Queene, and with her the Mortimer H.
86. *party*] part.
87. *Vith*] With. *rialte*] reawte E; Royaltie H.
90. *maid richt*] makyt.
92. *gladschip*] gladnesse H.
93. *full*] rycht. *richt*] E *om.*
95. *in* (2)] EH *om.*
96. *spek*] speech H; E *om.*
98. *till*] for till C; to EH. *avay*] away.
100. *ryall*] reale E; Royall H.

I trow that lang quhill no lady
To houß wes gevin so richly.
The Erll and the lord dowglaß
Hir in dante resauit haß, 104
As it wes worthy, sekyrly;
For scho wes syne the best lady,
And the farest, that men mycht se.
Eft*ir* this gret solempnite, 108
Quhen on bath half*is* levis wes tañe,
The queyne till Ingland hame is gane,
And had with hir the mortymer.
The Erll and thai that lewit wer, 112
Quhen thai a quhile hir convoyit had,
Toward berwik agañe thai raid; .
And syne, with all thar Cu*m*pany,
Toward the kyng thai went in hy, 116
And had with thame the ȝoung davy,
And als dam̃e Ioh*a*ne the ȝoung lady.
The kyng maid thame fair welcu*m*myng;
And eft*ir*, but lang delaying, 120
He haß gert set añe parliament,
And thidd*ir* with mony men is went.
For he thoucht he wald in his liff
Crouñe his ȝoung sone and his vif 124
At that parliament, and swa did he;
With gret fair and solempnite
The kyng davy wes crownyt thar; 127
*And all the lord*is* at thar war, 127*

Murray and Douglas receive her.

She was very fair.

The queen and Mortimer return to England.

[Fol. 156 b. C.]

David and Joan go to visit king Robert,

who appoints a parliament,

at which David is crowned king, and Joan queen.

102. *Th—gevin*] Was gevyn till houss.
103. *The*] And the.
104. *dante*] daynte E; great daintie H.
105. *wes*] war.
107. *mycht*] thurst.
109. *on*] of. *halfis*] half E; sides H. *levis wes*] lewys war E; the lieue was H.
111. *the*] E *om.*
112. *lewit*] levyt E; leaued H.
118. *als*] *precedes* the *in* E. *Iohane*] lane H. *the*] that.
120. *lang*] langer.
121. *ane*] A.
125. *At—and*] And at that parlea-ment.
127*—130*. *Found in* CEHJ; *but omitted in* P.
127*. *at*] that.

And alſ of the Comminite, 128
Maid hym manrent and fewte. 129
And forouth that thai crownit war, 130

King Robert provides that, if his son David has no heir male,

The king robert gert ordane thar, 128
Gif it fell that his sone davy
Deit but air male of his body

Robert Stewart, his grandson, is to be king;

Gottyn, robert stiward suld be
Kyng, and brwk [all] the Rialte, 132
That his douchter bar, mariory.
And at this tale suld lelely
Be haldin, all the lord*is* swar,
And it with selys affermyt thar. 136

and, if the king himself dies whilst David is a minor, Murray and Douglas are to be regents.

And gif It [hapnyt] robert the kyng
To pass till god, quhill thai [war] ȝyng,
The gud Erll of murref, thomas,
With the lord alsua of dowglas, 140
Suld haue thame in-to gouernyng,
Quhill thai had wit to steir thar thing;
And than the lordschip suld thai ta.
Heir-till thair Athis can thai ma; 144

All the lords swear to observe these provisions.

And all the lordis that wes thar
Till thir twa vardanys athes swar,
Till obeiſ thame in-to lawte,
Gif thame hapnyt vardanys to be. 148

[Fol. 157. C.]

Q when all this thing thus tretit wes,
And affermyt with sekirneſ,

128*. *Comminite*] comunyte.
129*. *manrent*] manredyn E; homage H.
130*. *forouth*] before H.
130. *Deit*] Deyit E; Died H.
132. *brwk*] bruk E; brooke H. [*all* E] CH *om.* *Rialte*] realte E; Royaltie H.
133. *mariory*] in Mariage H.
134. *at*] that H. *tale*] taile E; Tailyie H.
137. [*hapnyt* E] hapned H; happin C; *see l.* 148.
138. *till*] to EH. [*war* E] were H; ar C.
139. *murref*] Murray Sir H.
140. *With*] And.
141, 142. *Transposed in* H. *thing*] *so* CE; Reigne H.
144. *can*] gan.
146. *vardanys*] wardanys; *and in l.* 148.
147. *obeiss*] obey EH. *into*] in.

The king till cardroß went in hy;
And thar hym tuk sa felonly
His seknes, and him travalyt swa,
That [he] wist [him] behuſit ma
Of all this liff the commouñe end,
That is the ded, quhen god vill send.
Tharfor his *lett*res soyne send he
For the lordis of his Cuntre;
And thai com as he biddyn had.
His testament than haß he maid
Befor bath lordis and prelatis;
And till religioune of seir statis,
For heill of his saull, gaf he
Silu*ir* in-to gret quantite.
He ordanit for his saull richt weill;
And quhen at this wes doñe ilk deill,
"Lordingis," he said, "swa is it gane
With me, that thar is nocht bot añe,
That is, the ded, withouten dreid,
That ilk man mon thole on neid.
And I thank god that haß me sent
Spaß in this liff me till repent.
For throu me and my warraying
Of blud thar haß beyne gret spilling,
Quhar mony sakleß man wes slayñe;
Tharfor this seknes and this payne
I tak in thank for my trespaß.

The king returns to Cardross, where his sickness becomes mortal.

He sends for his lords,

and makes his will.

He gives away much silver for the good of his soul.

[Fol. 68. E.]
He says—
"I thank God that I have had time for repentance; for I have been a man of blood.

151. *till*] to EH.
152. *felonly*] fellely E; suddenly H.
153. *His*] The.
154. [*he* EH] him C. [*him* EH] he C. *ma*] to ma.
155. *this*] his.
156. *the*] to. *ded*] death H.
159. *he biddyn*] thai biddyng.
162. *till*] to EH. *religioune*] Religions H. *statis*] Estates H.
165. *richt*] E *om.*
166. *at*] EH *om.* *ilk deill*] ilkadele.
167. *Lordingis — said*] He said lording*is*.
170. *mon*] sall H. *on*] *so* CH; off E.
172. *till*] to EH; *and in ll.* 180, 195.
174. *thar — beyne*] has bene rycht.
175. *wes*] war.

My fixed intention was,

And my hert fyschit fermly waß,
Quhen I wes in prosperite,
Of my synnys till savit be, 180

to make a crusade against God's foes.

To travell apon goddis fayis.
And sen he now me till hym tais,

But, as I cannot now do this, I desire my heart to be sent to the Holy Land.

That the body may on na viß
Fulfill that the hert can deuiß, 184
I wald the hert war thidd*ir* sent,
[Fol. 157 *b*. C.] Quhar-in consauit wes that entent.
Tharfor I pray ȝow eu*ir*-ilkane,

Choose therefore a knight to bear it thither."

That ȝhe emang ȝow cheiß me añe 188
That be honest, wiß, and wicht,
And of his hand añe nobill knycht,
On goddis fayis myne hert to bere,
Quhen saull and corß disseu*er*it [er]. 192
For I wald it war worthely
Broucht thar, sen god will no*ch*t that I
Haue power thidd*ir*ward till ga."

They all weep;

Than war thair hertis all so wa, 196
That nane mycht hald hym fra greting.
He bad thame leiff thair sorowyng;—
"For it," he said, "mycht nocht releif,
And mycht [thaim-self] gretly engreif." 200

but he prays them to carry out his wish.

He prayit thame in hy till do
The thyng that thai war chargit to.
Than went thai furth with drery mwde,
And emang thame thai thoucht it gude, 204

178. *fyschit fermly*] fichyt sekyrly E; firmly set H.
181. *travell*] trawaill.
183. *That*] Swa that. *on*] E *om*.
184. *Fulfill*] Performe H. *can*] gan.
185. *the*] mine H.
188. *emang*] amang. *cheiss me*] all chuse H.
190. *ane*] A EH.
191. *myne*] my.
192. *corss*] body H. [*er* E] are H; were C; *see l.* 216.
194. *Broucht*] Had H.
198. *leiff*] leve.
199. *releif*] releve.
200. [*thaim-self*] themselues H; thar self C; thaim rycht E. *engreif*] engreve E; grieue H.
201. *He*] And.
203. *mwde*] mode.
204. *And*] E *om*. *emang*] Amang.

That the vorthy lord dowglaß, 205
Quham In bath wit and vorschip waß, 206
Suld tak this travaill apon hand; 207
Heir-till thai war all accordand. 208
Syne till the kyng thai went in hy, 209
And tald hym at thai thoucht trewly, 210
That the douchty lord dowglaß 211
Best schapen for that travell was. 206
And quhen the king herd at thai swa
Had ordanit hym, his hert till ta, 208
That he mast ȝarnit suld it haf,
He said, "sa god him-self me saff,
I hald me richt weill payit, that ȝhe
Haß chosyn hym; for his bounte 212
And his worschip set my ȝarnyng,
Ay sen I thoucht till do this thyng,
That he it with hym thar suld ber.
And sen ȝhe all assentit er, 216
It is the mar likand till me.
Let se now quhat thar-till sayis he."
And quhen the gud lord of Dowglaß [Fol. 158. C.]
Wist at the kyng thus spokyn haß, 220
He com and knelit to the kyng,
And on this viß maid him thanking.
"I thank ȝow gretly, lorde," said he,
"Of mony large and gret bounte 224
That ȝhe haf doñe till me feill siß,

They choose Douglas to undertake the charge;

and tell the king of their choice.

The king is much pleased at this, saying he too should have chosen Douglas.

Douglas kneels before the king,

and thanks him very heartily,

205. *vorthy*] worthi. *lord*] lord of.
206*—211*. E *omits; found in* CH.
208*. *Heir-till*] Hereto H.
209*. *Syne till*] And to H.
210*. *at*] that H.
206. *schapen*] ordainde H. *travell*] trawaill.
207. *at*] that EH.
208. *till*] to EH; *and in ll.* 214, 217.
210. *saff*] saiff.
213. *And—set*] For Certes it hes bene H.
215. *it—ber*] mine heart sould with him beare H.
219. *gud*] E *om.*
220. *at*] that EH. *the kyng*] *so* CH; thing E. *hass*] was.
222. *viss*] wiss. *him thanking*] his talking H.
224. *large*] largess EH.
225. *till*] to H; E *om.*

Sen first I come to ȝour *seruiß*.
Bot our all thing I mak thanking,
That ȝhe so digne and worthy thing 228

promising to take charge of the Bruce's heart.

As ȝour hert, that Illwmynyt wes
Of all bounte and worthynes,
Will that I in my ȝeemsell tak.
For ȝow, *schir*, will I blithly mak 232
This travell, gif god will me gif
Laser and space so lange till liff."

The king thanks him.

The kyng hym thankit tend*ir*ly;
Thar wes nane in that Cumpany 236

All weep.

That thai ne wepit for pite;
Thair cher anoyus wes to se.

Obitus roberti bruss regis scocie.

When the Douglas has undertaken this charge,

Q when the lord dowglaß on this viß
Had vnd*ir*tañe so hye enpriß, 240
As the gud kyngis hert till ber
On goddis fayis apon wer,

he is much praised.

Prisit for his enpriß wes he.
And the kyng*is* Infermite 244
Woxe mair & mair, quhill at the last

The king grows worse,

The dulfull dede approchit fast.
And quhen he had gert till hym do,
All that gud cristin man fell to, 248

and gives up the ghost.

With werray repentans he gaf

228. *so digne*] sa dyng.
229. *Illwmynyt*] enlumynyt E; illuminate H.
230. *Of*] With H. *worthynes*] all prowes.
231. *ȝeemsell*] ȝemsall E; keeping H.
232. *will I*] I will.
233. *travell*] trawaill.
234. *Laser*] Layser E; Laiser H.
236. *Thar*] Than.
237. *ne*] na. *thai—for*] weeped not for great H.
238. That was great sorrow for to see H.
239. *Rubric in* H—Here died King Robert, and was syne Solemnedly buried in Dvnfermlyne.
240. *hye*] hey.
241. *till*] to EH; *and in l.* 234.
242. *apon wer*] for to weere H.
243. *Prisit*] Praised H.
245. *Woxe*] Woux E; Was H.
246. *dede*] death H.
247. *till—do*] doe him to H.
248. *man—to*] men sould do H.

The gast, that god till hevin couth haf
Emang his chosyn folk till be,
In Ioy, solace, and angell gle. 252
And fra his folk wist he wes ded, When his death is known,
The sorow raiß fra sted to sted.
Thair mycht men se men rif thar hare, [Fol. 158 b. C.]
And cumly knychtis gret full sar, 256 his knights make great mourning, with keen regret.
And thair nevis oft sammyn driff,
And as wode men thair clathes rif,
Regratand his worthy bounte,
His vit, strynth, and his honeste; 260
And, our all, the gret Cumpany
That he oft maid thame curtesly.
"All our defens," thai said, "allaß! "Alas!" they say,
And he that all our confort was, 264 "our defence and our comfort is at an end!
Our wit, and all our gouernyng,
Is brocht allas! heir till Ending;
His worschip and his mekill mycht
Maid all that war with him so wicht, 268
That thai mycht neuir abaysit be,
Quhill forouth thame thai mycht him se.
Allaß! quhat sall [we] do or say?
For in liff quhill he lestit ay, 272 Whilst he lived, we were dreaded everywhere.
With all our fais dred war we,
And in-till mony fer Cuntre
Of our worschip ran the renouñe;
And that wes all for his persouñe!" 276 It was all due to him!"

250. *that*] whilk H. *couth haf*] haiff E; mot haue H.
251. *Emang*] Amang EH. *folk*] for H. *till*] to EH.
252. *angell*] Angells H.
256. *cumly*] comely H; comounly E.
257. *nevis*] newffys E; hands H. *oft sammyn*] togidder H.
259. *Regratand*] Regarding H.
260. *vit*] wyt. *strynth and*] his strenth EH. *his* (2)] H *om.*
262. *oft — thame*] thaim maid oft.
264. *all*] haill H.
265. *and all*] our weale H.
266. *Is—allas*] Allace is brought.
270. *forouth*] before H.
271. [*we* EH] I C.
273. *fais*] faes H; nychtbowris E.
274. *fer*] ser E; other H.
275. *ran*] *so* CH; sprang E.

With sic vordis thai maid thair mayñe;
[Fol. 63 b. E.] And sekirly wonder wes nane.
For bettir gouernour than he
Micht in na Cuntre fundyn be. 280

No man can describe their sorrow.

I hop that nane that is on lif
The lamentacioune suld discrif
That thai folk for thair lord maid.
And quhen thai lang thus sorowit had, 284

When he is disembowelled,

And he debowalit wes clenly, 285 [293]
And bawlmyt syñe full richly,

his heart is given to Douglas.

And the worthy lord dowglaß
His hert, as it forspokyn was, 288 [296]
Haß resauit in gret dantee,
With gret fair and solempnite 290 [298]

His body is buried at Dunfermline.

Thai haue him had till dunfermlyñe, 291 [285]
And hym solempnly erdit syñe,
[Fol. 159. C.] And in a fair towme in the queyr.
Bischoppes and prelatis that thar weir 294 [288]

His funeral service is carefully performed.

Assolȝeit hym, quhen the seruiß
Wes done as thai couth best deuiß;
And syne, apon the toder day,
Sary and wa ar went thar way. 298 [292]

277. *vordis*] wordis.
281. *lif*] lyve.
282. The lament and sorrow can descriue H. *discrif*] discryve E; descriue H.
283. *thai*] tha H; that E.
284. *thai—thus*] that they lang H.
285—298. *The numbering in brackets follows* Pinkerton's edition. *Lines* 291—298 *are really misplaced in* E, *and follow l.* 284. *The arrangement in* CH *is the right one, and is here followed.*
285. [293.] *debowalit*] debowaillyt E; bowelled H.
286. [294.] *bawlmyt*] bawmyt E; balmed H. *full*] E *om.*
287. [295.] *And—lord*] The worthy Lord, the good H. *lord*] lord of.
291. [285.] *him had*] had him. *dunfermlyne*] dunferlyne E; Dumfermelyne H.
292. [286.] *Here follows the catchword*—And in a fair towme in the queyr.
293. [287.] *And*] *so* H; *spelt* Ande C; E *om.* *towme*] tumb E; Tombe H. *in*] in-till. *queyr*] quer E; Queire H.
297. [291.] *toder*] tothyr E; other H.
298. [292.] *wa*] *so* EH; way C. *ar—way*] they went away H.
299. *Rubric in* H—Here bouned the Lord Dowglas forward, To the haly Land with the Brvces Heart.

Quhen at the gude king beriit was, 299
The Erll of mwrreff, schir thomas,
Tuk all the lande in governyng;
All obeysit till his bidding.

Sir Thomas Murray becomes regent.

And the gud lord of dowglaß syñe
Gert mak añe caß of siluir fyñe, 304
Anamalyt throu subtilite.
Thar-in the kyngis hert did he,
And ay about his halß it bare,
And fast him bownyt for his fare. 308

Douglas places the Bruce's heart in a case of silver, well enamelled, and bears it about his neck.

His testament deuisit he,
And ordanit how his land suld be
Gouernit, quhill his agane-cummyng,
Of frendis, and all other thing 312
That till him partenit ony viß,
With sa gude forsicht and sa viß
Or his furth-passyng ordanit he,
That na thing mycht amendit be. 316

He makes arrangements for his absence.

And quhen that he his leif haß tañe,
To schip till berwik is he gane;
And, with añe nobill Cumpany
Of knychtis and of squyary, 320
He put him thar in-to the se.

He takes ship at Berwick.

A lang way furthwarde salyt he;
Betuyx cornwale and bretanȝe
He salit, and left the grund of spanȝe 324
On north half hym; and held thar way

He sails between Brittany and Cornwall,

299. *at*] that EH.
300. *mwrreff*] Murray H.
302. *obeysit*] obeyit E; obeyed H.
304. *siluir*] gold right H.
305. *Anamalyt*] Ennamylyt E; Enamalled H.
306. *did*] put H.
308. *his*] to EH.
311. *agane*] gayn.
312. *Of*] By H.
314. *sa gude*] sik. *viss*] wyss.
315. *Or*] Ere H.
317. *hass*] had.
318. *till*] to E; at H.
319. *ane*] A E; him a H.
321. *thar into*] thar to E; in hy to H.
322. *furthwarde*] furthwart.
323. *Betuyx*] For betuix. *bretanȝe*] bretaynne E; Bartanyie H.
324. *spanȝe*] spainȝe E; Spainyie H.

and arrives at Seville.

Quhill till sebell the graunt com thai.
Bot gretly war his men and he
Travaled with tempest on the se; 328

[Fol. 159 b. C.]

Bot thouch thai gretly travalit war,
Haill and feir thai cu*m*myn ar.
Thai arivit at graunt sebell;

They disembark, and repair to the town.

And eft*ir*, in a litill quhill, 332
Thar horß to land thai drew ilkañe,
And in the touñe haß herbery tañe.
[He] hym contenyt richt richly;
For he had a fair Cumpany, 336
And gold eneuch for till despend.

The king of Spain sends for Douglas,

The kyng all soyne eft*ir* hym send,
And him richt weill resavit he,

and offers him treasure.

And p*r*off*e*rit hym in gret plente 340
Gold and tresour, horß, and armyng;

Douglas refuses,

Bot he wald tak thar-of na thyng.
"For," he said, "he tuk that viage
To paß in-till his pilg*r*image 344
On goddis fais, that his travale
Micht eft*ir* till his saull avale.

saying that he will, however, help him against the Saracens.

And sen he wist that he had were
With sarazenis, he wald dwell ther, 348
And help him at his mycht lely."

The king thanks him.

The king him thankit Curtesly,
And betaucht him gud men that were
Weill knawin of [that] land*is* [wer], 352

326. *till*] to EH. *sebell—graunt*] savill the graunt E; Massillie ground H.
328. *Travaled*] Trawaillyt. *tempest*] tempest*is* EH. *on*] of.
329. *travalit*] trawaillit E; grieued H.
330. *thai*] ar thai. *ar*] thar.
331. *graunt sebell*] gret savill. And landed at the great Sibille H.
335. [*He* E] And CH. *richt*] E *om.*
337. *eneuch*] ynewch. *till*] to EH.
338. *all soyne*] alsone E; Alphous H. *eftir hym*] him eftre.
341. *tresour*] siluer H.
343. *he said*] E *om.*
344. *his*] E *om.*
346. *eftir—saull*] till his saule hele.
349. *help*] serve. To helpe him was his will hailly H.
352. *of*] with H. [*that* E] the H; thai C. [*wer* E] weere H; seir C.

And the maner thar-of alsua;
Syne till his Innys can he ga.
Quhen that the king him levit had,
A weill gret sudIorne thair he mad. 356
Knychtis that com of fer Cuntre
Com in gret rowtis hym to se,
And honorit him full gretumly;
And our all men mast soueranly 360
The ynglis knychtis that war thar
Honour and Cumpany hym bar.
Emang thamẽ wes añe strange knych*t*, [Fol. 160. C.]
That wes haldyn so wound*ir* wicht, 364
That for añe of the gude wes he
Prisit of all the Cristianite.
So fast till-hewyn wes all his face,
That it our all neir we*m*myt was. 368
Or he the lord dowglas had seyne,
He wend his face had we*m*myt beyñe,
Bot neu*ir* añe hurt in It had he.
Quhen he vnwe*m*myt can it se, 372
He said that he had gret ferly
That sic a knycht and sa vorthy,
And prisit of sa gret bounte,
Micht in the face vnwe*m*myt be. 376

Douglas abides there for some time,

and many foreign knights come to see him.

One knight, much esteemed,

had his face all covered with scars.

When he sees Douglas's face without a scar, he expresses his astonishment.

353. *thar-of*] of the land H.
354. *can*] gan.
355, 356. And well good Soiourne there he made, And meekle treating als he had H.
356. *sudIorne*] soiourne E; Soiourne H.
357. *fer*] ser.
358. *rowtis—to*] hy him for to.
360. *our—mast*] out our all men fer.
363. Amang thai strangeris was A knycht E; Amang them all was ane strang Knight H.
364. *woundir*] wonder H; worthi and E.
365. *gude*] best H.
366. *Prisit*] Praised H. *all*] E *om.* *the*] H *om.*
367. *till-hewyn*] *so* E; till-hewyne C; to Heauen (!) H; to-hewen (*a better form*) A. *all*] E *om.*
368. *our—wemmyt*] well neere all wounded H.
369. *Or*] Ere H.
370. *wemmyt*] all wounded H.
371. *ane*] A EH. *in It*] tharin.
372. *vnwemmyt*] vnwounded H. *can*] gan.
374. *sic*] swilk. *vorthy*] worthi.
375. *prisit*] praised H.
376. *the*] his H. *vnwemmyt*] vnwounded H.

Douglas answers meekly, "Praise God, I had always hands to defend my face."

And he ansuerd thar-till mekly,
And said, "love god, all tym had I
Handis, myne hede [for] till were."
Quha wald tak tent to this ansuer, 380
Suld se in it vndirstandyng,
[Fol. 69. E.] [That, and] he that maid askyng
Had had handis to wer his face,
This was a reproof to the knight for his lack of fence.
That for defalt of fenſ so was 384
To-fruschit in-to placis ser,
Suld haf, may fall, left haill and fer.
The gud knychtis that than war by
Prisit this ansuer gretumly; 388
For it wes maid with meke speking,
And had richt hye vndirstanding.
Apon this maner still thai lay,
Quhill throu the cuntre thai herd say 392
The king of Belmarine invades Spain.
That the [hey] kyng of Balmeryñe,
With mony a mwdy sarasyñe,
Wes enterit in the land of spanȝe,
All haill the Cuntre till [de]manȝe. 396
The kyng of spanȝe, on othir party,
[Fol. 160 b. C.] Gaderit his host delyuerly,
And delt thame in-to battellis thre.
And to the lord dowglaſ gaf he 400

377. *till*] to E.

378—386. H *has wrong rimes, and puts* 9 *lines into* 6, *thus*:—And said, God lent me hands to beare, Wherewith I might my head weere. Thus made he courteous answering, With a right hie vnderstanding: That for default of Fence it was, That sa euill hewen was his face.

379. [*for* E] C *om.*

380. *tent*] kep.

382. [*That and* E] And that (*wrongly*) C. *askyng*] that asking.

383. *had*] E *om.*

384. *defalt—fenss*] faute off defence.

385. *in-to*] in-till.

386. *may* E] ma C.

388. *Prisit*] Praised H. *this*] hys EH.

389. *meke*] small H.

390. *hye*] hey.

391. *Rubric in* H—The iudging of the Lord Dowglas, That in his time sa worthie was.

393. [*hey* E] CH *om.* *Balmeryne*] *so* CE; Palmeryn H.

394. *mwdy*] mody.

395. *in*] in-till. *spanȝe*] Spaine H.

396. *till demanȝe*] for till manȝe C; to (*followed by blank space*) E; to demaine H.

399. *thame*] hym. *into*] intill.

The waward, for to leid and steir;
All haill the strangeris with him weir.
And the gret mastir of saint Iak
The tothir battell gert he tak. 404
The Reirward maid hym-[selvyn] thar.
Thusgat deuisit, furth thai war
To mete thair fayis, that in battale,
Arayit reddy to assale, 408
Com agane thame full sturdely.
The dowglas than, that wes vorthy,
Quhen he to thame of his ledyng
Had maid añe fair amonestyng 412
Till do weill, and na dede to dreid;
For hewynnis bliß suld be thair meid,
Gif that thai deit in goddis seruiß;
Than, as gud werriours and wiß, 416
With thame stoutly assemblit he.
Thar mycht men felloune fechting se;
For thai war all wicht and hardy
That war on the cristyn party. 420
[Bot ere they ioyned in battell, 421
*What Dowglas did, I sall you tell.
*¶ The *Bruces* Heart, that on his brest
Was hinging, in the field he kest, 424
*Vpon a stane-cast, and well more:
*And said, "now passe thou foorth before,
*As thou wast wont in field to be,

The Spanish king gives Douglas the command of the vanguard. The Master of St Iago leads the second battalion; and the king himself, the rearguard.

Douglas exhorts his men,

and leads them forward.

Then Douglas takes from his neck the case with the Bruce's heart, and casts it before him, saying, "Pass thou forward,

401. *waward*] awaward E; Vangard H. *for*] E *om*.
402. And all the strangers that with him were H.
403. *Iak*] Iake H.
405. *Reirward*] Reeregard H. [*selvyn*] selwyn E; self CH.
408. *Arayit*] Arayit wes C; Arrayed was H; Arayit (*omitting* wes) E.
409. And came against them sturdely H.
410. *than*] E *om*. *wes*] wes sa.
412. *ane*] A EH. *amonestyng*] monesting E; admonishing H; *miswritten* amostyng C.
413. *Till*] To EH.
414. *hewynnis*] hevynnys.
419. *hardy*] worthi.
421*—432*. CE *omit; in* H *only*.
422*. *Dowglas*] the Dowglas H.
423*. *Bruces*] *printed in* roman, *not in black letter*.

and I will follow or die."

And I sall follow, or els de." 428
*And sa he did withoutten ho,
*He faught euen while he came it to,
*And tooke it vp in great daintie;
And euer in field this vsed he.] 432
So fast [thai] faucht with all thar mayñe, 421

Many are slain on both sides.

That of sarasenys war mony slayñe;
The quhethir, with mony fell fachouñe,
Mony cristyn thai dang thar douñe. 424

At last Douglas and his men put the Saracens to the rout.

Bot at the last the lord douglaß,
And the gret rout that with hym was,
Pressit fast the sarasenys swa,
That thai haly the bak can ta. 428

Douglas chases the fugitives till he is in front of all his men.

And thai chassit with all thar mayñ,
And mony in the chaß haß slayñ.
So fer chassit the lord dowglaß
With few folk, that he passit wes 432

[Fol. 161. C.]

All the folk that wes chassand then.
He had nocht with him atour ten
Of all men that war with him thar.
Quhen he saw all reparit war, 436

He then turns backward;

Toward his host than turnit he.
And as he turnit, he can weill se
That all the chassaris turnyt agañe;
And thai [relyit] with mekill mayñe. 440
And as the gud lorde dowglas,

but, in returning,

As I said air, reparand was,

428*. *de*] die H.
421. [*thai*] they H; C *om.* *So—faucht*] And faucht sa fast.
422. *of*] E *om.* *sarasenys*] their seruants (!) H.
423. *fell*] fele.
424. *Mony*] Mony A EH. *thai—thar*] dang thai EH.
426. *gret rout*] Christians H.
427. *fast*] vpon H; E *om*
428. *bak*] flight H. *can*] gan.
431. *lord*] lord of.
432. *folk*] E *om.*
433. *wes*] war. Foorth far fra them that chased then H.
434. *atour*] our E; bot skant H.
438. *So* CH; And quhen the saryzynys gan se E.
439. *all*] E *om.*
440. *And*] E *om.* [*relyit* E] reelled H; relevit C. (*Here* thai = the Saracens; *see l.* 500.)
441. *lorde*] lord of EH.
442. *air*] er.

So saw he, richt besyd hym ner,
Quhar that schir willȝame de sancler 444
With a gret rout enveremyt waß.
He wes anoyit and said, "allaß!
ȝone worthy knycht will soyn be ded,
Bot he haf help throu our manhed. 448
God bidd*is* vs help him in gret hy,
Sen that we ar so neir hym by.
And god wat weill our entent is
Till lif and de in his seruiß; 452
His will in all thing do sall we,
Sall na perell eschevit be
Quhill he be put out of ȝoñe payñe,
Or than we all be with hym slayn." 456
With that with spurris spedely
Thai strak the horß, and in gret hy
Amang the saracenys soyne thai raid,
And rowme about thañe haf thai maid. 460
Thai dang on fast with all thair mycht,
And feill of thame to ded haß dicht.
Gretar defens maid neu*ir* sa quhoyñe
Agane so feill, as thai haue doyne, 464
Quhill thai mycht lest to gif battale.
Bot mycht no worschip thar avale
That tym, for ilkane war slayn thar;
The sarasynys sa mony war 468
That thai war tuenty neir for Añe.
The gud Lord douglaß thar wes slañe,

sees Sir William de Sinclair surrounded.

Douglas turns to rescue him,

exhorting his men to help him.

He and his men charge the Saracens,

and fight bravely,

but are overpowered by numbers.

All are slain.

[Fol. 161 b. C.]

Douglas is slain,

443. *hym*] thaim.
444. *de sancler*] the sanctecler E; de Sincleere H.
445. *enveremyt*] enweround E; enuironed H.
448. *throu*] and.
449, 450. *Transposed in* C. *God*] E *om.* *For l.* 449, H *has*—Let vs then helpe him now in hy.
451. *god*] I H.
452. *and*] or. *his*] Gods H.
454. *eschevit*] eschewyt.
457. *spurris*] spurres right H.
459. *soyne*] syne H; E *om.*
465. *to gif*] thei gaf.
466. *avale*] awaill.
467. That thai ilkan war slayne doun thar.
468. *The*] For.

and with him Sir William Sinclair,

And vilȝame sancler syne alsua;
And other worthy knychtis twa, 472

Sir Robert Logan, and Sir Walter Logan.

Schir robert [logan] hat the tane,
And the tothir walter Logane;
Quhar our Lord for his mekill mych*t*
Thair saulys haue to hevy*n*nis Licht!—AMEN. 476

The Saracens retire.

THE gud Lord douglas thus wes ded;
And the sarasenys in that sted
Abaid no mair, bot held thar way;
Thair knychtis ded thar levit thai. 480

Douglas's men find his body,

Sum of the Lord douglass*is* men,
That thair Lord [ded] had fundyn then,

and bear him away.

ȝeid weill neir wood for dule & wa.
Lang quhile our hym thai sorowit swa, 484

[Fol. 69 b. E.]

And with gret dule syne hame him bar.

They also find the Bruce's heart,

The kyngis hert haue thai fundyn thar.
And that haym with thame haue thai tane,

with which they depart in sorrow.

And ar toward [thair] Innys gane 488
With greting and with euill cher;
Thair sorow angyr wes to her.

Sir William Keith,

And quhen of keth gud s*chir* vilȝame,
That all that day had beyn at hame— 492
For at sa gret myschef wes he,
That he come nocht to the Iournee,

471. *vilȝame—syne*] *schyr* wilȝam the sancte cler E; Sir William Sinclare H.
473. [*logan*] logane EH; *miswritten* rogan C.
474. *walter*] schyr walt*ir*.
475. *Quhar*] Wherefore H. *for his*] with H.
476. *to*] till his E; to the H. *hevynnis Licht*] hewynnys hy*cht* E; Heauens hight H.
478. *the*] E *om.*
480. *levit*] lewyt E; soone leaued H.
481. *Lord*] good Lord H. *douglassis*] dowglas EH.
482. [*ded* EH] C *om.* *had*] has.
483. *wa*] *so* EH; *miswritten* way C.
485. *with—syne*] syne with gret dule.
488. [*thair* E] their H; the C.
490. *angyr—to*] wes angry for till. That sorrow and griefe it was to heare H.
493. *myschef*] malice (*for* male ese) E; disease H.

For his Arme wes brokyñe in twa—
[Quhen he that folk sic dule saw ma, 496
He askyt quhat it wes in hy,
And thai him tauld all opy*n*ly,
How that thar douchty lord wes slay*n*
With sarazynys that releyt agayn. 500
And quhen he wyst that It was sua,]
Atour all other he wes mast wa,
And maid so wound*ir* euill cher,
That all wound*er*it that by him wer. 504
Bot till tell of thair sorowyng
Anoyis, and helpis litill thing.
Men may weill wit, thouch nañe thai*m* tell,
How angry, sorowfull, and how fell 508
Is till tyne sic añe lord as he
Till thame that war of his men ȝhe.
For he wes [swete] and debonar,
And weill couth tret his frend*is* far, 512
And his fais richt felonly
Stonay, throu his gret cheuelry.
The quhethir of litill effer wes he,
Bot our all thing he lufit Lawte; 516
At tresoun*e* [growyt he] so gretly,
That na tratour mycht be hym by,
That he mycht wit, na he suld be
Weill pwnyst of his Cruelte. 520

kept at home that day by a broken arm,

asks for whom they grieve?

Hearing of Douglas's death,

his grief is excessive.

It is needless to say how they were all grieved.

[Fol. 162. C.]

For Douglas was kind to his friends, and terrible to his foes.

He detested disloyalty.

495. *wes brokyne*] brokyn wes.
496—501. *From* E; *also in* H; *not in* C.
496. *that folk*] tha folkes H.
498. *him tauld*] tauld him H.
500. *releyt*] had turned H.
502. *he—mast*] him was.
505. *till*] to EH.
506. *Anoyis*] It noyis.
507. *tell*] told H.
508. *sorowfull*] for sorow. What dule and sorrow men make wald H.
509. *Is*] For H. *till*] to EH. *ane*] A EH.
510. *Till*] To. *Till—war*] Was vnto them H.
511. [*swete* E] sweet H; stout C.
514. *Stonay*] Astonish H. *gret*] E *om.*
515. *effer*] affer. For of full litle feare was he (*wrongly*) H.
516. *Bot*] E *om.* *our*] *so* E; ouer H; out-our C. *he lufit*] luffit he.
517. [*growyt he* E] groowed H; grevit C.
519. *That—mycht*] But he should H. *na he*] that he ne E; that he H.
520. *pwnyst*] punyst. *of*] for H.

Fabricius, who warred against Pyrrhus, hated treason as he did.

I trow, the leill fabricius,
That fra rome [to warray] pirrus
Wes send with a gret menȝe,
[Hatit] tresoune na leß than he. 524

Once, when Fabricius was defeated,

The quhethir, quhen this pirrus had,
On him and on his menȝe, mayd
Añe outrageouß discumfitour,
Quhar he eschapit throu auentour, 528
And mony of his men war slañe,
And he gaderit añe host agañe,

Pyrrhus' physician offered to poison his master.

A gret mastir of medicyñe
That pirrus had in governyñe 532
Profferit to this fabricius
In tresouñe for to slay pirrus;
For in his first potaciouñe
He suld him gif dedly poysouñe. 536

But Fabricius replied that Rome could conquer her foes without foul means,

Fabricius than, that wondir had
That he sic proffer till hym maid,
Said, "Certis, rome is wele of mycht
Throu strynth of Armys in-to ficht, 540
Till vencuß weill thar fais, thouch thai
Consent to tresouñe be na way.

and sent the physician to Pyrrhus,

And for thou wald do sic tresouñe,
Thou sall, to get thi warisouñe, 544
Ga till pirrus, and lat hym do

521. *leill*] Lord H.
522. [*to warray*] to werray E; to weerray H; warrayit C.
524. [*Hatit*] Hated H; Lufit (!) C; Luffyt (!) E.
525. *this*] that H; E *om.*
528. *auentour*] auentour E (*printed* ane tour PJ); auenture H.
530. *gaderit*] had gaderyt EH. *ane*] his H; E *om.*
532. *pirrus had*] had pyrrus.
533. *Profferit*] Profferyt E; *miswritten* Perofferit C. *to this*] to E; vnto H.
534. *for*] E *om.*
535. For in-till his neyst potioun.
536. *him gif*] giff hym. *poysoune*] pusoune.
537. *than*] EH *om.*
538. Off that proffre that he him maid.
539. *wele*] welle E; meekle H.
541. *Till vencuss*] To wencuss E; To vanquish H. *weill*] E *om.*
544. I sall the gat A warysoun E; Thou salt ga fetch to warisoun H.
545. *till*] to. *Ga till*] Euen at H.

Quhat euir in hert hym lyis the to." [Fol. 162 b. C.]
Than till pirrus he sende in hy
This mastir, and gert [him] oppenly 548 to tell him all the plot.
Fra end till end tell all this tale.
Quhen pirrus had it herd all hale, When Pyrrhus heard it,
He said, "wes neuir man that swa
For laute bar hym till his fa, 552
As heir fabricius dois till me,
It is als [Ill] to ger hym be he declares that Fabricius could no more be turned from virtue than the sun from its course.
Turnyt fra way of richtwisneß,
Or to consent till vikidneß, 556
As at mydday to turñe agañe
The sone, that rynnis [his] courß all playn."
Thus said he of fabricius,
That syne vencust this ilk pirrus 560 Afterwards, Fabricius conquered Pyrrhus in fair fighting.
In playne battell throu hard fechting.
His honest lawte gert me bryng
In this ensampell her, for he
Had souerañe priß of his lawte; 564
And richt sua had the lord douglaß, So likewise was Douglas honest, loyal, and worthy.
That honest, leill, and worthy was;
That ded wes, as befor said we;
All menyt hym, strange and prewe. 568
Quhen his men lang had maid murnyng,
Thai debowellit hyñe, and syñe Douglas's men boil his body to remove the flesh from his bones.
Gert seth hym, [swa that] mycht be tañe
The flesche all haly fra the bañe. 572

546. Quhat euir him lyis on hart thar-to.
548. [*him* H] CE *om.*
549. *all*] him.
551. *neuir*] euir.
553. *dois*] beares H.
554. [*Ill* EH] euill C.
556. *to*] ellis. *till*] to EH.
558. [*his* EH] the C. *all*] E *om.*
560. *vencust*] wencussyt E; vanquisht H. *ilk*] same H.
563. *ker*] now H.
564. *priss*] praise H. *his lawte*] true Lawtie H; leawte E.
565. *richt*] E *om.* *lord*] lord of.
567. *ded wes*] wes ded EH.
568. *strange*] strange *or* strangis C; strang E. *prewe*] priue. H *has* —Men meened him in ilk Countrie.
570. They bowelled him but delaying H.
571. *Gert*] And gart H. *seth*] seeth H; scher E. [*swa that* E] that H; and syne C.

The carioune thair in haly plaſ
Erdit with richt gret vorschip waſ;
They take his bones with them, and depart homewards.
The Banys haue thai with thame tañe,
And syne ar till thar schippes gañe. 576
Quhen thai war levit of the kyng,
[Fol. 163. C.]
That dule had of thar sorowyng,
Till se thai went, gud wynd thai had,
Thair courſ till Ingland haf thai maid, 580
And thair saufly arivit thai;
They return to Scotland,
Syne toward scotland held thar vay,
And thar ar cummyñe in full gret hy.
and bury the bones in the church of Douglas.
And the banys richt honorabilly 584
In-till the kirk of dowglaſ war
Erdit, with dule and mekill car.
His son, Sir Archibald,
Schir arch[i]bald his soñe gert syñe
[Fol. 70. E.]
Of alabast bath fair and fyñe 588
rears a tomb of alabaster to him.
[Ordane] a towme full richly,
As it behufit till swa worthy.

Qwhen that [on] this viſ *schir* vilȝañe
Of keyth had broucht the banis hañe, 592
And the gud kyng*is* hert alsua,
And men had richly gert ma
With fair affeir the sepulture,
The Erll of murreff, that the cure 596
That tyme of scotland had haly,

573. *The*] And the. *carioune*] Corps H. *in*] in a H.
576. *till*] to EH.
577. *levit*] lewyt E; leaved H.
578. *of*] for. *sorowyng*] seuering H.
579. *Till*] To EH.
584. *richt*] E *om*.
587. *archibald* H] archebald E; archbald C.
588. *alabast*] *so* CE (*printed* alabastre PJ); Allabast H.
589. [*Ordane* E] Ordanit C; Ordaine H. *towme*] tumbe E; Tombe H. *full*] sa.
590. *behufit*] behowyt E; effeered H. *till*] to EH.
591. *Rubric in* H—The Erle of Mvrray died here, Through Poysoun giuen by a false Frere. [*on* EH] of C. *viss*] wiss.
592. *keyth*] keth. *the*] his.
595. *affeir*] effer E; affeere H; afeir C. *the*] his E; a H.
596. *murreff*] Murray H. *the*] had the.
597. *had haly*] halely.

With gret worschip haſ gert bery
The kyngis hert at the abbay
Of melroſ, quhar men [prayis] ay 600
That he and his haffe paradiſ.
Quhen this wes done that I deuiſ,
The gude Erll gouernit the land,
And held the pure weill to warand. 604
The law sa weill mantemyt he,
And held in peſ swa the Cuntre,
That it wes neu*ir* led or his day
So weill, as I herd ald men say. 608
Bot syne, allaſ! poysonyt wes he;
To se his ded wes gret pite.
The lordis deit apon this viſ.
He, that hye Lorde of al thing is, 612 [Fol. 163 *b*. C.]
Vp till his mekill bliſ thame bryng,
And grant [his] grace, that thar ofspryng
Lede weill the Land, and ententif
Be to [folow], in all thair liff, 616
Thair nobill eld*er*is gret bounte!
[The] afald god in trinite
Bryng ws hye vp till hevy*n*nis bliſ,
Quhar all-wayis lestand liking is!—AMEN. 620

Murray causes the Bruce's heart to be buried in the Abbey at Melrose.

He maintained the laws, and kept the country at peace.

At last he was poisoned; and thus the lords died.

God grant that their successors may imitate their virtue.

God bring us all to heaven!

600. [*prayis*] prays E; do pray H; *miswritten* playis C.
602. *wes*] E *om.*
604. *pure*] poor H; power E.
605. *law*] Lawes H; lave E. *mantemyt*] *so* CE; maintained H.
607. *led*] E *om.*
608. *I*] Ik.
609. *poysonyt*] pusonyt.
610. By a false Monk full traiterously H.
611. *The*] Thir.
612. *hye*] hey E; H *om.*
613. *mekill*] ioyfull H.
614. [*his* E] vs CH.
615. *the Land*] E *om.*
616. [*folow* E] follow H; *miswritten* forow C.
617. *nobill*] *so* E; Noble H; *miswritten* nobillis C.
618. [*The* EH] Quhar C. *afald*] afauld E; anefald H.
619. *Bryng*] May bring H. *hye—hevynnis*] hey till his mekill E; vp to Heauens H.
620. *lestand liking*] ioy and resting H. *Amen*] E *om.*

(*Colophon in* C.) **Explicit liber excellentissimi et nobilissimi principis roberti de broyss scottorum regis illustrissimi qui q*uid*em liber scriptus fuit & finitus in vigilia sancti Ioha*n*nis baptiste viz. decollacio eiusd*em* per manum I. de R. cap*ellanum* Anno d*omi*ni Millesimo quadringentesimo octogesimo septimo.**

Aug. 28, A.D. 1487.

EPITAPH.

Epithaphiu*m* regis róberti broyss.
Hic Iacet i*n*uictus Robertus Rex benedictus;
Qui sua gesta legit, rep*er*it quot bella p*er*egit;
Ad libertatem deduxit per probitatem
Regnum scottorum: nunc viuit i*n* arce polor*um*.

(*Colophon in* E.) [Finitur codicellus de v*ir*tutib*us* et actibus bellicosis, viz. d*omi*ni Roberti broyß, quo*ndam* Scottorum reg*is* illustrissimi, Raptim sc*ripti*us p*er* me Ioha*n*nem Ramsay, ex iussu vene*r*abilis & circumspecti viri, viz. mag*ist*ri Symon*is* lochmaleny de ouchtirmunsye, vicarij bene digni, Anno d*omi*ni millesimo quadringentesimo octuagesimo Nono.

A.D. 1489.

Anima d*omi*ni Roberti bruyß, et anime o*mn*ium fidelium defunctorum p*er* Dei manu*m*, requiescant in pace. Amen, Amen, Ame*n*.

Desine gra*n*de loqui, frangit de*us* omne super*b*um;
Magna cadunt, inflata crepant, tumefacta p*re*mu*n*tur;
Scandunt celsa humiles, *tra*hunt*ur* ad yma feroces;
Vincit opus verbum, minuit Iactantia famam.
P*er* ea viscera marie virginis q*ue* p*or*tauerunt et*er*ni pat*ris* filium. Amen.—E.]

(*Colophon in* H.; ed. 1616.) Here endes the booke of the Noblest King,
That euer in Scotland yet did ring,
Called King Robert the Brvce,
That was maist worthy of all ruce;
And of the Noble & good Lord Dowglas,
And mony ma that with them was.—H.

How the good wife taught her daughter.

A Dietary.

[How the good wife taught her daughter.]

[THE two following pieces are printed here because they immediately follow "The Bruce" in the St John's College MS. They are in the same handwriting as "The Bruce," and were no doubt written at the same time, viz. in 1487.

Of "How the good wife taught her daughter" there are at least eight copies extant. They are numbered and described at p. xiv of "The Hystorie of the Moste noble Knight Plasidas, and other rare pieces, collected into one book by Samuel Pepys, and forming part of The Pepysian Library at Magdalene College, Cambridge. Printed for the Roxburghe Club. 1873," edited by H. H. Gibbs, Esq. Following Mr Gibbs' numbering, the copies are as follows:

1. A version reprinted in the volume just mentioned, pp. 163—171, said to have been derived from a MS. "reserved long in the Studie of a Northfolke Gentleman," and first printed in 1597, with the following Title-page:

THE | NORTHREN | MOTHERS | BLESSING. | *The way of Thrift.* | VVritten nine yeares | *before the death of G.* | Chaucer. | LONDON, | Printed by Robert Robinson for | *Robert Dexter.* 1597. | In 33 seven-line stanzas, the last three lines being much shorter than the first four, as in Nos. 5, 6, 7, and 8. Some of the stanzas are irregular. It is proper to add that "The Way to Thrift" is a separate poem, of 71 lines, beginning—"Lord God what is this worldes wele," and ending—"And from solace turnes to suddain sorrow;" reprinted in The Hystorie of Plasidas, pp. 173—175.

2. A copy in MS. Kk. i. 5 in the Cambridge University Library, printed in Ratis Raving, &c., ed. Rev. J. R. Lumby (E. E. T. S. 1870); pp. 103—112, and entitled "The Thewis off Gudwomen." It consists of 316 lines, in a similar metre to that here printed, and is of the same type. See further remarks below.

3. The copy here printed, from MS. G. 23 in the library of St John's College, Cambridge, foll. 164—167. Written out by J. de R. in 1487.

4. A copy in MS. Ashmole 61, fol. 7, entitled "How þe Goode Wyfe tauȝt hyr Douȝter," printed in Queene Elizabethes Achademy, &c. ed. F. J. Furnivall (E. E. T. S., Extra Series, 1869), pp. 44—51. It consists of 208 lines, in a similar metre to that here printed.

5. A copy in Porkington MS., No. 10, leaf 135, back, entitled "The good wyfe wold a pylgremage." Printed in the same volume, pp. 39—43. In 14 stanzas, the metre resembling that of No. 1.

6. A copy in MS. Lambeth 853, p. 102. Printed in The Babees Book, ed. F. J. Furnivall (E. E. T. S. 1868), pp. 36—47. In 31 stanzas; metre similar to that of No. 1.

7. A similar copy in MS. R. 3. 19 in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge. The collations with No. 6 are given by Mr Furnivall.

8. A copy in the Loscombe MS.,[1] entitled "How the Goode Wif thaught

[1] Now MS. cxxx in the possession of Lord Ashburnham; described in Piers Plowman (B-text), pref. p. xxi; ed. Skeat.

hir Doughter;" printed in 1838 by Sir F. Madden, and again by Mr Hazlitt, in his Early Popular Poetry, vol. i. In 35 stanzas; metre similar to that of No. 1.

At p. xxi of The Historye of Plasidas, Mr Gibbs gives a harmony of the copies numbered 1, 6, 7, and 8, which more or less resemble each other. No 5 is in a similar metre. The copies to be compared with that here printed are therefore Nos. 2 and 4. Of these, No. 2 is expressed in different language, and can only be compared as regards the general sense; but No. 4 is no other than a different copy of the very same type of the poem, and agrees sufficiently closely with the text to admit of collation. I denote the text here printed by the letter A, and the text printed by Mr Lumby by the letter B. The following is the general scheme, shewing the corresponding lines of the two versions.

VERSION A (here printed).	VERSION B (ed. Lumby).
1—54	1—54
55—68	——
——	55—62
69—80	63—74
81—110	——
111, 112	75, 76
113—116	——
——	77, 78
117—166	79—128
167—170	——
171—210	129—168
——	169, 170
211—218	171—178
(*a*) [235, 236]	(*a*) 179, 180
——	181, 182
(*b*) [241, 242]	(*b*) 183, 184
(*c*) [237, 238]	(*c*) 185, 186
219—234	187—202
(*a*) 235, 236	(*a*) [179, 180]
(*c*) 237, 238	(*c*) [185, 186]
239, 240	——
(*b*) 241, 242	(*b*) [183, 184]
243, 244	*like* 203, 204
245—254	205—214
——	215—218
255—272	219—236
——	237, 238
273, 274	239, 240
275—278	*like* 241, 242
279—296	243—260
297, 298	——
299—302	261—264
303—306	——
——	265—316.

Such verbal variations as seemed to me to be worthy of notice are given in the footnotes.

I must add that, in the marginal summary, I have copied Mr Lumby's words where practicable, for the convenience of the reader.]

Incipiunt documenta matris ad filiam. [Fol. 164. C.]

THE gud wiff schawis, the best scho can, — The good wife shews how women are held dear.
Quhilk ar the thewis of a gud voman;
Quhilk gerris women be haldin deir,
And makis pouer women princis peir; 4
With sum ill techis and Ill thewis,
That followis foull women & schrewis.
As to the first, men suld consyder
That womanis honor is mair slyder, 8 Women's honour is tender,
And eythar blekyt be mekill thing,
As farest roß soyne takis fadyng. and fades like a rose;
A woman suld haue euir raddour
Of thing that greif mycht hir honour; 12 therefore women should be cautious,
With pite and humilite, pious, humble,
And litill of langage for to be.
Nocht lowd of lauchtir, na of langage crouß,
And euir do sum gud to the houß: 16 always doing good,
Nocht oyß of tratlyng in the touñe, not gossiping,
Na with men for to rowk & rowñe;
Suet and hamly, sempill and coy,
Vith fenȝeit fair nocht mak our moy. 20
Nocht nyse, proude, na our delicat, not proud nor assuming.
Na contrefet our gret estat;
Favour na dedis of dishonour,
Kep vorschip till all creatour; 24 Be respectful,
Be nocht lefull tratlyngis till heir,
Na till reherß, quha vald thaim speir.

1. *the*] fore.
2. *the*] B *omits*.
3. *Quhilk gerris*] Quhilkis gar.
4. *makis*] B *omits* (*better*).
5. *techis*] maneris. *Ill* (2)] B *om.*
8. *mair*] tendyr &.
9. *eythar blekyt*] raithar brekis.
10. *soyne takis*] takis sonest.
11. *haue euir*] ay have.
13. *With*] Ful of.
15. *lauchtir*] lange. *of langage*] lauchtyr.
16. *do—the*] doand gud in her.
17. *of*] na.
18. *men—to*] no ȝonge men. *&*] na.
19. *Suet—hamly*] Weill of hir smylinge.
20. *fenȝeit*] fenȝeand.
22. *our*] nocht our.
25. *till*] to.
26. *till*] to. *vald*] wald.

and obedient;
Till hir frend*is* obeysand be,
In gudly thing that may supple; 28

not too gay in dress,
Nocht delicat in hir clething,
Bot playn maneir and gudly thing.
No*ch*t our costlik, na ȝeit sumptuouſ,

to make folks envious;
To mak folk at hir Invyouſ; 32
Na covat no*ch*t clething mair deir
Na be resoñe hir stat suld feir;

not to dress for shew,
And thouch scho be cled preciously,
Couat nocht to be seyn for-thi. 36

lest she be deemed a light woman.
Quhen scho is proude to schawe hir than,
Is taknyng of añe euill woma*n*;

[Fol. 164 b. C.]
Bot quhen it aw with reson to be,

There are proper times for women to shew themselves,
To schaw hir than is honeste, 40
With suet gud rownd contyrnans;
Nocht our fer preſ hir till avans.
Till schaw hir pryd, that men may se,
That is bot pomp and vanite. 44

but it should be done with modesty.
Bot eu*ir* with dreid and schamfulnes
Scho suld draw to the lawast plaſ,
And erar lawar place to tak
Na hear, and be put abak. 48

God honours lowliness.
God dois honour till lawlynas,
Quhen prid is pwnyst in all plaſ,
Quhilk in women is mair to blam̃e,

After pride comes shame.
For eft*ir* pryd oft followis scham̃e. 52
Nocht than thai suld be honest ay
Eft*ir* thair estat ilk day,

27. *obeysand*] obedyent.
28. *thing*] thingis.
29. *delicat*] outragouss.
31. ȝ*eit*] B *om.*
32. *folk*] vthir.
34. *hir—feir*] suld hir effeir.
35. *preciously*] honestly.
36. *Couat*] Desyr.
38. *taknyng*] takin. *ane euill*] a licht.
39. *aw with*] suld be. *to*] B *om.*
41. *gud*] hamly. *contyrnans*] contenans.
43. *Till*] To. *pryd*] proud. *that*] at.
44. *That—pomp*] Is pryd, wanglore.
48. *hear and*] fra h*er* place.
49. *till*] to.
51. *mair*] maist.
54. *estat ilk*] stat eu*er*ilk.

And hear honour, bettir thing,
And lawar stat, lakar clething. 56
For pryd gais no thing be the claiß,
Bot be the hert that woman haß.
For sum will be sa stoutly cled,
Or thai will crab thar men in bed, 60
That half the richeß that he haß
Sall scant be worth his viffis claß.
Than quhen thai cled ar our statly,
Men will presoyme na gud, treuly, 64
Bot that scho dois it for paramour;
And thus-gat faid sall hir honour.
Tharfor the best thing is, I wat,
Is to be cled eftir thair estat. 68
Kepe thame fra delit nocht variabill,
And fra all dedis dishonerabill,
Nocht fra the deid all anerly,
Bot fra all that is Ill likly. 72
Fle ill folk and suspekit place,
Gret lak followis of Ill liklynace;
For euir dishonorit Cumpany
Fadis all honour comonly. 76

Dress should be suitable to the rank in life.

Some men's riches are of less value than their wives' clothes.

Too fine clothing is dishonourable.

Keep women from all dishonourable deeds,

from all suspected places.

Bad company damages character.

Dant nocht madenys our vantonly,
Na feyd thame nocht deliciously;
For metis and drynkis deliciouß
Drawis to lichery: men sais thus. 80
Na let thame nocht ga to thar will
Bot it weill suddane be thair-till.
Na to clerk-playis na pilgrimage,

Give not women too delicate food or drink.

[Fol. 165. C.]

Let them not attend clerk-plays or pilgrimages.

55—68. B *omits. See insertion in* B, ll. 55—62.
68. *Is*] *Perhaps better omitted.*
69. *variabill*] *In margin of* A—*vel* vakabile; walable B.
70. *dedis*] deid.
71. *Nocht—the*] Bot nocht fra.
72. *that*] thinge that.
74. *of*] B *om.*
75. *dishonorit*] defamyt.
76. Defadis the honor of al wy B.
77. *madenys*] women.
78. *deliciously*] our delygatly.
80. *Drawis to*] Caussis.
81—110. B *omits.*

Bot thar be vith thai*m* viſ folk of age. 84
Thoill thai*m* no*ch*t rage with rybaldry,
Na mengill thame with neu*ir* vith ladry.

Let not young people be together alone.

Nouth*ir* nycht nor day to hant allane,
That has beyn ded of mony aſie, 88
All be thai neu*ir* so syb no tend*ir*;
For nakit lying lufrent will gend*ir*.

After seven years of age, nature is strong.

Fra thai be passit sevin ȝeir and mair,
Natur spryngis and will nocht spair; 92
Suppoſ no man will thame mystrast,
The lang acquyntans will no*ch*t lest
Vith fors of nature; and sutelte
Of the fals fend, that is so slee, 96

Great harm comes thus.

Drawis sic plesand acquyntans
Throu ȝouthede and throu ignorans.
And ȝouthede can no perell*is* cast
Quhill at all be perist at the last. 100
Than "had I wittyn!" will thai say,
With mony "allas" and harmesay.

It were better to guard against such harm.

Than war it bettir forsee the Ill
Or sic mysfortoun fall thame till. 104
For, as men redis in ald storys,

Brothers and sisters often perish thus.

Ten thousand tynt ar on this viſ
Of sist*ir* and broth*ir* in sic lik caſ,
That banyst syne fra frendis waſ, 108
In strange rewmys fled for schame,
That durst neu*ir* eft*ir* be seyne at hame.
Kepe thame fra giftis to gif or craff,
Or billis of Amowr*is* till resaff; 112

Let them not dance or sing publicly,

Or ȝeit till danſ in-to the ryng,
Na oppinly in the rew to syng,

nor "run at bars."

Na ryn at bares in the vay;
Bot hald thair Innys gif thai vill play. 116

111. Na gift*is* gyf na drowreis craif B.
112. *Or billis*] Na bill. *till*] to.
113—116. B *has* 2 *different lines here.*

Oyß nouth*ir* flyting, sturt, no striff, — Let them not indulge in strife,
Preß no*cht* to greiff nouth*ir* man na viff.
In thrift strif ay with hir nychtbour, — [Fol. 165 b. C.]
Quha best can thrif bot dishonour. 120 — but vie with their neighbours in thrift.
Preß nocht in fest to syt our hye,
Na eu*ir*e day in lik prowd be; — Be not proud, nor lazy on workdays.
Na our cleyn veschyn on verk-dayis,
Na on the verkday gang to playis. 124
Flawm no*cht* na flurißˇ that vill fade,
To mend the mak that god has made,
Vith paynteyn vatt*eris* to ger hir scheyñe: — Let not women use painting;
On haly dayis hir hyde hald cleyñe: 128
Nocht with colour*is* na vith pantre,
For sic thing is bot geglotrye.
Schaym is, to day be quhit and rede, — for it is a shame to be white and red one day,
And vallowit on the morn as lede; 132 — and faded the next.
Bot kep the hew of hir natur, — Keep the hue of nature.
For sic fairnes sall langast dur.
Kep bydding ay, and lyf clenly;
Thank god, and luf hym ythandly. 136
Be eu*ir* of pure folk pyteabill, — Be piteous to the poor.
Do almu*s* deid, be cheritabill,
Gif nane Ill word behynd thar bak, — Speak well of people behind their back.
And loyf all leid, and no ma*n* lak. 140
And gif scho be in goddis band,
Be leil and trew till hir husband, — Let a wife be loyal to her husband.
And gracioußˇ ay till hir menȝhe,

117. *nouthir*] noght. *no*] na.
118. *nouthir*] B *om*.
119. *hir*] thi.
122. *euire*] eu*er* ilk. *in—prowd*] lyk proud to.
123. *veschyn*] wesching.
124. Na ȝhit o*n*ne werk-dais oyss na plays B.
125. *Flawm*] Flam. *na*] the. *that*] at.
126. *the*] hir. *that*] at.
127. *paynteyn vatteris*] payntyng wattrys.
129. *Nocht*] Bot no*cht*. *vith pantre*] payntry.
130. *geglotrye*] gyglotry.
132. And o*n*ne the morne waleyt as a wed B.
135. *ay*] B *om*.
137. *pyteabill*] petousable.
139. *nane Ill*] folk gud.
140. *no man*] nane to.
142. *Be—till*] Se eu*er* honore to.
143. And be gracious to his menȝhe B.

Kepand in houshald honeste; 144

Be sweet and debonair,

Till all folk suet and debonar,
With gudly deid at hir power.
Be ferme of hed, bath fut and hand,

not loitering in the streets, for that is folly.

Nocht oft in-to the strete vaverand; 148
For vaveryng betakynnis vilsumnas,
Vanvit, velth, or wantownas.
Or ellis to sek sum Cumpany,
Quhilk war nocht lik to be gudly. 152
Bot euir hald rowme and playn maneir,

Let her keep to her husband.

Euir hald hir fallowschip till hir feir.
Fle fra diffamyt Cumpany;
Lik drawis till lik ay comonly. 156

Love not sleep.

Luf nocht gret sleping na ȝeit sueirnas,
For mekill Ill cummys of ydilnas.

[Fol. 186. C.]

Nocht leif to vantouñe giglotriß,

Keep wise companions. Imitate the best.

Kepe feris of women that ar viß; 160
And euir conforme hir to the best
Of vomen that ar vorthyest.
Do na thing that lik Ill may be,
Gif na occasioune for till le; 164

Folk will not conceal evil doing.

For quhen scho dois that is lik Ill,
Trast nocht that folk will hald thaim still.
Thoch it be neuir so secretly,

Evil will not be hid.

Trast weill, it beis nocht hyd for-thi; 168
Suppoß scho heir of it na thing,

144. *in houshald*] her husbandis.
146. *deid*] wyll.
147. *bath*] B *om.*
148. *into—strete*] in stret to be. *vaverand*] wauerand (*printed* wanerand).
149. *vaveryng*] wauerynge (*printed* wanerynge). *vilsumnas*] wylsumnes.
150. *Vanvit*] Wanwyt. *velth*] welth.
152. *Quhilk*] At.
153. *euir*] ay. *rowme*] rownd.
154. *Euir—hir*] Haldand ay. *till*] with.
155. *diffamyt*] defamyt.
156. *till*] to.
157. *gret*] B *om.* *ȝeit sueirnas*] gret suernes.
159. *vantoune*] wantoune.
160. *that*] at.
162. *vorthyest*] worthyest.
163. *lik Ill*] ill lyk; *see* l. 165.
164. *till*] to.
167—170. B *omits.*

Folk will nocht leiff of thar demyng.
Hant nocht vith men our anerly,
All-thouch thai be neu*ir* sa vorthy. 172
Na gang nocht allane hir erand,
Tak child or madyn in hir hand;
It is na poynt of honeste
A gud woman allane to be 176
In cumpany of mony añe;
And mekill les of añe allañe.
Trast weill, it is añe euill custum;
For na folk will the gud presum. 180
And quhen scho passis hir erand,
Byde nocht apon it lang dremand,
Na syt nocht doune to hald talkyng
Quhill scho forȝet hir hame-ganging. 184
Think quhat scho has till do at hayme,
And eu*ir* be dredand till haue blayme;
Voma*n* that has añe vantouñe hert
Ane hour or twa think*is* bot añe stert. 188
Gif men thame withgang wantonly,
Syne will thai couat the mastry;
Thar is no thyng thai couat mair
Na fredome, fawyng, and gud fair; 192
Na thai vald neu*ir* repreuit be,
Na ȝeit correkit in na degre.
Thai suld kep laute, with all my*ch*t,
And mast quhar thai haf laute hy*ch*t. 196
Hate no*ch*t but gret cauſ manifest;
The ferst luf eu*ir* be lufit best;

Seek not men's company.

Go not alone on errands.

It is not good for women to be out alone.

Be not long on errands.

Think of what is to be done at home.

Women forget how time flies.

Women like to rule,

but should be obedient.

Indulge not hatred.

Stick to a first love.

172. All be thai neu*er* mar sa worthi B.
173. *Na—allane*] Ga no*ch*t alane in.
178. *of*] wit*h*.
179. It is no point of gud custum B.
180. *folk*] man. *Cf. l.* 64.
182. Byd no*ch*t lang one It tareand B.
185. *till do*] ado (*for* at do).
186. *euir*] ay. *till*] to.
187. *Voman*] Women. *ane vantoune*] a thowlas.
190. *Syne*] Than.
192. *fawyng*] fauore.
193, 194. *thai vald*] wald. B *transposes* repreuit *and* correkit.
195. *with—mych*t] day & ny*ch*t.
198. *euir*] ay.

[Fol. 166*b*. C.] That scho serwe nocht to haue repruf
For vnlaute to forfet luff, 200
And vyn lufrent of hir menȝe.

Flee drunkenness. Fra drunkyn folk and taverne fle.
Be of gud prayer, quhen scho may,

Go to church. And heir meſ on the haly day. 204
For mekill grace cumis of praying,
And bringis men ay to gud ending.

Behave well while there. And in the kirk kepe our all thing
Fra smyrking, keking, and bakluking; 208
And eftir noyne, on the haly day,
Owthir pray, or sport at honest play.
But leif set nocht thi hert to luff,
For eftir followis gret repruff. 212

Follow advice. Leiff thi awn will and tak consale,
Or it sall turn the to tynsale.

Toy not with men. Tayt nocht with men, na mak raging,
For oft it takis añe foull ending; 216
It is añe takyn of foull women
To tyg and tayt oft with the men.

Be not a go-between. Be nocht lefull chargis to tak,
Na erand ber, na message mak, 220

What the eye does not see, the heart does not desire. For thai condiciones ar of barnys;
At eyn nocht seis, hert nocht ȝarnys;

199, 200. That sche of luf have neuer repruf To do wnlawte to hir lufee (*sic*) B.

201. Press to be lowyt with her menȝe B.

203. *of gud*] leif of.

205. *grace*] gud.

206. *bringis —ay*] garris men mak.

207, 208. And our al thinge kep her in kirk To kek abak, to lauch, or smyrke B.

209. *noyne*] nwne.

210. *sport*] play. *After l.* 210, B *inserts* 2 *lines*—To reid bukis or lere wefinge, Be occupeid euer in sum thinge.

211. *thi*] hir.

212. Thar folowis efter gret repruf B.

213. *thi*] thare. *tak*] do.

214. *the*] thaim.

216. *takis ane*] makes a.

217. *of*] a.

219—242. *For variations in the order of lines in* B, *see the scheme above*, p. 524.

219. *lefull*] redy.

220. *erand*] erandis.

221. *condiciones ar*] are condiciounes.

222. *eyn*] E.

Tharfor women suld kepit be,
That thai mycht na licht women se. 224
Suppoß it war agane thair will,
It savis thame mony a tym fra Ill.
For foull women ar sa smytabill,
And till all vikit wycis abill, 228
That eu*ir* the Cumpany quhar thai tak
Sall neu*ir* chap for-outen lak.
Men byndis oft folk agane thar will
Quhill sum gret cure be doñe thai*m* till, 232
Quhilk, war no*cht* fors, thai wald no*cht* do it;
And ȝeit it turnys to mekill gude.
Thus our all thing, as air said I,
Kepe thame fra cancryt Cumpany; 236
For quha diffamyt is, or wik,
Vald all the layff war to thame lik;
Quha smyttit war, wald all var swa,
And slander*it* folk vald eu*ir* haue ma; 240
Bot tak sampill ay by hir nychtbour,
Gif eu*ir* scho think*is* to haff honour.

So women should be kept close, and not allowed to see wicked ways.

Such restraint may be used for their good.

Keep from bad company.
Bad people wish others to be like them.

[Fol. 167. C.]

Gif madyn*n*is eu*ir* gud teching,
And doctryne thame quhill thai ar ȝing, 244
In keping with a gud mastres,
Quhilk ke*n*nis vertues, mair and les;
And chasty thame quhill thai ar cheld,
Quhill visdome cum throu vit in eld. 248

These rules should be particularly observed with the young.

Correct girls while young.

223. *women suld*] suld women.
224. *That*] At. *mycht*] may no*cht*.
226. *savis—tym*] kepis thai*m* oft tymis.
228. *vikit*] wykit.
230. *for-outen*] without a.
233. *do it*] dud (*for* do 't).
234. *it*] is (*by mistake for* it). *turnys—mekill*] cummys thai*m* al for.
235. *Thus*] And. *air*] oft.
236. *thame*] hir. *cancryt*] cankyryt.
237. *is*] war.
238. *Vald*] Wald.
239, 240. B *omits*.
241. *Bot*] And. *sampill ay*] ay sampyll.
243—246. B *has*—And ȝheit weil mar suld madenis ȝhinge Be stratly kepit with gret awinge; In teiching with a gud maistress, Quhilk knawis gud thewis, mar & less.
247. *chasty*] chaiste; *see ll.* 259, 278. *cheld*] child.
248. *vit—eld*] wyt or eild.

For ȝouthede eu*ir* enclynis to vice,
For seilden fynde we barnys viß.

You cannot correct them when older.

Thow may in ȝouthede tyß a cheld
That for na gold wald do it in eld. 252

Young lords are put under governors.

For-thi ȝoung lord*is* ar put in cure,
Quhill visdome cum thai*m* be nature.
For falt of aw and of teching
Bryngis thame oft to mysgou*er*nyng; 256

Had they (the girls) been well taught when young,

Quhilk and thai had in thair ȝouthage,
Quhill thai of visdome had knawlage—
(And chasty thame quhen thai do myß,
Our rekles thoulaß wantoun is)— 260

they would have been chaste and charitable.

Thai suld be chast and cheritabill,
Worthy women, wiß and abill,
And eft*ir* cum to gret valour,
And do thair frendis gret honour. 264

But if their friends fail to train them,

And quhen thai get nane instructione,
Na for mysdeid ma pwnycioune,
Bot lettis thame follow thair vantownes,
And favour*is* thame in thair vikkidnes, 268

they are much to blame,

Of all thair Ill thai haue the vit;
And, do thai weill, the mast merit.

and shall be punished;

For oftymes frend*is*, as men redis,
Ar dampnit for thar barnis ded*is*. 272
Quha will kep bath fra perisching,
Tak tent, and kep wele thus teching;

249. *euir*] ay.
251. *Thow*] Folk. *tyss*] tift. *cheld*] child.
252. *it*] B *om.*
253. *in*] to. *After l.* 254, B *inserts* 4 *lines.*
256. Gerr*is* madenis oft tak ill endinge B.
257. *Quhilk and*] i. e. which if; referring to *teching*. *Lines* 259, 260 *are out of place; see ll.* 275, 276.
259. *chasty*] chaste.
260. Fore wantone thowless rakless Is B.
265. *get nane*] haf na.
266. *mysdeid ma*] thar misdeid.
267. *follow thair*] flow in.
269. *Of all*] Than of. *vit*] wyt.
270. *mast*] mar.
271. *as—redis*] have no dreid.
272. *dedis*] deid. *Here* B *adds two lines.*
274. Teich thaim in ȝouthed our all thinge.

And pwnys thame quhen thai do myß,
And rekles or our wantoun is, 276
And let thame no*ch*t haf all thar will,
Bot chasty thame quhen thai do Ill.
Bettir is with chastyment thame mend
Na saull and liff bath tak Ill end. 280
And kep thame fra neyd and mystair,
That pouerte gar thame no*ch*t mysfair;
For pou*er*te mak*is* mony Ill woman
Quhilk, and thai had a thrifty man, 284
With gudly sufficiand lyffing,
Thai wald neu*ir* forfalt, for na thing.
For oft tymes vrechit neidliking
Sic myst*er*is hald*is* mady*n*nis In, 288
That thai ar pynit with pouerte,
Quhilk gret neid gerr*is* thar hert*is* de;
And may no*ch*t, for thair vrechitnes,
Gret couatiß, and gredynes, 292
Put thame in ȝouthed to p*r*ofit.
Thus of thar Ill thai haf the vit,
And all the charge haill of thar syn
That neid and pou*er*te puttis thai*m* In. 296
Bath plicht and perell on thai*m* lyis,
That tynis thar barnys on this wiß.
Thai haue no craft; how suld thai liff,
Quhen frendis will thame na thing gif? 300
Than is thar nocht bot do or de;

therefore correct your children.

[Fol. 167*b*. C.]

Keep them from poverty;

for want often leads women to do wrong;

and great need makes their hearts die,

so that they come to no good.

Great peril is theirs, who thus lose their children.

275—278. *Two lines in* B—And pwnis thaim quhen thai do Ill, And lat thaim no*ch*t have all thar wyll.
279. Bettyr pwnis thaim and gar thaim mend B.
280. *bath tak*] tak baith.
281. *mystair*] mistere.
283. *makis—Ill*] tynis mony gud.
284. *a—man*] thriftee men.
285. *sufficiand*] suet neidfull.
286. *forfalt — na*] do mys for nakyne.
287. *neidliking*] nedy kynne.
288. *mysteris*] neid & stress.
292. *gredynes*] gret nedynes.
293. *ȝouthed to*] tyme to thar.
294. Thus, do thai mys, thai have the wyt B.
295. *charge haill*] chargis.
296. *pouerte*] myster.
297, 298. B *omits*.
300. *Quhen*] And.

On neyd thus mon thai fulis be.

When the children fall, they curse their elders who misled them.

And syne, quhen thai haf tane a fall,
Than wary thai thair frend*is* all, 304
And puttis thame out of godd*is* grace;
Thus hath ar tynt throu vikkidnaß. 306

Explicit documentum matris ad filiam. per manu*m* J. de R. cap^m^.

302. *neyd*] fors.
303—306. *Not in* B; *which has* 48 *lines in place of them.*

[A Dietary.]

[THIS poem, here turned into Lowland Scottish, is attributed to Lydgate. There are several versions of it. One in MS. Harl. 2251, foll. 4, 5, was printed by Mr Halliwell in his Selection from the Minor Poems of Dan John Lydgate for the Percy Society, 1840, pp. 66—69. Mr Halliwell remarks that "the poem is very common in manuscript, but several of the copies vary considerably from each other. It may be sufficient to refer to MS. Harl. 116, fol. 116; MS. Oxon. Bernard. 1479; MS. Rawlinson, Oxon. C. 86; MS. Arundel 168; MS. Sloane 775; and MS. Sloane 3554, which contains a Latin version. Ritson has inserted this in his list of Lydgate's works in two places, under Nos. 55 and 61." Another copy is in MS. Lambeth 853, which Mr Furnivall has printed, side by side with the Latin version from MS. Sloane 3534 [3554?], in his Babees Book (E. E. T. S. 1868), pp. 54—59. The copy in the Lambeth MS. has its stanzas arranged in a different order from that of the Latin version; but the present copy both follows the order of the Latin version exactly, and translates it closely. The metre, be it observed, is that of Chaucer's Monkes Tale.]

Incipit documentum notabile.

I.

For heill of thy body, kep wele fra cald thi hede; — Keep your head from cold.
Ete no raw met, tak gude heid thar-to;
Drink hailsoṁe aill, feyd the on licht bred,
With appetit riß fro thi met also. — 4 Rise from meals with an appetite.
Vith agit women fleschly haue no*cht* ado.
Apon thi slepe drink nocht of thi cowpe; — Drink not after sleep,
Glad toward bed [and] at morow, both two; — and do not sup
And oyß neu*ir* late for to sowp. — 8 late. [Fol. 168. C.]

II.

And gif so beis that lechis doith the fale, — If you cannot get a doctor, be
Than tak gud hede till oyß thyng*is* thre, — careful in your diet.

6. *Apon thi slepe*] Lat. post sompnum.

7. [*and*] *inserted to make sense; see* Lat. version.

Eat temperately, work moderately,
Temperat dyet, temperat trauale,
Nocht malicius for none aduersite; 12

be meek and content,
Mek in troubill, glad in pouerte,
Rich of litill, content with sufficians,

not grudging, but cheerful.
Neuir grunching, bot mery lik thi degre;
Gif phisik lakis, mak this thi gouernans. 16

III.

Believe not every tale; be not too hasty,
To euere tale soyne gif thou na credans,
Be nocht hasty nor sodanly vengabill;

nor violent to the poor, but courteous in talk.
To pouer folk do no violans,
Curtaß of langage, of feding mesurabill; 20
On syndry metis nocht gredy at the tabill;
Of fedyng gentill, prudent in dalians,

Be secret and true.
Cloß of toung, of word nocht dissavable,

Try to say the best of everybody.
To say the best set alwayis thi plesans. 24

IV.

Hate double-faced people.
Haue in dispit mowthis that beyn dowbill,
Suffer at thi tabill no dissencioune;
Haue in despit folkis that beyn trowble;

Keep no tale-bearers with you.
Of fals rownaris and of fallacioune 28
Within thi court suffer no diuisioune;
Quhich in thi houshald sall cauß gret encreß

Live at peace with your neighbours.
Of all weillfair, prosperite, and fusioune,
And with thi nychtbour liff in rest and peß. 32

V.

Be clothed according to your rank.
Be clynly cled eftir thine estat;
Paß nocht thi boundis, kep thi promeß belif.
With thre folkis be nocht at debat;

Strive not with your better, your equal,
First, with thi bettir bewar for to striff; 36
Agane thi fallowis na querellis to contrif;

nor your inferior,
Vith thi subiect to striff it is gret schame;

but live in peace and win a good name.
Quharfor I consell the to preserue all thi liff
Till liff in peß, and get the a gud name. 40

VI.

Fyre at morow and toward bed at ewe, — Have a fire morn and eve.
Aganis mystis merk and air of pestilens;
Be tymly at meß, thou sall the bett*ir* eschewe; — Rise early, and say your
First at thi rysing, do to thi god reu*e*rens; 44 prayers.
Wise[t] the pou*er* with ententif diligen*s*, — [Fol. 168 *b*. C.] Visit the poor,
Of all i*n* myster haf ay compassioune; — pity the needy,
And god sall send bath grace and Influen*s* — and God will
The till encreß and thy possessioune. 48 reward you.

VII.

Suffer no surfattis in thi houß at nycht, — Allow no surfeits,
Be war with reirsuppers & of gret exceß; — nor eat late suppers,
Of nodding hedis and of candill-licht, — nor sit up nodding by
Of sleuth at morow and slu*mmer*yng Idilnes, 52 candle-light.
Quhich of all vice is chef porteress.
Voyd all dronkyn-lew lear*is* and lychour*is*, — Have nothing
Of all vnthrifty evill the mastres, — to do with drunkards, liars,
That is to say, dyß-player*is* and hazardour*is*. 56 lechers, and dice-players.

VIII.

Eft*ir* met be var, mak nocht lang to slepe; — Do not sleep long after meals;
Hede and stomok preserue ay fra cald; — and keep both head and stomach
Be nocht pensiff, of gret thoucht tak no kepe; — from cold.
Eft*ir* thi power maynteme ay thi houshald. 60 Live according to your income.
Suffer in ȝyme; in thi richt be bald;
Swer no athis, no men to begile. — Swear not to deceive.
In ȝowth be lusty, sad quhen thou art ald;
No varldly Ioy lestith bot a quhile. 64 This world's joys will change.

IX.

Dyñe nocht at morow befor thine appetit, — Do not dine before you have
Cleyne air and valking mak*is* gud degestiouñe; — an appetite.

41. *ewe*] eue (eve) *in* Lambeth MS.
43. *eschewe*] i. e. escheue (achieve).
45. *Wiset*] Wise *in our MS.; visite in* Lamb. MS.; Lat. version, *visita*.
52. *Of*] *so in* Lamb. MS.; *mis-written* On *in C.*
53. *porteress*] *miswritten* portrers; *the line is borrowed from* Chaucer, Sec. Nonnes Tale, Prologue, l. 8; Lat. version, *janitrix*.

Drink not between meals,

Betuix malys drink no*ch*t for na plesand delit,
Bot thrist or travale be the occasiouñe. 68

and avoid salt meat.

And salt met doith gret oppressiouñe
To febill stomok*is*, quhe*n* thai can no*ch*t restreyñe
Fra thingis contrar to thair complexiouñe;
Of gredy hand*is* the stomok has gret peyne. 72

X.

Man consists of body and soul.

Thus in two thyngis stondeth all the velth
Of soull and body, quho so lest thame sew;

Moderate feeding is best for the one,

Modreth fude giffeth to a ma*n* h*is* helth,
And all surfat doith fra hym remew; 76

and charity for the other.

And cherite is to the saulis dew.

This dietary is good, though bought neither of master Anthony nor of master Hugh.

This rescript both is of no potyngary,
Of mast*er* Anton nor of mast*er* hew.
Till all indifferent richeſ is dyetary. 80

Explicit documentum valde vtile, q*uod*[1] I to ȝow, &c.

[1] *Written merely as* "q," *with a stroke through the tail.*

75. *Modreth*] Lat. moderata.
77. *saulis*] *for* saule; *no doubt altered to suit the metre;* Lat. anime. *dew*] Lat. debita.
78. *both*] Lamb. bouȝt; Lat. emit*ur*.
80. *dyetary*] *miswritten* dyetry.

The Publications for 1870 *are* :—

40. **English Gilds, their Statutes and Customs,** 1389 A.D. Edited by the late Toulmin Smith, Esq., and Miss Lucy Toulmin Smith, with a Preliminary Essay, in 3 parts, on 'The History and Development of Gilds; and The Origin of Trades-Unions,' by Dr Lujo Brentano. 21s.
41. **William Lauder's Minor Poems.** Edited by F. J. Furnivall, Esq. 3s.
42. **Bernardus De Cura Rei Familiaris,** with some Early Scottish Prophecies, &c. From a MS., KK. 1. 5, in the Cambridge University Library. Ed. by J. R. Lumby, M.A. 2s.
43. **Ratis Raving,** and other Moral and Religious Pieces in Prose and Verse. Edited from the Camb. Univ. MS. KK. 1. 5, by J. R. Lumby, M.A. 3s.

The Publications for 1871 *are* :—

44. **The Alliterative Romance of Joseph of Arimathie,** or **The Holy Grail:** a fragment from the Vernon MS., with Wynkyn de Worde's and Pynson's A.D. 1520 and 1520 Lives of Joseph: edited by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M. A. 5s.
45. **King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care,** edited from 2 MSS., with an English translation, by Henry Sweet, Esq., of Balliol College, Oxford. Part I. 10s.
46. **Legends of the Holy Rood, Symbols of the Passion and Cross Poems,** in Old English of the 11th, 14th, and 15th centuries. Edited from MSS. by the Rev. Richard Morris, LL.D. 10s.
47. **Sir David Lyndesay's Works.** Part V., containing his Minor Poems, edited by James A. H. Murray, Esq., with a critical Essay by Prof. Nichol of Glasgow. 3s.
48. **The Times' Whistle,** and other Poems, by R. C., 1616; ed. by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 8s.

The Publications for 1872 *are* :—

49. **An Old English Miscellany,** containing a Bestiary, Kentish Sermons, Proverbs of Alfred, and Religious Poems of the 13th cent., ed. from the MSS. by the Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. 10s.
50. **King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care,** edited from 2 MSS., with an English translation, by Henry Sweet, Esq. Part II. 10s.
51. **The Life of St Juliana,** 2 versions, with translations; edited from the MSS., A.D. 1230, by the Rev. T. O. Cockayne and Mr E. Brock. 5s.
52. **Palladius on Husbandrie,** englisht (ab. 1420 A.D.), edited from the unique MS. in Colchester Castle, by the Rev. Barton Lodge, M.A. Part I. 10s.

The Publications for 1873 *are* :—

53. **Old English Homilies,** Series II., from the unique 13th-century MS. in Trin. Coll. Cambridge, with a photo-lithograph; three Hymns to the Virgin and God, from a unique 13th-century MS. at Oxford, a photo-lithograph of the music to two of them, and transcriptions of it in modern notation by Dr. Rimbault, and A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S.; the whole edited by the Rev. Richard Morris, LL.D. 7s.
54. **The Vision of Piers Plowman,** Text B (completing the 3 versions of this great poem, with an Autotype) and two unique alliterative poems: RICHARD THE REDELESS by William, the author of the Vision: and THE CROWNED KING: edited by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 18s.
55. **Generydes,** a Romance, edited from the unique MS. ab. 1440 A.D. in Trin. Coll. Cambridge, by W. Aldis Wright, Esq., M.A., Trin. Coll. Cambr. Part I. 8s.

EXTRA SERIES.

The Publications for 1867 *are* :—

I. **WILLIAM OF PALERNE,** or, **WILLIAM AND THE WERWOLF.** Re-edited from the unique MS. in King's Coll., Cambridge, by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 15s.
II. **EARLY ENGLISH PRONUNCIATION,** with especial Reference to Shakspere and Chaucer, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part I. 10s.

The Publications for 1868 *are* :—

III. **CAXTON'S BOOK OF CURTESYE,** in Three Versions: 1, from the unique original copy; 2, from the Ordel MS. 79; 3, from the Balliol MS. 354. Ed. by F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 5s.
IV. **HAVELOK THE DANE.** Re-edited from the unique MS. by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A., with the sanction and aid of the original editor, Sir Frederic Madden. 10s.
V. **CHAUCER'S BOETHIUS.** Edited from the two best MSS. by R. Morris, Esq. 12s.
VI. **CHEVELERE ASSIGNE.** Re-edited from the unique MS. by H. H. Gibbs, Esq. 3s.

The Publications for 1869 *are* :—

VII. **EARLY ENGLISH PRONUNCIATION,** with especial Reference to Shakspere and Chaucer, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part II. 10s.
VIII. **QUEENE ELIZABETHES ACHADEMY, A BOOK OF PRECEDENCE, &c.** Edited by F. J. Furnivall, Esq., with Essays on early Italian and German Books of Courtesy, by W. M. Rossetti, Esq., and E. Oswald, Esq. 12s.
IX. **AWDELEY'S FRATERNITYE OF VACABONDES, HARMAN'S CAVEAT, etc.** Edited by E. Viles, Esq., and F. J. Furnivall, Esq. 7s. 6d.

The Publications for 1870 *are* :—

X. **ANDREW BORDE'S INTRODUCTION OF KNOWLEDGE,** 1547, and **DYETARY OF HEALTH,** 1542; with **BARNES IN THE DEFENCE OF THE BEARDE,** 1542-3. Edited, with a Life of BORDE, and an account of his Works, by F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 10s.
XI. **BARBOUR'S BRUCE.** Part I. Edited from the MSS. and early printed editions, by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 12s.

The Publications for 1871 *are* :—

XII. **ENGLAND IN HENRY VIII'S TIME:** a Dialogue between Cardinal Pole and Lupset, mainly on the Condition of England, written by Thomas Starkey, Chaplain to Henry VIII. Ed. by J. M. Cowper, Esq. Pt II. 12s. (Pt I. *Starkey's Life & Letters* is in preparation.)
XIII. **A SUPPLICACYON OF THE BEGGERS,** by Simon Fish, printed A.D. 1529, by F. J. Furnivall, M.A.; with **A SUPPLICATION TO OUR MOSTE SOUERAIGNE LORDE, A SUPPLICATION OF THE POORE COMMONS,** and **THE DECAYE OF ENGLAND BY THE GREAT MULTITUDE OF SHEEP,** ed. by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 4s.
XIV. **EARLY ENGLISH PRONUNCIATION,** with especial reference to Shakspere and Chaucer, by A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Part III. 10s.

The Publications for 1872 *are* :—

XV. **ROBERT CROWLEY'S THIRTY-ONE EPIGRAMS, VOYCE OF THE LAST TRUMPET, WAY TO WEALTH,** &c., 1550-1 A.D., edited by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 12s.
XVI. **CHAUCER'S TREATISE ON THE ASTROLABE.** Edited from the MSS. by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 6s.
XVII. **THE COMPLAYNT OF SCOTLANDE,** 1549 A.D., with an Appendix of four contemporary

Early English Text Society.

The Subscription is £1 1s. a year [and £1 1s. (Large Paper, £2 12s. 6d.) additional for the EXTRA SERIES], due in advance on the 1st of JANUARY, and should be paid either to the Society's Account at the Head Office of the Union Bank, Princes Street, London, E.C., or by Money Order (made payable at the Chief Office, London) to the Hon. Secretary, ARTHUR G. SNELGROVE, Esq., London Hospital, London, E., and crossed 'Union Bank.' (United States Subscribers, who wish their Texts posted to them, must pay for postage 6s. a year extra for the Original Series, and 5s. a year for the Extra Series.) The Society's Texts are also sold separately at the prices put after them in the Lists.

The Publications for 1874 will be chosen from:—

96. THE GEST HYSTORIALE OF THE DESTRUCCION OF TROY, translated from Guido de Colonna, in alliterative verse; edited from the unique MS. in the Hunterian Museum, Glasgow, by D. Donaldson, Esq.; and the late Rev. G. A. Panton. *Parts II., III., 10s. 6d.*
97. THE EARLY ENGLISH VERSION OF THE "CUEDOR MUNDI"; in four Texts, from MS. Cotton, Vesp. A. ix. in the British Museum; Fairfax MS. 14 in the Bodleian; the Göttingen MS. (both 13th); MS. H. 3. 8 in Trinity College, Cambridge; edited by the Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. Part I., with 2 photolithographic facsimiles by Cooke & Tedescheschi. *10s. 6d.*
98. THE BLICKLING HOMILIES, edited from the Marquis of Lothian's Anglo-Saxon MS. of 971 A.D., by the Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. With a photolithograph. Part I. *8s.*
99. DE DOMES DAEGE (Bede's *De die Judicii*) and other short Anglo-Saxon Poems, edited from the unique MS. by the Rev. J. Rawson Lumby, B.D. *(In the Press.)*
PALLADIUS ON HUSBONDRIE, English, ac. 1420 A.D., edited from the unique MS. in Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, by the Rev. Barton Lodge, M.A. Part II. *(In the Press.)*
THE LAY FOLK'S MASS-BOOK, four texts, edited from the MSS. by the Rev. T. F. Simmons, Canon of York. *(In the Press.)*
THOMAS OF ERCELDOUN, his Rymes and Prophecies; edited from all the extant MSS. by James A. H. Murray, Esq. *(In the Press.)*
MERLIN, Part IV., containing Preface, Index, and Glossary. Edited by H. B. Wheatley, Esq.

EXTRA SERIES.

The Publications for 1874 will probably be:—

XX. LONELICH'S HISTORY OF THE HOLY GRAIL, ac. 1450 A.D.; translated from the French prose of Robert de Boron, re-edited from the unique MS. in Corpus Christi Coll. Cambridge, by E. J. Furnivall, Esq., M.A. Part I. *8s.*
XXI. BARBOUR'S BRUCE, Part II.; edited from the MSS. and the earliest printed edition, by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. *8s.*
XXII. HENRY BRINKLOW'S COMPLAYNT OF ROODERYCK MORIS, (sometyme a gray Fryre, yuto the Parlyamyd House of Inglund his natyrall Country, for the Reformacyon of yuelyd wicked Lawes, euyl Customs, and euyl Iuerees (1542); and THE LAMENTACION OF A CHRISTIAN AGAINST THE CITYE OF LONDON, made by Johyan Bale, a.D. 1548. Edited by J. M. Cowper, Esq. *8s.*
XXIII. EARLY ENGLISH PRONUNCIATION, with especial reference to Shakspere and Chaucer; by A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Part IV. *(In Press.)*

The Publications for 1875 are:—

XVIII. THE COMPLAYNT OF SCOTLANDE, 1549 A.D., with an Appendix of four contemporary English Tracts (1547-48); edited by J. A. H. Murray, Esq. Part II. *8s.*
XIX. OURE LADYES MYROUR, A.D. 1530, edited by the Rev. J. H. Blunt, M.A., with four ballad-prose photolithographic facsimiles by Cooke and Tedeschi. *10s.*

Reprinting Fund.

Additional Subscribers' names are wanted for the Texts of 1865 and 1866.

The publications of *The Early English Text Society* are divided into Four Classes. I. Arthur and other Romances. II. Works illustrating our Students and the History of our Language, including a Series of re-editions of our early Dictionaries. III. Biblical Translations and Religious Treatises. IV. Miscellaneous. (The *Extra Series*, which commenced in 1867, is intended for re-editions.)

A few copies are left of No. 17, Extracts from Piers Plowman, 1s.; No. 20, Hampole's Treatises, 2s.; No. 23, Ayenbite, 10s. 6d.

The Society's Report, with Lists of Texts to be published in future years, etc., etc., can be had on application to the Hon. Secretary, ARTHUR G. SNELGROVE, Esq., London Hospital, London, E.

LONDON: N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.
BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 33 MOHRENSTRASSE.